

Palmerin d'oliua  
THE FIRST PART,  
SHEWING THE MIRROVR  
of Nobilitie, the Mappe of Honor, A-  
natomie of rare Fortunes, Heroycall pre-  
sidents of Loue, Wonder for Chiualrie,  
and the most accomplished Knight  
in all perfections.

---

*Presenting to Noble minds, their Courtly desire, to Gentiles  
their expectations, and to the inferiour sort, how to imitate  
their vertues: handled with modestie, to shun offence,  
yet all delightfull for Recreation.*

---

Written in Spanish, Italian, and French: and from  
them turned into English, by A.M. one of  
the Messengers of his Maesties  
Chamber.

---

*Patere & Abstine.*



LONDON,

Printed by T. C. and B. A. for Richard Higgenbotham, and  
are to be sold at his shop at the signe of the Cardinals  
Hat without Newgate. 1616.



## TO THE WORSHIPFULL

Master Frances Yong, of Brent-Pelham, in the  
County of Hertford, Esquire, and to Mistresse Su-  
san Yong his wife, and my most kind Mistresse,  
health, and their hearts contentment,  
Y.R. continually wished.



Eing indebted to you both for your manifold kindnesses, I am bold to continue my labour begun, concerning the course of my promised Histories, this being the first part of Palmerin D' Oliua, ring-leader to all the rest, and therefore he originall from whence they which follow haue bin derived. Though in my translating they came last which shoulde haue bin first, now I haue good hope, that by the reprinting of them our againe, at length they will come to a just order, and each haue his place as their course describeth. The second part of this will shortly follow: then the third and last that I am now in hand withall, which concluding with Palmerin of England, and Primalion of Greece, their severall last part, will perfect the whole history, and make it complete in euery part. As the rest, so I commend this to your worshipfull protection, remaining always yours with my uttermost endeouours, and praying that your prosperity may neuer faile.

Your poore well-willer till death,



## To the Reader.



When I finished my second part of *Palmerin of Engl. nd.* I promised this worke of *Palmerin D' Olina*, because it depended so especially on the other: to discharge that debt, for promise is no lesse accounted, with the new yecre I send him abroad, a frendly companion for the long euening, and a fit recreation for other vacant times.

But because some (perhaps) will make exceptions against me, that being but one Booke in other languages, I now deuide it twaine: my aunswere is, that to glut men with delight, may make them surfeit, and so in expecting thanks for my paynes, I should remaine condemned by generall mislikeing. Beside, a Booke growing too bigge in quantitie, is profitable neither to the minde nor the purse: for that men are now so wise and the world so hard, as they loue not to buye pleasure at vreasonable price. And yet the first part will entice them to haue the second, when (it may be alleaged) the cost is as great, though it had come altogether: yet I am of the minde, that a man grutched not so much at a little mony, payd at seuerall times, as hee doth at once, for this aduantage he hath, in meane time he may employ halfe his mony on more needfull occasions, and raise some benefit toward bying the second part. Againe, the other part will be new at the comming forth, where now it would be stale: for such are affectiōes now a daies,

## To the Reader.

a daies, that a booke a sennight olde, is scant worth the reading. Thus no iniurie is offered by diuiding my Booke, but profit both to you and me: yours I haue rehearsed, and mine is, that a little pause doth well in so long a labour, beside, this aduantage would I take, that if my first part deserued no liking, you should never be offended by mee with the second.

Yet heerein I am encouraged, that what hath past with so great applianc in diuers languages, can hardly merite to be despised in England, being matter altogether of delight, and no way offensiuē: for noble and Gentle mindes, are farre from iniuring the Historie, that hath so highly pleased the Emperours, Kings and mightie potentates, if then the inferiour sort mislike, it is because they are not capable of so especiall deseruings.

And yet I am perswaded, that both one and other will frendly entertaine *Palmerin D' Olina*, because his History is so plentifullly stored with choyse conceit, varietie of matter and exquisit conveyaunce: as nothing can be reprooued but my simple translation, yet that I hope will be pardoned too, in that to translate, allowes little occasion of fine pen worke.



THE FIRST PART  
OF THE ANCIENT AND HO-  
nourable Historie of the valiant Prince Pal-  
merin D'Olina, Emperour of Constantinople,  
Sonne to King Florendos of Macedonia, and  
the Fayre Griana, Daughter to Remici-  
us, Emperour of Constantinople : a  
History full of singular and  
courtly recreation.

CHAP. I.

Of the secret loue that the Prince Tarisus bare to the  
young Princesse Griana, & the arriuall of the Prince  
Florendos of Constantinople.



The ancient Histories of the famous Empe-  
rours of Constantinople doe record, that the  
eight Emperour succeding Constantine, the  
founder of that ancient and famous Cittie,  
was named Remicius, who gauerned so just  
ly, and with such exceeding honour, as not  
only his subiects intirely loued him, but of the kingdomes  
about him he was so feared, and reverenced, that his Empire  
increased moe large then in the time of his predecessors.  
His Remicius was of such a vertuous and magnifical mind  
that nothing he woulde yet come into his Court, without  
very

## THE HISTORIE

in his Court, without vertie honourable receipt and  
beautifull rewarde: representing the god nature of a vertu-  
ous Prince, whose deates were helde of no small reckoning  
mongst the vertie enemies. He married with the King of  
Hungariais Daughter, a Princesse soz witte and beautie, e-  
quall with any of h. r time, which caused her to be so especi-  
ally loued of her Lord the Emperour, as he altogether  
gave ouer h. exercise of Armes: notwithstanding his Court  
did not dimit ill one iote of the former glorie for god and  
h. r Knights, but dailie increased in such sort, as he took  
great delight to haue young Princes, Knights and Gentle-  
men, nurtered and educated from their vertie insancie in his  
Palace, especially after the Empresse had brought him a  
Sonne, which was named Caniano, at whose birth was no  
little rejoicing through the whol Empire. Within two  
yeeres after, he was likewise deliuered of a godlie Daugh-  
ter named Griana, who growing to sourefeene yeres of age,  
was of such rare vertue and singular god grace, as those  
that helde her, esteemed her for the chiefeſt pice of wo: k-  
manſhippe that euer nature framed.

Verreapon it chanced, that Tarisius Sonnes to the King  
of Hungaria (who had bene brought vp in company with  
the young Prince Caniano) fell into such amorous conceits  
of the young Princesse, as he denoted himselfe onely to her  
service, being vnable to conceale h. obiect of his affections,  
but that time made her acquainted with the cause of his ab-  
ſeruation. Marie meanes he found to entise her god opin-  
ion towards him, but he carrying a religious zeale to loue in  
ome other climate, made no reckoning of his impotunate  
and diligent seruice, whitch drew a Hell of tormenting  
thoughtis vpon Tarisius, seeing his loue and seruice so de-  
ſpiled despised. Peruertheleſſe, (to compasse his intent) he de-  
ſired his Cozin Caniano, to cause a Tryumph bee publi-  
shed wherunto all Knights might be summoned, as well  
Strangars as others: not doubting but he shoulde ſpide ſo  
well in vades of Armes, as thereby hee might deserue the  
loue

## OF PALMERIN DOLIVA.

Issue of the ſatte Griana, and ſo afterwardeſ make meanes  
by the Empresse to demand her in mariage, all which hee  
concealed from his Cozin Caniano: who verie gladlie diſ-  
conſent to what Tarisius had requested, watching oppor-  
tunitie to finde the Emperour his Father at leſure, when  
he made his highaſſe acquainted with the whole enter-  
prise, of himſelfe and his Cozin Tarisius, deſiring him that  
all Knights might haue warning for preparation, againſt a  
day the next Moneth appointed for the purpore. The Em-  
perour was verie well pleased with his Sonnes requeſt,  
accounting himſelfe highlie honoured by his demanide:  
wherupon he cauſed Heralds of Armes preſently to bee  
diſpatched, to ſignifie his intended Tournement through al  
Countries ſaſſe and neere. In the meane while Tarisius  
could not reſt day nor night, but ſtill endeuoured to do  
what he iudged might pleaſe the Princesſe Griana, to who  
as yet he had not vffered the effect of his longing deſire, al-  
beit, by extremitatiſons hee dailie made ſhew ſufficient of  
his tormenting paſtions. But it ſo fell out not long after,  
that one day in her walking he had ſorſed her alone from all  
the other Ladies & Gentlewomen, in a place commodious  
for a Louers diſcourse, where falling from one argument  
to another, the ſurie of his oppreſſions inboldened him ſo  
ſtr, that at length he brake with her in manner following.

Madame, you are not ignorant of the honourable assem-  
bly, that is appointed at the ſeade enſuing, when I hope to  
receive the ordre of Knighthode, and if it ſhall like you to  
thiſke ſo well of mee, as to graunt me one requeſt, eaſe e-  
nough for you to affre mee, peruade your ſelfe that I ſhall  
imagine my ſortune equall with the happyſt Knights that  
euer liued, in that it may be the onelie meane, whereby I  
ſhall enjoy the prize and honour of the Triuimph. Griana  
knowing assuredlie that Tarisius bare her great affection,  
as I haue before reheatled, returned him this anſwerē.  
In ſoth Cozin, it would please me metuallons well to bee  
the meane of ſo god ſortune as you promiſe your ſelfe: Pe-  
uertheſe

## THE HISTORIE

uerthelesse, I haue not learned so little modesty, as to graunt any thing before I know what is desired. When Tarisius understood her modest excuse, hee perswaded himselfe that he shold now obtaine that of her, wherof untill that instant hee had lued in despaires: whereupon, the teares gauding in his eyes, hee vegarde in this manner. I humbly beseech you good Madamme, to take in worth what I am to acquaint you with: for when I determined to smother my griefe in secret, the extremities of my affection grew to such a surplusage, as it brake the strings of my thoughts, almost bound soe ever silent, to reueale that to you whiche my selfe dare but reverently thinke, such is my teare to please you, otherwise, I know no meane than warrant mee from so daine and cruell death: so settled is the disperted loue I beare you, whiche when I strive to overcome, and my selfe also, the more I would decrease it, the more it augmenteth, and that so strongly, as while you are in presence, my spirit forfaketh every part of me, to liue in you onely. For which cause I haue determined (if you thinke it god) to request you of the Emperour your Father for my wife, and if hee regard mee with so much honour, the Realme of Hungaria may well challenge, and my selfe likewise, the highest reame in earthly felicity, hauing a Mistresse of such unspeakable qualite. In the meane time, if you please to bestowe on mee any felowe or fauour, comandinge mee to weare it as your Knight and Servant: you shall well perceive how adventurous loue will bee in defence of my right, by the aduantage I shall recover in the vertue of a gift so acceptable.

Griana, who made but slender account of his passions, and being not well pleased that he held her with such vaine discourses: modestly returned him this answere. If you haue such regard of mee as I well deserve, you would not attempt mee with speeches so vabefetting my hearing: for if your desire be such as you giue me to understand, you ought to make it knowne to the Emperour or Empresse, who haue greater

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

greater autoritie ouer me then I haue my selfe. Wherefore I desire you henceforth not to aduenture the like on perill of your life, otherwise I shall let you know how highly you offend me: on which condition I am content for this tyme to pardon your want of discretion, in that I perceue my selfe to be the onely cause thereof, graunting you tyme and leisure thus privately to assaile me, for which oversight, I repent me at the very heart. With which words shee flung away and left him alone, declaring by her countenaunce to be offended with his request, in that shee desired rather to die then accept him for her Husband, or to allow him the name of a friend. If then Tarisius was driven into a quandarie, we neede not maruaile: wherefore troubled as he was, and not caring greatly whither he went, he entred the Empresse Chamber, where she and her Son Caniano stood conserning together: without saluting the one or other, he satte downe in a Chaire, and gaue such bitter sighes, as the Empresse hearing, was somewhat moued therewith, doubting he had either received some great iniurie, or else could not preuide himselfe so sufficienly as he would for the Triumphe, whereupon she left her Son, and calling Tarisius aside, thus began with him. Neuerthelesse, I see you very melancholy, whiche makes mee to iudge, that you want some needfull thing for the Tournement, which my Sonne hath caused to be published. With which words she beheld Tarisius more willye then shee had done before, and perceiued the teares to trickle downe his cheeke, which made her more desirous to know the cause of his griefe, but his heart was so confounded and shut vp in anguish, as he could not speake one word to her. Neuerthelesse, the Empresse, who loued him as her owne Sonne, found so many meanes to perswade him, as in the end he disclosed the loue he bare to Griana, and the answere likewise whiche shee made him: whereby I am assured (quoth he) that nothing but death can cease my tormentes. The Empresse who of her selfe did many times determine to make that mar-

## THE HISTORIE

age, (perceyng now how fitly the occasion offered it selfe, began to resolve on the consummation thereof: and to content her Nephew, in excusing the Prince Greana, spake as followeth.

Doce you Nephew mislike the answere of my daughter? Believe me, therein shes did but her dutie; for shes cannot dispose of her selfe, being young, and under controul, but by consent of the Emperour and I, whom you ought first to make acquainted with your request. But since I perceyue how you are affected, I promise you I will conferre with my Lord the Emperour: and hope to preuaile so well in the cause, as you shall speed of that you most desira.

As they continued these discourses, they were ginen to understand by a messenger, that the Prince Florendos the Kings sonne of Maccodon, was newly arrived with a braue company of knyghts. But his comming to the Emperour was not as his wassale or subiect, because the Kingdome of Maccodon was at that time no way beholding to the Empire, but onely to see the faire young Prince Greana; the renowme of whose Beautie and vertues had so pierceth his thoughts, as before he saw her, he loued and honoured her so that for this cause onely he tooarneyed to Constantinople, where he was very honorably entertained, both of the Emperour and his Sonne Caniano, as also of the Empresse and sayre Greana, who oftentimes heard him reckoned and reuaied amongst the most honourable and gracious Princes, that lised at that day.

## CHAP.

## OF PALMERIN DOLIVIA.

### CHAP. II.

How the Empresse conferred with the Emperour, as concerning the marriage of theyr Daughter Greana with Tarisius, Sonne to the King of Hungaria; whereof they both determined, and of that which happened in the meane time.



The Empresse was not forgetfull of her promise made to her Nephew Tarisius, but endevoured by all meanes possible to finde the Emperour at such leasure, as the myght impart the whole vnto him: and because shes had so hardly taken the matter vpon her, she would gladly it shold sorte to effect, as commonly Women are covetous of theyr owne desires: Therefore no marvel if she were earnest in following her intent.

Sone after, walking alone with the Emperour, and smothly couering the baite shes desirous he shold swallow, she desired him to grant her one request, whereof shes would not willingly be denyed. The Emperour never before hearing her so impoztunate, consented at the first to whatsoeuer shes demanded; Now perswading her selfe, to speake, thus she beganne.

My Lord, hauing often considered with my selfe, that our Daughter Greana is of yeares and discretion able for a Husband, I am the more desirous to see her honorably betrowed. And for that the young Prince Tarisius hath bene trained vp in your Court, and (which I little thought) some god-will appeareth to betwene them: I shoulde thinke it not amisse to walte them in mariage together: for hanc

## THE HISTORIE

He shall we finde (in mine opinton) a Lord of greater blood and birth then he, being he yezz apparant to the Crolwe and kingdome of Hungaria: besides, they hauing bēne so long time conuersant together in their young yeares, will enter-taine a more speciall regard of loue betwene them, then can bee in any other that may moue the question to her. Madame (answered the Emperour) shee is your Child, and I doe not thinke but you would her good: therfore I like the motion well, for that indeed I esteeme so well of Tarisius, as of mine owne Donne, and once we haue so happily fallen into these discourses, we will soothwith certifie the King his father by our Ambassadours, that we may understand his opinion herein. The Empresse gratified her Lord with very hearty thankes, being not a little glad shee had so well prenailed, wherfore immediately shee aduertised Tarisius. But so; Griana, her affection was else where, for she bare a certaine secret godd liking to Florendos, so soone as shee beheld him, hearing so great report of his knightly bountie and pōwesse, so that beholding them together, and theyz eyes delivering the godd conceit of each other, one might easily iudge, that Loue had so mightyly mastered her thoughts, as if hee consented, shee had set downe her rest for her choyse, and hee on the other syde was drawne into the same compasse, notwithstanding each of them (for the time) concealed what they rather desired should bee knowinge betwene them. Yet this hiddenire stroue to gaine place of issue; for divers times the Princesse Griana being amōgst her Ladies, talking of such Knights as would shew them-selues at the Tournamēt, the Prince Florendos was com-monly first spoken of, and so highly would the Ladies commend him beyond all the other, as Griana could not re-saine from changing colour, so that the alteration he found in her spirit might be evidently perceyued, howbeit none of the Ladys as then noted it: and thus shee continued till the feast of Saint Maria d' Augusta, which was the day appointed for the Tournament, on which day the Campe-

ron

## OF PALMERIN DE OLIVA.

four knyghtis his Sonne Caniano, and Tarisius, prepely to the Empreys. In honour whereof, hee helde a greater and more magnificēt Court, then before times he had done: for he suffered the Ladies to accompany the Knyghtis at the Table: Albeit they were not wont to do so often till that time, yet full well it pleased the Prince Florendos, who sat opposite to the Princesse Griana: During which time of dinner, though many piercing Lookes, and smothered Sighes were sent from each other, as messengers of their semblable opintions, yet cunningly they shauoldē all from being discovered, and after the Tables were withdrawne, and each one preparing for the Tourney, Florendos so well behaued hymselfe, as hee found the meanes to speake privately with his new friend: and thus he beganne.

Madame, the Heauens haue not a little fawoured mee, in soozing vs so commadously togither: that I may shew before I enter the Lyalls Royall, the occasion why I lost the Realme of Maccdon, to visite my Lord the Emperour. I swere to you vpon my knightly faith, that your gracious selfe was the only cause of my Journey: and whyle I live, I shall euermore aduenture my selfe, in ought that may stand with your fauour and liking: And the first argument of my happiness, I shold account, if you would command me this day to Arme my selfe for your Knight: Otherwise, I must be content to absent my selfe, being assured, that without your regarde, it is vnpossible for me to do any thing that can returne mee estimation or honour. And albeit I haue not as yet done any seruice to you, whereby I shold deserve to be accepted: Yet such is the hope I repose in your vertuous nature, as you will not refuse my honest request, being the first I ever desired of you, and not the last (I trust) shall do you honour. Now as you haue heard before, Griana, earnestly affected Florendos: Neuertholes, as a modest and well aduised Princesse, doubting least hee seignēt those speches of course, dissembling her selfe to be somewhat displeased, returned this Answer.

3

I viii

## THE HISTORIE

I did not think my Lord Florendos, that you wuld so faire forget your selfe, to hold mee with speches not becomming the Daughter of so great an Empereur as I am: Neverthelesse, knowing you are a straunger, and ignorant ( it may be ) of the moevable which shold defend Knights, dealing with Ladies, I will not vs such rigour towards you as I ought, yet must I tell you that I find my selfe offended. You desire that as my Knight you may enter the Courney: for that I graunt ys, to the vntz I may perceue the effect of the Proverb, which each one so much contynedeth in you, the rest, it is my pleasure that you forbeare.

Madame quoth he, if I haue vsed any such speches as agree not with your patience, for Gods sake ( in my excuse ) accuse my small compas of liberallit, which remaineth only at your disposition. What qv. shew, thinke you that I will loue any but he that must and ought to be my Husband? A sweete Lady said Florendos, that is it that I so earnestly desire; and thinke not that I sollicite you with any other kind of loue, but only to make you the Mistresse of my selfe, and altogether to dispese of me and mine: for proue whereof, I will hereafter imploye my selfe in the Emperours service, in such soot (as if you like it) I hope to purchaſe his content. Trulye syr quoth she, that onely appertains to the Emperour and not to me, to whome you are to make knowne what you inten: for he hath authority to command, and I am bound by duty to obey. At which wordes the Empresse calld her away; when Florendos making her curteous reverence, departed to his Chamber to Arise himſelfe, so many knyghtes were entered the Lyses, and he in ſhort ſpace came thither for company: where he behaved himſelfe with ſuch valour, as he not onely got the honour of the firſt day, but of the fourt dayes following, while the Courney endured, and wanne the prize, which Canario hadde prepared for him that best deserved it, which made him be greatlye esteemed of the Empereur, and of the whole Court in generall, especially of the fayre Criana, whose heart by little

and

## OF PALMERIN DE OLIVA.

and little, was brought in subiection, to the no ſmall content of Florendos, which doubtleſſe hadde the Prince Tariſius behelde, I imagine he would haue hardly lyked it. But now during the time of these great feastes and Triumphes, Fortune the ſtroune enemie to all quietneſſe, preſented the Empereur with other occaſions, to cut off these knyghtes and Courteiſe: for after many of the knyghtes assembled at his Court, had taken leaſe to returne into their Countreyes, Gamezio ſonne to the Holdane of Babylon, who was on the Deas with a mighty Armie, in ſending to conaer Alexandria, was by extremitie of windes and weaſter, drayen into the ſtreypes before Constantynople. Whiche when the Pilotes and Mariners perceyved, not one amoungſt them but greatlye rejoyned at this great god Fortunes, but chiefly Gamezio, who perſwaded himſelfe that his Gods had ſent him thither, that the moft noble and flouriſhing Cittie of the world might fall into his handes: Whereupon the windes ſomewhat appeaſed, and the Deas calmed, he assembled the cheife and principall Captaines of his Armie, and thus he beganne.

My god Friends, I believe assuredly, that our great gods would not ſuffer vs to arraie in Alexandria, becauſe we went againſt them of our owne Lawe and Religion, but rather it liked them better, that we ſhould avoyde our ſluſes to this Countrey of Christians, eitherto ruinate it aliogether, or at leaſt to bring it vnder our obeysance. Wherefore I am determined at this time, to deserue the revenge of the inuit, whiche the King Calameno did to the Holdane, and as much as in me lyes, imploy my forces in conuict of this Countrey: for whiche cauſe, I deſire that each of you would particularlye encoage your people, auerting them ( if we can conaer this Cittie ) the Riches thereof will countermaile theyre paine and trouaile. The Captaines ſailed not to accoupli their charge to the uttermoſt, ſummoning every one preſently to Armes: ſo proouiding their ſhippes, their Ensignes, and all thinges elſe needfull for their deſence, they

## THE HISTORIE

they boyled their sayles, making towards the Shoare, where with such prouision as they had they fweke Landing, making such a noyse with their Drums, Trumpets, and Clamors, as was heard with no small feare in every part of the Cittie. Nevertheles, they were received with better responce then they looked for, as following the discourse of the Historie, you shall at large understand.

### CHAH. III.

¶ Of the Battell fought before the Cittie of *Constantinople*, betweene the Emperours power, and the Armie of *Gamezio*.



Immediately was this huge Armie on the sea discouered by the Sentinelles of the City, wherevpo the rumoz arose so great, as the people ranne on heapes to defend the Haune, where the Moores thought to haue made their first entrie. In the meane while, Caniano, Tarisius, and the other principall Knights with their men of Arms, put themselves in Equipage, ordaining their Army in such warlike maner, as now they marched sooth of the Cittie, to succour those places where the mores gane most eager Assaull. The Prince Florendos being left behinde, made no little hast to gather his Company: And as he galloped with them by the Emperours Wallace, he spysyd the Princesse Griana, standing at her Chamber-window, casting many a ruefull looke towards the Gates of the Cittie, which so darpely piercyn the gentle Princes heart, as immedately he saide with himselfe, By Heauen (Sugge Ladie) either will I dyo this

day

## OF PALMERIN DE'OLIVA.

day, or remoue the griefe that semeth so neare to touche you. And with this resolution hee gaue the spurres to his Horse; when it was not long before hee got among the thickest of the Moores, where hee behelde the Enemis so strong, and the Christians so weake, as the day was like to prove dangerous and dismal. For the Prince Gamezio was esteemed one of the best Knights through all Asia, and that day hee behaued himselfe so roughly amongst the Christians, as sooth to say, they were enforced to retyre towards the Cittie.

Whiche when the Emperour beheld, who remained with no great strength to defend the City, he was not a little grieved to see his men turne their backs on their enemies, & dispose themselves in such fearefull and dismaying sort. But Florendos & the Prince Caniano vsed such meanes, as they got them sone in Aray asayne, and returned on the Enemis with a fresh and hardie charge. Tarisius beheld himselfe very valiant, and aduenturous, striyng by all the meanes hee could to equall the Prince Florendos, who that day gaue testimonie of most rare exploits: so these 3. noble Gentlemen past from ranke to ranke, sending all to the earth that durst withstand them. Gamezio seeing his men so bloodyly slayned on every side, macting to Tarisius, would take revenge on him, deliuering him such a cruel stroke on the head with his sword, as down he fell to the ground so astynched, as his enemy might euen then haue slaine him: and so he had done but for the Prince Florendos, who seeing the Moore aduancing himselfe on his steypes, to reach a full stroke at Tarisius on the ground, lifted him quite out of his Saddle with his Launce, and bare him so rudely therewith to the Earth, as breakeing his necke with the fall, he gaue vp the ghost.

When the Moores beheld Gamezio their General slaine, and the Christians make such haueck of them, their hearts failing them to make further resist, fled so fast as they could towarde their Ships, when had not the night too soone prevented them, not one had escaped death or taken Prisoner.

## THE HISTORIE

Notwithstanding, the greater part were put to the sword, divers making hast to get away by Boates, were drown'd in the sea, and manie o' account brought backe prisoners; Thus with victorie returned the Emperours power to his Cittie.

So many of the Moores as escaped to theyr shippes, being not a little glad they were so farre from their enemies; set saile and returned towards the Soltane, to whome they declared the summe of their losse, as also the death of his sonne Gamezio; which lings made him wel-nie mad with rage and anger. But being olde and crazed with sicknes, hee could not goo in person to reuenge his death, which made him braw and frowne, that so soone as his other sonnes came to years to beare armes, he would send him with such a puissant strength, as easly he shoule destroy the Emperour and his Countrey: in the meane time he sent the Ransome to rereate them that were taken prisoners: where hee will leaue the Salmare, and returne to Caniana, and the other Princes, wher being now come againe to the Cittie, the Emperour having heard the worthy seruice Florendos had done that same day (and how he had receaved some few dangerous wounds in the Battell) sent for him in all hast that might be to his pallest, because his owne Chirurgions and Physitians shoule haue care of him. So was Florendos brought very honourably to the Wallace, and conducted to a Chamber beseming his estate, where the Empresse Griana came presently to visite him: to whome the Prince Caniano recounted, how Tarisius had bene slaine by Gamezio, but that Florendos steept between his death and him, but quoth he, the Moore excused Tarisius; for in my presence hee gaue his last farewell to this world, so that now wee may say the Victory is ours, albeit before it hung in hard suspence.

While Caniano continued these and such like spachess, Griana cast manie a sweete look on the Prince Florendos, and he answered his office with the selfesame messengers of his heart. Thus contented they theyr seuerall passions

with

## OF PALMERIN DE'OLIVA.

With modest and vertuous regard, as no man present could suspect their secret meaning. The Empresse and her daughter courteously taking theyr leaues, Florendos and his Chirurgians leaue a while together, they to apply medicines to his woundes, and he the remembrance of his chyfreffe to his heart. On the morrow the Emperour with his Robes little rode forth of the Cittie, to see the slaughtered bodies, among whom they found Gamezio, who was easly knowne by the richnes of his armour, which Caniano caused to be taken from the dead body, and brought to Florendos, as the deset of his trauell; where the Emperour himselfe (the more to honour him) made present thereof to Florendos at his returne, with these spachess.

My noble Cousin, by your Valour and knyghtly proesse, haue I had the upper hand of myne Enemyes: may I but live to requite thy god deserte, I shall account my selfe happy and fortunate: Knyghtyngdale, account of me as thy knyght and continual friend, and be there ought in my power shall like thee to remisunde, on the faith of a knyght to giue it thee.

Florendos most humbly thanked the Emperour, as well for the great honour hee did him, as also for his large and bountifull promise, wheran hee builded so assuredly, as hee almost accounted sayze Griana for his swane: who with the Empresse her mother, rame Daylie to visite him, by which meanes theyr mynall loue increased moore and moore, and Florendos recovered his health in the shorier time, when he solicited the Emperour with this fute folloeing.

# THE HISTORIE

## CHAP. III.

How Florendos intreated the Emperour, to give him in Marriage his Daughter *Griana*, and what answere the Emperour made him.



After that Florendos was thoroughly healed of the woundes which hee had receyued in fight against the Moores: finding the Emperour one day at leysure, and alone in his Chamber, hee beganne to salute him, as after followeth:

Holdeead and soueraigne Lord, so princely and gracious hane your saouzs bene towards mee since first I entred your royll Court, as the King my Father and I shall never answere such exceeding courtesie. And to the end this kindness may rather increase then any way diminish, I beseech your Highnes not to deny mee one request, which among the infinit number of your Princely graces towards mee, I shall account it to exceed all other. In brefe, it is the princielle *Griana* your Daughter, whose loue and honorable name, made me forlaine the Realme of Mace-  
don, onely to desire her in Marriage, if either any desert in me, or your owne Princely god concept, might repute mee worthie of so high a fauour. And so I would not your Highnesse shold any way misconceyue of mee, as that the motion procedeth from a yonthfull and vnadvised head, or that I haue enterprized it without the god liking of the R: my Father: I humbly desire your Maiestie to rest satisfied, both in these and all other opinionis, in that my Fathers consent, brought me with no little spedethither, and the hope of

yours

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

yours during my abode heere, hath taught mee to place my Loue with discretion, and continue it with honourable unspotted loyalty. With this addition (under your Highnes Correction,) that were she mine, as I am wholly hers, the faulch service of a thankful sonne, would answer the gentlenes of so god a Father, and the irrevocable vobes of holy Lone, assure *Griana* of her Florendo. Right veerly did the Emperour loue the Prince Florendos, as had hee bene his owne Sonne Caniano: his knighthly valour, and manly other vertues inly induing him thereto: and gladly hee would have consented to his request, if his promise made unto Tarisius did not blinde him to the contrary: wherepon he returned him this answer. Believe me god Cousin, I am not a little agriewed, that I cannot satisfy your gentle request, for that Tarisius, Neophyte to the Empresse hath already preuented me: to him haue I past my promise for my Daughter, and daily I expect the Embassadours comming from Hungaria, to finishe the Marriage: so that I had rather lose the best of my Citties, then it shold be said I falsified my word. Pardon, of one thing I can assure you, that you are farre bigger in my grace and fauour then he: yet necessarie is without late, and the regard of mine Honors must intreat you to held me excused.

Greatly abashed was the Prince Florendos, seeing in one instant that Hope straken deade, that had maintained his life, since his coming to Constantinople: and so nypt in the head was hee with the Emperours answere, as hee sode a god while in a stadi, not speaking a word; At last he began thus. God forbid that so great a Prince shold breake his promise, by my occasion; Neuertheles, my truth and loyalty to your Highnesse shall not any way diminish, but I shall remaine the most forword in duty, of any that owe Secuice and Allegiance to your Maiestie. Neuerthelike will I (saide the Emperour) imagine the worse of you, but loue you rather better then I did before. Then entred divers noble-men and Gentlemen, which made them breake

## THE HISTORIE

off from further spachess, and Florendos taking his leave, went to his Chamber, so full of griesse, and extremes heauynesse, as easly he could haue bens induced to commit soms violence vpon himselfe: but castynge himselfe vpon his Bed, he thus began to brest soorth the furie of his passions, to easse the heauy burthen of his oppressed spirit.

Unhappy wretched that I am beyond all other, what hope of life canst thou haue thy selfe withall, seeing the maine that shoulde maintaine the continuall thereof, forbids the (fond man) to hope any longer. What angry Planet governed thy nativitie: that hee to whome thou garest life, shoulde this daye be cause to ende thine owne. Beliue me, Tarisius, had I made triall of this inconuenience before, hardly shouldest I put my person in such daunger amongst the Moores, to sheld thy life: but in defending the sword out of thy throat, I haue deseruedly thrull it in mine owne: So that by lengthening thy dayes, I haue exyred mine owne hate, and that with a death so miserablie and cruell, as no enimie whatsoeuer woulde wish to another. But were it not that my dutie to the god Emperour, countermanost me, thou couldst not with such ease eyther out-brave me in my loue, or this vsurpe the gracious fauour of my spesesse Giana, where affection ballanced with deserf, or loue measured by vertue, as it is by opinion. Notwithstanding, to dye for her loue, I shall account my selfe happy, in that she cannot but pitie my unfortunat death, and my spirit shoulde passe with greater quiet to his ende, if shee knew with what content I take my Destinie: but saue Giana, woulde God I had eyther not seen this at all, or else that Fortune had bin more favourable to mee in my choyse. At which words, the extremitie of his Passions tooke away the libertie of his speach: so that hee could not finishe, what hee would gladly haue spoken, but falling from his Bed to the ground in a swoone, amazed one of his Esquyres, that was in the next Chamber, who hearing the fall, ranne immedately, wheresoever his spesesse lyng dead (in his iudgement) raine and called Frenato, who was Couzin to Florendos, and one that knew

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

knew most of his private affayres: notwithstanding, hea was ignorant in the cause of this Accident, who taking hym vpp in his armes, with colde water and vineger cast in his face, at length hee got life into him againe: when Florendos opening his eyes, and seeing his Couzin so busie about hym, bresting soorth two or thre bitter sighes, saide. By dñe Friends and Couzin, I beseech you hinder not the end and issue of my life, for beeing out of all hope to recover my Lady Giana, there is no meane left to maintaine my life.

When Frenato heard these words, hee doubted that the Prince had receyved some contrary answere from the Emperour, as concerning the mariage betwene him and his Daughter, for whose loue onely, hee left the Kingdome of Macedon: wherefore he perceiving that shee must bee the onely meane to easse his torment, hee began thus roundly to answere the pzin e. And what of this: must you therefore dispayre? Alas said Florendos, what woulde yee haue me doe? the Emperour hath long since past his promise for her to Tarisius, as his Highnesse assured mee by his owne words. Very well syd (answeered Frenato,) but doe you know if she haue giuen her consent? I promise ysu, I am perswaded that she loues him not, but that her fauorable regard is much more towards you then him; and because you say so much, to morrow will I sound the bottome of this matter so, that (if I can) I wil scustrate the Emperours intent towards Tarisius. Do you in the meane time but learne to dissemble your griesse, and shew not your selfe mal-content, for any thing that hath beeine saide: but be of god chere, and refreue your fortune in this case to the successe of mine endeavours. These and such like perswacions Frenato used to the Prince, whome he thus left in his Chamber, and returned to the Pallace as was his manner. All this while the Emperour beinge brought hym on the spaches that had passed betwene him and Florendos, which made him the night following, to discourse thereon with the Empresse, and perswading her, that hee could more willingly accept of him

## THE HISTORIE

for his Sonne then Tarisius. But she who highly fauoured her Nephew, reproved his opinion with many Answeres, so that by importunate intreaties, teares, and other subtilt sutes, which Women are wont to use to accomplish their desires, she so farre dissuaded the Emperour, hee promised her againe not to giue her to any other, then to him to whom shee first past his word. Of which wordes, the Empresse was not a little glad, and therefore all that night shee devised, by what meanes shee might from that time forward so much as lay in her to hinder Florendos from speaking to her Daughter; whereupon shee daily kept her Chamber of presence, and helde a moze strict leakes on Griana, then before shee had done, which greatly increased the passions of Florendos, and brought him into so weake estate, as the learned Physitions could not deliuer the cause of his sicknesses, to the no small griefe of the Emperour, but especiallie of Caniano. Yet for all this would not the Empresse at any time visite him, because shee would hinder the occasion of her Daughters seeing him, remebering what spaches had past betwene him and the Emperour. And albeit Griana made no outward shew thereof, yet in her heart shee was highly displeased at her Mothers dealings: so that one day, when her Brother Caniano came to see her, to recount unto her in what extremite he hadde left his friendlie Companion, and what griefe it would bee to him if hee dyed, as he greatly doubted: *What my Lord (quod. shee) it is not so I hope: Yea certain (quod. hee) and I feare he will very hardly escape this day.* At which wordes, the water stod in her eyes, yet so well as shee could, shee dissemble her passions: *Neverthelesse, shee could not hold it in, but saide, I maruell much that the Empresse my Mother, makes so slender account of him, as since his sicknesse she would not vouchsafe once to visite him: I feare shes hath forgotten what god he did for vs, that day when hee valiantly slew the Turke Ganezio.* *Believe mee (my god Lord and Brother) I am heartily sorry for his sicknesse: for if hee dye (as God se: his*

quoth

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

quoth she secretly, the Emperour my Father shall lose more then he thinketh on: the great service he hath done for him already, may give instance of my wordes, and hee being the Sonne of so great a Prince as hee is. By this time hadde such extreame griefe overburdened her heart, as shee was constrained (feigning to goe to the Empresse Chamber) to leaue her Brother, that shee might alone by her selfe beweare her Friends hard fortune.

### CHAP. V

*¶ How Griana, sent a Ring to the Prince Florendos, by Cardian her Mayde, desiring him (as he loued her) to comfort himselfe; And of the answere he sent her.*



*¶* *Soone as Griana had left her Brother, shee went into her chamber, where moze and moze shee lamented for the sicknesse of Florendos, and with her teares shee coupled these discourses. May it be that any living creature can deserue so grievous punishment as I doe, that endanger the life of the worthiest Knight in the world? Unhappy that I am, that Loue, yea, the loue he beares to me, shold bring so bauie a Gentleman to so hard an exgent: but if hee die, such iust vengeance will I take vpon my selfe, as I will not remaine one houer alius after him, and let our Gholles like their owne quiet in death, that Feulans would not alay vs in life. Yet will I thus farre first aduenture, and that before any sleepe enter these eies of mine, trie if it consist in my power to ease his extremity, that buyes my loue at so deare a price. And in this anguish of minde, shee called one of her*

## THE HISTORIE

her Damosels, the Daughter of her Nurse named Cardina, whom above the rest she trusted most, and to her she began in manner following. Cardina, thou knowest the loue I alwaies bare thy Mother, and for her sake holw well I haue thought of thee, I haue knowne thee long time a trus and faithfull Servant: but now Cardina, is a time beyond all other, to make tryall of thy truth, and to witnes thy loue to me, ouely as thou art sure, so to be secret, and so secret as I must put my life and honour into thy secrecie.

Cardina, who was wise, and of god governement, bearing Griana by such earnest speeches, imagined that she would committ no common matter to her trust with such conluration, wheredpon shee modestly returned this answere. Madame, rather had I be to the pacciente in sunder, then any thing you commandyd so secreete, shoud by me bee revealed without your licence: and so assure your selfe, that while I live, you shall finde mee as faithfull in dede, as I promise inward. I never hitthero (quoth the Princesse) had other opinion of thesse: Listen now therefore what I shall commandyd thesse. I haue understood soz certaine Cardina, that the greevous sicknesse of the Prince Florendos, is caused by verie earnest loue which hee beares to me, and for zaccount it great pittie to lsse so great a Knight, do so much as take the paines to go to him from mee: and saye I desire him to bee of god cheere, and if there bee any thing in my power may do him god, I will gladly accomplitsh it, as thee that loues him as her owne selfe, and to assure him therof, say I send him this King, which I will him to keape as a pledge of my loue. Madame, answere Cardina, Fortune spedde me so well, as my paines may giue ease to both your passions: and might my sentence like you Madame, I know no Knight so worthy of your loue as Florendos. So then saide Griana, and returne againe so soone as thou canst. So went Cardina straight to the lodging of the Prince Florendos, at the entrance whereof, thee meette the Prince Caniano so heaue and penitue as might be, because

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

he perceyued his frānd to consume alwaye euerie day more and more, But Cardina, who had well learned her lesson, kept aside, and would not be seene of Caniano; who beeing gone, she got vp to the Chamber, where when shee was ready to enter, thee heard the Prince complain in this sorte.

Ah poore wretched, must thou needes die without any hope of remedie? And as he would haue p̄z̄c̄ed on, Cardina stepped to him, and after shee had saluted him, saide to him secretly, that the Princesse Grianā had sent her to him, to understand of his health: and believe me god Prince, quoth shee, I never sawe Ladie so sorowfull for your sicknesse, as she is. Shee comandeth herselfe to your honor most hearefilly, and hath sent you this King, as an earnest of the loue shee beares you: desiring you to be of god cheere, and comfort your selfe, because shee desires to see you, to conferre with you, of matters whiche conserue you both nearely. These wordes so vanished the spirit of Florendos, as a god while he doubted, whither hee dreamed, or that he might giue credite to what he heard: For albeit he knewe the messenger so well as any in the Court, yet could he not perswade himselfe that hee was so fortunate. At length betweene hope and despairs hee tolde the King, which hee entertained, with many benouit hites: and embracing Cardina so well as he could, thus answered: Alas my sweete friend, may it bee possible that any Ladie hath such regard of him, who never was able to doe her any seruite? Doubt not therefore my Roza (answering Cardina:) and if you will declare your loue answerable to hers in vertue, you must giue testimony therof, by comforting your person, that shee may see you so soone as may bee. Ah faire Virgin (quoth hee) let my whole life be emploied, in what shall like her Diuine nature to command mee: and I assure you, that these tydings hath bicaſhed such nelois life into my soule, as already I finde my selfe wonderfully chaunged; Yea, and that in such sorte, as before three dayes be ouer past, I shall attend her most gracious will, with seruicablie diligence. In the meane while, I shall

## THE HISTORIE

desire you sayre Friend, to let my soueraigne Mistresse understand, that I kisse her Highnes hand in humble dutie, and hadere this givene Farewell to this life, had not her private regard called mee againe from death. Thus parted Cardian from the Prince, taking her way spedily towards a Griana, who longed not a little to heare from Florendos, whom she had mad Lord of her gentle affections.

## CHAP. VI.

¶ How Cardian recited to the Princesse Griana, what speeches had passed betwene her and Florendos; and of the counsell shee gaue her Mistresse, to conferre with him in the Garden, so soone as hee was recouered.



Ardian thus dispatched from Florendos, made no little haste towards the Princesse, who remained all this while silent in her Chamber; and no sooner perceyued Cardian to enter, but shee determined if Florendos receyued her Token in god parte or no. Beleeue me Madamie answered Cardian, I thinke you never did any thing in all your life, whereby you could obtaine more honour and applause, then by that you vouchsased to do at this instant; so in my iudgement you haue performed a myzacl, in giuting him life that was in the very Gaines of death. Then from point to point shee recounted the talke passed betwene them; First, how shee found him in the middest of his regrets, and lastly, what message hee had sent her.

Thus while Cardian continued her discourse, every word took hold on the gentle heart of the Princesse, and wounded

her

## OF PALMERIN DE'OLIVA.

her with such pittifull regarde of the Prince his torment: as what she desired inwardly, her shadowerd with modestie, as loath to reueue shame in her Loue, haing carryed her selfe with such honour all her life, quoth shee to Cardina. How might I (said Servant) ease this weightie oppression. Very well (said Cardina,) when Fortune allsoeth opportunity. But thou knowest (quoth Griana) a Princesse as I am, to bee scene secret with so braue a Gallant, doth greatly hazard my life and honour. As soz that Madamie, (saide Cardina,) my Sister can better annise you then I, or any that I know: by her meanes may you speake with your Knight, the brauest Gentleman in the world, a one whome I know is so farre denoed yours, as he will rather lose his dearest life, then impeach your honour any way: and otherwise then in loyaltie, to make you his Lady and wife, I am well assured hee loueth not, which loue (Madamie) you may well enterteine. Returne then Cardina, (quoth the Princesse) to my Lord Florendos, and assure him that so soone as hee is well recouered, I will come and speake with him, in such a place where he may safelie aduenture: and desire him as hee loueth me, that it may be with all conuenient sped.

Cardina without any furt her delay, went with this message to the Prince Florendos. Who hartened hi mselfe so well vpon these speches, as within sixe dayes he found himselfe thouroughly amended, whers of the Emperor of Caniano his Sonne was not a little glad: but Tarisius was scant well pleased thererat, soz hee had conceyued a secret ialousie, because he was so earnest in affection towards Griana, who by her mad Cardina had warned Florendos, that the night following, hee shoulde come into the Garden, where into her Chamber had a secret entrance, and there would hee and shee conferre of their loue, without suspition of any. Florendos setting these affaires sorte to so god ende, purposed what ever happened, not to fasse the time and place: which made him thinke this day a yeare in length, so long hee looked and desired for the night. But now the wished houre is come,

C

wherit

## THE HISTORIE

When Florendos with his Cuzin Frenato, (who was priuy to the Princes secret loue) departed from their Lodgings, and comming to the Garden, they saw the Wall was very high, and hard to climbe, notwithstanding, greater things are possible to Louers, chiefly when a cause of such weight is in hand, so that in short tyme Florendos had got to the top of the Wall, and afterward went to the place wher Griana staid his comming, who had no body with her, but Lerina, sicker to Cardina, to whom likewise shee thorughly brawayed her secrets. Hee having espyed them, came and fell on his knée before the Princesse, but shee tooke hym uppe in her armes, embrasing hym so sweetly: as Lerina withdrew herselfe amongst the Tress, not with any intent of feare to displease them, but with a certaine kinde of grise, which overcame her, in that shee wanted a Frende to participase with her in loue, as her Mistresse had, before whom Florendos, beeing on his knée, laid. Madame, by vertue of your commaundement, I am thus bolde to enter your presence, yeelding my whole abilitie to you, as to the divine Goddesse that hath sheld mee from death: which grace setting your Princely nature hath assayded mee, my life for ever hereafter remaines at your loueraigne pleasure: the unfeigned promise wherof, I wende to you by irrenocable bowes, but especially by my faith, the onely ornement of a true knight, that I desire no longer to breathe this ayre, then to honour your name with my continual service: for life without your grace and fauour, is more yokesome to mee then a thousand deathes. But by your fauour my Lord (answered Griana) how, or from whence hath this hot loue sprung, let me know I desire you? Madame (quoth hee) as I haue heeretofore, so at this tyme I assure you, that in my native Countrey of Macedon, I heard the renowne of your excelling beautie, at which very instant, I dedicated my selfe only yours: and ever since continuing in this religius seruice, I haue so confidently set doone my rest, in gracious regard of your sweete selfe, as being yours in seruice, I lie; if otherwise,

## OF PALMERIN DE'OLIVA.

I lie. In sooth said the Princesse, I so then you haue given your selfe whollie mine, and so I am now contented to accept you. Then Madame (quoth he) to seale the assurance of this divine fauour you haue done me, let me intreate to kisse these swete Lippes that deliuered the sentence I haue long looked for. Which so graunt, though for modesty sake, at first she seemed daintie, yet at length Lerine had so surpized her, as he needed not striue when no resistance was offered. Thus with feares and soleinne kisses, they breathed into each others soule the mire arguments of theyr Loue, and sayre Cynthia, amiable fauouring this delicate encounter, addeed such courage to the minde of this louely Champion, as breaking the Laure in the face of Venus, hee breasted the successe of his deuote to the gracious Aspect of that planet. And among a number of soft and sweete louy speeches, hee discoursed to her his talke with the Emperour her Father, how he had requested her in marriage, and how hee excused his consent, by the promise he had made before to Tarisius, through the daylie and earnest perswasions of the Empeselle. Notwithstanding (quoth he) in respect you haue not consented therunto, I hope they shall finde themselues farre beyond their reckoning. Now for the Princesse, shee never knew that Tarisius had laboured to haue her to his wife, because shee made so light account of him, as shee would rather die then consent thereto: wherevpon shee returned Florendos this answer. The Emperour my Father hath reason to thinke hardly of my Mother, and great discredit will it be to her, to procure my marriage against my will, for I never shall I consent thereto: and therefore my Lord I desire your advise, how I may preuent this insuing daunger?

Madame answered Florendos, my advise is layd alreadie, so please you to accept thereof, I will conuer you hence secretly, and before the Emperour or any one know of it, into my countrey of Macedon, where I and mine shall entertaine you with great and reverend honour, and you shall be our gracious Ladie and Princesse. Believe me sayd shee,

## THE HISTORIE

It is doubtfull in such a journey what daungers may happen, notwithstanding, having vowed my selfe only yours, be it to the liking or disliking of my Father and Mother, I hadde rather breake through the straites of a greater hazard, then be forced to marrie him, whome while I live I cannot like: theresbze doe you expect the advantage of the time, and I will aduenture with you whither you please. Madame (answered Florendos) continue you this resolutiō, and referre the rest to my charge, whiche you shall see affected ere th̄e dayes be past: in the meane while I intend to take my leaue of the Emperour your Father, with this excuse, that the King my Father commaundeth my returne home: for which cause I will send my trayne before, reseruing onely bat tenne of my best Knights to accompanie me. For that (quoth Griana) do what you thinke best, & with things happen, by your Cozen Frenato, or my maide Cardina. But now you see the day begins to breake, wherefore let me desire you to depart, that no scandall or suspition arise of our meeting. Florendos kissed the Princesse hand though longer hee would haue stayed, humbly tooke his leaue, and by the helpe of Lerina, hee got ouer the Wall againe, where Frenato stayed his comming, to whome when he was entred his lodging, hee imparted the appointment betwene him and the Princesse, desiring him to discharge his trayne, except ten of his best approued Knights, to helpe him if any hindrance preuented his intent: as for the rest, they shold be going on before, and stay his comming at an approued place, th̄e dales iourney to Constantinople. In the morning he awaited the Emperors comming abroad, to whom he said, that he had receaved Letters from the King returne home: theresbze my god Lord (sayd hee) I desyre to depart with your favourable liking, and in respect I may not contrary where I am bound to obey, I intende to my selfe to set forward on my iourney: assuring your highnesse,

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVE.

that in what place I shall chance to come, I am yours in leall and faithfull seruice. By god Cozin (answered the Emperour,) I give you thankes with all my heart, for the honour you haue done me with your gentle presence; and if you haue occasion to vse me in ought, you shall perceue how highly I loue and esteeme of you. By Lord (saide Florendos) I desire to deserue the great kindnesse I haue loued already: So taking his leaue, the Emperour embraced him, and as he issued forth to his chamber, he met the Prince Caniano, of whom he tooke his leaue likewise; who desired him to staye th̄e or four dayes longer. In which time there came to the Court certaine Ambassadours, whiche the King of Hungaria had sent to the Emperour, to conclude the Marriage betwene his Sonne Tarisius, and the Princesse Griana, the Duke of Gramay beeing the chiefe of this Embassage: Who was accompanied with many Knights and Gentlemen of name and accouint, to whom the Empresse gave very gracious Welcom, in that she had privately procured this their comming. As these Ambassadours entred the geat Chamber, Caniano and Tarisius who accompanied them, perceyued Griana to withdrawe herselue aside, very sad and melancholie: Whereupon Caniano came vnto her (greatly abashed at her angry countenance) and thus he beganne. Faire Sister, now at this time when you ought to shew the most chearefull countenance, you are more sadde then of long time I haue seene you: See thinkes you haue god occasion to be merrie, seeing the Emperour my Father hath prauised you so braue and worthie a Husbante, as is my Cozine the Prince Tarisius, who I am sure loues you as his owne life. Ah Brother (qd. she) I know not what shold moue him so to do, seeing I neuer thought so well of him: and more gladly could I entertaine mine owne death, then be constrained to loue where I cannot. These Words did Tarisius easly understand: notwithstanding he made shewe as though he did not: but going to the Empresse hee desired her to stay there with the Emperour, seeing the Ambassadours were come

## THE HISTORIE

from the King his father, that what was begun as concerning him and Griana, might now bee finished according to his promise. Upon this occasion, the Empresse called Griana aside, and with smooth and sweete speeches began to breake with her, how for her god she had induced the Emperour, to give her in mariage to her Cousin Tarisius, and what honourable advantage shee shoule receive there, by: wherefore sayde daughter (sayde shee) resolve your selfe with chidlike obedience, to thinke well of that your Parents haue determined. All these perswasions could not draw one pleasing word from the Princesse, but shee excused her selfe still, by the desire shee had to remaine as shee was, and rather then to marry shee would take a religioun life vpon her: with which words shee brake into such teares, as the Empresse was constrained to leaue her alone, not doubting to find her the next time in better tune. Griana then considering with her selfe, how he should at length be enforced to yeeld, whether hee would or no, if Florendos did not the sooner accomplish his enterpise: called Cardina vnto her, and sent her with this charge to Florendos, that that present night hee should not sayle to meet her in the Garden, where shee would be ready to depart with him, otherwise he shoule never gaine the like oportunity: with which message Cardina departed.

CHAP

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

### CHAP. VII.

How Florendos came that night to the Garden, to conclude what hee and Griana had intended, and what hapned to them.



Loren dos understanding the will of his Mistresse, with great diligence laboured to execute what they had intended, and taking his leave at the Court, fained hee would returne no more, but take his way straight towards Macedon. Tarisius, whose ialousie increased every day more and more, set priuy spies to watch every night, who went in and out at the Princes Chamber, and albeit of long time his labours were strostrate, yet at length he and his spies perceyued, how hee whom hee most envied, mounted the Garden Wall where the Princesse lay: so Florendos hauing left his company without the City, accompanied with Frenato, and both of them well armed, hee priuily returned againe to the Wall, thinking about midnight to carry her away, for whose leue hee had thrust himselfe into this dangerous hazard. Thus hauing left their horses without the City with their Pages, and being come to the Garden wall, Frenato helping the Prince to get vp. Tarisius and his men, who unhappily lay there in ambush, ran violently vpon him, crying all alonde, kill, kill these viliaines that would dishonour the Emperours Pallace. At which wordes, Florendos and Frenato seeing themselues discouered, presently drew their swordes, and beganne to lay about them very valiantly: Florendos giving

## THE HISTORIE

Tarissis so great a blowe on the head, that hee fell downe to ground as hee had bene dead, and two or thre of his compa-  
nie with him: Whiche when the rest behelde, they gote ouer  
the Wall, and running with great clamor into the Cittie,  
cryed, helpe, helpe, Tarissus, whome Florendos (saking to  
robbe the Emperours Wallace) hath cruelly murthered.

This noyse was heard by Griania, Lerina, and Cardina:  
who were in the Garden steyng for Florendos: Whiche  
did so amaze the hardiest of the thre, as they knew not well  
what countenance to set on the matter: especially Griania:  
Whom this feare had stroken into a dead Trance, but Le-  
rina, and her Sister, taking her vp in their armes, conveyed  
her into her Chamber, and sone after into her Bed, when re-  
couering her selfe, in extreme weeping, thus spake. Alas mis-  
erable wretch that I am, doth Fortune employ all meanes  
hee can for my destruction? Well, let her do the uttermost  
spight she can: for I am well assured before it be long, that  
Death shall triumph aboue all her discartes. Cardina  
seeing her so weape, and wring her handes: and as it were  
readie to fall into dispaire, beganne to perswade her in this  
sorte, Madame, it is no time now to use these extremities:  
for Gods sake fearene to couer your Passions, to the end the  
Emperour may not detect vs, being assured, that as yet we  
were not perceiued: And if you can but content your selfe,  
all this tumult will soone be overcome. I pray the (quoth  
Griania) leau me alone, and goe see (if thou canst,) What is  
become of Florendos: that I may know whether he be ta-  
ken or slaine. So went Cardina, and standing amongst o-  
thers, as one that knew nothing, behelde all. During this  
hote Tumult, Frenato seeing troubles increasing more and  
more, followed the matter with such diligence, as hee gote  
Florendos out of the throng, and the darknes of the night  
was such, as they easily compassed to get out of the Cittie,  
where their Pages stayed with their Horses; whereon they  
mounted, and set on away. But the Prince Florendos would  
many times haue returned backe againe, so loath was he to

## OF PALMERIDOLIVA

leau her whom hee loued so daretly: so being out of al hope  
to see her againe, hee esteemed his life of no value or account.  
In which impatience, he rent his comely locks of haire, and  
haled his flesh with great violence, whereupon Frenato  
thus spake to him. Why how now my Lord: will you  
in seeking honour, waund your selfe with tham: or in argu-  
ing your loue to your Lady, endaunger her life? desire you  
to lese your selfe, and her also for euer? Bewee me Cozen,  
this very hardly besimes you, that the subtil dealing of a  
cowardly Knight, should make you thus to forget your self.  
No, no good Cozen, it is now no time to declare these shewes:  
let vs therelze make spedee to our compaines, and if you  
thinke gud, we will send one secretly backe to the Cittie,  
to understand the end of this troublesome byngle, and we  
in the meane time may set forward towards Macedon. Ah  
swete Cozen (quoth Florendos) you speake as the man that  
cannot comprehend my torment: thinks you it is possible  
for me to live, leauing that rare creature in such perill, for  
whose loue a Hell of grates hath mactred my soule? By  
my knightly faith I swere, that death is a thousand times  
more welcome to me, then to be mistered by this one con-  
teit, that I shoule live an houre out of her gracious seruice.  
Well well Sir (said Frenato) what you may not do now,  
referrre till better conuenience, and let vs set on before the  
day-light desry vs: otherwise, in seeking to defend Gria-  
nia, your selfe shall be witnes of her reproach and condemna-  
tion. Florendos perciuing his Cozen did advise him for the  
best, was well contented to be tyed by him: so givyngh the  
spurres to theyr Horses, stayed not till they overtoke the rest  
of theyr company: when he dispatched an Esquire present  
lie backe to the Cittie, commaunding him straightly to di-  
recte same to the King his Fathers Court, the successe of  
everie thing that happened in his absence.

But now to returns where before we left, Garidian had  
not long stayed in this hurly burly, but shee perceived the  
Emperour was risen, who in all hast caused his Guard to  
armie

## THE HISTORIE

armes themselves to helpe Tarisius: for by this time had the two knights whiche escaped, aduertised in the court, that they tooke Florendos as he was climbing the Garden wall, to go to dishonour the Princesse Griana. At which report the Emperour was so moued, as he wete in great furie to his daughers Chamber, whom he found in her bed, moze likele to die then live: but necessite (whereof many do often make a vertue) made her couer her weakenes with a faire shew of courage, so that when she saw him enter, she wrapped her selfe in her night mantle, and came before him, to whom he began in this furious manner. Thou lead Gyze, dares thou conceiue the thought to do me this dishonour? By my crowne, for this thy presumption, I shall make thee such an example to all other, as thy head from thy shoulders will scant quite thy fault.

Griana hearing him speake so roughly, answered him againe thus mildly. My Lord and Father, I beseech you to pardon me, you accuse me, & I know not whereof: if I haue done euill, it is in you to challice me as you shall please: and if I be innocent, bouchsafe god Father not to condemne mee. Ah varlet (quoth he) this excuse shall little profit thee. So taking her verie rudente, he locked her in a strong Tower, wherof he carried the key himselfe: then went he to Tarisius his lodging, to see how he did, for it was tolde him that he was in daunger of his life: where he found the Empresse heauily weeping, but he caused her to go to her Chamber, and commaunded his Chirurgious to looke diligentlie to his Nephewe, and not to spare any cost to parthase his health. Now because they whiche searched for Florendos, could not finde him, the bruite and rumour was qualifid, and the Emperour went againe to his Chamber till the morning, when the Empresse hearing y her daughter was in prison, tooke it very heauily, and kneling before the Emperour, desiring him that shee might fetch her swaþ: but he was so angry, as her wordes could do nothing with him, yet hee graunted that shee should go see her,

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

her, and tooke her the key: when she entring the Tower, found her sitting on the ground so blubered with teares, as was lamentable to behold: but when she beheld her Mother, she arose, and doing her reverence, could not speake, her teares so ouercame her. The Empresse that loued her dearely, seeing her in this greevous estate, had much adoe to dissemble what shee thought, how be it, after a fewe light wordes passed betwene them, she sait. I am sorrie daughter, that you haue so lightly thronwe your affection vpon a Straunger, and that you forget your dutie, in following your Fathers counsell and mine, who well knewe the loue Tarisius beares you, and no otherwise Daughter, then to take you to his wife. But you (carried away with that losenesse, which ill agrees with your credite and calling) haue rather thought best, to graunt Florendos entrance by your Garden, at such a suspected houre, as while you live, your honour will be hardlie thought on: for two of Tarisius his knyghtes, whiche thought to take the Craytour, are slayne, and my Nephewe himselfe daungerously escaped. Griana hearing him called Craytour, whome shee so hightlie loued, and that shee her selfe was accused, by that whiche ought to excuse her, unanswered. Madame, and my gracious Mother, as yet I am ignorant of the cause, that hath moued the Emperour in such choller against mee: and be it so, this you speake of, in soþe I am offered very great iniurie, for I knowe not whither Florendos, or any other haue entred my Garden: well I am aduised hee came not where I was. These are straunge newes to me Madame, I would rather haue thought him on his way towardes Macedon, in respect of the solemine leauue he tooke in the Court. For my part, I would that the Craytour whiche was the cause hereof, had long since beene buried in the bottome of the See, then he should so abuse the honour of Florendos, with a matter of such villanie, wherein I cannot iudge him faciltie: but were it he Madame, I am at a point, let him die the death, as he hath well deserved, for my dutie to you my Parents hath

## THE HISTORIE

hath taught me better nurture, and loue can be no priuledge to me to fiend. Then god Mother, twit not me with impeach of honour in so innocent a cause, for defence wheeresof, were the death present before mine eyes, I haue so sorrowed as much as I woulde, and am moare readie to embrase it then liue in suspect, so shall my Father and you be eased of prouiding me a Husband. As for the prison wherin I am, I will not denie his fauour when it shall please him to deliuer me: but I could take it farre more contentedlie, to spend the remainder of my following dyes thus solitarie, then to liue abroade misgained on by any. Faire Daughter (said the Empresse) do not discomfyt your selfe in this sorte, the Emperour hadde some reason (in regard of the loue he beares you, and the outragious tumult which happened) to dw as he hath dwone: but I hope in the end all will sort to the best, and that you your selfe shall remaine contented. Many other speches passed betwene them, till at length y Empresse left her and departed, for she thought long till he was with the Emperour, to let him know the talkke betwene her and Griana: which ther did without committing any thing, notwithstanding he was moare fesere to his Daughter euery day after. Then sent he for the Ambassadours and thus he behan with them. My Lordes, at this time I am aduised, that you shall returne to your King my Brother, for in respect of the accidents which you haue scene to happen, I will crave pardon for this time, referring matters ouer till some other time, when things shall fall in better disposition. The Ambassadours understanding the Emperoures pleasure, the next day took they leave toward the King the 22 Maister, to whom they decla red the whole in generall: whereat he conceiued such displeasure, as hee presently sent for his Surnae Tarisius, who had not as yet recovered his health. But hee was so enamored on y young Princesse, as woulde not obey his Fathers command: but soone as he was indifferentlie amended, he intreated the Emperour to pardon his Daughter, accu sing

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

ing his owne men, who vndiscreetely hadde rayled this false rumour of her and Florendos. By this meanez, the Empresse and her Ladies obtained libertie daylie to accompane Griana; but all the night time he caused her to be locked by as closely as before, committing her to the charge of an aged Gentlewoman named Tolomestra, whom he commauanded upon paine of death, not to be a minute of an houre forsooth of her companye.

## CHAP. VIII.

¶ How Florendos arriving on the Frontiers of Mace don, made many sorrowfull complaintes, for not bringing away Griana, according to his Enter prise.



Solone had Florendos & Frenato ouer taken their company; but they ridde on it so much hast (searing to be followed) as at length they got the frontiers of Mace don. And because Florendos imagined himselfe without life, not hearing any tidings from his Mistresse Griana, hee concluded to rest at the first Towne hee came unto, there to expect the returne of the Esquire hee sent to Constantinople: wher returned toward his Maister: soone then hee looked for, by reason of the little abode he mada in the Emperoures Court; for he staid not when he heard that Griana was impisoned, and that Tarisius was not slaine, as his Maister was perswaded. These Newes did wonderfully affre the Prince, as well for the harde blage of his swete friend, as that hee has failed in killing him, by whose death hee well hoped to recuper his losse: all the

## THE HISTORIE

whole day woulde he receyue no sustenance, but locked hym selfe close in his Chamber, and tumbled on his Bedde as a man halle desperate. But Frenato, who woulde not be long absent from him, fearing least his Furie woulde cause him wroke some violence en himselfe, made such meanes that he got into the Chamber, at what tyme the Prince was thus lamenting. Alas swete Madame, was I borne in such an vnhappye houre, that without desert you must endure imprisonment for me? What satisfaction may your Florendos line to make, in requitall of this iniurie? When did you euer merite to be so hardly intreated soz him? Believe me, could you bee discharged so storne as I could wish it, Wolts, Locks, nor Walls coulde hold you a thought while; yet wishing is not action, ebery thing is contrary to me, all helpe refuseth me, and death likewise denyes mee; but by my Sword, (and therewith he started vp) in spight of whatsoeuer, I will deliuer you. Frenato seeing him riste in such a surie, came and tooke him by the arme, demandyng what he woulde haue. Death(qd. he) if I could, for it grieues mee to haue any lenger. You speake very wisely( quoth he in morage) all this is for the imprisonment of Griana: Is it not better shee shoulde be there, then in the custodie of Tarisius? her Captiuitie you knowe cannot long endure, but were shee marryed she could never be recovered. Thereforo, let god hope per swade you, and now send an other Messenger with sped to Constantinople, to know what accidents haue hapened since, and to p[ro]p[ri]ate the meane to speake with Cardina, who will certifie you from Griana, what is or may bee done in these assayres. This Counsell liked well Florendos, wherevpon hee presently dispatched a Gentleman of trust, who with all diligence did execute the command of his Maister: For in god tyme hee arrived at Constantinople, where Griana had liberty to speake with her Gentlewoman: Whereupon when he heard, he was not a little glad; wherevpon hee searched earnestly, till he had found Cardina, to whom he deliuered his Maisters minde, as also in what sadde and

he.

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

heauy plight he left him, desiringe her with all sped to certifie the Princesse thereof, and what seruice shre woulde command him to his Maister. Cardina knowing how glad the Princesse woulde be, to heare these tydings from Florendos, went to seeke her sister Lerina, to whom shee imparted what you haue heard, and shre, well advised of the tyme, and place, discoursed the same to the Princesse, unseene, and not suspected of olde Tolomestra. How ioyl! if shee was of this message I cannot offer, nor you conceyue, but shee was resolued, never to haue any other Husband but Florendos; and therfore to comfort him, shee deuised to write vnto him: that hee might hope as well as shre did: but well shre knew not how to accomplish her intent, by reason shre wanted penne, incke, and paper, and shre was for bidden to haue anie. So notwithstanding, shre so well perswaded her woman Tolomestra, (as leigning to write to the Emperour her Father) shre recovered the meane to execute her desire. Then wth h[er] alowing her selfe apart, first shee wrote a letter to the Emperour, and afterworts one to Florendos, wherein shre desired him not to bee offendred, albeit things fell not out to his liking; for (with the faulders of Fortune) the sad woulde be as pleasant to him, as the beginning had bee vnhappie to them both: Whithal, that as her desirid to prolong her life, shre shoulde do nothing to the prejudice of his own person. These two letters, thus written and sealed, shee called Tolomestra, and gaue her that shee had witten to the Emperoz, desiringe her to carry it presently to his Maister: By whose departing, shee had opportunity to confesse with Lerina: in brefe, shee desired to goe seeke the Esquye, that he might returne to his Maister, with the letter shee sent him: which shre did esequally, and the gentle Esquye made no little hast to his Maister. Who receyving the letter from his mistresse Griana, was not content alone to reade it, but kist, and rekist it, an hundredth tyme, thus saying: Ah swete Letter, written with the hand of the onely fairest Princesse, this day living: And (for her sweet sake will I kepe th[is]) as the  
b.e.C.

# THE HISTORIE

best Token a true Knight can receyue from his Strete.

## CHAP. IX.

¶ How the Emperour promised Tarisus that hee should marry Giana, whether shee would or no: and how shee was deliuered of a faire Sonne, without the knowledge of any, but olde Tolomestra, who had her in guardes.



¶ When the Emperour had receyted the letters which Tolomestra presented him from his Daughter, although hee found nothing therein might prouoke him to anger, sauing that shee earnestly desired him to pittie her Estate, being innocent of any thing layde to her charge: yet hee shewed himselfe more discontented then before, sending Tolomestra backe with this answer.

Say to Giana, that seeing shee was so aduenturous to incur my displeasure, shee shall well know that I will not spare to punish her offence: and let her assure her selfe that I will never looke on her while I live, if shee match not with Tarisus, to whome I haue givene her. All this Tolomestra told to Giana: which rather then to obey, shee desired to dye.

¶ Wherefore when any came to visite her, shee would shew her selfe more pleasant in their company then shee had done, in respect of unexpeted heauines that secretly touched her, sauing her selfe so farre conseyued with Childe, as shee knew no meanes to saue it, and her Honour, if it shoule happen to be perceyued. Yet one onely helpe shee had in this extremis, that beeing so weake and sickly, as the Physitions could not discerne her disease; but reputed her likely to die,

which

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

which shee with all her heart desired, yet doe what injury to her selfe shee could, shee had better health then shee desired to haue. In the end feeling her selfe so grasse and unwealdie, shee durst not leave her bed, but kept it dayly, till her time drew very neare at hand, when the Emperour (by the earnest importunitie of the Empresse) happened to come and see her, bringing with him the Prince Tarisus: who being thus entred the Tower, they found her in such grieuous and dangerous estate, as for all the anger the Emperour had against her, it moued the teares to stand in his eyes, whiche hee shadowed so well as hee could, framing his speches to her in this sort. Well daughter, it likes you to contrary me, in that which concernes your honoz and profite, and without any feare (as is thy dutie) thou hast boldlie refusid the Husband which I haue appointed thee: but (by mine honour) I will cause thre know that thou hast displeased me, soz wilt thou e: not (before I leue thee) I wil give thee to him whom I haue promised. Then taking her by the hand, and causing Tarisus to come neare, hee said. My Sonne, in regard of my word, which I will keepe inuoluntarily, I give thee here Giana, from henceforth account of her as thy wife: And holde thee, here is the Key of the Tower, keepe her in thine owne custody, and hereafter thinke of her as thou findest occasion. Well said Giana that persone shee must obey her Fathers will: wherefore with great wisedome conuering her secret thoughts, with extreme teares deliuered this answere. Alas, my good Lord and Father, I never thought that your highnes would vse such crueltie towards me: as to enforc me take a Husband contrary to my liking, not (my god Lord) but that Tarisus hath much better deserved: but that which toucheth me most in opinion is, that our neare alliance in kindred, is sufficient to continue the loue betwene the King his father and you, without any such needless seeking of newes vnyting. And moeouer, god Father, his education in your Court with my Brother Caniano and me, since our very

D

youngest

## THE HISTORIE

youngest yeares to this present, had beeene of such equall and familiar condition: as it seemes to mee impossible to reuenerate him with that intire dnyt, which women must and ought vs to their Husbands. Wherefore my good Lord and Father, I perswads my selfe (vnder your correction) that you shoule support me in this iust request: the rather in respect of my present estate, which may induce you somewhat to conceine, that the obsequies of my buriall is more likely to be solemnized, then those holy ceremonies that shoule bee vsed at my marriage. And with these words shew polzed soorth such abundance of teares, as the Emperour knew not what to answere: but ouercome with pity, withdrew himselfe, leaing Tarisius with her: whos hoping to haue better words of her, sayde: Madam, I beseech you not to offend your selfe for any thing the Emperour hath saide concerning mee, for I will not any thing to your discontent, and rather would I suffer all my life, then cause the least doubt to incurre your dislike, hoping that in time to come, you will take such pity on me, as being perswaded of the loue I beare you, and the reverent desire I haue to doe you service, you will grant that with good will, whiche the Emperour shewes to gaine perseone, assuring you that nothing can bee more grieuous to me, then the hard dealing whiche hitherto hath beeene vsed towards you. And to the end you may resolute your selfe of that I say, your Father haing deliuered mee the Key of your Prison, and the guarde of your person, I here comitt both to your gentle pleasure. So kissing the Key, he layd it by her, and without expecting any answere, with great truernesse hee departed, leaing her with Tolomestra, so rapte into a flumber of trance as her keeper wold not for pity trouble her. The Princesse in this silent passion, thought that hee saw a fierce Lyon before her, with open throte to deuoure her, and neere at hand shewspied an armed Knight, to whom shee laboured for defens, crying, that for God sake hee would shewd her frant the beast: but the Knight with sternes and angry

equis.

## OF PALMERIN DOLIVA.

comfiance thus answere. I will not defend thee, but with my sword will take thy life from thee. Then hast so much offended the heauenly powers in disobedience to thy Father, as I ought rather to diuide thy heare from thy shoulers, then to hinder this beast from devouring thee. Thinkest thou to contrary their diuins pleasures? Sufficeth not the fault thou hast committed with Florendos? censent the, and shrowde thy shame, in regarde of the straite in thy wombe, whose woxthinesse thou shalt know more of hereafter. If thou doest net, thou diest an everlasting death, from which thou canst haue no meanes to defend thee. The Knight did so affright Griana, as shee promised him to to accomplish the Emperours commandement without sayle: wherupon the Knight and the Lion banished away, leaing her (as shee thought) by a sayze fountaine, enuironed with Trees and diversity of flowers, the sweet sent whereof was so pleasant and oþeriferous, as made the cheeresfull blood to reuine againe in the Princesse, and with breathing soorth a vehement sigh shewawaked, inuocating on the powers to pardon her transgressions, and promising to obey the will of her Father, albeit shew could hardly forgo Florendos so soone. Within two or three daies after, the Prince Tarisius came to visite her, to whom shew shewed better countenance then shee had done: and as they were dîning together in amorous talke, shew saib. Believe mee sir Tarisius, you haue vsed such honest and gentle courtesie towards me, as hencoloth I will give my selfe wholy yours: wherefore being sorry for my long disobedience to my Parientes and you: triumph now Tarisius in the honor of my loue. If these words pleased Tarisius, it is not to be doubted: for soþ whereof hee went presently to the Emperour, and made hym acquainted with these happy tidings: so that (to make short) after many promises and solemyne oþers to the Princesse, not onely to accept her as his spouse and wife, but as his Soueraigne Lady and Mistresse, hee brought her with him to the Emperour, who hearing

## THE HISTORIE

the resolution of his daughter, imbraced her and took her in, so as god conceit as ever he did.

Notwithstanding, Tolomestra was commanded to attend on her still: wherefore Griana knowing her time to draw neare, and hardly could shee conceale her fortune: after many difficult doubts and feares debated in her thoughts, at last shee imparted the whole to Tolomestra. The olde Gentlewoman after many motherly rebukes, for the fault committed, as the danger eminent, thought better yet to cover this misadventure, then to publish that which would displease many, and profite none: so leaving to reprehend when care and comfort was more required, at that instant, the Princesse was delivred of a goodly man child. Thus in the ninth moneth, after the returne of Florendos towards Macedon, on munday at night about eight of the clocke, the Princes had her houre of deliverance: When Tolomestra receyving the Childe, saw it so beautifull and well fourmed, as it grieved her inwardly to think what hard fortune it brought with the birth. For the honour of the Mother could not bee defended, but by the prie of the infants life; wherefore having wrapped it in swadling clothes, which the Princesse had prepared of some value, shee brought it to the sorrowfull Mother, saying. Trust me Madam, it much displeaseth mee that we must thus lose this louely child, whom I could haue esteemed happy, and the mother likewise, if it might live without displeasure: but he sweet babe must suffer the punishment for the offence, whereof he is not any way culpable.

As (said the Princesse) what shall we doe? Would God it were dead, or out of danger: then taking it in her armes, & washing his face with stouds of teares, after many sweete kisses, thus said: Ah my little dainty, and most I needs leaue thee: must the safety of thy life remayne in the mercy of a strange woman, who not knowing thy parents: may deale with thee discourteously? Well, if thou die, thy mother will not belong after thee. And as shee thus mourned

over

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

over her infant, shee perceyued on his right cheare a little marke in likenesse of a Cross: which made her call her vision to remembraunce, and the words of the knight, that promised god fortune to the Childe: which made her conceiue a confortable hope, whereupon, about his necke she tyed a fayre Crucifire of golde. Now was the night very faire spent, and Tolomestra feared they shold be preuented, wherefore (quoth she) Madam it is time to determine of some thing, leue me using I pray you any longer on the Childe, and let me go carry it to Cardina to be borne sooth of the Court. The weeping Mother seeing shee counselled for the best, for her last aduise sealed many sweet kisses on the face of the Infant, and so in great griesse delivred it to Tolomestra, who went and found Cardina, to whom shee gave it, and shee without any farrance mounted on her backe, & not knowing what way shes took, rode on which way fortune guided her. Very doubtfull was shee how to be discharged of her carriage, for shee feared to let any woman in the neigborhould haue it, least so the Princesse shold be discovered: for that it was commonly blazed through the Empire, that the Princesse was imprisoned for the loue of Florendos. At length the day began to appere, when shee perceyued her selfe on a high Mountaine, which was very thicke set with Palme and Olive trees: then she alighted from her Horse, and made a little bed of sweete Herbes, wherein she layde the Childe, hoping some body would passe by, that would take some compassion on it. So committing the tender infant to the protection of the powers aboue, she returned to the City in very good time.

D 3

CHAP

# THE HISTORIE

## CHAP. X.

How Gerrard passing where Cardina had left the child heard it cry, and so brought it home with him to his wife to nourish it.

He Mountaine where Cardina had left the Princesse yong son, was about a dayes journey from Constantinople, and was commonly called the Mount of Olives, where neare at hand dwelt a wealthy Farmer, who having the occupation of the ground greevn very rich by gathering the scutes of the Palme, Olive, Date, and other trees, and like a god husband hee dayly followed his assayres, being named Gerrard. His wife the same morning likewise was deliuered of a Male Child, which being dead borne, caused this good man to walke soorth into his grounds in great heauincesse, for he had but one daughter aged thre yeares, and his Sonne would haue beeuen a great comforte to him. In these melancholique passions, as he went neare the Tree, where Cardina had left the yong Infant, hee heard it cry: whereat he greatly maruailing, approached nearer, and saw the swete Babie pittifullly moaning, wanting the nurture that shoulde comfort it.

He tooke it very tenderly in his armes, & seeing it so swete and louely, was perswaded that God had sent it him, in recompence of his sonne that was dead borne: and so joyfully went home with it to his wife, who was named Marcella: and to her he beginneth in this manner. Behold swete wife, in the place of your yong dead Sonne, God hath this

day

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

day sent vs another, whiche I haue brought you home. Then recounted he to her, how he found it on the Mountaine unnder an Olive Tree: and therfore, (quoth hee) I pray thee nourish it in steade of thine owne, for a godly Childe did I never behold. The godly Woman tooke it, and unwrappling the swadling clothes, saw they were tich and of good value, but chiefly the Crucifire whiche hung about his nekke; whereupon shee judged it of some noble houre, and mourred with pittey thus sayde. I beleue I wot instant, that thy mocher is in no small griefe for the losse of thee, but syng thy fortune hath brought thee to mee, I will solace thee as thou were mine owne Sonne. And from thence forward shee vsed it so soothly, as every one thought it to bee Gerrards owne childe: and bringing it to Baptisme, because he found it so amoung the Palme Trees, hee caused the Childe to be named Palmerin, who grew on in reaues, both in comely feature and gentle behauour. Not long after Marcella brought her husband another son, whose name was Colmilio, and him did Palmerin loue as his owne bo: her, and companion, as hereafter you shall more at large understand: but here I will craue leaue to pause for a while, and following the intent of this Historie, you shall understand how Griana governed her selfe, after shee had escaped this hard aduenture.

So soone as Cardina was returned to the Court, Griana sent for her, to know what shee had done with the infant; to whom shee discoursed in what soyt shee had left it: whiche grieved her as much as the weight of her offence.

Notwithstanding, considering how happily shee had escaped shame and disgrace, from thence soorth, shee dissembled her passions better, and shewed her selfe well reclaymed, as the Empresse much rejoiced therat, hoping now to enbere the matter for her Nephew Tarisius: whereupon one day finding her Daughter alones, shee tooke occasion to conferre with her thus. Daughter, will you now accomplish that, whiche your Father and I haue long beeuen importune.

D 4

## THE HISTORIE

nate for, I pray you hold off no longer, least you draw him into anger againe, which can no way returne you benefite. When Griana heard her mother speake so gently, & knowing well, (that whither he would or no) it must sorte to that conclusion, shee answered: Madame, you haue thought good (v. 1. l. 3.) that I shold match with your nephew Tarisius, I must then by force doe that which willingly I cannot, nor whille I live shall I concerne better opinion: if then (Mother) hereafter our sortunes fall out so contrary, that any misaduenture happen by this your wilfulness, you ned not complaine but of your selfe, being the inuener and procurer thereto. All these speeches of Griana could not alter her opinion, but without regard of any danger, she went presently to the Emperour; desiring him (seeing Griana was reconciled) to end the marriage betweene her nephew and her: wherefore her gane such suddaine consent, as before a feuen night was finished, Tarisius and shee were married together, to her great griefe, as her countenance declared; for when every one were at their feasting, dauncing, and other delights, the wofull Princesse thought on the great iniury she had done to Florendos, accounting her selfe the most unhappy on the earth, and to her selfe thus sorrowed. Ah my deare friend, what will thou say, when thou hearest these tidings, that I am become so false and ill yall to the? What excuse may plead for mee to the? By good reason may I for ever bee excluded from their company who haue kept their faith inviolable to their friends, and continue in perfession of their unchangeable affections; for never did woman commit such treason as this that I haue done: and yet (my Lord) altogether against my will, as my wofull heart may glorie evident witness, which shall be thine white it remains in this miserable body, which Tarisius must now haue, though in iuste it be thine. And in this sort contained her dolorous complaints till night appached, when shee must yeld that honest to Tarisius, which with better will she could haue afforded Florendos.

At ter

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

After the feastes and triumphes of the mariage were finished, Griana desirous to absent her selfe from her fathers Court, because the remembrance of Florendos passions was so greevous to her: desired Tarisius to make short his stay, and set forward to Hungaria, whither the Emperour her Father caused her to be so honourably conveyed, as he seemed the Daughter of so great a Prince. But as she was taking her leave among the Ladies, the Empresse came to her sorrowfullie weeping: which when Griana beheld, she said. Madame, I am abashed to see what heauenes you shew by the departure of your Daughter, to whom you alone haue bane so cruell, as by your meanes she is banished for ever from you and your Countrie: why lament you then, seeing it is your pleasure to make her unfortunate while she liues? I heartilie desire the heauens to pardon you, and that the first selves, hereafter you shall haue of me, may be the true report of my death. This said, she mounted on horsebacke, and without any semblaunte to take her leave of her Father: so being honourableie accompanied, in short time she arrived in Hungaria with Tarisius, whose loue to her so vehementlie increased, as he reputed himselfe the most fortunate Prince in Europe, hauing gained the paragon among all Ladies. Some after the aged King died, by which meanes Tarisius came to her Crowne. Griana highlie scorning such as she brought with her from Constantynople, to wit, Lerina and Cardina, but especiallie Tolomeita, to whom shee very often imparted the whole secrets of her mind, leading so strict and constant a life, as all the Court did wonder at her. But the remorse of conscience, which dayly touched her for the losse of her Sonne, caused her to spend day and night in devout orisons, that the heauens would forget her hatnous offence.

CHAP.

# THE HISTORIE

## CHAP. XI.

How Florendos vnderstood by the Esquire hee sent to Constantinople, the marriage of Griana and Tarisius: whereat hee conceiued such inward grecfe, as he would haue died with extreame sorrow.



U<sup>t</sup> this while continued Florendos on the frontiers betwene Constantinople and Macedo, til at length he heard y<sup>e</sup> Griana was released of her imprisonment: whereupon he was so glad, as now he thought to deale more surely th he did before: whereupon he dispatched Lyomenus one of his Esquires towards her, with a Letter of earnest and intire affection, wherein hee desired to know, if he might compasse the meane to come and see her, and hee doubted not to bring her so secretlie on her tourney, and with so god prouision, as before they shold bee againe discovered, they would bee safelie attayned in Macedon. But this hope was soone frustrate, for Lyomenus, being come to Constantinople, found the mariage betwene Tarisius and Griana consummated: which hee tolde so displeasantlie, as without giving y<sup>e</sup> Letter, or speaking to the Princesse, he returned hastilie againe to his Lord and Maister. Who beeing aduertised of his coming, sent for him immedately by into his Chamber, at whose entrance, the Prince discerned the nelwes by his countenance: whereupon he demanded, if Griana were stke, or how shee fared? My Lord (qd. he) happye had shee beeene, if hee had dyed tenne yeares since: for I doubt ( valesse you armes your selfe with

## OF PALMERIN DOLIVA.

with wonderfull patience) that what is done will highly endanger your person. Why (quoth Flerendos) what is happened? Trust me my Lord (qd. he) the very woorst that can be for you, Tarisius hath espoused her, and (despight of her) the Emperour caused it to be done. No sooner had Lyomenus spoken the word, but Florendos cast himselfe crusellie against the ground, saying. O my God take pittie on my soule, for my body must nedes suffer mis-fortune. At which wordes hee fell in a sonnde, when Lyomenus thinking him dead, ran hastilie and called Frenato: who knowing well the cause of his passion, laboured by all meanes he might to perswade him, but notwithstanding all the intreaties he used, in soure and swentie houres he could not get one word of him, whereupon hee sent for an auncient Hermit neare at hand, whom Florendos made verie much account of: who being come, and applying divers soveraigne heathes to his temples, Whereof the old Father knew well the vertue, at length Florendos recovered his sences, and opening his eyes, beheld the old Hermit, to whom with verie feble voide he said. Ah god Father pray for me, for I fele mine ende nigh at hand. Not so my sonne, sayde the Hermit, what: are you so unprovided of divine perswassion, as you will lose both bodie and soule for a matter of so meane consequence? hast thou lined so long, and yet ignorant of the inconstancie of Women, which is no other then thou beholdest in Griana, & knowest thou not, that as the sayle of the shipp is subiect to all windes, so are their assestions to continual mutabilitie? and knowest thou not, that what they purpose to execute irreuocably, in one moment they are suddenly dissuaded from? My Sonne, beise my counsell, and with as much pleasure learne to forget this folly, as with extreme paine thou diddest first imprint it in thy thoughts. Ah Father (quoth Florendos) never stke in this sorte to perswade me, beeing assured if you knew how things haue past, you would not thus in tearmes disgrace my Ladie: for shee is mine, and Tarisius hath no

## THE HISTORIE

right to her, to whom the Emperour hath married her per-  
son, els wouldest thou never haue broken her faith to me: and  
while I live Father, nons but she can be called the wife  
of Florendos, Sonne to the mightie King of Macedon. The  
wise old Father seeing him in choller, and baying loth like-  
wise to offend the Prince, would no longer crosse him in  
spaches, but fearing to move him too much, mildly thus  
spake. May be (my Sonne) she hath biene deere to you, and  
I would your consent in loue had auiswred your liking:  
but thus to dispaire, and endaunger your owne life, trust  
me it is not well done, therefore I desire you to perswade  
your selfe, and by your constancie condemne her lightnesse,  
takynge patientlie what hath happened. These and such like  
good words vsed the old Fermet, but Florendos would take  
no suidence, neither be remuord from this opinion, soe five  
days while the old man stayed with him: neither would he  
looke chearfully as he was wont, but continued eternallie  
sad and melancholique, nor could the King his Father cause  
him like of any wife, but onely Griana, soe whom continu-  
ally he never left mourning.

## CHAP. XI I.

How young Palmerin sleeping, had a strange vision,  
which prouoked him to know whol he was:  
and of the talk which passed betweene him and  
Dyofena, the daughter of Gerrard.



Almerin being now come to the age  
of fifteen yeres, nourished in the  
Mountaine as the Child of Gerrard his  
supposed Father, well beloved of him  
and Marcella his wife as their owne  
son: grew in stature so tall, comely  
and well nurtured, as well migh

he

## OF PALMERIN DOLIVE.

he be knolone of noble parentage: soz albeit he compained  
with Gerrards Children, who vseyd him after theyz rufficall  
capacities: yet hee desired more to passe the Mountaines  
with his long Bowe, to chase the Beares and Bozes tho-  
rowe thicke and thinne, and to kepe Hawkes and dogges,  
rather then Sheepe and Cattell as the other Children did.  
In these spors he hadde such wonderfull delight, as often-  
times he would come home very late and soze wearied; but  
one time among the rest, he came home so ouerlaboured, as  
he was glad to lay him downe to rest, and he was no sooner  
fallen a slepe, but he was solicited with a mernailous vis-  
ion, the effect whereof thus followeth. He thought (as he  
was pursuing a goodlie Warke thorow a Forest) hee mette  
with the sayest Ladie that euer eye beheld, who sat on the  
slee of a goodlie fountaine, and called him unto her say-  
ing.

We not abashed Palmerin, though I am come scō the fur-  
thest parts to find the in this Country, soz I am wel assured  
that ere manie dayes be past, thy boutie & prouesse shal make  
thee renowned throug the world, soz one of the hardiest  
knights that euer liued. Leane therefore this obscure & crudi-  
cal kind of lifē, & henceforth lise thy mind to high occasions  
which are offered the: and hereof beleue me, as shē that  
loneth the as her own life, beeing deuoted onely thine at all  
times as nature may witnes who hath marked me with thy  
like Charracter. Then shewing her arme, she said. Behold  
in this hand, and on this side of my heart, one like & selfsame  
make, as thou broughtest on thy face from thy Mothers  
womb. To which words Palmerin would haue answered,  
but the ladie vanished away so sodainly, as he could not per-  
ceiue what was become of her. Whereupon raiing himselfe,  
and maruailing from whence this occallon shuld proced, he  
admired the beautie of the Lady he saw in his slepe, which  
was so liuelie in his remembrance, as he tudgeth her present  
before his eyes. But perswading himselfe that such appariti-  
ous happened by idle thoughts, or by some vapour of no es-  
teem:

## THE HISTORIE

selfe: made no account thereof, whereupon, the next night following, the same Lady that appeared to him in the forrest, presented her selfe to him againe, holding in her hands a sumptuous Crowne of Gold, and thus spake. Soz harto (my Lord) the honour which I hold, being given me onely for the loue of you.

In this sort continued this vision for fourteene or fiftene days following, till at length the Lady shewed her selfe very angrie, saying. I am ashamed Palmerin, that you deserve so long to seeke me out: do you think the promises I haue made you are sciculous? No, no, the time and trauaile thou takest (if thou giuest credit to my words) shall make thee know that thou art the Son of a King, and not of the Countrey swaine that hath fostered thee. From henceforth therefore expect me no more in this Mountaine, but if my beautie haue found place in thy heart, seeke then to conquer me, that thou maist be the Lord and possessor of me. Thus departed the Ladie, leaning a desire (more then accustomed) in the heart of Palmerin, who till that time made little reckoning of so high matters, for the Pastorall life haue led with Gerrard and his familie, serched the most happiest to him in all the world, not hauing seene any person of greater calling then he. But now new affections so elevated his mind, as he intended to go seeke her, whom in sleepe he had beheld so often: For (quoth he) if shee assure me to discende of a royll lineage, I may well presume shee knowes me better then my Father Gerrard, else would shee not so often induce me to following fortune, and the god that is prouided for me: well might I be accounted a scule, if I would not aduenture on so especciall an occasion, therefore happen what will, I meane to search thowzow the whole world till I haue found her, and none but shee shall euer be my Mistresse. But how can it be that I am discended from so high a place seeing my Father is such a simple Countreyman? hath my Mother beeue so full of her reputation, that some Prince or great Lord hath to become my Father? Well, I will know of her (if I can)

before

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA

before I depart, and if shee will not tell me, I will search for her that shall assure me. Thus was Palmerin confounded with remembrance of his visions, as from that time he became meruailous penkue and solitarie: then bethought he, how he might know of his Mother Marcella the end of his desire, whereof Dyofena (who loued him dearely) partly aduertised him.

Yau haue heard heeretofore, how when Gerrard found Palmerin among the Delyne Trees, he had a Daughter thre yeeres olde, named Dyofena, indifferent faire, who as shee increased in yeares, became so amorous of her supposed brother, that hardly she could dissemble her affection: notwithstanding, shame and regard locked uppe her lippes, that she durst not speake what shee gladlie woulde, but seeing Palmerin in like sadness as he was, shee imagined that one sickness had broken them both, wherefore casting many doubts as shee lay in her bed, in the same Chamber her Parents bid, shee heard them enter into this discourse. Haue you not seene Palmerin (quoth hee) how heauy and saode hee hath beeene a long time? Me trulie haue I (qd. shee) it may bee that some haue told him he is not your Sonne: so falling out of one matter into an other, Dyofena heard them report the maner how they found him, which shee desired to let Palmerin understand; arose early the next morning, and comming to Palmerin, thus conferred with him. Brother, if you knely so much as I do, peraduerture you would be not a little abashed.

My god siffer (quoth he) I pray you let me understand the matter. In faith (quoth shee) I never thought til this time, that you had bin mine awn natural Brother, but by chunce hearing some talk betweene my Father & mother this last night, I am no other then your friend, and shee y loues you dearelie: which I haue euermore hecherto feared to let you know, doubting y wearines of our cosanguinitie, which I now per ceiun cannot hinder our mariage, if you so I will regrest me of my Father, who I am late will not perille you. And so she rehearsed

## THE HISTORIE

she rehearsed the maner of his finding, which so well liked Palmerin, as he gaue the more credit to the visions he hadde seen, neverthelesse, he thus dallied with Dyofena. *It may be Sister, you misundestood our Parents, my selfe will demand the truth of our mother, if she assure me as you haue done, then will I talke with them concerning our mariage.* So shall you do well (sayd Diofena) to be thow-  
ly assured, yet neade you not report me to haue informed you, least therby you bring me into my Parents displeasure. Palmerin thus leauing Diofena, chanced to find his mother Marcella alone, to whom he said. *Mother, I beseech you grant me one request that I shall demand of you. That will I my Sonne (quoth she) if it be in my power to do. Under-  
stand then god mother (quoth he) that I haue oftentimes  
dysained how I am your son, so that I know not what to say, vntille you please to assure me better.* When Marcella heard these words, she was stroken in a studie: but Palmerin was still so impotunate, as at last she thus aunswere. *In good faith (sayre frände) I never knew thine owne natu-  
rall parents, yet haue I loued thee as if thou were mine own Sonne: and so what wordes Diofena had before reported, Marcella confirmed, taking him with her into her chamber, where she shewed him the costlie swadling clothes that he  
was found in, & the Crucifire likewise that hung about his  
necke, which he intreated her to bestow on him, to the end (quoth he) that for your sake I may haue it while I liue. Marcella would not deny his request, but put it about his  
necke her selfe.*

From which time forward, Palmerin helued himselfe of  
more chearefull disposition, devising how he might compasse  
the meane to go seeke his Fortune, whereto his sundry ap-  
partitions had so often incited him. And as none can shunne  
what is ordeyned him by diuine prouidence, not many  
dayes after, as he was walking alone vpon the Mountaines  
he heard a voice cry verry pittifullie for helpe and succour: whereupon Palmerin ranne that way which he hearde

the

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

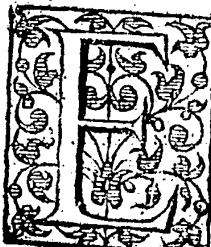
the voynce, where hee beheld a Lyon gradly devouring a  
Horse. Palmerin haing no weapon to defend him selfe  
withall but a staffe, very hardly set vpon the beast, giving  
him such a stroake betwixen the eyes, as hee fell deade  
dead to the ground, then comynge to him, hee heard com-  
plainte, said: I haue my friend in some part revenged thy  
wrong. Alas, sir (quoth he) and had you not beere, my life  
had perisched, soz as I traveled on my trayney, this Lyon  
furiously set vpon me to devoure mee: which the rest of my  
company perceyning, tooke hemselfes to flight, leauing me  
as you found me. The best is, (said Palmerin) that you  
haue escaped with life, and if you please to gée with me, not  
farre hence wher I haue beene nourished, you shall haue  
the best entertainment that I can make you. My friend  
(quoth the Stranger) you haue already done so much for  
mee, as if you will goe with mee into the Country wher I  
dwell, I haue wherelthall to reward your travell rich-  
ly. So it fareth hence Sir (sayd Palmerin:) In the City of  
Hermida (quoth hee) in the Realme of Macedon I dwel, from whence I departhe a moneth since with my merchan-  
dize, which I haue left at Constantinople: from whence re-  
turning homeward, this unlooked for mishance besell mee,  
which had made an end of mee without your resistance. As  
they were thus consering together, one of the Strangers ser-  
vants came to looke him, and finding him so happily esca-  
ped, was not a little ioyfull, reporting that hee had left his  
companions not far off. Returne then (said the Master) and  
will them to come to me to the next village, where I mean to  
haue my wounds dressed, which the servant performed im-  
mediately, & all this while stood Palmerin in debating with  
himselfe, if he shold thus leaue his Father Gerrard or not:  
at length, (after many opinions) fearing if hee returned  
home againe not to finde the like opportunity, concluded  
to depart with the Stranger. So was hee set on a very  
god galfray, and setting forward to Macedon, that night they  
were entertained in a very god lodging, wher the Stran-  
ger

## THE HISTORIE

get caused his wounds to be searched, reporting to every one how by the axe of Palmerin his life was preserved, for which cause hee accounted of him as his swone Sonne. All this while Gerrard and his wife little thought of this mishap, but expected Palmerins returne till darke night, and seeing he came not as he was wont, both hee and his wife finde him, which made Gerrard to question in himself, what euill hee had offered him, that shoulde make him thus depart. Now durst not his wife Marcella tell him, the talke beswene her and Palmerin, but accompanied her husband in sorrow for their losse: especially Dyofera and her brother Colmelio were most sorry, Diofena for losse (as she thought) of her husband, and Colmelio for the company of his supposid Brother, whose absence went so neere his heart, as hee intended never to gue ouer search till hee had found him.

## CHAP. XIII.

How Palmerin went with this Merchant named Estebon to the City of Hermida, who afterward gaue him Horse and Armour to be made Knight.



Estebon the Merchant thus conducting Palmerin on his way, at length arrived in the City of Hermida, where hee was ouerly welcomed home by his wife, both young and beauteous as any in that Country, to whome hee reported his dangerous assault by the Lion, and without Palmerins helpe he had bin devoured:

bye

## OF PALMERIN DOLIVA.

but (quoth he) god sozture sent him at the very instant that slew him, for whiche I shal be beholding to him while I haue a day to live, therefore godd wife entertaine him in the best soz you can devise, for hee hath well deserved it. This speech had the Merchant with his fayre wife, who embrasing Palmerin, sayde: that nature had omitted nothing in her workmanship, making him so nimble, and full of hardinesse. Palmerin seeing himselfe so fauoured of so beauteous a Woman, haing before spent his tyme among shephearde, Swinehearde, and loutish Sivalnes of the Country, with modesty beganne to blush, and was so well vexed with ciuitie to make her this answere. I desire Mistresse that my behaviour may bee such, as may continue my Maiters godd liking and yente towards me. So from that tyme he followed Merchantize, and profited so well in the course of traffique: as Estebon committed all his assayzes to Palmerins trust: who rather gaue his mind to martiall exercises, and followed knighthly dispositions so much, as very nature declared the noblenesse of his mind, for hee delighted to manage great horses, to fight at all manner of wapens, to see dangerous Combates, to frequent the assembly of Knights, to talke of armes and honourable exploits, and in brefe, to exercise all the vianerries of a noble Countier.

Whereat Estebon maruelled so much, as falling in talk with him, he sayd. He thinks it is strange Palmerin, that thou being the sonne of a drudge, and nourished on the Mountaine of Olives (as thy seise hath often tolde me) disdauest the life of a Merchant, frequenting the company of hardy Knights, as though thou couldest take Launce and shield to enter the combate. Byr (said Palmerin) I know not if my Father bee such as I haue tolde you, but I wot wel my heart so serues me, as I can thinke of nothing but actions of honour and knighthood. The Merchant was contented to heare Palmerin in these termes, because hee perceived that his wife fauoured him greatly, whereat hee became a little zealous, and gladly would remoue the occa-

## THE HISTORIE

on, wherefore he said. Seeing it is so Palmerin, that thou hast no mind to follow mine affaires, I am well content thou shalt exercise chivalrie, beynge the thing thou naturally affecest, and whereby thou mayest attain credit and account. So; mine olwe part, because I will not hinder so god soz wardnesse, then shalt haue of me money, horse and armour, that thou mayest goe to Macedon to the King, where, if thou request it of the Prince Florendos his sonne, hee will not refuse to give thes thy order. Palmerin returned him very leerty thanks, and hauing prouided all things expedient for his iourney, tooke his leaue of the Merchant Estebon and his wife, hoping to sped well in his adventurous enterprise.

## CHAP. XLIV.

How Palmerin arriued at the Court of Macedon, hoping to receyue the order of Knighthood, at the hand of the Prince Florendos, sonne to the aged King Primalion, by the fauor of the Lady Arismena



With spedde made Palmerin being depar-  
ted from the Merchant, as on the fourth  
day following, riding by a rimer side, hee  
found a Dwarfe sitting heauily weeping,  
of whom hee demanded the cause of his  
mourning. Alas sir (said the dwarfe) as I  
was riding by the commandement of my  
master, to a Lady whiche hee dearely lo-  
ueth, a Knight euen now tooke my horse from mee, and  
very villanously offered mee outrage, which yet dooth  
no so much grieue mee, (as being thus on foote,) I  
know

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

know not how to get over the rimer. Mount ypperebinte  
me (said Palmerin) and at the first Towlne we came to, I  
will prouide thes of another Hoysle. Then mounted the  
Dwarfe up behinde him, and hauling past the rimer, desired  
to know of Palmerin whether hee traauled: so (quoth  
hee) I never saw man whome had greater desire to serue  
then you. Dwarfe (saide Palmerin) I now journey  
toward the court of Macedon to the King, where I hope  
to finde the Prince Florendos, whiche is accounted one of the  
worstliest Knights in the world, and by his hand ydesire  
to be knighted, if I may. And after you haue receaved your  
order (said the Dwarfe) I hope you will not be so vntothe  
to hazard the aduentures wherin so many haue fayled and  
lost theiur liues. What aduenture is that quoth Palmerin?  
To go to the Mountaine Artisaria (saide the Dwarfe) in  
hope to kill the serpent, whiche hath beens the death of so  
many valiant knighthg. And what occasion saide Palmerin,  
wonted them to fight with the Serpent? That y will tell you  
answered the Dwarfe. The King Primalion Father to  
Prince Florendos whem you seeke, thre yeares since fell  
into a very strange disease, for which no remedie can yet  
be found, notwithstanding, the diligent endevours of the  
Quene and Lady Arismena her Daughter, one of the fal-  
lest and most vertuous yngellettes that euer was heard of,  
who seeing her Father in such dangerous estate, hath of-  
ten assembled the best yngellettes in the whole world, who  
haue practised all possible meanes to recover his health:  
yet hitherto all hath bene to no purpose. Whereupon she  
sent to an ancient Knight, the most skilfullest in the art of  
Sigromancie this day living, who returned this answere:  
that hee should never be healed, except hee be first washed  
with the water of a fountaine, whiche standeth on the top  
of the Mountaine Artisaria, whiche souer times a year  
releaseth three sisters, Magicians of the Isle Carderia, to ga-  
ther vertuous herbes whiche therethay wash, and whereso-  
ever they frame all theiur enchauntments. This place is by-  
sended

## THE HISTORIE

sended by the Monster, whereof I tolde you, that no man as yet durst approach it. Which newes when the Princesse Arismena vnderstoode, loyng by strenght of men to recover the water and vanquish the beast, leauied a great number of Souldiers well appointed, who were no sauer entred the Mountaine, but the Serpent came furiously out of his Denne, throwing fire and smoke out of his mouth, and beating his wings together with such terror, as the very hardiest durst passe no further, but were all glad to take themselves to flight, yet could they not depart with such expedition, but the greater part of them paide theyr lives for their bold attempt. the Mountaine was so stroyed with Lions, Blaues, Cuelles, Harts, Tygerts, Duners, and other wilde rauenous Beasts that devoured them.

Now at length many Knights had tryed themselves in this aduenture, thinking by their prowesse to perfourme more then the other: but al the worse, so not one of them returned backe alike. And why goes not the Prince Florendos himselfe sayd Palmerin, that is esteemed the most valiant knight through al Greece? Alas sir, sayd the Dwarfe, so me other matter hath so downed his mind in melancholie, as he liues like one that despiseth himselfe. Whyle the dwarfe continued his discourse, the desire of honour and renowme did so lively touch the spirite of Palmerin, as he sayd to himselfe. If may be that Arismena was the Lady which in my sleeping thoughtes vissited me so often, if the Destinies haue borsed her mine, why shold I feare the Serpent, or all the other beasts wherewith this Dwarfe dooth so terrible mee? Haue not I slaine a Lyon already with a staffe? Lush, the more danger is in the place, the more honor depends vpon the victory. If I leauie my life there, I am not the ill: If I returne with conquest, I shall bee herend any perill sozture: therfore fall out as it will, no perill shall distay me from glynning the aduenture, wherupon I sayd to the Dwarfe. But tell me my friend, bee that bringes the water from the mountaine to the King, what aduantage

## OF PALMERIN DOLIVA.

tage shall haue deserue? My Lord (quoth hee) it hath beenes many times published, that his reward shall bee the best City in all this Realme. See then Dwarfe sayde Palmerin, one man more will hazard his life in this enterprise, albeit y should receive but thankes for my trauell, will thou goe with mee? That will I (answering the Dwarfe) if you please, and never will I forslake you while breath is in my body. Thus set they on till they came to the greate City of Macedon, at what time Florendos was gone to the Temple in such heauinesse, as ha seemed a man of another world, being accompanied with many Knights, and his sayre sister the Lady Arismena, to whom Palmerin boldy addressed himselfe: and as though hee had beenes a Courtier all his life time, with seemly modesty he set his kne to the ground before her, and thus began. Madame, I humbly beseech you to vouchsafe mee one request, which well you may not deny mee, in that I am a Stranger, as also in respect of the desire I haue to doe you service. And trust mee Sir (quoth shee) you shall not bee refused, what is it you would haue mee to doe for you? That at your request (sayd Palmerin) the Prince Florendos your brother, will give mee my Knight hood. Arismena seeing Palmerin so amiable, and well disposed of body, maruelled of whence hee was, and sayd. In god sooth Sir, such matter nothing appertayneth vnto me, I z (as I judge) such a motion should procede from your selfe: yet taking him by the hand, shee presented him to her brother, saying. I pray you my Lord graunt to this young Gentleman as yet not knighted, the thing he hath desired mee to demand. Florendos hauing not as yet beheld him, looked vpon him, when an exceeding passion, presenting h Princesse Griana to his thoughts sudainely touched him, and being rapt into more conceite of her then he had bene accustomed, demanded of Palmerin if hee would bee made knighth. With right god wil my Lord, quoth he, if it shall like you to doe me so much honor, for above all things else it is my onelie desire. My friend, said

## THE HISTORIES

Said Florendos, it is necessarie I shold first know, whither you be noble borne or no. By God, quoth Palmerin, as yet I never knew my Father or Mother, nor any of my kindred; notwithstanding, mine owne heart makes mee judge no lesse of my selfe, and meze gladdie woulde I do, then do any thing that were not vertuous, and well worthte the name of a Gentleman. And trust me, said Florendos, I am of the same opinion: this night therefore you must obserue the religious watch as is accustomed, and to morrow will I give you your spere, and put the spurre on your hale my selfe. Palmerin on his knee humbly kissed the Princes hand, and continuing in talke togither, Florendos tooke a great delight in beholding hym, so that he demanded his name and Countrey. By Lord, quoth he, ther which sound me amongst the Palme Trees, on the Mountain of Olives, not farre from Constantinople, haue given me the name of Palmerin. By mine honour sayd Florendos, I ought wel to know the Cittie wherol you speake, as the place wherin my darest affections tooke their first life, and not long since, are bequeathed to death, awaiting now but the houre to be discharged of the burden.

Thus having in his company his unknowne borne, begotten by hym on the Princesse Criana, knew little that his loue had sorte to such effect: xnewerthelesse, nature prouoked hym to like so well of Palmerin, as none in the Court contented hym more then he. And longer would they haue continued their talke, but that sayde Arisnena interrupted them, asking Palmerin if he would discharge her of the request he demanded. That do I Madame (quoth he) and in requitall thereof, dedicate the whole circuit of my life to your gracious service: and to begin my deuoir on your behalfe, so soone as I haue received my Knighthode, I will take my tourney towards the Serpent, in hope to byng the wafer that must recover the king your Fathers health. As god Sir, quoth she, God forbid that you shoulde fall in such daunger by my meanea. I know well aunsweres Palmerin,

## OF PALMERIN DOLIVA.

merit that I can die by force, and if it be new then am I dispatched, and if I escape, I shall do that wherol many other haue failed, and this is my resolution faire Madame. Belue me, said Florendos, we thinks you are as yet too yong, to finish an action wherin consists a great daunger, I pray you therfore referre it unto such, as haue had more experiance in Armes then as yet you haue. By Lord, saide Palmerin, in other matters I shall obey when you command, but this I must desire you not to diswade me from. Well then (quoth Florendos) seeing you will haue it so, I am content, you shall in the meane while keape me company: as for sword and armour, trouble not your selfe to provide any, because my selfe will furnish you sufficiently.

Thus all day Florendos accompanied Palmerin, remaunding of hym what things he had scene in Constantinople, and falling from one discourse to another, he asked him what Esquire he had to attend on hym. Then he shewed his dwarse named Vrbanillo, such a dwarse and evill favoured fellow, as euery one that saw hym laughed heartily: whereupon Palmerin said to Florendos. By my saith my Lord, as veramely as he is, I thinke so well of him, as I shoulde be displeased if he were any way intred. Assure your selfe, said Florendos, that he wil stand you in great steade when you haue no need of him, and loke that you leue nothing behinde you, that you neede to fight against the Serpent, and trust it in his discretion to byng after you. When Vrbanillo perceived every one test with hym, hee was halsē angry, and in some choler thus sayd to the Prince. I can no way my Lord, better my shape or proportion, but if I live, this little deformed body of mine shal give you to understand that I haue so god a minde, that wherol my master leaues his life, I meane to finish mine, and though in meane while I can do hym no other service, hee shall be assured of my trath and loyaltie. Be not offended (Dwarse my god friend) sayd Florendos, for I thinke well of thee and of thy behauiour. And so because the Tables were couered for Supper,

## THE HISTORIE

per, they brake off talke, Palmerin preparing himself to his watchfull deuote in the Chappell.

## CHAP. XV.

How Florendos gaue to Palmerin the Armour and Sword of Gamezio, whom he slew before Constantinople, and afterward Knighted him: and how a Damosell came to the Court, who presented him with a Helmet and a rich Shjeld.

**P**er the time being come, that Palmerin should perfore his devout watch in the Chappel, before he received his knighthood, according to the auncient custome, Florendos gaue comandement, that the Armour of Gamezio shoule be broughte him, whiche the Emperour had giuen him, after his conquest of the Souldane of Babilons army on the Sea, as you haue heard before, and these he shewed to Palmerin, saying. My friend, this armour sometimes belonged to the best Knight of his tyme, whome (neuerthelesse) I conquered, being then moze pleasant, toyfull, and at better content, then I shall be whyle I haue a day to live. And because I haue some speciall opinion of your prouesse, and that these ornaments of defence you will better employ, then any other, on whome I shall bestow them: I pray you haue sooth to weare them for my sake.

My Lord, sayde Palmerin, my desire is, that my seruice towards your honour, may bee witnessed in my godly employment of this gentle gift. Then Frenato and ducats of

thee

## OF PALMERIN DOLIVA

ther knights did helpe to arme him, and afterward accompanied him to the Chappell, where all that night he spent in soleinne orisons, that God would endue him wth strength to vanquish the Serpent, that so the King might againe receive his strength.

At the breake of day, as Florendos went to the chappell to give him his order, there entred among them on the sudaine a comely Damosell, bearing a Helmet & a shielde of azier, the godliest and most beautifull that euer was seene, vpon his shielde being portrayed a Ladies arme, haing her hands falk closed together: the Damosell comming before the Prince Florendos, began thus. I pray you my Lord to pause a while, till I haue conferred a little with Palmerin. Florendos was greatly amazed at this aident, in that hee had never seene the Damosell before: notwithstanding he returned this answere. Sayre Damosell, and my friend, god leue haue you to say what you please. The comming to Palmerin, and falling on her knes before him, shee sayde. Sir Palmerin, a Knight that hath authority to command me, and whom as yet you doe not know, hath sent you by mee this Helmet and shielde, wherin you shall haue the very secrets of your heart. And if you desire to know whence this honour proceedeth, it commeth from him who hath proued the effect thereof, and that knowes more of your nearest affayres then you doe your selfe, albeit as yet hee hath never seene you. Damosell, sayd Palmerin, where may I finde the learned man that hath thus honoured mee, whom I may remunerate with my chieffest indeuours hereafter? You cannot as yet know him, saide the Damosell. I pray you sayre Virgin, quoth Palmerin, that you will answer me on my behalfe, how in any place I shall come hereafter, I lemayne ready to doe what likes him to command mee. It sufficeth (quoth she) looke that hereafter you remeber your promise: Then comming to the Prince Florendos, shee sayd. My Lord, the same man from whom I haue saluted Palmerin, gaue mee in charge to say, that you should

## THE HISTORIE

Should not feare or doubt to dubbe him knyght; but to per-  
suade your selfe, that both by fathur and mother hee is so  
noble as hee doth well deserue it, and hym heereafter you  
will loue beyond all other, for by hym you shall enjoy the  
thing you moste desyre and desire. Thus having no longer  
licence to stay with you, I humble desire you to excuse my  
departure. Sweete maide, Iaide Florendos, may your wo:ds  
sort to so god ende, as you haue promised. So departed  
the Damasell, leaing Palmerin on his knees before the  
Princ: who taking the swerd that sometimes belonged  
to Gamezio, knyghted him saying: And mayst thou proue  
as famous and fortunate, as my hope perswades me thou  
wilt. Then was hee honourably conueyed to the Pallace,  
where the faire Arismena unarmed him and couered him  
with a rich mantle of white hattin, imbroadered all ouer  
with sumptuous flowers of gold: beside, no one in the troupe  
but highly reverenced him, so; the waythe report the Da-  
masell made of him. And albeit the Princesse Arismena  
dissuaded him so well as she could, that he should not endan-  
ger himselfe against the Serpent, because by him her Bro-  
ther should ouercome his melancholy, and fearing his losse  
without hope of recouerie: yet needes would he be gone the  
same day, but that her importunate intreatie perswaded  
him to stay eight dayes longer. Palmerin being come after  
alone by himselfe, ha remembred the wo:ds of the Dams-  
sell, who promised him to shew the secrets of his heart in  
his sheld: whereupon he well advised himselfe, and saw  
that the hand portrayed in his sheld, had the same marke  
which the Lady hadde, that appeared to him in his sleepe,  
whereat not a little marailling, he sayd within himselfe: I c  
must needes bee without all doubt, that hee which sent me  
this present, knoweth full wel the scope of my fortune, so; I  
am well assured that the Lady which spake to mee in my  
sleepe, when I abode in the house of my Fathur Gerrard,  
shewed me her hand with the selfe same marke I see haere  
pictred: by which I may perswade me selfe, that shee wil

not

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

not cease to follow and finde me out, but till such time as I  
might speake with her. Whereupon hee found himselfe so  
sudda nly inweigled with her loue, as hee thus complained.  
Ah Palmerin, well maist thou so that long thou canst not  
resist this impression, but whence shoulde this honur pro-  
cede? to loue her thou never sawest, nor knowest whare is  
her abiding? If it fall out that thou diest in the puruite,  
these passions shall soon haue a final end, and I gain y grea-  
test felicitie that I can desire. By this time had he spent the  
eight daies, which he promised Arismena so; Florendos co-  
panie, when as well to begin the search of her hee loued so  
well; as to end the aduenture he intended of the Serpent,  
he prepared to depart, prouiding himselfe a great huge shace  
of iron, which did him god service, as you shall reade here-  
after.

## CHAP. XVI.

How Palmerin fought with the horrible Serpent of  
the mountaine Arteferia, and slew him, bringing  
the glasse filled with the water of the fountaine,  
whereby King Primaleon of Macedon recovered  
his health.



Iight daies had Palmerin stay-  
ed with Florendos, and in company  
of the faire Princesse Arismena, who  
fearing that hee wold never returme  
from the Mountaine Arteferia, was be-  
ry penisive and sad: and oftentimes shew-  
ed him selfe against thos cruel, ra-  
uenous and supernaturall Monsters, but rather to witnessse  
his

## THE HISTORIE

his valour against knyghts of account like himselfe, but all her spaches profted not, for he was resolued to depart. I shall yet desire you, said the Princessse, that for my sake you will take with you thre Esquires which I will gue you, whiche may leue you succour if any inconuenience shold befall you. Then shee called the Esquires, and presented them unto him, with the glasse that he shold bring the water in from the fountaine, if fortune stow with him to finishe the aduenture. Palmerin mounting on horsebacke, and Florendos accompanying him halfe a dayes journey on the way, left him on his tourney towards the Mountaine Artiferia, where hee arrived on the last day of Aprill. Then he comandmented the Esquires and his Dwarfe Urbanillo, to expect his returne at the foute of the Mountaine, for hee would suffer none of them to go uppe with him; so ascended he the Hill by a little tracte sole path, with his yron Mace on his necke, and the Glasse for the water fastened to his girdle. Hauling thus tranailes up till about midday he soun'd the passage so thicke set with trees and brakes, as hee was constraing to alight from his Horse, whome hee vnbieded and left there feeding: and much further had hee not gone, but the night overtooke him, yet did the Moone shone bight and cleare, which made him still tranaile onward, till he beheld the Rocke wherre the water was, and the Serpents denne, wher hee was come somewhat lower to recreate himselfe among the greene hearbes, wher hee had closely couched himselfe. But when he heard Palmerin coming he beganne to swell, and with his tayls together verie straingly: all whiche could not dismay this aduenturous knyght, but comendinge himselfe to God, sette down his Glasse, and with his Mace marched stoutly against his enimie, saying, Why Palmerin? didst thou so often request of Florendos and the Princeesse his sister, to try thy strength against this Diewell, and now thou art come in sight of him, wilt thou faint? Doth it not beseeme the better to die with honour, then to liue with shame? let the one encou-

rage

## OF PALMERIN DOLIVA

rage thee to folloe thy enterprise, and the other kill thee when thou steepest to retiue. And with these words he aduanced him to the Serpent, and the Serpent fiercely began to assaile him, and with his tayle hee smote him downe, but that hee stably prevented the stroake, delivering the Serpent to soze a blow on the head with his Pace, as made him reele and stagger, and cry so terribly, as the whole Mountaine resounded with a maruaillous Eccho, and to revenge himselfe, with his tallants hee got hold on Palmerins Armeour, which hee rent violently in two or thre places, wounding his body very dangerously. When Palmerin perceiued in what hard plight he was, he tooke heart astresh, and wathching his aduantage, strooke the Serpent with his Pace so strongly on the necke, as hee fell to the ground in a knyght dead, and Palmerin pleyed him with so many stroakes one after another, as hee left him not while any life was in him. After this happy victory, for which devoutly he praised God, binding uppe his woundes as well as hee could, with extreme weariness he layd him downe & slept: when he seemed to see the thre sisters wherof we haue spoken before, who were the Daughters of a knyght, lord of the Isle Carderia, to whome none myght bee compared for knowledge in the Magicall science, and so well hee had instructed his Daughters, as after his death they alone excelled in this arte, so that the men of the Countrey commonly called them the Goddesses of destiny, because they could deuine before what shold follow after. And if any one did happen to injury them, they woulde reuenge themselves by theyr enchantments, so that they were greatly feareed and held in reverence. They vsed divers times this Mountaine Artiferia, as well togather Hearbes for theyr necessary use, as also for the Water of the fountaine, for the defence wherof they had left this Serpent, who was in time growen so huge and monstrosus, as hee rather seemed a Diewell then a naturall Beast. Notwithstanding hys hideous soone he was, Palmerin as you haue heard

## THE HISTORIE

heard, ouercame and slew hem, finding the thre Sisters in the maner as I have told you: who were not greatly discontented with him, but esteemed so well of him, as in his shape the eldest of them thus spake to him. Believe me Palmerin, the beginning to so honourable, as great pittie it were to let the die haue, chieflig for the want that all Greece shall haue of the in time to come, the whole Empire whereof is prede-  
vinated thine: and therfore will I heale the woundes thou hast at this time receiuad. I will then do some what more for him, said the second Sister, I will enchaunt him so well for his auile, as haereafter no coniurac[i]on or witchcraft shall haue any power to hurt him. Ceville said the third Sister, for my part, I will give him such fortune, as the first time he shal see his ladie Polnarda, (who so many times saluted him in his Dreames) she shall loue him so intirely, as no dole or torment shall make her forget whil she liues, the happines she shall receive by his occasions. Then the eldest Sister tooke a Golden Cup, and filled it with the water of the fountaine and bringinge the iuyce of certaine hearbes into it, washed therewith Palmerins woundes, so that they were imme diately healed.

Now felte he very well all they did, but his slumber tooke away the libertie of his speach, vntill such time as they were departed, but first the eldest of them thus spake. Since this Knight hath had so god a beginning, and that his strength hath depuynd our guard of our fountaine, I pray you let vs suffer him to haue a glasse of our water, that by his meane the king of Micedon may be healed, whiche a number of other knights haue failed of haeretofoze. Whereto they all consented, and so it came to passe: then gathering their hearbes as they were wont, and washing them, they tooke theyr way to the Isle Cerdiria.

## CHAP.

## OF PALMERIN DOLIVA.

### CHAP. XVII.

How Palmerin discended from the Mountaine, with his glasse, full of the water of the enchanted Fountaine, and how ioyfull Vrbanillo and the other Esquires were, seeing their Master returnde with so good fortune.



When these thre Sisters were departed, Palmerin awaked and arose, not a little maruelling at that hee had heard & seen, but most of all when he felte his wounds healed, and saw his glasse full of the water he came for: so rendering thanks to heauen for his good successe, hee went vp higher on the mountaine, thinking to see the Fountain, but he coulde not, wheresoe without any longer stay hee discended deuine agayn, thus saying to himselfe. How happy may I count my selfe, to finde so god Fortune in this desolate mountaine: for now I know her name that is destinied to be mine, henceforth shall she no conceale her selfe from me, may I finde the place where she abideth, and this I wot by him that made me, that I will not cease to seeke her through the world, til I haire some tidings of her: and were it not for the promise I haue made the Princesse Arismena, to bring her this water to recover the King her Father, this day woulde I begin this religious enterprise, in hope (if the Ladies spake truth that appered to me in my sleepe) hereafter to bee one of the happiest Knights in the world. So walked he on till he came wher he left his boate whereon he mounted, and came to Vrbanillo and his other Esquires, who haing heard the cry of the Serpent, & here

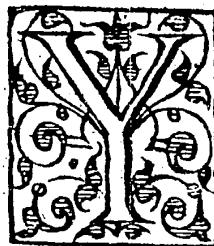
Palmerin

# THE HISTORIE

Palmerin gave him his first strok, perswaded themselves that their master was slaine; but when they saw him coming, Vrbanillo above all the rest was most joyful, and ran apace to meet him, desiring to know how he had sped. Every well I thank God, said Palmerin, who gave me strength to kill the spynker, and to bring sufficient of the water, I hope, to win the King Primalon his health. Then have I the thing, I most desire, said Vrbanillo, albeit I greatly feare, that you had accompaned all the other knyghts to death, that adventured before you, and could not sped so well. So mounted they all on horsebacke, and made so good tourneyes as they arrived at Macedon, wherces Florendos and Iass: Arimena were not a little joyfull, especially when they were assyred, that Palmerin had brought with him the Kings health, by meanes wherenof it is not to be demanded, if he were highly honoured and receyued at the Court.

## CHAP. XVII.

How fourre Knights would haue taken the glasse of fayall water from Vrbanillo, before Palmerin arrived at Macedon, and of the Combate betweene them.



On must here understand that the same day Palmerin, in compayne of his Esquires departed from the mountaine, he sent Vrbanillo the Dwarfe before, towards Macedon with the glasse of water: when so fortuned that fourre knyghts mette with him, one of them saluting hym in this hard reames. Dolorous villaine, gaine me that glasse, and I shall take thy head from thy sholders. Palmerin, who

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

came not farre behinde, seeing the knyghts offer injury to his Dwarfe, gave spurs to his horse, and thus answered: How now Gentlemen? are you not ashamed in my presence to abuse my servant? trust me, I neyther can nor will so put it vpon me to couching his Lance, he encountered me of them so roughly, as hee fell from his horse deare to the grounde. When the other thre saw their companion thus solled, they altogether set vpon Palmerin: but their fortune fell out so ill, as two of them were soone vanquished, and the third took hym self to flight, very hardly escaping. Palmerin made no account of following him, but leaving them rode on his way, his Dwarfe thus coming to him: Believe mee my Lord (quoth he) he is to be accounted ouer foolish hardy, that at the weapons point seekes to offend you: I dare boldly affirme my wordes, by euidence of the fortune of these fourre knyghts.

In that, said Palmerin thou maist be deceyved, but God is alwayes friend to iustice and equity, and enemy to such as go against them. But because you shall know the occasion why these fourre knyghts would haue taken the glasse from Vrbanillo, you must note that they were all Sennes to a great Loze of a Castle, which was a dayes journey off the Mountaines Artisaria, who having intelligence by Shepheards and other pesants, what god fortune had befallen Palmerin to kill the Serpent, and bring away the fayall water, repined greatly thereat; for the Lord did higblie malice the King of Macedon, because he had enforced him to surrendre a Manour, which he against all right held from one of his Sisters, and for this cause, knowing that by the vertue of that water the King shoulde recover his health, he sent his fourre sonnes to take it from Palmerin, whose successe in their attempt fell out as you haue heard. Now Palmerin by this time is come to Macedon to the King, whom with great reverence he saluted on his knee, when the King embracing him so well as he could, sayd. Trust me my god friend, next to God I must esteeme you dearest, for

## THE HISTORIE

that as he by his Godhead hath made me breath this ayre,  
though weake and sickly: by diuine prouidence he hath  
sent you to redore my bodily health, from henceforw  
therto I shal intreate you to command mee and minis  
at your pleasure. O graciouz Lord, sayde Palmerin, the  
heauens give me successe to doe you seruice, for I know no  
Prince living this day, for whom I wold moze gladly ad-  
uenture my life. I thank you god Sir, quoth the King, but  
the greife I haue sustaineid for the sozyme of my sonne Flo-  
rendos, brought mee into such a long and lingering extre-  
mity, as well my selfe the tyme, that by your good suc-  
cesse am so happily delivered: let mee therefore entreatyne  
you as my second sonne, and perswade your selfe of such a  
Father, who will loue you as if you were his own natural  
childe, in that I, and the greater part of my Kingdome shall  
be at your disposition. Worthy Sir, said Palmerin, wort-  
hily myght I be reputed amonge the knyghts in the wold,  
resyng the houair you please to offre mee, especiallie in  
such an extraordinary kind of labour: for the rest, (be-  
ing that accepted in your princely gracie) I haue sufficient  
hauyng saftideth with Isle and Arno to do my seruice.  
With these wrodys the King entreated him, and meete to  
caused the teares to trickle downe his cheekes: so that Pal-  
merin syred longe with him then he made account to go,  
till the Duke of Durace sent for him, as you shal reade in  
the discourse following.

Chap.

## OF PALMERIN DOLIVA.

### CHAP. XIX.

How Duke Astor of Durace sent to the King of Ma-  
cedon, desiring him to send him the Knight that  
had slaine the Serpent on the Mountain Artisaria,  
to ayde him against the Counte Passaco of Meca-  
na, who layde siege to one of his Cities.



So farrre was spread the fame of this vic-  
tory, whch Palmerin had against the  
Serpent, on the Mountaine Artisaria,  
as at length the Duke Astor of Durace  
heare therof, against whome the Count  
Passaco of Mecena waged battaile,  
and seeing himselfe vnable to resist his en-  
emis, minded to send to the King of Ma-  
cedon, requiring ayd of the knight ynew the Serpent at the  
enchanted Fontaine: and hereupon he dispatched one  
of his Gentlemen towardes the King, who made god haste  
till he came thither: when doing his reverence, and deliv-  
ering his Letters of credit to the King, he saide. Deare  
Lord, the Duke of Durace my maister most humbly salutes  
your Maiestie by me. The King having read the Letters,  
and noting the contris, bid the messenger discharge the  
rest of his message. It is to Sir, said the Gentleman, that of  
long tyme my Lord and maister hath bene assallid by the  
Count Passaco, who in such cruell sorte hath warred on  
him, as he hath wellにて destroyed the whole Countrey,  
for he hath taken the Cittie of Mizzara, and against all  
right dooth challenge it for his owne. After this the Duke  
my maister layng his siege to bid hym battaile, for hym

## THE HISTORIE

hath beene so contrary to my Lord, as his noble Sonnes  
are slaine, and þ greater part of his worthiess Gentlemen.  
þet not contented with all this, the Counte pursues him  
will to his very Cittie of Durace, which he hath begin to  
sige so strongly, as he is doubtfull of a further daunger.  
But within these eight dayes he understandeth that your high-  
nesse hath here a Knight, that clew the Serpent on the en-  
chanted Mountaine, in whose valour my Lord reposeth  
such confidence, as would you graunt him licence to come  
thither, my Lord will accompany him with so many har-  
die men at Armes, as hee doubts not to enfoaze the Counte  
to leaue his Countrie: and for that the matter requireth ex-  
pedition, he desires your assistance with all possible spedde.  
I am sorry, quoth the King, that the Duke my Nephew is  
in such extremitie, and I promise you I did not thinke as  
yet to part with Palmerin: but seeing the necessitie is so  
brjerit, I will intreate him to go with you, and so manie  
aproued Knights with him, as the Count shall perceiue  
I am not well pleased with his hard dealing towardees my  
Nephew. Now was Palmerin present when the Gentle-  
man deliuered his message, which pleased him not a little,  
because hee would gladdie leaue the King to follow his for-  
tune, and was thus held from his desire by importunate re-  
questes: but seeing the King had graunted to send him to  
the Duke, he fell on his knes, vasing these speeches. In re-  
spect of my god Lord, that the Duke your Nephew hath þz  
gent accasen to imploy me, and in that his sute is onely for  
me, without any other of your people, I beseech you suffer  
me, to go alone to him, for my hope is so god, in a cause of  
truth and right, that tree shall be sufficient there to ende  
the contenturie. Not so my god friend Palmerin, sayde the  
King you shall not hazarde your selfe alone, but take such  
company as I shall send with you. My Lord, quoth Pal-  
merin, hee demandes mee without any other company,  
and therefore let mee persuade you to satisfie your request:  
so turning to the Gentleman, he bid him prepare to set for-  
ward,

## OF PALMERIN DOLIVA.

ward, for he was readie. To this Sir, answered the Mes-  
senger, with what expedition you please, for never was  
Knight expected with more earnest longing for, then you  
are. This suddaine resolution of Palmerin displeased Flo-  
rendos: wherefore taking him aside, he said. Sir then my  
deare frände, you will needes bee gone, albeit your compa-  
nie hath giuen me greater solace & delight, then any thing  
else since I lost mine onely content: yet is my regarde of  
your honour such, þ I feare more to heare your misfortune,  
then a pittie þ necessitie of my Cozin the Duke of Durace.  
Yet let me intreate you, that finishing your intent with  
fortunate successe, you make your present returne to the  
King my Father, whose loue, and whose liberalitie you  
neede not doubt off. My Lord (quoth Palmerin) the King  
and you haue so highlie honoured mee, as wherefore I  
shall come heerafter, I tell you in my verie vittermost en-  
denours.

These wordes bid Ptolomey heare, the Sonne of Frena-  
to, whom Florendos had kept since þ time he was his page,  
and was now old enough to receyue the knighthood; which  
made him desirous to purchase honour by some meane, e-  
specially if the King would moue Palmerin to take him  
with him, his request he perswaded himselfe would not bee  
denied, whereupon, kneeling before the King, he beganne  
thus. If it please your highnesse, that at your handes I  
myght receiue the order of knighthood, before Palmerin  
departed from your Court, I am assured he would not dis-  
daine me for his compaion, especially if your Majestie did  
moue the question on my behalfe. Beloue me, quoth the  
King so good a motion shal not be hindred by me, & there-  
fore to morrow will I give you your order, and such armes  
as shall well besee me a Knight, prepare you in meane time  
to performe your watch. Highly cauerted was Ptolome  
at these speeches, and gaue order for his maner of neede-  
full occassions, till euening came, when he entered the Chap-  
pell, where he spent the night in devout vissions, that heaven

## THE HISTORIE

would so further y whole course of his time, as might stand with the advancement of justice and his owne huncz. Carle in the moring, the king accompanied with his Sonne Florendos and many other knyghtes, entered the Chappell, where finding Ptolome on his knes, he gaue him his knyghtode, wishing his fortune to proue such as might make him famous wheresover hee came: afterward he deuised Palmerin, that this new knyght might beate hym compaニー in his travails, whereto Palmerin willingly consented, accepting se weyl of Ptolomes behauiour, as hee purposed thenceforward not to for sake so good a companion. Then they both tooke theyr leaue of the King and Florendos, and departed with the Gentleman towardes the Duke of Durace, making such goderpedition in theyr iourney, as hauing crost the Seas with a prosperous winde, they landed in the Countrey of Durace. Now because the Cittie was besieg'd on all sides, they were doubtfull how to gette in vnsene of the enemie: whiche the Gentleman their guide, perfoymed so well, as by p[ro]p[ri]etate signes made to the Sennell, at length they got in without any danger. The Duke hearing tynges of their arrial, left his Chamber and came to welcome Palmerin, whome hee entertained with great honour, spending the most part of the night in familiar conseruence with hym, till having brought hym to his Chamber, hee left them both to their god rest, till the next morning, when hee came agayne to visite them, thus saluting Palmerin.

Yours arriall, Sir knyght, doth arme me with such assured hope, as by the helpe I shall receive at your hanter, mine enemie (I trust, hal not overbaue me as he hath done hitherto: and therfore you with your worthe companion, are both so welcome as you can beline. Sir Lord, (quoth Palmerin) the King that sent me to you, hath bound me to hym by so manie courtesies, as so the toue of hym and Florendos his Sonne, you may assure your selfe of my fittermost seruice, so long as I shall be able to holde my swerd.

The

## OF PALMERIN DOLIVA.

The Duke returned his noble offer many thanks, and walked into the Hall, the Duchesse there expected the comming of Palmerin: so after many welcomes and courtly embracings, the Tables being couered, they sate downe to dinner: al whiche time, Palmerins eyes were fyring on the Duchesse Daughter, who was one of the fairest Virgins that ever he saw, and so busied was his thoughts in beholding her, as hee gaue small regard to the Dukes words, who reported what shamefull iniuryes the Court had offered hym from tyme to tyme, and how many skirmishes had passed betwix them since the beginning of the warrs. Thus spent they the dinner tyme, till the Tables beeing withdrawne, the Duchesse with her Daughter were gone into their Chamber, and the Duke questioned with Palmerin as concerning Ptolome, who was very neare allied to the Duke; and so with discoursing of nouels of Macedon, also the doubtfull affaires of the warrs, they passed the whole day till night came: when Palmerin and Ptolome departing to their Chamber, Palmerin could take no rest, the beautie of the Duchesse Daughter so troubled his thoughts, whiche made him desirous to know her name, if this were shee the thre Sisters spake of on the Mountaine, and was beside prouised hym in his sleeping visions. Palmerin was not alone thus passionate, but on the other side the young Lady became as amorous of hym: but fortune would not permit their loue, as you shall here moze hereafter. The Count having al this while maintained very straignt siege, intending now to loose or gaine al, gaue fierce assaile upon the Cittie, first calling all the chescast Lozdes and Captaunes of his Arme, mouing them with earnest and Soldierlike periwassons, to forsee the advantages, and to encounter their enemie with magnanimitous and resolute courage. When he had thus imboldened his men to the fight, with sound of Drums, Trumpets, and Clarions they had the Cittie battaille: then might they behold how they besirred themselves with fragots to fill the Ditches,

and

## THE HISTORIE

and Trenches, sat scaling ladders to the walles, halfe the one side assaulted and the other defended, that may lost their life or departed maimed: such hanocke did Palmerin and Ptolome with the Dukes power, make on theyrennies, notwithstanding they were in number farre beyond them, and maruaillous well provided of all necessaries. But then Palmerin remembred a sodaine politis to prevent a mischefe, for as the enemis retires to prepare for the second assault, hee called the most part of the best knyghts that the Duke had, willing each one to betake himselfe to his horse and follow him, leauing the rest well appointed for defense of the wals. The Countes power sounding the alarme and comming roughly againe vpon the Cittie, Palmerin with his companie priuily issued forth at the Posterne gate on the backs of their enemies, and gaue such a blauie onset, as they were enforced to forfiske their scaling ladders of resist this encounter. There were many stroakes deliuered on either side, the Counte and most part of his knyghts beeing on horsebacke, whiche made them holde the longer play with Palmerin and his men: notwithstanding, the Counte fayng such a hardy attempt gauen on a sodaine, and doulting fresh supple would come from the Cittie, with feare beganne to retorne, and with one of his syrthzen laboured to resist this sharpe assault: but Palmerin and his companie gaue them small time to rest, laying on loade with maruaillous fiercenesse, wherewith the Counte was so offendid, as comming to Palmerin, hee gaue him such a cruell stroake on the helmet, as he fell therewith to the ground, yet did hee quickly recover himselfe againe, and required the Counte with to sound a salutation, as he made him tumbler from his saddle headlong to the earth, at what time on the other side Ptolome had so canuized the Counte brother as yee see: let him a equitance with his sword for his life. Then began the Counte knyghtours to dispaire for their successe, and Palmerin with his traine to follow them so closely, as they were glad to take hem: lass to flight, leauing they

Maister

## OF PALMERIN DOLIVA.

Maister ouerthroned in the Armeis, wher he was troden to death with the trampling of the Horses. Thus did the victorie remaine to the Duke, his enemis scattered in flight glad to save their lives, whome Palmerin commandid to follow no further, least gathering themselves together againe, and espying aduantage, they might so crudall get them: so oftentimes the vanquished too narrowly pursued, recover courage and daunt the pride of the conquerers. For this cause he returnes with his men into the Cittie: the Duke understanding the force of his enemis, which made him with a great number of worthy Citizens to go meete Palmerin and Ptolome, whom traving he thus entainered. Sir good knyghts, by yee is my estate recovered, and the death of my Sonnes revenged on the murderer, therefora dispole of mee and mine what you thinke best: to which wordes Palmerin thus answered. My Lord, let heauen haue this honour of our victori: as for me I haue done, and will haue easter what I can, for the great kindnesse of the King of Macedon your buckis, whos hath honoured me in sending me to you, and other recompence I never did or will sike. As they thus parled together, the Duke perceiued by the bloud on Palmerins Armour, that he was wouned in many places: wherefore (quoth he) I see you are so sore wraues, let vs make haste to our Pallace, wher a Lady attening on the Duchesse, and well seene in chirurgerie, shall give attendance on you till you are recovered. So mounting on horsebacke they rode to the Pallace, wher Palmerin was lodged. Being brought into his Chamber, the Duchesse and her daughter holpe to braine him, when the Ladie dressed his wounds, persuading him there was no danger in them to be feared. Thus each one departing, Laurana and the Duchesses daughter called Urbanillo the Dwarfe saying to him. My friend, desire thy Maister to make bold of any thing hee wants, and that for my sake he will dispaire of nothing. Urbanillo, sayde the Dwarfe, you haue god reason to wish thy maister well, as well for

the

## THE HISTORIE

that as he by his Godhead hath made me breath this ayre,  
though weake and sickly: by diuine prouidence he hath  
sent you to reloze my bodily health, from hencefor. h  
therfore I shal inrete you to comiunynd mee and mine  
at your pleasure. My gracious Lord, sayde Palmerin, the  
heauens gne me successe to doe you seruice, for I know no  
Prince living this day, for whom I wold moze gladly ad-  
venture my life. I thank you god Sir, quoth the King, but  
the griefe I haue sustained for the sorte of my sonne Flo-  
rendos, by you shal mee into such a long and lingering extre-  
mity, as well may I blesse the tyme, that by your good suc-  
cesse am so happily deliuereed: let mee therefore entercayne  
you as my second soane, and perswade your selfe of such a  
Father, who will loue you as if you were his own natural  
childe, in that I, and the greater part of my Kingdome shall  
be at your dispation. Worthy Sir, sayd Palmerin, wot  
thilp might I be reputed amang the knyghts in the world,  
resyng the honour you please to offre mee, especiallie in  
such an extraordinary kind of fauour: for the rest, (bea-  
ing thus accepted in your princely grace) I haue sufficient  
being furnished with Huse and Armoar to do mee seruice.  
With these woordes the King emraced him, and meete for  
causa the teares to trickle downe his cheeke: so that Pal-  
merin layed longer with him then he made account to do,  
till the Duke of Durace sent for him, as you shal reade in  
the discourse following.

Chap.

## OF PALMERIN DOLVA.

### CHAP. XIX.

How Duke Astor of Durace sent to the King of Ma-  
cedon, desiring him to send him the Knight that  
had slaine the Serpent on the Mountain Artisaria,  
to ayde him against the Counte Passaco of Meca-  
na, who layde siege to one of his Cities.



So farre was spread the fame of this vic-  
tory, whch Palmerin had against the  
Serpent, on the Mountain Artisaria,  
as at length the Duke Astor of Durace  
heare thereof, against whome the Count  
Passaco of Mecena wayed battaile,  
and saing himselfe vnable to resell his  
neene, minded to send to the King of Ma-  
cedon, requiring ayd of the knight y flied the Serpent at the  
enchanted fountaine: and hereupon he dispatched one  
of his Gentleman towarde the King, who made god haſte  
till he came thither: when doyng his reverence, and deliue-  
ring his Letters of credit to the King, he saide. Deade  
Lord, the Duke of Durace my maister vost humbly salutes  
your Highnes by me. The King haſting read the Letters,  
and noting the contents, bid the messenger discharge the  
rest of his message. It is so Sir, said the Gentleman, that of  
long time my Lord and maister hath beene assualted by the  
Count Passaco, who in such exzell sorte hath warred on  
him, as he hath wellnere destroyed the whol Country,  
for bee hath taken the Cittie of Mizzara, and against all  
right earth challenge it for his owne. After this the Duke  
my maister layng his siege to bid hym battaile, Fortune

## THE HISTORIE

hath beeene so contrary to my Lord, as his noble Sonnes  
are slaine, and þ greater part of his worthiell Gentlemen.  
Yet not contented with all this, the Counte pursues him  
full to his very Cittie of Durace, which he hath begin with  
Siege so strongly, as he is doubtfull of a further daunger.  
But within these eight dayes he understandeth that your high-  
nesse hath heere a Knight, that slew the Serpent on the en-  
chanted Mountaine, in whose valour my Lord reposes  
such confidence, as would you graunt him licence to come  
thither, my Lord will accompanie him with so many har-  
die men at Armes, as hee doubts not to enforc the Counte  
to leauue his Countrie: and for that the matter requireth ex-  
pedition, he desires your assistance with all possible sped.  
I am sorry, quoth the King, that the Duke my Nephew is  
in such extremitie, and I promise you I did not thinke as  
yet to part with Palmerin: but seeing the necessarie is so  
vrgent, I will intreate him to go with you, and so manie  
approued Knights with him, as the Count shall perceiue  
I am not well pleased with his hard dealing towardes my  
Nephew. So lo was Palmerin present when the Gentle-  
man delivred his message, which pleased him not a little,  
because hee would gladlie leane the King to follow his for-  
tune, and was thus held from his desire by importunate re-  
quesstes: but seeing the King had graunted to send him to  
the Duke, he fell on his knes, vng these speeches. In re-  
spect of my god Lord, that the Duke your Nephew hath by-  
gent accasione to employ me, and in that his sute is onely for  
me, without any other of your people, I beseech you suffer  
me, to go alone to him, for my hope is so god, in a cause of  
truth and right, that there shall be sufficient there to ends  
the controvercie. Not so my god friend Palmerin, sayde the  
King you shall not haue your selfe alone, but take such  
company as I shall send with you. My Lord, quoth Pal-  
merin, hee demandes mee without any other company,  
and therefore let mee perswade you to satisfie your request:  
so turning to the Gentleman, he bid him prepare to set for-  
ward,

## OF PALMERIN DOLIVA.

ward, for he was readie. Warthie Sir, answered the ges-  
senger, with what expedition you please, for never was  
Knight expected with more earnest longing for, then you  
are. This sudaine resolution of Palmerin displeased Flo-  
rendos: wherefore taking him aside, he said. I see then my  
deare frende, you will needes bee gone, albeit your compa-  
nie hath giuen mee greater solace þ delight, then any thing  
else sines I lost mine onely content: yet is my regarde of  
your honour such, þ I feare more to heare your misfortune,  
then I pittie þ necessarie of my Cozin the Duke of Durace.  
Yet let me intreate you, that finishing your intent with  
fortunate successe, you make your present returne to the  
King my Father, whose loue, and whose liberalitie you  
neede not doubt off. My Lord (quoth Palmerin) the King  
and you haue so highlie honoured mee, as wheresoever I  
shall come heereafter, I rest yours in my verie uttermost en-  
deours.

These wordes bid Ptolomee heare, the Sonne of Frena-  
to, whom Florendos had kept sinis þ time he was his page,  
and was now olde enough to receyue the Knighthood; which  
made him desirous to purchase honour by some meane, es-  
pecially if the King would moue Palmerin to take him  
with him, his request he perswaded himselfe would not bee  
denied, whereupon, kneeling before the King, he beganne  
thus. If it please your highnesse, that at your handes I  
might receive my order of knighthood, before Palmerin  
departed from your Court, I am assured he would not dis-  
daine me for his companion, especially if your Majestie did  
move the question on my behalfe. Beseeche me, quoth the  
King so good a motion shall not be hindred by me, & there-  
fore to morrow will I give you your order, and such armes  
as shall well beseeme a Knight, prepare you in meane time  
to perforne your watch. Highly contented was Ptolomee  
at these speeches, and gave order for his provision of needes-  
full occasions, till evening came, then he entered the Chap-  
pell, where he spent the night in devout orisons, that heauen

## THE HISTORIE

would so further þ whyle course of his time, as might stand with the advancement of justice and his swine honoꝝ. Carlie in the morning, the king accompanied with his Sonne Florendos and many other knyghtes, entered the Chappell, where finding Ptolome on his knes, he gave him his knyghtheede. wishing his ffortune to yowen such as myght make him farrous wher ever hee came: afterward he desyred Palmerin, that this new knyght myght beare him company in his trauailes, whereto Palmerin hoolyngly consented, accepting so well of Ptolomes behauour, as he purposed thence forward not to forſake so god a companion. Then they bath toke theyr leaue of the King and Florendos, and departed with the Gentleman towardes the Duke of Durace, making such god expedition in theyr iourney, as hauing croſſ the ſeaſ with a proſperous winde, they landed in the Countrey of Durace. Now becauſe the Cittie was beſieged on all ſides, they were doubtfull how to gette in vifone of the enemie: whiche the Gentleman their guide, performed ſo well, as by priue ſigues made to the Gentilneſſ, at length they got in without any danger. The Duke hearing tydings of their arriuall, left his Chamber and came to welcome Palmerin, whome hee entertained with great honour, ſpending the moſt part of the night in familiar conſeruence with him, till having brought him to his Chamber, hee left them both to their god reſt, till the next moring, when he came agayne to viſite them, thus ſaluting Palmerin.

Yours arriuall, Sir knyght, doth arme me with ſuch assured hope, as by the helpe I ſhall receiue at your hance, mine enemie (I truſt, hal not ouerbaus me as he hath doone hitherto) and therefore you with your woorde companion, are both ſo welcomme as you can beſtue. Sir Loꝝ, (quoth Palmerin) the King that ſent me to you, hath bound me to him by ſo manie courfies, as ſo the loue of him and Florendos his Sonne, you may affiue your ſelue of my after-maſt ſeruice, ſo long as I ſhall be able to holde my ſword.

The

## OF PALMERIN DOLIVA.

The Duke returned his noble offer many thanks, and walked into the Hall, the Duchelle there expeſed the coming of Palmerin: ſo after many welcomes and courtly embrazings, the Tables being couered, they ſate downe to Dinner: at which time, Palmerins eyes were fixyng on the Duchelle Daughter, who was one of the faireſt Virgins that euer he ſaw, and ſo buſied was his thought in beholding her, as he gave ſmall regard to the Dukes words, who reported what ſhamefull injuries the Court had offered him from time to time, and how many ſkirmiſhes had paſſed betwixne them ſince the beginning of the warres. This ſpent they the Dinner time, till the Tables beeing withdrawne, the Duchelle with her Daughter were gone into their Chamber, and the Duke questioned with Palmerin as concerning Ptolome, who was very neare allied to the Duke: and ſo with diſcourſing of nouels of Macedon, alſo the doubtfull affaires of the warres, they paſſed the whole day till night came: when Palmerin and Ptolome departing to their Chamber, Palmerin could take no reſt, the beautie of the Duchelle Daughter ſo troubled his thoughts, which made him deſtrous to know her name, if this were ſhee the three Sisters ſpake of on the Mountaine, and was beſideþ ouailed him in his ſleeping viſions. Palmerin was not alone thus paſſionate, but on the other ſide the young Lady became as amorous of him: but ſortane would not permit their loue, as you ſhall heare more hereafter. The Count having all this while maintained very ſtraight ſiege, intenciong neþer to loſe or gaine a l, gave ſtice affaile upon the Cittie, ſir calling all the cheueſt Loꝝdes and Captaينes of his Armie, mouing them with earnest and Soldierlike perſuasions, to forſake the aquantages, and to encouer their enemie with magnanimitous and reſolute couraſe. When he had thus imboldened his men to, the fight, with ſound of Drums, Trumpets, and Clarions they had the Cittie battle: then myght they behold how they beſtred themſelues with ſtagots to fill the Ditches,

and

## THE HISTORIE

and Trenches, sat scaling ladders to the walles, hew the one side assaulted and the other defended, that many lost their life or departed maimed; such hanocke did Palmerin and Ptolome with the Dukes power, make on theyr enemies, notwithstanding they were in number farre beyond them, and marueilous well provided of all necessaries. But then Palmerin remembred a sodaines politic to prevent a mischefe, for as the enemie retires to prepare for the second assault, hee called the most part of the best knights that the Duke had, willing each one to betake himselfe to his horse and follow him, leaving the rest well appointed for defense of the wals. The Countes power sounding the alarme and comming roughly agayne uppon the Cittie, Palmerin with his companie priuily issued forth at the Posterne gate on the backs of their enemies, and gaue such a braue onset, as they were enforced to forfaine their scaling ladders to resist this encounter. There were many stroakes delivered on either side, the Counte and most part of his knights being on horsebacke, which made them holde the longer play with Palmerin and his men: notwithstanding, the Counte gaue such a hardy attempt gaue on a sodaine, and doulting fresh supple would come from the Cittie, with feare beganne to retire, and with one of his Wythren laboured to resist this sharpe assault: but Palmerin and his companie gaue them small time to rest, laying on loades with marueilous fiercenesse, wherewith the Counte was so offendred, as comming to Palmerin, hee gaue him such a cruell stroake on the Helmet, as he fell therewith to the ground, yet did hee quickly recover himselfe againe, and required the Counte which so sound a salutation, as he made him tumble from his saddle headlong to the earth, at what time on the other side Ptolome had so canuized the Counte brother as hee seale to him a equitance with his sword for his life. When began the Counte to adicours to dispaire for their successe, and Palmerin with his traine to follow them so closely, as they were glad to take them: lass to flight, leauing theyr

Gaister

## OF PALMERIN DOLIVA.

Gaister ouerthowme in the Arme, where he was stroken to death with the trampling of the Horses. Thus did the victorie remaine to the Duke, his enemis scattering in flight glad to save their lives, whome Palmerin commanede to follow no further, least gathering themselves togerther againe, and espying advantage, they might so enbauger them: so oftentimes he vanquished so narrowly pursued, recover courage and vant the pride of the conquerors. For this cause he returned with his men into the Cittie: the Duke understanding the soyle of his enemie, which made him with a great number of worthy Citizens to go meete Palmerin and Ptolome, whom in huzing he thus entreated. Oh good Knights, by you to my estate recovered, and the death of my Sones revenged on the murderer, therefore dispole of mee and myne what you thinke best: to which words Palmerin thus answere. My Lord, let heauen haue this honour of our victorys as for me I haue done, and will haue a strett what I can, for the great kindness of the King of Macedon your brichls, who hath honoured me in sending me to you, and other recompence I never did or will seeke. As they thus parled together, the Duke perceiued by the blood on Palmerins Armeour, that he was wouned in many places: wherfore (quoth he) I see you are soye wounded, let vs make haste to our Vallate, where a Lady attending on the Duchesse, and well seene in chirurgrie, shall give attendance on you till you are recovered. So mounting on horsebacke they rode to the Vallate, where Palmerin was lodged. Being brought into his Chamber, the Duchesse and her daughter holpe to unarne him, when the Ladie dressed his wounds, persuading him there was no danger in them to be feare. Thus each one departing, Laurana and the Duchesse daughter called Urbanillo the Dwarfe saying to him. My friend, desire thy Gaister to make hede of any thing hee wants, and that so, my lase he will dispaire of nothing. Madame, sayde the Dwarfe, you haue god reason to wyl my master well, as well for

## THE HISTORIE

the god assistance he gaue the Duke your father, as also in respect of his deserts, which are as honourable as any that ever came in this court. These wrynges Palmerin very well heard, hauing his eye continually on her: wherefore when sh: and all the other were departed, hee called Urbaino, demanded what talke hee had with the Princesse, which he reported and his answere also. Gramercies sayd Palmerin, I pray thee finde the meane to let her know that I am her servant and knight, ready to accomplish any thing that shee shall command me. Reserve this matter to mee *Sez quoth the Dwarfe*, I know what Saint must patronize these affaires, and what offering must bee layde on his Altar.

## CHAP. XX.

How Palmerin became highly enamored with the beautie of the Princesse Laurana, thinking her to be the Lady that solicited him in his visions.



Urbanillo the Dwarfe not forgetfull of his Masters commandement, the next day to the Laurana came with his mother to visit Palmerin, he tooke the Dwarfe aside, demanding what rest he: in after tooke the night past. Madam (quoth he) indifferent, I thanke God and you, for in you two consiste the disposition of my Masters health. As how, quoth sh:; Thus Madame, sayd Urbanillo: the first day that he bchelde you, he g: as he to sole possession of himselfe so firmly to you, as day & night he meditates on your diuine pccessions, doul-

ting

## OF PALMERIN DOLIVA.

king in requitall of his service to my Lord your Father and his Coparcy, whose lives and yours he hath defended, himselfe shall bee repayde with sodaine and cruell death: so, had hee not come for your safety, well had hee escaped this dangerous extremity. Then seeing (sayre Madame) that his valour hath been the mean of your deliverance, doe not so degenerate from gentle nature, as to kill him that gaue you life. Why, my l. iend (quoth she) what wouldest thou haue me to doe? To loue him, sweet Madam, quoth he, as he doth you. Alas, sayth she, thou maist assure thy selfe, that none can loue thy Master better then I doe, being my duety and his deserit: with which words sh: changed colour with such modest bashfulnes, as it might be perceyued sh: could hardly master her affections. Which, when the Dwarfe hee d, as one not to learne his lesson in this art, periwaded himselfe by the very looks of Laurana, that his Masters loue would soote to happy end, and thereupon hee followed the matter thus. I thinke Madame, that you wish my Master as well as any, but that is not enough, balesse your wish agree with his in this point, that you graunt your selfe his onely Lady and spistresse, as hee hath vowed himselfe your Knight and Servant. If it may please you to wish this good to my Master, vouchsafe this fauour as a presidencie of your liking: that so soone as hee shall finde himselfe better in health, you will but consent to speake with him alone, in some such conuenient and unsuspected place, as hee may haue liberty to acquaint you with the secretes of his thoughts. Alas, quoth sh: how should I so doe, without offering too much impeach to mine own honour? Madam, sayd the Dwarfe, the night giveth fauour to loues sweet enterpris. By this time the Duchesse was ready to depart, which Laurana perceyng, said to the Dwarfe: Assure thy master from me, that I am more his then mine owne, and I will doe for his welfare what I may with my selfe. By reason of their departure, the Dwarfe could not make her answere, but shadowing the matter as hee

had

## THE HISTORIE

has done before, went about his masters busynesse, till he came and found him alone, when he discovered all that had passed betwene the Princesse and him, which so well contented Palmerin, as nothing could more: because hee perswaded himselfe, as I haue sayde alreadie, that this was shes which the three sisters promised him, by whom hee shold receiu the hounour that destiny allowed him. For this cause thence forward hee was very desirous to know her name, comauanding Urbanillo very traitly to enquire it, which hee did, informing his master, that her name was Laurana: whereupon hee well saw, that hee was deceyued, in that the three sisters had named his mistresse Polinarda, & therfore hee resolued to withdraw his affection, and to depart thence so soone as hee could bee able to beare Armour: But it may bee easilly prestamed, that when one hath so fat ventures in loue, that he perceives himselfe beloued, as the Dwarfe perswaded his master, hardly can hee give over so sayze a beginning: yet here it shalbe contrary, as you shall well perceiue, that the end was moze sodaine then the beginning. Palmerin now knowing the Princesse name, begonne to haue other countenance to her then hee was accustomed: but thys good Lady (in his excuse) condicted better opinion then shes had cause: yet as it euermoze falleth out in loue, that when Ladies see themselves but slenderly courted by their friends, they grow impotunate in thys amorous desires: so came it to passe with Laurana, who percelating her selfe not solicited by Palmerin as shee was went, one night somewhat late shes called the Dwarfe and thus beganne. How comes it to passe my good Friend, that thy master is not of so pleasant disposition, as here tofore he hath bee? it may be thou hast not let him understand my last salutation, or else feare withholdes him from following his determination: I pray thee doe the message of my earnest good will to him, and tell him that I long to impart our affections together, to the full resolution of our deare thoughts, whiche I haue found the way unsuspected

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

to accomplish, so please him to come to my chamber to my rest at night, where I shall not fail to expect his presence. When the Dwarfe heard Laurana tolde these wordes, thincking his master was still in his former cogitations, thus answered. Trust me, sayde Madame, within these fewe dayes, my master is become so melancholike, as I haue many times feared his death, and I am sure hee hath no other cause to torment him so, but onely the fury of the extreme loue he beastes you: yet seeing you haue promised him such great fauour, let me alone to change this unpleasant humour. Sayle not then (quoth she) to let him know my mind. I goe presently, sayd the Dwarfe, to acquaint him with these long desired tidings. So taking his leave, he went to his masters chamber, whome hee found fast a sleepe, when not daring to awake him, let say his message till the next morning, and so layde him downe to rest, at what time sleepe had thoroughly possessed him, he began to cry and complaine so loude, as his Master hearing him, arose, and demanded of him the cause of his lament. Alas, my Lord (quoth he) never in all my life was I so affrighted, me thought that one of the sayzed Ladies that comyd eylooked on, held a naked swerd against my chaste, saying, Vile, and villanous creature as thou art, darest thou presume so much to offend me, as to make thy Lord and master amozons of Lady Laurana, and to forfayte me? justly doest thou deserue to die on this weapon for thy paliardise, and if hereafter thou carry any message to pretuide my right, assur thy self, that I will challice thee in such sort, as all deformed villaines shal receiu example by thee. I tell thee Traytor, Palmerin his fortunes climbe higher then the name of Laurana, and where he is moze loued for the royaltie of his lineage, then for his base and pastozell education With which wordes shes gaue me such a stroake on the head with her swerde, as I, (starefull of my life) cryed so loude as you say, you heard mee. This motion made Palmerin easilly perceiue, that Polinarda had made this

## THE HISTORIE

threatning to the Dwarfe for Laurana: which concealing to himselfe, he sayde in laughter. I thinke thou ridst forget to drinke when thou camest to bed, and so thy heart being dry, conceyued this vision: I pray tha sleepe, and trable me no moze with such idle passions. The Dwarfe betooke him to rest, but Palmerins thoughts were all night ha- mmering on this vision, so that he resolved to depart thence the next morning, and seek elsewhere his adventures, seeing hee was aduertised by so many aduertisements. So at the day rising, hee called the Dwarfe, and commaunded him to prepare his Armour, for hee intended to take his leaue of the Duke. Ptolome hearing this, and ha- ving noted before all the Dwarfe tolde his master in the night, dissembling the matter, as was his manner, hee came, and bad Palmerin god morrow, who answere Ptolome in this manner. My deare friend, I have concealed none of mine assayzes from thee, since the time we received our Knighthood, and parted together from the Court of Ma- cedon: now therefore will I impart to thee what I haue determined.

It is so, that urgent occasions constraines me presentlie to leaue this Country, and hencelorth to stame my course which way fortune will direct me, by which occasion I see woe must bee enforced to leaue each other: notwithstanding let mee intreate that our absence may no way impaire our friendship, not doubting but in good time wee shall meeue together againe. In meane space, if you see the King, or Prince Florendos, forget not the humble duty of theri vowed Servant, I bekech you, who dedicate his life and honouer in all attempts to their gracieus seruours. By God sayd Ptolome, let woe will doe the message for me, for ne- ther death nor danger shall separate me from you: but I will beare you company whyle life and soule holde together. If you bee so resolute, said Palmerin, shal wee it soo bee to refuse you. Set forward then when you please (quoth Ptolome) for we neither must nor wil depart, that's flat.

## OF PALMERIN DE OLIVA.

So being both armed, they came to the Duke, who mar- velled much to see them so prepared, and therefore demand- ed whither they went. My god Lord (answred Palmerin) in that your Countrey is nowe quieted, wee must in- treate you for our departure, because waightie affaires in o- ther places do so commaund vs. How happens it fayre Friendes, (said the Duke,) that you will so soone leaue me? My Lord (quoth Palmerin) wee are so enforced: and there- fore wee humbly intreate you not to be offend. If your af- faires be such (said the Duke) loath I am to hinder you, com- mauld of mee and mine what you please, for all remaineth at your disposition. Most humble thanks did Palmerin, and Ptolome returnde to the Duke, and ere they went to Horse- back, they came to take their leaue of the Duchesse and Lau- rana, who was well nigh dead, seeing her hope deceipted, for shee expected the night comming, when shee and Palmerin should conserue together of their loue: but seeing him now departing, shee was out of all hope to see him againe, the ex- treame griefe whereof so ouer-came her, as givning a great shooke she fell in a swoone.

The Ladies and Gentle-women in great amazement ranne about her, ignorant of her cuill, but only Palmerin and the Dwarfe, which hee likevise would not reueale to any, for the reason you heard discouered before: and rather would shee enteaine her owne death, then make knowne a secrete of such importance: Wherefore having somewhat recovered her selfe, and not able to conceale her anguish, with an ex- treame sigh shee thus breathed forth her sorrow. Ah Palmerin, easly hast thou kindled the fire, which with great shame thou leauest consuming unquenched. Alas, would haue thought that such treason could harbour, where faire condi- tions and honourable valour shined so brightly? Well may I condemne all men of disloyaltie, seeing thou hast failed re- sembling so excellent. Belieue meee Knight, thou hast done me great wrong, and thy selfe much more: for which, where- ever thou comnest, bee thou named the most ungratefull

## THE HISTORIE

Knight that euer drew his sword, seeking her death so cruelly,  
Who ioues thee deareer then her owne life.

The complaints made Laurana before the Duchesse,  
not sparing to discharge the whole burthen of her oppressed  
heart, her Mother not daring to gainsay her, but expected  
when she should depart this life: wherefore persuading her  
selfe from despaire, shee sweetly promised to worke so with  
Palmerin, as he should stay, and enjoy her to his wife. But  
all this was in vaine, for hee mounted on horsebacke, and  
accompanied Ptolome and Vrbamillo, left the Citie of Duraco,  
no one knowing which way they were ridden: Palmerin  
conuerted into such heauinelle, as nothing could torment  
him more, so earnest was his desire to see her, whom Fate  
and Fortune had appointed for him.

## C H A P. X X I.

How Palmerin and Ptolome met with a Damosell, who  
made great mone for a Casket which two Knights had  
forcibly taken from her, and what happened to them.



eing thus departed from Duraco, these  
Knights rode along, thinking in what  
heauinelle they had left the Dukes  
Daughter: when Palmerin accusing  
himselfe as guiltie of this mischaunce,  
within himselfe thus sadly discoursed.  
Unhappie man that euer thou camest  
into this Countrey, where thou hast left so hard an opin-  
ion of thy selfe, as while thou liuest thou shalt be the worse  
esteemed: and well worshie, for iustly maist thou be accu-  
sed of disloyaltie, in making meanes to obtaine the loue

of

## OF PALMERIN DE OLIVA.

of the faire Princeesse Laurana, and having conquerid where  
thou desiredst, to make so little account of her as thou hast  
done. Hadde death preuented thee before, shee had bene saff-  
fyed, thine Honour defended, and thy unknowne Polinard  
a no way injured: Which peches made the teares to  
trickle downe his cheeks: when Ptolome looking aside espy-  
ed him, and guessing the cause of his sicknes, said. Verily I  
never thought to see such womanish behauour in you, nor  
that any griefe or misfortune should haue teares so sone at  
commaundement. How will you hereafter withstand so  
many casualties, hard aduentures, and dangerous Stra-  
gements, with many and sundry narrow brunts that you must  
passe through, when I see you vnable to overcome your own  
selfe, being surprized by her teates, to whom you haue done  
honour to afford a god countenance? If you hadde recey-  
ued of her the sweetes of Loue, reason might then pleade in  
your excuse: but hauing no way misprised her honour, or  
forced offence to modest chastitie: what iurie may shes say  
that you haue done her? Forget I pray you these vnsaine-  
ly fashions, hardly agreeing with a Knight of such report as  
you are: let vs finde some thing else to talke on: and tell me  
which way you intend to iourney? By my life (quoth Pal-  
merin,) I knowe not, but let vs take which way Fortune  
shall please to conduct vs. I thinke it best then (saide Ptolome)  
that we shape our course towards Rome, where wee  
shall find people of all nations, by whom we may be instru-  
cted, as concerning Aduentures worthy our trauell, and gui-  
ding to honour. On then chearely (quoth Palmerin,) and  
so they trauelled eight dayes together, not meeting with any  
Aduenture worthie to be spoken of, till at length they mette  
with a Damosell heauily mourning, who saide: Alas, what  
will shes say, whose trust was enely in mee, hauing lost the  
thing wherein consisted her hopes, to recover the highest of  
her noble desires? Palmerin hearing these wordes, and  
moved with compassion, rode to her, and demanded the caule  
of her mourning? Byt Knight (quoth shes) I was sent

# THE HISTORIE

by a Lady with a Casket, wherein was one of the best Swords in the whole world, which is so Enchaunted, as none can drake it out of the Scabbard, but hee that is esteemed the worthiest Knight living: but before any be admitted to make profe of this Aduenture, hee must graunt a request that I am to aske him. With this Sword haue I trauelled many strange Countreyes, as France, Italie, Sclauacie, and divers others, Whereof many haue tryed, but no one yet could finish the Aduenture: whereupon I was this day travelling towards the Emperours Court of Greece, and here by I mette with two Knights, who hauing heard the cause of my long trauell, made profe of theyr Fortune, one after another, and both failed, whereat they were so offendred, as they tooke the Casket from me perforce, and are gone therewith I know not whither: which doth so much grieve mee in respect of her losse towards whome I am, as death would be more welcome to me then life.

Faire Virgin (saide Palmerin,) do not discomfyt your selfe, but shew me which way they rode that deale with you so discourteously. Gentle Knight (quoth shee) if your hap be to restore my losse againe, you do the most gracious acte that euer Knight did for a distressed Damozell. These Traytors to honour (wherof the one is in Crimson Armour, bearing in his shield thre Lyons heads) tooke this way by the Wod, and as yet, I am sure they cannot be farre hence.

Then Palmerin clasp'd his Helmet, and taking his sword and Lance, desired Ptolome to guarde the Damozell and follow him, galloping that way which shee had shew'd him: and by the time he had rid two miles, hee espied them he looked for, talking with another knight they had mette, and they thare together were essaying to open the Casket, unto whom Palmerin cryed, Treacherous villains, that cannot mette with Ladys on the way, but must offer them iniurie, deliver the Casket or ye die: One of the two turned presently, and seeing him that thus threatened them to be alone, not mouing a mote, beganne to laugh, and scornfully re-

turned

# OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

returned this answere. Softly, softly, god Syz, God pardon theyr soules whome you kill so easily: but for all his words, Palmerin ranne against them, and they at him, so that hee receyued a small wound on his shoulder: in recompence wherof, hee gaue one of them a pasle-pot into another world, and laid so lustily on the other, as hee let hym quickly besides his Saddle. When the third saw his companions at so harde a reckoning, he saide to himselfe. By my faith he spake not vnadvisedly that saide A safe escape is better then a bad tarrying: And allowing this sentence so currant in his owne opinion, gaue the spurres to his Horse, making halle away with the Casket, so fast as hee could: but Palmerin beeing somewhat better mounted, got such aduantage of this Runaway, as with his Sword he parted his right arme from his body, whereupon hee fell to the ground and the Casket with him. Then Palmerin alighted, and tooke it vp, and leauing the Knight there, returned which way hee came: when opeing the Casket, hee tooke great pleasure in beholding the Sword, which was maruellous costly: yet would hee not proue to draw it forth, because he knewe not her pleasure to whome it appertained. At length he espied Ptolome coming, who came apace (if neede had bee) to haue assittid him: but when he knewe how he had overcome the Knights, and recovered the thing was so desired, no man could be better contented, especially the Damozell, wholaping from her Halstray, came and kissed Palmerins feete, saying. And may all happinesse repay this gentle deade, fayre knight, for but by you, my death had bene best welcome to mee.

Damozell (quoth hee) see here the Casket according as I found it, I knowe not whether they that tooke it from you haue abusid it or no. So no, (saide shee) they could no way wrong it, the Sword beeing heere that belongs to the best Knight. I pray you (quoth Ptolome) let mee make tryall of my strength, albeit I knowe my self no such man as you speake of: so taking the Casket, offered to begin, when the Damozell desired him to forbear, for (quoth shee) you must first

## THE HISTORIE

graunt mee one request. What ere it bee said Ptolome, I graunt it : and so set all his myght to his intent, but could not accomplish it. Wherefore quoth he to the Damozell, belieue me Lady, he that wrought this Enchantment, did more by his Arte, then I can by my cunning, and in my opinion you may trauell long enough before you finde him that shall quit your expectation. The more will be my trouble, (quoth the Damozell) beeing tyed by necessitie to such a Knightes fortune. When Palmerin saw that his Companion had failed, he doubted whether hee should take it in hand or no: yet seeing hee could spedde no worse then others had done, he said to the Damozell, Will you any thing with mee before I adventure my selfe, for my friend shall not be mal-content for a fellow. Gentle Knight (quoth shee) I will nothing, but that you make the like promise your friend did. Of that doubt you not, saide Palmerin: so laying hands valiantly on the Sword, without any great labour he drewe it forth, being the richest and godlyest Sword that euer was scene.

Ah god Knight, (saide the Damozell) happie bee the day of thy nativitie, for thou hast delinered mee from incredible labour. The Sword is yours, but by your promise you stand bound to goo with mee where I shall conduct you, to do that shall please my Lady to commaund you. Leade the way Damozell (quoth Palmerin,) and be sure wee will not leaue thy company. So mounted the Damozell on her Palfray, and tooke the way towars Rome, where shee that delivered her Casket remained in devotion, & with such spedde they dispatched theire Trauell, as they arrived at the Gate of a strong Castle, where the Damozell alighted, desiring Palmerin and Ptolome to expect her returne a while. The Gate being opened, shee went straight to her Mistresse and her Sister, who being glad of her comming, demanded if shee had found out the man shee went to seeke. Deere Ladys (quoth shee) I haue, and hither he is come with mee, but this I dare assure you before hand, that a moze godly and valiant Gentleman liues not this day: for in my presence he vanquished

## OF PALMERIN DE OLIVA.

quished three Knights, who perforce tooke the Casket from me, and for the sword he drew it forth so easily, as it had beene that he weareth by his side. Goe, said the Lady, and cause him come neare, and come Sister let vs goe to the gate to entertaine him. Then was the drawe Bridge let downe, when Palmerin and Ptolome riding to the gate, met there the Ladies, whom they saluted with great reverence, and each Lady leading a Knight in by the hand, conducted them to their Chambers to be unarmed.

## CHAP. XXII.

How the Lady of the Castle declared to Palmerin, what moued the Giant Darmaco to take from her, her Daughter and her goods, whereupon Palmerin promised to enter Combate with the Giant: as much for pitty, as to acquite his promise made to the Damozell that brought the Casket and the enchaunted Sword.



¶ The two Knights being thus entred the Castle and unarmed, the Ladies brought each of them a rich Mantle of Crimson Damaske, imbrodered with gold and pearlye to couer them, and so came with them into the Hall to meate, where they wanted no choice of daintie delicates: so after the Tables were withdrawen, and many other speeches passed betwene them, the Lady thus beganne to Palmerin.

Sir Knight, as nowe I am a poore and disinherited Gentlewoman, that sometime was wife to one of the wels  
thiell

## THE HISTORY

thicest Knights in this countrey, with whom I long time remained not having any Childe, till at length it pleased God to send mee a Daughter, so faire a creature as ever Nature staine, who at my Husband's death was left with mee but two yeares aged. By Lord and Husband learned in the Art Haggis, and for his skill renowned in this Countrey, the day before his death he called me to him, using these speeches. Dearly Wife, let it suffice thee that I knowe what shall happen to thee after my death, and that one shall take perforce from thee not onely such Goods as I leaue thee, but also thy faire Daughter: to helpe which extreamitie, I haue somewhat provided for thee before my departure.

Thou shalt finde in my Cabinet a Sworde, which I my selfe haue encloed in a Casket, and haue sette so many Enchaunted spells on that Sworde, as no man shall be able to draw it out of the Scabbard, unlesse hee be the best approued knight in the World, and haue it is that must give thee succour, and helpe to recover againe thy losse. To true fell out my Husband's speeches: For shorly after Darmaco the Gyant came hither, and as his custome was to abuse whome hee list, so tooke he from mee the best of my Castles, and in despite of me tooke my Daughter from mee, saying: that hee would give her to one of his Sonnes in marriage, a villaine farre more vicious then his Father, and so deformed, as Nature stands ashamed at her owne workmanship. Now in respect I would not consent to this unseemly Marriage, such gods as was left mee hee most violently tooke from mee, this Sworde onely excepted, which you haue worthily conquered, and that had gone with them too, but that my Sister hidde it very secretly. Now worthy Knight, if ever pittie tooke place in thy gentle heart, reuenge mee on this Villaine, that hath thus robbed me of my goods and my Daughter, whose youth (being as yet but ten yeares olde) is the cause that the Giant hath not consummated the Marriage. And if it shall like you to do thus much for mee, you shall not onely fulfill your promise to the Damosell that brought you hither, but your

shall

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVIA.

shall doe a deede acceptable to God, profitable to me, comfortable to my pore Childe, and honourable for euer unto your owne selfe. Madame (answering Palmerin) it is no meauile if Darmaco haue done you this wrong, in that Giants doe take a habit in trecherous dealings: wherefore did not my promise binde mee to your Damosell, I would not passe so lightly out of this Countrey, ere I compelled him somewhat to recompence this iniurie, and this shall I (God willing) doe to morrow, so please you I may bee conducted to him. Ah gentle Knight, sayd the Lady, what I am not able, Heaven will no doubt repay thee: And because it was now somewhat late, after they haue spent a little more time together in conference, these Ladies accompanied him and Ptolome into their Chamber, and taking their leaue, committed the Knights to their god rest for that night, which they passed with quiet repose, and on the next morning after they were armed, they deuained their guide of the Lady, that shold direct them the way towardes the Giant. Then shee called the Damosell that carried the Casket, and two Knights of her owne, whom shee commaunded to gos with Palmerin: so committing him to God and god successe, they tooke their way straight to the Castle of Darmaco, where they arrived in the morning, when they espied a Squire on the walles, who was appointed there to keepe the watch, to whom Palmerin sayd. My friend, I pray thee if Darmaco be within, cause him to come forth, for I would speake with him. And what would you with him answered the Squire: I would intreate him, saide Palmerin, to vse himselfe more courteously then hee hath done heretofore, and that hee would doe right to a god Lady whom hee hath dilinherited, namely to send her her goods and her Daughter againe: and if my intreatie may not preuaile with him, bidde him if hee dare come to the Combate, wherein I will make him confess vnder my Sworde, that his actions haue beeene villainous, trayterous, and disloyall. In god sooth Sir, answered the Squire in decision,

## THE HISTORIE

verision, you may same to haue reason, and they that sent you likewise, but your iourney I feare me will not amount to so much: therefore, if you will be ruled by me, get you going, vntesse you are willing to leaue your heads for a signe to our Gates. My head, said Palmerin, my Sword holdes too god an edge, and mine arme too sound strength, to leaue a Jewell of such price so easily: goe therefore when I biddes the, thou wert best, otherwise assure thy selfe if I vanquish thy Maister, that thou with the rest shalt surely dye the death. To soone, said the Squire, shall I doe your message: and if any harme happen to you, say my god friend you were counselled before: but as for my Maister Dartaco, he hath not beme within for this houre and more, yet is his Sonne Mordano here, who can bid you welcome as well as his Father. So departed the Squire, and in short time Mordano the Giants Sonne came vpon the walles, demandinge of Palmerin what hee sought for? I tolde thy Squire, answered Palmerin: but tell me, art thou the Son of the Giant, that delightest in offering villanie to Ladies? And how then, said Mordano, what if I am? I pray the, said Palmerin, bid thy Father that without any further quarrell hee deliuer the Lady that hee detaines violently, otherwise I shall cause him to doe it whether hee will or no. I shall make thee answere, said Mordano, if thou darrest tariue but till I arme my selfe: and so presently departing, in shorftime he came forth very well appointed, with a meruallous strong Launce in his hand, and mounted on a verie lustie Courser, so prauincing towards Palmerin, hee said. Wherch, art thou come to seeke thine owne death? I pittie the: yet if thou wylt yelde thy selfe to my mercie, I will spare thy life, and suffer the to waste thy time in one of the base Dungeons in this Castle. From lodging there, God shewde mee, quoth Palmerin: and being moued with these rough words of his enemie, hee encouerted Mordano with such courage, as their Launces being broken, both of them were dismounted, Palmerin not hurt, but Mordano

was

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

was wounded on the right side, the truncheon of Palmerin Launce being left in his body. Notwithstanding hee recovered himselfe quickly, and came furiously towardes Palmerin, and gaue him such a cruell stroke on the head, as the bloud beganne to trickle downe his face: whiche when hee perceiued, and how it stode him in hand now to bee veriturious, hee requited Mordano with so sound a greeting, as he parted one of his armes quite from his body, and also morded him likewise that hee fell to the ground: but recovering himselfe, he ranne towards the Castle, and Palmerin after him. The Servaunts of the Castle, seeing their Lords Sonne in such danger, with Javelins and other weapons came against Palmerin, whom they had murdered, if Ptolome and the two Knights that were sent with him, had not speedily come from their close ambush to defend him: and so manfully did they behaue themselves, as they drove them into the base Court, where Mordano fell dead at Ptolomes feete, who desirring no time, presently with his Sword tooke his head from his shuldres. The servants this seeing, dispeased themselves and ranne into corners, so that Palmerin and his company had ne body left to resist them, some lying there wounded to the death, and other escaptynge forth at abacke Gate, whiche they made fast after them, leaue they shold be followed. When Palmerin sawe all things fall out so effectually, hee called for the Damosell and the Knights that came with him, who being not a little glad of this great god fortune, desired first to seeke for Esmerinda their Ladies Daughter, for they were well assured that she was in the Castle. Search in euery place, quoth hee: and because the night drein on, the Gates were made fast, & there they determined to lode so. That night. In the meane while, the Damosell went about the Castle, and neare the Giants Chamber shee found Esmerinda, who immediatly knowing her, cam running and caught her louingly about the necke: for before, (not knowing that her companie had conuquered the Castle) she and thyre other Women that

kep-

# THE HISTORIE

kept her companie, were greatly feared, but now the Damosell gaue her perfect assurance, that all was done for her deliuerie, and by the onely Knight for prowesse in the world, whom her Lady Mother had thus sent thither. As they continued this talke, Palmerin came to them, before whom the young Gentlewoman Esmerinda humbled her selfe on her knees: but hee taking her vp, embrased her with these speches. Prettie soule, your Lady mother hath great desire to see you, will not you goe with vs to her? Sir Knight, quoth she, I never in my life desired any thing more, then to see my Mother: but I greatly doubt that the false Darmaco will meeke vs by the way, for hee went this morning to the funerall of one of his Sisters, and it will bee to morrowe before his returne, when if he hap to meeke vs, we are but dead. Let mee deale for that god Lady, sayd Palmerin: I haue alreadie killed the Sonne, I doubt not but this small practise will make mee doe as much to the Father. While Palmerin and Ptolome thus deuised with Esmerinda, the Damosell and Vrbanillo had prouided Supper, whiche being ended they went to rest, expeking the morning, when they prepared the woman to horse-backe: and hauing taken what them best liked out of the Castle, they set fire on the rest, and so tooke their way towaards the sorrowfull Widdow: who expeking god tydings, continued in earnest and deuoute Dizons, that the god Knight might ouercome her blood-thirsty enemy, and returns with victory, and her Daughter Esmerinda.

CHAP.

# OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

## CHAP. XXII.

How Palmerin running with his companie to the Ladies Castle, happened to meeke with the Giant Darmaco, who lost his life in Combat with Palmerin.



Hus rode Palmerin and his company very joyfull of their good fortune, especially Esmerinda, above all the rest: but this pleasant humour lasted not long, for shee had espied Darmaco comming forth of a wood, hauing with hym his wife and tenuell appointed Knights: whereat the young Lady was so affrighted, as she cryed out, saying: O God, now are we all cast away. At which words the other women begaine to discourage themselves, and seeing the Giant so neare, knelde not whichever they were best to goe forwarde or backe agaist: whereupon Palmerin sayde to Ptolome. I pray thee god Friend, while I fight with Darmaco, doe you and these two Knights deale with the rest: in the meane while, I thinke it god that my Dwarfe Vrbanillo conuey these Ladies into the thickest of the wood. He had no time thus sayd, but when he held the Giant make apace to armes bent, who not thinking what had happened, yet seeing faire Esmerinda so deuoured, in wonderfull rage, not taking either Sward or Shalwe with hym, hee prancked towardes Palmerin, who entreated hym so soundly on the head with his Fableston, as this Giant tumbled sowth of his Saddle, hangulig in his Stirrop by the left sole, and was no way able to recover hymselfe.

The

# THE HISTORIE

The Hoare feling his Maister from his backe, and his burthen to weigh ouer heauie on his side, the Giants foote likewise tickling him in the flancke, began to couerle about, and to beate his Maister with his fete every way he could reach him, when Palmerin on the other side laid hym on such strokes, as at length he sent his soule to the diuels, the patrons of his villainous life. Now thought Palmerin he had no more to doe, but goe helpe his compaions against the other knyghts, wherewith he was deceived, for the Giantesse to reuenge her Husbands death, gaue so cruell a stroke at Palmerin with her Husbands Pace, as had hee not shunke aside she had staine hym, and so continued more like a Lyon then a Beggar, redoubbling stroke after stroke: which forced Palmerin for safegarde of hymselfe, seeing no meanes or perswasions could preuaile with her, to send her packing after her Husband. Ptolome and his knyghts had dealt so well with the rest, as on the comynge of Palmerin they had dispatched them all, ifre he supply had not come to them, as you shall heare more axon.

The Lady of the Castle Mother to Esmerinda, so soone as Palmerin departed thence towardes the Giant, sent to seeke a young Beafleman named Crispino, to whom shee promised her Daugter in mariage; if so be shee coulde recover her againe out of the Giants power: who staying not long after this message, made hylte to the Castle, the Lady entertaining hym in this manner. Not long since, my god friend, there departed hence a knyght, who intenedes to reuenge my wrongs on the Giant Darmaco, and because I knowe not to what ende this enterprise will sort, I pray you Atme you, and take tenuis of your hardiest men with you, to helpe the god knyght if he shold be distressed. Crispino sone consented to this motion, and in his way towards the Castle, it was his chaunce to mette with the Dwarfe and the Ladies that fledde into the wood. It is not to de maun how pleasing this sight was to hym, beholding Esmerinda whom he loued as himselfe: of whom he deinaun-

ded

# OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

ded where their company was, and shew reported in what state they left them at time of the sight. Whereupon hee comauanded ffe of his men to guide the Ladies to a kinsmans house of his that was neare at hand, and hee with the rest of his traine galloped to the place, where Palmerin, Ptolome, and the Ladies two knyghts encouered with the fresh supply that came to Darmacos men. Hee was no sooner attiued, but hee beheld Palmerin and Ptolome wounded very soore, and one of the Ladies knyghts staine among the rest, which moued hym and his men to bestirre themselves: so that (short tale to make) the Giants men were all vanquished in the end, and then Crispino declared to Palmerin, how hee had sent Esmerinda and the Ladies to his Cozins house not farre off, whither if it pleased hym to walke, hee shold receive what courtesie could be performed. On so suddaine warning, in respect of the happy fortune the whole Countrey shold finde by hym, being thus deliuered of Darmaco and his Sonne; but above all, for the safetie of his best beloued Esmerinda. Thus rode they together with Crispino, whose Cozin made them very gracious welcome, reioycing greatly at this happy victorie: and afterward they set forward to the god Widdowes, Crispino by the way reporting to Palmerin his loue to Esmerinda, and howe her Mother had promised hym her in mariage, desiring hym to assit the matter that it might be finished; which hee promised to doe, and so at length they came to the Castle, where when the Lady sawe her Daugter, and heard how her chiefe enemies were staine, it is hard to expresse her exceeding ioy, which her chearefull countenance somewhat made manifest, welcomming Palmerin with these wordes. Ah gentle knyght, how myght I be able while I live to recompence this inestimable fauour: the comfort of mine age, and my oppressed soule haue you brought me, may never harmes befall so god a knyght. Ladie, quoth he, gue the prayse to God, as for mee, iudge if I haue beene as god as my promise to your Damsell of me;

## THE HISTORIE

and if there be any thing else to voe, Lady I am ready now to perorme it. You haue done so much for me, sayde shee, as nothing remaineth more to be desired, vniuersall of your bountie you will cause me to receive what the Giant tooke from me by force: for seeing hee is dead, they that with helde it from me, will now willingly restore it againe. That shall be likewise accomplished, quoth Palmerin: but because hee and Ptolome were soore wounded, as you heard, they stayed to be cured: and sent Crispino with his Cousin and a god sufficient traine, to deuaide the Ladies Castle and her gods. They that held it of the Giant, vnderstanding his death, made present deluerance thereof: and committed themselves to the Ladies mercie: whither shee sent her Daughter, so soone as Palmerin and Ptolome were healed, to whom the Subjects vowed their faith and allegiance, and with great Triumphes honoured the marriage of Crispino and Esmerinda. On the morrowe, as the Knight late at meate, there entred the Hall a Squire, who sayd to Palmerin, that a Damosell stayed without to speake with him. Let her come in, quoth he, and say her pleasure. The Squire bringing her into the Hall, shee fell on her knees before Palmerin, sayng. Sir Knight, do you not knowe me? No in good sooth, answered Palmerin. Belieue me (quoth the Damosell) then hath my seruice bene euill employed which sometime I did you, and whereof I am sure you haue heard good account. Then Palmerin knew her (shee bringing the Shielde and the Helmet when Florondo knighted him) whereupon hee tooke from the Table, and embracing her, sayd. Fairie Damosell and my friend, I pray you pardon me, for the length of time since I first saue you, did quite exempt you from my remembrance: pleasest if you to command me any seruice? Sir Knight, sayd the Damosell, when I presented you the Helmet and Shielde, wherewith you tooke your order of knighthode, you promised me (if you remember) that you wold vse it with right god will, in any affaires the Knight had that sent it you, and when

he

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

he should require such performance: now is the time to conftirme your deede with your word; for he hath sent me to you with humble intreatie, that without any stay you goe where I shall conduct you, otherwise you are the onely cause of his death. God sheld me from such misfortune, said Palmerin, rather wold I goe with you presently from the Table. So doe I pray you (quoth shee) for I haue haste. Then hee called for his Armour, and the Table withdrawne, he went into his Chamber to Arme himselfe, and so did Ptolome also: returning, they tooke their leaue of the Ladies and mounted on horsebacke, the whole company being so sorie for their departure, as Esmerinda came to the Damosell, saying. I promise you Damosell, you haue done vs wrong in mine opinion, to hinder vs of the presence of so god a Knight. Lady, answered the Damosell, thinke you he was borne for you onely: content your selfe with the god you haue received by him, and suffer such as haue neede of his prowelte, to receive his assistance as yu haue done. And good reason, said Esmerinda, if it be to so good an end, that no resistance be offered when helpe is required. So departed the two Knights with the Damosell whiche way shee guided them, and very desirous was Palmerin to be with the Knight that sent to sake him: because he wold gladly know, of whence he was that wished him so well, as his message declared by the Damosell the same day he was knighted.

H

CHAP.

## THE HISTORIE

kept her companie, were greatly feareed, but now the Damosell gaue her perfect assurance, that all was done for her deliuerie, and by the onely Knight for prowelße in the world, whom her Lady Mother had thus sent thither. As they continued this talke, Palmerin came to them, before whom the young Gentlewoman Esmerinda humbled her selfe on her knées: but hee taking her vp, embraced her with these speeches, Prettiesoule, your Lady mother hath great desire to see you, will not you goe with vs to her? Sir Knight, quoth she, I never in my life desired any thing more, then to see my Mother: but I greatly doubt that the false Darmaco will meeet vs by the way, for hee went this morning to the funerall of one of his Sisters, and it will bee to morrowe before his returne, when if he hap to meeet vs, we are but dead. Let mee deale for that god Lady, sayd Palmerin: I haue alreadie killed the Sonne, I doubt not but this small practise will make mee doe as much to the Father. While Palmerin and Ptolome thus deuised with Esmerinda, the Damosell and Vrbanillo had prouided Supper, which being ended they went to rest, expecting the morning, when they prepared the woman to horsebacke: and haing taken what them best liked out of the Castle, they set fire on the rest, and so tooke their way towaards the sorrowfull Widdow: who expecting god tydings, continued in earnest and devoute Drizens, that the god Knight might overcome her blood-thirsty enemy, and returne with victory, and her Daughter Esmerinda.

CHAP.

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

### CHAP. XXIII.

How Palmerin running with his companie to the Ladies Castle, happened to meeet with the Giant Darmaco, who lost his life in Combat with Palmerin.



Hus rode Palmerin and his company very ioyfull of their good fortune, especially Esmerinda, aboue all the rest: but this pleasant humour lasted not long, for there had espied Darmaco comming forth of a wood, haunting with him his wife and tenne well appoynted Knights: whereat the young Lady was so affrighted, as she cryed out, saying: O God, now are we all cast away. At which words the other women begaine to discourage themselves: and seeing the Giant so neare, faire we wot whichever they were best to goe forward or backe againe: whereupon Palmerin sayde to Ptolome, I pray the god Friend, while I fight with Darmaco, doe you and these two Knights deale with the rest: in the meane while, I thinke it good that my Dwarfe Vrbanillo convey these Ladies into the thickest of the wood. He had no sooner thus sayd, but then he held the Giant make apace towards them, who not thinking what had happened, yet seeing faire Esmerinda so deuoted, in wonderfull rage, not taking either Shield or Sheathe with him, ha putten to bare his Palmeis, who entreated him so soundly on the head with his fistfuchis, as this Giant tumbled forth of his shoulde, hangyng in his stirrup by the left fore, and was no way able to recover himselfe.

The

## THE HISTORIES

The Horre feling his Maister from his backe, and his burthen to weigh ouer hearie on his side, the Giants fote likewise tickling him in the flancke, began to course about, and to beate his Maister with his fote every way he could reach him, when Palmerin on the other side laid hym on such strokes, as at length he sent his soule to the diuels, the patrons of his villainous life. Now thought Palmerin he had no more to doe, but goe helpe his compaions against the other knyghts, wherien he was deceived, for the Gaintesse to revenge her Husbands death, gaue so cruell a stroke at Palmerin with her Husbands Pace, as had he not shunke aside she had slaine him, and so continued more like a Lyon then a knyght, redoubling stroke after stroke: which forced Palmerin for safegard of hym selfe, seing no meanes or persuasions could preuaile with her, to send her packting after her Husband. Ptolome and his knyghts had dealt so well with the rest, as on the comynge of Palmerin they had dispatched them all, ifste hys supply had not come to them, as you shall heare more anon.

The Lady of the Castle Mother to Esmerinda, so soone as Palmerin departed thence towardes the Giant, sent to seeke a young Gentleman named Crispino, to whom shes promised her Daughter in mariage, if so be she could recover her againe out of the Giants power: who steyng not long after this message, made hale to the Castle, the Lady enteining hym in this manner. Not long since, my god Friend, there departed hence a knyght, who intedes to revenge my wrongs on the Giant Darmaco, and because I knowe not to what ende this enterpise will sort, I pray you Arme you, and take tenne of your hardiest men with you, to helpe the god knyght if he shold be distressed. Crispino sone consented to this motion and in his way towards the Castle, it was his chaunce to mete with the Dwarfs and the Ladies that fledde into the wood. It is not to demand how pleasing this sight was to hym, beholding Esmerinda whom he loued as himselfe: of whom he deuaun-

ded

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

ded where their company was, and shee reported in what state they left them at time of their flight. Whereupon hee comauanded ffeue of his men to guide the Ladies to a kyngmans house of his that was neare at hand, and hee with the rest of his traine galloped to the place, where Palmerin, Ptolome, and the Ladies two knyghts encountered with the fresh supply that came to Darmacos men. Hee was no sooner arrived, but hee beheld Palmerin and Ptolome wounded very sore, and one of the Ladies knyghts slaine among the rest, which moued hym and his men to bestirre themselves: so that (short tale to make) the Giants men were all vanquished in the end, and then Crispino declared to Palmerin, how he had sent Esmerinda and the Ladies to his Cozins house not farre off, whether if it pleased hym to walke, he shold receive what courseise could be performed on so suddaine warning, in respect of the happy fortune the whole Countrey shold finde by hym, being thus deliuered of Darmaco and his Sonnes, but above all, for the safetie of his best beloved Esmerinda. Thus rode they together with Crispino, whose Cozin made them very gracious welcomme, reioycing greatly at this happy victorie: and afterward they set forward to the god Crispino, Crispino by the way reportinge to Palmerin his loue to Esmerinda, and howe her Mother had promised him her in mariage, desiring him to assit the matter that it might be finished: which hee promised to doe, and so at length they came to the Castle, where when the Lady sawe her Daughter, and heard how her chiefeſt enemies were slaine, it is hard to expresse her exceeding ioy, which her chearefull countenance somewhat made manifest, welcomming Palmerin with these wordes. Ah gentle knyght, how myght I be able while I liue to recouerence this inestimable fauour, the comfort of mine age, and my oppressed soule, haue you brought me, may never harries besall so god a knyght. Ladie, quoth he, give the prayse to God, as for mee, judge it I haue bene as god as my promise to your Daungell of no: and

## THE HISTORIE

and if there be any thing else to doe, Lady I am ready now to perfoarme it. You haue done so much for me, sayde shee, as nothing remaineth more to be desired, unlesse of your bountie you will cause me to receive what the Giant tooke from me by force: for seeing hee is dead, they that with helde it from me, will now willingly restore it againe. That shall be like unto accomplished, quoth Palmerin: but because hee and Ptolome were soore wouned, as you heard, they layed to be cured, and sent Crispino with his Cousin and a god sufficient traine, to deuoure the Ladie's Castle and her goods. They that held it of the Giant, understanding his death, made present deliuerance thereof, and committed themselves to the Ladie's mercie: whiche shee sent her Daughter, so soone as Palmerin and Ptolome were healed, to whom the subiects vowed their faith and allegiance, and with great Triumphes honoured the mariage of Crispino and Esmerinda. On the morrowe, as the Knight late at meate, there entered the Hall a Squire, who sayd to Palmerin, that a Damosell layed without to speake with him. Let her come in, quoth he, and say her pleasure. The Squire bringing her into the Hall, shee fell on her knees before Palmerin, saying: Sir Knight, doest thou not know me? so in god sooth, answere Palmerin. Welame me (quoth the Damosell) then hath my seruice bene euill employed which sometime I did you, and wherof I am sure you haue heard god account. Then Palmerin knew her (shee bringing the Shielde and the Helmet when Florendos knighted him) whereupon hee rose from the Table, and embracing her, sayd. Fair Damosell and my friend, I pray you pardon me, for the length of time since I first sawe you, did quite exempt you from my remembrance: please it you to command me any seruice? Sir Knight, sayd the Damosell, when I presented you the Helmet and Shielde, wherewith you tooke your order of knighthode, you promised me (if you remember) that you would blest it with right god will, in any attailes the Knight had that sent it you, and when

he

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

he shold require such performance: now is the time to confirme your deede with your word; for he hath sent me to you with humble intreatie, that without any stay you goe where I shall conduct you, otherwise you are the onely cause of his death. God sheld me from such misfortune, said Palmerin, rather would I goe with you presently from the Table. So doe I pray you (quoth shee) for I haue halle. Then hee called for his Armour, and the Table withdrawne, he went into his Chamber to Arme himselfe, and so did Ptolome also: returning, they tooke their leue of the Ladies and mounted on horsebacke, the whole company being so sorrie for their departure, as Esmerinda came to the Damosell, saying. I promise you Damosell, you haue done vs wrong in mine opinion, to hinder vs of the presence of so god a Knight. Lady, answered the Damosell, thinke you he was borne for you onely: content your selfe with the god you haue receiued by him, and suffer such as haue neede of his prowelte, to receiue his assistance as you haue done. And god reason, said Esmerinda, if it be to so god an end, that no resistance be offered when helpe is required. So departed the two Knights with the Damosell which way she guided them, and very desirous was Palmerin to be with the Knight that sent to sake him: because he would gladly know, of whence he was that wished him so well, as his message declared by the Damosell the same day he was knighted.

H

CHAP.

# THE HISTORIE

## CHAP. XXII.

How Palmerin and Ptolome arrived at the Court of the King of Bohemia, where they entered Combat against the Count of Ormeque and his two Couzins, who accused the Knight and his Sonne of treason, that sent to secke Palmerin.



Any miles had these Knights rid with the Damoell, when Palmerin at length desired her to tell him, what hee was that sent him the helmet and the shalde: whereto she answered, that seeing he was so desirous to know, listen, quoth she, and I shall report the whole unto you. The Knight wee speake of, is descended of very royall blood, being Uncle to the King of Bohemia that raignes at this present, as also to the Empresse of Allemaigne, the very best feme in Pegromanie this day living. This noble man is named Prince Adrian, who never liked to live in the Court of the King his Brother, but contented with what pastime his Father left him, at length married with a very bea- tiful Lady, of whom in time he begat a Sonne named Dyardo, which Sonne his Brother the King of Bohemia, nourished up in his Court with his owne Sonne. So mutually in loue agreed these two young Princes, as after the death of the aym King, the young Dyardo shold toynly rule with his Couzin the King: who tolke to wife the Daughter to the Duke of Lorayne, bringing her with him into this Country, in company of her Sister, a Princess so wise and vertuous

## OF PALMERIN DE'OLIVA.

vertuous as ever lived. It so came to passe, that Dyardo my Lords most noble Sonne, framming his thoughts to the inspirations of loue, affected so highly the other Sister, as hee determined never to haue any other to his wife, if hee might compasse what hee intended. For her good Lady, hee could not be deceived in his amorous desires, hee found her loue so equall with his, yet did they shaddow their affections so discreetly, as none could perceue them, but Domarto the trayterous Counte of Ormeque, one of the best Knights in all that Countrey, were he as familiar with vertue and honestie, as he is with malice and disloyaltie. This Traytor entered into match with the Duccenes Sister, beloved as you haue heard by my Lords worthy Sonne, and thereupon after many sollicitings, made knowne his intent unto her, wherof she made so slender account, as shee forbade him any more to trouble her. Domarto seeing my Lord Dyardo his onely hinderance in loue, intended a malicious villanie, and on a suddaine accused the Prince, that hee intended to posse the King, so to obtaine a Crowne, as descended of a ne- ver consanguinitie. And as it often falleth out in such tales, when one seekes to crose an others fortune, there is no time slacked in following such daffis: even so this Traytor, finding the yong King alone, began his matter in this colourable sort. My gracious Lord, the faith and allegiance I owe to your Highnesse, bindes mee to make your Princely ears acquainted with such newes, as, God is my witness, sayde the Traytor (lifting his eyes and hands to heaven) mine owne death were more welcome to mee, such is the loue I beate them whorn it concernes, being all so neare allied to you in birth, as sorrie am I they shold be detected: but in your regard my gracious Lord, the action touching you in such sort as it deth, let mee die rather then spare any living creature, no not mine owne Sonne, had I patrice given mee any. This nedeless exordium haue I made to so soule an occasion, albeit truch needes no colours or eloquent figures: and therfore in briese my Lord, this is the summe, I am

## THE HISTORIE

credibly informed, that your Highnesse Couzin the Prince Dyardo, and Madame Cardonia Sister of the Queene, haue laid the platforne to poyson your Majestie, and this haue they attempted, by the procurement of olde Adrian your Uncle, who pre-ends that the Crowne of Bohemia is his. I know not whether it be so want of discretion or no: but howsoeuer it be my Lord, you shoule not leave such a vil-laine unpunished. The King began greatly to meuaile at these newes, and knew not well what to thinkie: where-  
upon hee answere the Countie, that hee could not believe this accusation. But the Traytcur set so smothe a counte-  
nance on the matter, and did auerre it still with such stout  
protestations, as hee induced the King to beleue him: so  
that a day or two after, the King being walking in his  
Garden, seeing Dyardo and Cardonia at the Quenes  
Chamber window, secretly conferring of their amorous af-  
fections, commanded them both to be carried to prison. The  
Countie glad thereof, prouoked the King still with such an-  
ger against them, as immediatly hee would haue them both  
done to death: but that the Queene and the Lords of his  
Counsell, found meanes to qualifie his displeasure, decla-  
ring what discredit his Highnesse shoule receiue, if he did not  
suffer them to be openly conuict of their offences. All this  
while god Princes, were they ignorant of this detection,  
till at length the King discoursed the whole matter to them,  
and likewise who was their accuser: nor did the Countie  
faile to maintaine his words openly, offering to make it  
good in fight, against any that durst say the contrary: and be-  
cause he had two Couzins, hardie and valiant Knights, con-  
spiratours likewise in this faction, there could be none found  
that would enter the Combat against them. Which when  
the noble Prince Adrian understande, very griesse had wel-  
nere slaine him, in respect he had no Childe but this Dyardo,  
as also so: that hee was accused with that he never thought.  
Hereupon he went presently to the King his Nephew, and  
preuailed so well with him, as he obtained the space of two

Moneths,

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

Moneths, to bring with him one or two that might mat-  
taine the innocencie of him, his Sonne Dyardo, and the  
Princesse Cardonia, against the Traytcur Domarto and  
his Cousins. And this is the cause he sent mee to seeke you  
forth, in hope that you are as much his friend as hee is  
yours, which you may somewhat perceiue, by the friendly  
presents hee sent you by mee to Macedon. So helpe me  
God, said Palmerin, you haue reported a most strange dis-  
course, and never did I thinke, that such treason could enter  
the thoughts of any Knight, or other inferiour person. All  
this is true, quoth the Damosel, and it is appointed that the  
Prince Dyardo, with his aged and crazed Father, shall de-  
fend their owne causes, without seeking helpe of any other:  
but he never as yet received the order of knighthood, and ther-  
fore is constrained to desire your assistance. And that shall I  
doe with all my heart, said Palmerin, would God wee were  
there where hee expecteth vs, for the desire I haue to see  
him, as also to understand what hee knowes of my follow-  
ing fortunes. Those matters are hid from mee, quoth shee,  
yet this haue I heard him say diuers times, being in talke  
of you, that he accounted you the most honourable Knight in  
the world: and that if he euer chanced to see you, he woule  
aduise you to goe to the Emperour of Allemaignes Court,  
to be the knightly seruaunt to the Princesse Polinarda.  
Whan Palmerin heard the name of Polinarda, hee remem-  
bered that it was her name, whom hee had so many times  
seen in his traunes, for which cause hee asked of the Da-  
mosell, what the Lady was of whom she spake? By Lord,  
quoth shee, Polinarda is Daughter to the Emperour, and  
Piece unto my Lord Adrian, the most beautifull Princesse  
that euer eye beheld. By my faith, said Palmerin, the mo-  
re easily may I be induced to graunt her my service, and the-  
ther intend I to trauaile, when I haue finished your Lords  
busynesse. So rode they with much more hast then before,  
till at length they came to the Cittie of Almedya, where the  
King remained, and the Prince Adrian expecting Palmerins

## THE HISTORIE

Louning: which when hee heard, hee came to meete him, each embracing other with meruailous courtesie, and the god olde man with the teares in his eyes, thus said. Ah god Knight, what may counteraile this your exceeding paines, to maintaine the right of my Sonne and mee, who are falsely accused of such villanous treason, as (on the perill of my soule) wee never did imagine? Thereof am I certaily persuaded, answered Palmerin, and therefore am I come to enter the Combate with him, that dare affirme otherwise. Mine olde age, quoth Adrian, might excuse mee henceforth from bearing Armes, but being vnable to endure so vilde a slaunder, so long as life and soule will holde together, shall I doe my deuoire: so please your companion to make the second, as olde as I am I will be the third, for the trayterous Count hath two of his Couzins that take part with him. And if my fortune so fall out as I die in this tryall, I shall receive my lot very contentedly, if mine eyes might first behold mine iurie reuenged. I pray you, said Palmerin, goe presently to the King, to the ende that his Highnesse may graunt vs the field, for my Friend and I thinke long till we haue made your accuser know his treacherie. Adrian immediatly went to the King, and on his bended knee began. My Lord, you knowe that the Count of Ormeque hath accused me, my Sonne Dyardo, and Madame Cardonya, of the crime of Lesa Maiestatis, and in that wee all are innocent, I am ready to maintaine, that he hath falsely and maliciously belied vs, which I my selfe will approue upon him, or two more with mee, against him and his Couzins, if they dare enter the field with him in this quarrell, where wee will either make knowne their vilanie, or receive the reward belongs to disloyall Traytours. As for the wrong which you (my Lord) haue done mee, being your Uncle, and my Sonne Dyardo your Couzin germane, that I referre to God to recompence, and to the better knowledge you shall receive of mee heereafter, being alwaies to olde to be a Traytour, and my Sonne to louing

to.

## OF PALMERIN DE'OLIVA.

so prouedisloyall. The King was abashed to heare his Uncle speake so audaciously, doubting now whether hee shold give credite to what had beeene reported, especially agaist him, so neere his Highnesse in blod, who so liberally offered to enter the Combat: notwithstanding his white head and aged body made him vnsit for such actions, wherefore hee thus answered. Good Uncle, impute not mee any thing faultie in your accusation, and that the profe shall manifest that must be made. The Counte being present, was stricken in a quandary at these wordes, and gladly hee would haue denied this former slaunder, but hee could finde no way cleanly to doe it: wherefore seeing of force hee must needes enter the Combat, he boldly fell on his knees before the King with these wordes. My Lord, what I haue saide is verie certaine, and most true it is, that by the counsell of Prince Adrian heere present, his Sonne practised with Lady Cardonia, to poysone you, that hee might be King, which to make god, there is my gage, on the behalfe of my selfe and my Couzins. Thou liest Traytour in thy throat, said olde Adrian, I take thine offer: and as hee would haue gone on with further speeches, Palmerin stopt before the King, saying. Verelthy Lord, seeing the effect of the wordes must be put in execution, which haue bene heere spoken on both sides before your Maiestie; may it please you the Prince Dyardo and Lady Cardonia may bee sent for, to take with vs their oathes as in such cases is required, and in meane tyme let each one goe put himselfe in equipage for the Combat. God reason saide the King, and presently hee commauded the Princes to be brought, who being come, Palmerin demanded where they were that tooke part with the Counte: whereupon hee presented his Couzins, the one named Edron, proud and arrogant, and the other Edward, of selfe same quality. These two tooke their oathes with the Counte, that the Princes accused, conspired the Kings death, in such sort as hath beeene before declared: and olde Adrian, Dyardo, and faire Cardonia sware the contrarie. But it is

## THE HISTORIE

true, and I will not denie it (said the Prince Dyardo) that I haue and doe loue Lady Cardonia, as much or rather more then mine owne selfe, yet never did I carry any other intent, but to request her in holy wedlocke, so pleased the King and Quene to like so well thereof as we could. But that euer I intended treason or villany, it is most false, and Count thou liest in thy throat, and thy copartners that haue wozne with thee. It is sufficient, said Palmerin: but my god Lord, quoth he to the King, if we be conquerers, the accused shall be deliuered, and the accusers hanged: What say you Counte, said the King? God reason Sir, the like doe we request if we be victors. Will you (said Palmerin) that each ihall helpe his fellow as he findes it conuenient? What else said the Count, that is expedient. While this talke endured, Edron regarde so well Palmerin, that hee espied the S word which the Damosell carried in the Casket, and brought to that Court as hee did to others, which shewing the Count, hee said out aloud. Where did the devils finde this knight to give him this S word? Belike they gaue him strength to draw it out, else hee might haue failed as many other did: the Damosell was vnwise to bestow it in such bad sort. At which words Palmerin being angry, returned Edron this round answere. I see (knight) there is in thee more brauerie and foolish glory then manly action, thou blaimest me before thou knowest me, but ere you and I part, Ile finde better reason to bestow on you, and beate better government into your pate with this sword that likes you not. This caused every one wishly to behold Palmerin, the King remembraunce that he had seene the S word, which none in his Court could deserue to conquer: wherupon he esteemed so well of Palmerin, as he comanded Edron to silence, and all to goe arme themselves, because he intended that day to see the Combat fought.

CHAP.

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

### CHAP. XXXV.

How Palmerin, Adrian, and Ptolome entred the Combat, against the Counte of Ormeque and his Cousins, whom they honourably vanquished.



After the King had commaunded the Knights to goe arme themselves, he gaue charge to four of his ancientest Knights to see the Field prouided, and there to place the Judges, according to the wonted custome in Bohemia: the Knights being carefull of the Kings commaundement had sone prepared all thynge in readinesse, wherefore the King, his Lords, Ladies and Gentlewomen, went to see the issue of this valiant enterprise. Then was the Prince Dyardo and faire Cardonya brought into the field, before whom was made a very great fire, wherein they shold be burned, if the count conquered. Sone after came the fire Combatants, who entred at two places appointed one agaist the other, the Challengers being conducted by two of the Judges to their place, and the defendants by the other two where they were appointed: so the Judges being placed, the Marshall summoned the field, and the Heralds bid the Champions doe their endeour.

Palmerin had god regard to Edron, whose wordes sticking on his stomacke, called now for revenge, wherefore couching his Launce, hee encountered him with such a full cariere, as his Launce passed through his body, and Edron tumbled dead to the ground. In the meane while the Count and Prince Adrian had bnhurled each other, Adrian so soze wounded

## THE HISTORIE

wounded as he could hardly helpe himselfe: as for Ptolome and Edward, they had astoried each other with falles from their Horses, but they recovered themselves quickly, and with sharpe strokes beganne to charge each other valiantly. Greatly ashamed was the County to bee vnhorised, and therefore to recover his honour, he came with great furie towarde his enemie: which Palmerin perceiving, stopt betwene them, saying. To me County, to me, who will bid more for thy head then any in the field. With which words he reached him such a sure stroke on the head, as made the fire flye forth of his eyes: notwithstanding, as a man of god courage, he stopt aside, and thrusting his Sword into Palmerins Horse thoate, enforced him quickly to take him to his feete: but all the worse for him as it fell out after ward, for Palmerin having beaten him out of breath, he flung awaie his weapon, and caught him about the middle, where they tugged so long together, that Palmerin getting him downe, and his knees on his belly, with his Sword stonne took his head from his shouulders. All this while Ptolome had good play with his enemie, and after many dangerous wounds received on either side, at length hee had the better of the day by killing his aduersarie. Then hee and Palmerin went to the Judges, who giuing them sentence of honourable victory, they tooke off their Helmets, and came to see in what estate the Prince Adrian was. Quill enough (quoth he) my noble god Friends, but the lesse account doe I make of my life, in that mine eyes haue seene due vengeance on mine enemis. Then was he nobly borne forth of the field, the King commaunding to lodge him in his owne Wallace, and the Chirurgions searching his wounds, found them mortall, which newes did graue the whole Court ingeneral: the god olde Prince yet being of some courage, was ioyfull to dye in so good sort, hauing defended his owne honour and his Sonnes, whome hee sent for, and in the presence of all the standers by, saide. My Sonne, seeing it hath pleased God thus to send for mee, good reason

is

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

is that his will be fulfilled, but ere I depart, this I command thee, that (next God) thou truely serue and loue my Lord and King, bearing towardes him a heart so fafhfull, as I haue done to the houre of my death: and conceyue no offence at what hath passed between thee and mee: hauing come to passe (as I judge) more by euill counsell, then any setled perswasyon against vs. For the rest, to thy vttermost remember this god thou hast this day received by that noble Knight, who is called Palmerin: then calling Palmerin to him, he said. Say Palmerin, Death seized so surely on mee, as I cannot let you know a number of things that concerne you very nearely: I counsell you therefore to travell to the Emperours Court of Allemaigne, where you shall haue tydings of that you seek so earnestly. With which words he delivered vp his ghost. And because it seemeth good, ere I passe any further, to let you knowe how the Prince Adrian came by the knowledge of Palmerin, thus it is;

I haue heretofore reported, that he was a notable Cabalist or Magician: by meanes whereof few secrets were concealed from him: so casting his Kalendis of most honourable Byrthys, he happened on Palmerin: and perceiving the high Fortune he was borne to, chesly, that he shold prove a most notable Knight, and the greatest Lord in Europe: he was desirous to contract a Marriage betwene him and his Piece Polinarda, presenting her to him in his Tissons, as hath bene declared. He thus deceasing, the King highly discontented at his Uncles hard fortune, caused him to be buryed in most sumptuous manner: making him a Tombe in forme of a Pyramides, the most excellēt and stately that euer was in Bohemis, and ouer against him were hanged the bodyes of Count and his two Cousins, for his Trophe. Thus every thing quieted, and the funerals of the Prince Adrian solemnized, Palmerin would presently haue departed toward Allemaigne: but Ptolomes Wounds were so dangerous, as he was constrained to stay longer then hee intended, In the mean space the King did them all the honor that could be deuot-

## THE HISTORIE

denised, in hope to stay them still in his Court, but it was impossible, for Palmerin tolde him he must needs go to the Emperour, about affayres of very great importance. I know your meaning well enough (saide the King,) you intend to goe combate with the Enchanted Knight: and in so doing you shall lose both your paines and your life, as many others haue done before you.

What Enchaunted Knight is it (saide Palmerin) on my Faith (my Lord) I never heard any one talke of him but you, Then wil I tel yee, (qd. the King) since I haue begun the matter. Not long since in the Countrey of the Emperour my Uncle, in the Citle of Ymanes, dwelled a wealthy Knight, who had a faire Daughter, amorous of a Gentleman: and they loue kept so secret as none knewe it but themselues. It so fell out, that her Father marryed her to another Gentleman in his house, but for any god acceptation, or chearfull countenance of the Gentle-Woman, the Wyde-grome could haue none, so highly esteemed shes her first Loue: and continued in opinion towards him so firme, as shes graunted him enterance into her Chamber, at an appointed time, where he murdered her Husband, and carryed the Lady with him whether he pleased. The brunt hereof was so storne spread abroad, as the Mother of the murthered Gentleman hearde thereof: wherupon shes made her complainte to the Emperour, who immediately sent to summon the other before him: but they refusing to come, and hauing betaken themselves to a very strong Castle, were in the ende so streyghtly besieged, as the Lady with her louer, at length were taken, and hauing confessed the trueth of theyr offence, sentence was given on them, that they should both be burned. The Father of this Knight offender so grieved hereat, as he went to one of his Sisters, intending never to see the Emperour and his Court againe. His Sister seeing him in this extremite, (as no malice or hadde intention is comparable to a Womanes) devised to Enchant one of her Donnes, a god & hardy Knight, in such sorte, as hee shold never be ouercome in Fight, but

with

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

with an Enchauntment of greater force. Besides, shes gaue him a Bow, and a great company of empoysoned Arrowes, wherewith hee shold kill the Emperour and his Children, or any other whome himselfe pleased: which hee hadde not failed to haue done, but mine Uncle Adrian understanding therof, did take such carefull regard to the matter, as he could not hurt them, but many of his people: so that the Countrey is wonderfully perplexed. For he is mounted on a Horse Enchaunted as himselfe, the swiftest in pace that ever was seene, wherewith hee flyes into many out-places of the Emperour, committing a thousand hatnes, and cannot be stayed, for whosoever comes to him Armed, Knight, or Peasant, all dyes the death, and none escapes him. And that which is worst of all, it is commonly reported, that if mine Uncle will not give him his eldest Sonne Trineus and faire Polinarda his Daughter, to doe with them what shall like his humour, hee will never departe the Countrey, till hee haue throughly ruined it. By my Sworde (my Lorde) saide Palmerin, in all my life I never heard so strange a tale, were I sure to dye a thousand deaths, I will fight with this Duell, and deliuer the Countrey, if my strength will compasse it. Alas my god Friende (saide the King) it would much displease mee that you should hazard your selfe in such a dangerous aduenture: for where such duellish Enchantments are, the strength of man (he is great soone if he be) doth not preuaile: wherefore for my sake I pray you forbeare. Let come what please God (said Palmerin) for if I dye now, I shalbe excused for ever hereafter. Well sawe the King that hee could not chaunge his minde, wherefore he left off any further to intreate him: and too long he thought he carried for Polinardes health, so desirous was hee to be with the Emperour, hoping that his Combat with the Enchanted knight, would graunt him meanes to see and talke with faire Polinarda. Wherefore when his companion had gotten a little strength, they tooke their leaue of the King and the Ladys, chieflie of the Prince Dyardo, and sayre Cardonia: who after theyr depar-

## THE HISTORIE

departure had such successe in their loue, as with the Kings consent the Marriage was solemnized. Now are Palmerin and Ptolome on the way to Gaunt, where the Emperour made his continuall aboade: the Enchaunted Knight so persecuting him, as he durst at no time come forth of his Castle.

## CHAP. XXVI.

¶ How Palmerin and Ptolome arrived at the Cittie of Gaunt, where the Emperour of Allemaigne kept his Court: and of the Combate between Palmerin and the Enchaunted Knight.



¶ God expidition made these Knights in their Journey, till at length they arrived at the Cittie of Gaunt, where the Emperour of Allemaigne then sojourned, not knowing how to depart thence, because the Enchaunted Knight watched him at all hours: our Knights being thus come thither, lodged in the house of a wealthie Burgessse, where they were entertained in very honourable manner.

They were no sooner dismounted from their Horses, but the whole Cittie was on a sudden byzore, and the people ranne on heapes from one place to another: which made him remember what the King of Bohemia hadde tolde him, and presently hee imagined what affer followed, for his Host in great feare, cam running to him, saying:

Alas Sir, we are all undone, the Enchaunted Knight hath gotten the Gates of the Cittie, and in despight of the Guard hee is entred: Wondersfull is the charme that hee will now

do,

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

do, if the Prince Trineus and sayre Polinarda be not reskele to. God defend such hard Fortune (saide Palmerin,) rather will I fight with him, and if I dye, I shall accompany many others in unfortunat successe. With these words he took his Lance, and galloped that way where hee hearde the tumult, which was at the Emperours Castle, where the Enchaunted Knight was, shooting his poysned Arrowes at the windowes hee espied open. Joyfull was Palmerin to finde him in such a place, where the Lady Polinarda might giue iudgement of his valour, which opinion did so renew his courage, as presently hee marched towards his Enemie, who held in his hand a persian Bowe, with an Arrow in it ready to shote, having a great sort more at his backe, in his Quiver: he was of unreasonable stature, yet with a countenance both steeane and couragious, all which could not dismay Palmerin, but called to him in this manner. Ynde Knight, that by the ayde of Diuellis and euill Spiris, hast committed monstrosus cruelties: It is now time that hee whome thou seruall shold haue his prey, which is thy saule into endlesse perdition. And so without stayng for an answere, hee ranne valiantly against him: but the Enchaunted Knight taking his aduantage, shot an Arrow at him so violently, as it pierced through his Armour to the bare flesh. Palmerin having broken his Lance, with an Iron Hace hee had, hee reached such a streeke to the Knight, as hee brake his Bowe in two pieces, and the blanke falling on the head of his Horse, made him therewithall fall dead to the ground. The Knight haing recovered himselfe, tooke a Hace that hung at his Saddle bowe, and cam against Palmerin, who was neare entierly likewise: So layde they on bothe terribly with theyre Haces, that the Emperour and his Pebles, Lordes and Ladys, hearing the stroakes, came to the windowes, to see the Combat, little thinking that any one durst presume to meddle with his enemie: yet all this while the Knights never breasted, although their Shields and Armeours were very much mangled, and theyr bodies wounded in many places.

And

# THE HISTORIE

And because Palmerin salwe the fighit endure so long with the Mace, he threwe it down, and tooke him to his sword, wherwith hee did so bumbalke him about the head, as hee could scant tell where to strike againe: but the Knight on a sudden lifting uppe his Mace, gaue Palmerin such a stroke betwix the head and the shoulders, as made him stagger, and riele to and fro amazedly: yet comming to himselfe, and seeing the Knight faint, with his great effusion of bloud, closed with him, and casting his legge behinde him, threwe him to the ground, when setting his foote on him brest to keepe him downe, with his Sworde he parted his head from his bodie.

What question were it whether the Emperour rejoiced hereat or no? who for his iwhole Empyze would not he were aliue againe, beeing so well deliuered from his onely enemie in t' he wold, that could so molest him and his Countrey with such mischievous crueltie. And for to say sooth, the Enchaunted Knight was altogether invincible; nor could Palmerin haue thus preuailed against his wonderfull Enchantments, but that the thre Sisters of the Mountaine Artifaria highly fauoured him: as you heard before what promises they made him.

The Combate beeing thus ended, and the Enchaunted Knight dead, the Emperour (giving thanks to God for this victorie) set open the gates of the Castle, and came forth himselfe to welcome Palmerin: who kneeling on his knee before the Emperour, thus spake. Mightie Prince, such renowne haue I heard through the Woerde of your exceeding honor and bountie, as I haue trauelled many strange Countreyes, to come offer you my service: desyring your Highnesse (if my lute may seeme reasonable) to accept mee henceforth amongst your knighthly Servuants. Ah faire Knight, (answering the Emperour) it is for me to know of you, how I may remunerate this unspeakable courtesie, for but by you mine enemie had triumphed in my spoyle: so much then is my selfe, my Children and Countrey bounden to you, as no satisfaction is sufficient to regratiate. So taking him by

the

# OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

the hand, and perceiving his body wounded in many places, hee conducted him into one of the fairest Chambers in his Castle, where hee was unarm'd, commanding his Chirurgions to take diligent care of him, because in truth they much doubted his life. Wherefore getting him into his bed, all meedfull things for his health were applied to him, and no cost was spared to saue his life that preserved the whole Countrey.

## CHAP. XXVII.

How the Empresse came to visite Palmerin, who kept his Chamber, because hee had receiued such dangerous wounds in the Combat with the enchanted Knight, and of the speech he had with the faire Princesse Polinarda.



He Empresse with her faire Daughter Polinarda, glad of the death of the enchaunted Knight, came to Palmerins chamber to visite him, who hearing of their comming, cast a night mantle about him, which the Emperour had sent him, and came with great reverence to welcome them: so desirous was hee to see her, for whom hee had traualled so many strange Regions. In this place it is necessary that you remember, what gracious gifts the thre fatal sisters bestowed on him, in the Mountaine Artifaria, one of them granting him this speciall fauour, that he should be highly esteemed of her to whom he was destined, so sone as she beheld him, which came to passe as here shall be declared.

# THE HISTORIE

red. Palmerin expecting the extreme of the Empresse and her daughter in his chamber, meeting them at the doore, falling on his knee, did with great humblity kisse their hands: but the Empresse taking him up in her armes, saluted him with these speches. Gentle Knight, right happy may wee count our selues by your comming hither, the Realme being more desolate then it hath bene seene heretofore, and not without cause, in respect of the great iniurie the knight did vs, whom you haue slaine, he hauing sworne the death of my children that never offended him: but God bee thanked the lot hath fallen on himselfe, which hee determined to infiit on other: for which great grace they stand so deeply bound to you as to their Father that first gaue them life, which by your pro-  
wesse you haue happily preserued: this second gift being of no lesse account then the first, worthily may you be called their second Father. Palmerin giuing eare to the Empresse salutations, had his minde more busied in beholding Polinarda, whose daintie regard so maistered his opinions, as head, heart, thoughts and all were now set to worke: yet couerly he shaped this answere to the Empresse. Madame, what I haue done for you and yours, is nothing in respect of my great god will: for since the time I first had knowledge of my selfe, and before I received the order of Knight-hode, understanding of my Lord the Emperour, and what honourable entertainment was in his Court, I dedicated my service to him onely, and for this cause Madamo came I hither. But how is it possible Sir, said shee, that you can content your selfe to be one of his Knights, your deserts being so great? Very well Madame, quoth hee, and yours too, so please your Highnesse to afford me such fauour: With all my heart Sir, said shee, shall I entertaine you towards the Emperour, and on mine owne behalfe will prouide better for you then I will speake of: and did it like you, I would accept you for a Virgins Knight here, and none other. Whereupon shee called her Daughter Polinarda, saying. Faire Daughter, this Knight as yet hath little acquain-

tance

# OF PALMERIN DE OLIVA.

tance in the Court, I pray you see his entertainment may be god, because his desire is to make stay with vs, and for your owne part, loke that you intreate him well, with this request, that you accept him for your seruaunt, and he shall be your Knight. And are you both agreed Ladies, said Palmerin? Heaven forlake mee if I refuse honure of so high account. And as they wold haue proceeded on, the Emperour came in and brake off their talke, and comynge to the Empresse, said; Madame, I beseech you haue god regard to the health of this Knight, and let our Chirurgions not trifle the time with him, for I perswade my selfe, that the enchaunted Knight with his venomed arrowes, hath wounded him with great danger inwardly, and hath besides soore bruised his bodie with the weight of his Mace. But Palmerin hauing Polinarda so neere him, neither minded his wounds, or what the Emperour had spoken, his obiect more delighted, then his wounds greeued him, then the Emperour taking him by the hand, said; I pray you my deare Friend to bee of good comfort, dñe payre not for any thing I beseech you, and be aduised by them that haue care of your health, for you shall want nothing if my Crowne will purchase it. So departed hee and the Empresse, with their Daughter Polinarda, whom loue had already so inueigled, that shee (being yet but tender of yeeres) found her selfe so restrained of her libertie, as shee scant knew how to dissemble this sudaine affection: and from that time forward shee became so sad and pensiue, as one of her Ladies, the most fauoured and familiar with her, named Brionella, Daughter to the Duke of Saxon, well perceived it, yet durst shee not presume to deaigne, whence proceeded this strange alteration, but so circumspectly did shee regard the Princesse, as shee well noted the ground of her grieses. Whereupon it happened, that one time amonst other, they two being alone together, Brionella iudging that her Lady delighted to heare speech of Palmerin, now to hit themayle on the head, shee thus began. What say you Ma-

## THE HISTORIE

damne, (by your fauour) of the new come Knight: did you euer see a brauer and more accomplisht Gentleman? Upon my faith Madame, in mine opinion I thinke that nature hath wroght all her perfections in him, and fauoured him aboue all other Knights in manhode and Chualtrie. Ah Brionella, awnswere the Princesse, thou art not alone of this opinion, for I ever thought as much though I kept it in silence: Would God I had as great authority ouer him, as hee alreadie hath gotten ouer me. Is the matter so with you, saide Brionella? it should seeme you are in loue with him then. To tell thee the truth Brionella (quoth shee) I am, and did I not doubt some other hath preuented mee, I wold aduenture to make him mine. In god sooth Madam, said Brionella, you two being vnted together in one reciprocall league of loue, well might it bee reported the most honourable match, and of the two nobleſt young Princes through the whole world: and seeing you haue made a choyſe ſo wozthie, dismay not god Madame, but proceſſe in your determination. Thus deuiled the two Ladies together on Palmerin, who was no leſſe in affection for the loue of Polinarda, whom hee had ſearched with ſo great paine and trauaile, and had now found with ſo high god for- tune. If loue was ſo earnest with him before in his ſleeping viſions hauing not ſene her, much more vehement was the impetion now hauing her in preſence. Wherupon the day following hee called for his garments, and as hee was making hymſelfe readie, the Emperor by one of his Gentlemen ſent him the god morrow, deſirous to vnderſtand in what plight hee felt hymſelfe. Good Sir, anſwered Palmerin to the Gentleman, I beseech you doe my humble dutie to the Emperor for this great courtesie, and you may thus affiſſe him, that (heauen be prayſed) I feele my ſelfe in ſo god estate as euer I did. Which the Emperor hearing was highly contented, and ſent to deſire his company to the Chappell, where Palmerin (neuer before ſo thoroſhly touched with the ſorible auaults of loue) glaunced ſo

many

## OF PALMERIN DE OLIVA.

many ſweet looks on the Princesſe Polinarda, and byeaſhed ſo many ſighes, the ſecret Ambaſſadours of his heart, as it was a heauen to him to be in theſe paſſions. The Emperor and all the traine returned from the Chappell, they went to meate, and Palmerin being placed right againſt Polinarda, was in ſuch ſits as hee knewe not what counte- nance to beſe: for his colour went and came in ſuch manner, as the Princesſe might eaſily iudge the cauſe of his do- lour, whereupon ſhee preſently preſumed, that hee had more iñtereſt in his thoughts then ere ſhee looked for. The like opinion conceiued he of her, yet was no other teſtimony de- liuered on either ſide, then ſad countenances, the reuealers of a tormented ſpirit. Thus continued theſe two louers, till the Tables were withpaſone, and then the Lords and Ladies ſell to dauncing, in which delight and diuers other, the ihole day was ſpent, till the Emprefſe and her Ladies departing to their Chambers, the good night on all ſides was reverently giuen: when Palmerin went to his lod- ging in ſuch an agonie, as more likely to dyre then liue, hee threw hymſelfe on his bed, where hauing ſighed and ſor- rowed long time greeuously, at length hee brake forth into theſe tearmes. Ah Palmerin, unhappy, wretched and moſt miſerable, nolo art thou entred into ſuich a Labyrinth, as iſpoſſible iſt for thee to get out againe with life, but what ſhould moue thee to ſo high an enterprize, being no way able to equall her that is ſecond to none: Alas, now doe I plainly ſee the ſmall crevite is to bee reposed in Dreameſ, and that the viſions I ſaue in my Father Gerrards houſe, on the Mountaine Artaria and elſe where, are ſtruolous illuſſions, and of no account: with them may I joyne the pro- muſe made mee by olde Acrian, who boasted to knowe ſo much of my fortunes, for loue iſ not of ſuich power on my behalfe, that faire Polinarda, either can or will make any reckoning of me. Then Palmerin reſolute hymſelfe ſudden- ly to die, that this iuible and conuulfing fire, which by little and little melts hym away, may bee extinguiſhed, and

## THE HISTORIE

thy selfe easies. With these words hee breathed sorgh such an extreame sigh , as Vrbanillo the Dwarfe (being nere) heard him , who doubting least any new mischaunce had happened by the pruine wounds the enchanted Archer gaue him, made hast to know the cause of this euill. Ah Vrbanillo, quoth Palmerin , I finde my selfe farre worse then dead. What my Lord, said the Dwarfe, now you ought to bee of best disposition , will you deceiue vs with this alteration? The Emperour never gaue you bad countenance since your comming, whence then shold procede this strange conceit? No no Vrbanillo, quoth hee, it is not the Emperour, but a Lord of greater power then his Maiesie. It is Loue my Lady, the stricke commaundre of the stoutest mindes, hee hath conquerd mee, and well I know I shal die, if thou doe not finde the meane to helpe me. By my faith my Lord (quoth the Dwarfe) so please you to tell mee how and wherein I may helpe you, let me die a thousand deathes if I doe it not. Understand then my god Vrbanillo , said Palmerin , that this strange alteration , procedes from the diuine looks of my perelesse Mistresse Polinarda , whose fiery beames haue searched so narry wylly ever corner of my thoughts, as I must die because I loue too dearely. But couldst thou make knowne to her the least part of my insupportable vexations, may be she would haue some pittifull remorse of my martyrdome: for well may it be iudged , that a Lady accomplished with so many vertuous perfections , must needs bee stored with sweetnes, fauour and pittie. Not unlike my god Lord sayd Vrbanillo , but doe you not remember how I was punysshed, wherin the like case I ventured to sollicite your loue to Laurana, Daughter to the Duke of Durace & by my faith my Lord, I shall not forget it while I haue a day to live, and am afraid to fall againe into the like danger. And this spake Vrbanillo with such a grace , as Palmerin could not but laugh , noting with what feare the deformed fellow gaue it forth , whereupon hee said. Thou needest not be dismayd, if she that louest thee in thy sleepe be that Polinarda, for whose loue

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

Loue I am thus tormented, and for whom I was borne, as many haue enformed me: I pray thee therefore speake to her, and dread no colours. It is god, said Vrbanillo , that you would haue mee more hardy then you are your selfe: speake to her your selfe if you dare , for I dare not aduenture it for feare of my life. If thou doest it not (quoth Palmerin , assure thy selfe thou shalt never henceforth serue mee. Nay then (quoth the Dwarfe) I will rather put my selfe in iegardie, to be better beaten then I was the last time, before I will lose so god a Maister. I pray thee doe, said Palmerin , in respect thou seest the earnestnesse of mine affections. Feare not (quoth the Dwarfe) albeit you were a great deale more fit to breake the matter then I: but I will gage my life to gaine you the Lady , and hereupon they rested till the next morning.

## CHAP. XXVIII.

How Polinarda desired Palmerin to give her his Dwarfe, and of the speech which shee and Vrbanillo had afterward together.



Early the next morning Palmerin arose, and having walked abroade to contemnate his desires, returned into the chamber of presence , where he found Trineus the Emperours Sonne conserfing with the Ladies : at which very instant the Dwarfe entered, whose bad shapd body and face, made them all fall a laughing, so that Trineus came to his Sister Polinarda, saying. Sister, did you ever behold

# THE HISTORIE

a more proper Page to attend on Ladies, then this gaunt  
Squire that serues my Lord Palmerin? In god sooth Bro-  
ther, quoth she, he is farre unlike his noble Maister, yet wold  
I like well enough if hee were mine. I beseech you Sir Pal-  
merin, said Trineus, bestowe your Servant on my Sister  
Polinarda. Madame, quoth Palmerin, were he better, he is  
yours, and his Maister likewise. Then called he Vrbanillo,  
who knelling to understand his Maisters pleasure, he said:  
Vrbanillo, I haue given you to my Lady Polinarda as her  
man, will you not serue her honourably and truely aboue all  
other? Ye my Lord, quoth he, next after you, but you will  
I not leaue while I live, although you woulde disdaine my  
service. God reason haile thou, said the Princesse, and well  
am I pleased it shoulde be so: yet during the time of his stay  
here, you shal for sake him and abide with me. For that Ma-  
dame, quoth the Dwarfe, I am well contented. Then loke  
you falle not, said the Princesse, henceforth to give your at-  
tendance. These speches were thus vsed as it were for pas-  
time, that shee might thereby deceiue the iudgements of o-  
ther: but her whole intent was, to knowe of Vrbanillo, if  
his Maister were affected to any other Lady, by whose  
meanes her loue might be frustrate. For as you haue heard,  
& little before that loue had brought her vnder such obey-  
sance, as did not the regard of honour with holde her, her  
selfe wold first breake the Isle of her verations, rather then  
stay too long and not bee solicited. Many other deuises had  
the Ladies with Vrbanillo, who knew so well how to be-  
haue himselfe, as from thence forward he grew so familiar  
amongst them: as hee wold enter their Chambers when  
himselfe pleased, vnder colour of attendance on the Prin-  
cess Polinarda, from time to time to moue his Maisters  
messages. But at length shee preuented him in this sort, for  
being alone at a windowe in the presence Chamber, shee  
called the Dwarfe, and making her entraunce by other  
occasions, she asked him whose Sonne Palmerin was. God  
knowes Madame, quoth hee, for I doe not, nor himselfe  
neither.

# OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

neither: but of this I can assure you, that neuer was knigh-  
ly Cheualrie better employed by any then by him, for since  
the time of my knawledge, hee hath done such noble Acts, as  
it is not remembred that euer Knight in this age did the like.  
And then from point to point hee discoursed all that Palme-  
rin had done since his comming to him: And can you thinke  
then god Madam (quoth the Dwarfe) that hee is descended of  
Noble lineage? Trust mee Ladie, I haue my selfe hearde  
by many learned Magicians, and others, that theyr Divina-  
tions were no lesse then I say.

Polinarda heard the Dwarfe thus speake on his Maisters  
behalfe, if before his loue had kindled her likynge, no matuell if  
heart and spirit were now enflamed: so that now shee could  
not longer conceale what shee had hitherto couered, and there-  
fore said to the Dwarfe, I beseech thee Vrbanillo, by the faith  
and dutie thou bearest to thy Maister, Tell me one thing that  
I desire to know of him, which shall tende to nothing but to  
his honour and aduantage. You haue so Coniured me, faire  
Madame (quoth the Dwarfe) as death shall not compell mee  
to hide whatsoeuer you shall please to commaund, if it ly in  
me to resolve you. Know then Vrbanillo, said the Princesse,  
that I loue thy Maister as nearely as my Brother Trineus:  
and am desirous to know of thee, what Lady it is he esteems  
aboue all other: because when I know her, I may loue her  
the better for his sake: Withall, that I may commend the  
Ladies happiness, whose fortune is to be loued of so braue a  
Gallant. Well perceiued the Dwarfe, that ryther now or  
neuer was the time to bestirre himselfe, according to the pro-  
mise he had made to his Maister: wherefore he answered the  
Princesse in this manner. Believe me Madame, were it  
to any other, I would not reveale such secrets of my Lord as  
you desire to know: but to you that are his Lady & Mistresse,  
I am content to revele the whole. Suffiseth then Madam,  
that he loueth in such sort, that if the Heauens send him not  
remedie the sooner, impossible it is that his life shoulde long  
endure; for I see him so faire besides himselfe, and tormented  
with

## THE HISTORIE

With so many passions, as every houre his death is expected. What will yee Ladie that I say? He complaines, he sighes, and day by day is in such dispaire for his Ladys Loue: As happie myght I haue counted him, had he never seene her, or that his dayes were as short as his desires. If then Polinarda were in doubt (not judging her selfe to bee shē) it may easily be imagined, and presently was shē brought into such a perplexitie, as the Vermillion colour in her cheeks begame to chauge, such sudden feares possessed her minde, & so manie sundry varieties of opinion thwarted her conceyt, as fain she wold haue spoken, but could not of long time, whereby the Dwarfe discerned the cause of her alteration, yet he dismebleth what he saw, and thus continued on wth his discourse.

Now considering (Farie Madame) the high deserts of my Lord and Maister, may shē be esteemed happye (as you say) that shall cause the losse of the best Knight living this daye? Ah Mistresse, if he dye (as God for bidde,) farewell the onely flower of all true Noblenesse, and the most assured Friende to distressed Ladys. Wherefore I beseech you pardon me, I shall name her unto you: and let mee intreate you to deale wth her so farre, that the courtesie wherein shē is indebted to so god a Knight as my Lord and Maister is, may be shewed effectually, as that she would loue and fauour him, as he doth and hath very well deserved. Trust me Vrbanillo, answere the Princesse, when I know the Lady I will, & beside, if she do not regard his passions as she ought, I will intreate her at my request to be into pittifull. These wordes procured a sudden iealousie in her, that shē should promise to answere what shē most desired her selfe: yet somwhat earnest to be resolved, she vowed to fulfill her promise, and therfore desired him to tell her Name. So you will give mee your word Madame, (quoth the Dwarfe,) not to take in ill parte what I shall say, I will satisfie your request presently. Believe mee (saide the Princesse,) I will not, rather perswade thy selfe, that herein thou doest me great pleasure. Ah faire Princesse (quoth the Dwarfe) it is for you and no other, that

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

my Lord is thus tormentid, it is for you that hee lives, and dyes an hundred tunes a day: Sweete Ladie haue pittie on him, and seeke not the losse of so god a Knight, who loues you deareer then his owne life. At which answere shē was surprised with incredible pleasure, yet seigning the contrary, shē saide: Is it I? And how long I pray you? By my faith Madame (quoth hee) that can I not tell you: But I haue heard him say of a long time: more then fourre yeares before hee was knighted, hee vowed himselfe yours: since which time, all his honourable Actions hath hee onely dedicated to your praise. So that soz to finde you, hee left the King of Macedon, and his Sonne Florendos, with whom he was in such estimation, as no man the like: yet that honour hee forsooke to do you service: and for your loue hee yielded himselfe as vassall to the Emperour your Father, and gaue himselfe your Knight, if you deigne to accept him. When Polinarda had well heard the Dwarfe (albeit her heart floated in ioyes) yet could shē so well command her thoughts, as she seemed to make small account of his wordes: Notwithstanding, returned him this answere. I promised the Vrbanillo, not to conceiue yll of ought thou shouldest tell mee, nowdor I: yet woulde I haue thee to regarde my calling, being Daugter to so high and mighty a Prince as is the Emperour: But if it be so, that Palmerin thy Lord and Maister beares mee such speciall affection, I must let him knowe by thes, that it woulde haue bene farre more steme to haue told mee, then to make thes Ambassadour in such secrete affayres: I pruer thelesse, I willke not of his honourable Loue and god will, whereof I shal thinke better, when I know the effect is conformable to thy protestations. Madame (quoth the Dwarfe) so you would please to bouchsafe him time and place, hee will make you acquainted with strange matter, concerning both your Destinies: which conites can no way impeach your honour. Why tell him (said the Princesse) hee shall haue me daylie heere in the Chamber of presence, where hee may say his pleasure with safetie: In meane space I accept him as my

## THE HISTORIE

my Knight, charging him that hee doo not departe the Courte without any licence, if hee desire to doo me pleasure.

The Dwarfe well pleased with so god an answere, on his knee kissing the Princesse hand, tooke leauue of her to returne towards Palmerin: who meeting him by the way, in place convenient, said:

How now Vrbanillo: what newes hast thou brought me? life or death? Maister(answered the Dwarfe,) as you haue god occasion to repaire your selfe the most fortunate Knight that euer bare Armes. Then palmerin embrasing him, said: Ah tell mee what they are: Hast thou spoken with divine Polinarda? Daleshee any pity on my consuming cares? That doth she(my Lord(quoth the Dwarfe) and commands you by me(if you be so drownd hers as I haue perswaded)that henceforth you depart not the Emperours Courte, without her leauue. Then recited hee the wholle talke between them, and lastly, the pleasure shee conceiued in so god tydings: so that shee accepted him onely for her Knight. Whiles the Dwarfe continued this discourse, Palmerin was rauished with such inward joy, as with a great sigh, he saide: O heauens, how doo you fauour mee: Now see I well, that my seuerall apparitions on the Mounts of Olives and Artisaria, are predestinations, ordained to me by your Gracious presence: I beseeche you therefore humbly, that what you haue promised may soone come to effect, for the regarde of incomparable Polnarda. Then demanded he, by what meanes he might attaine to speake with the Princesse: Shee saith (quoth hee) that you shall haue her d'aylie in the Hresence, or in the Emperesse Chamber, and there may you safely imparte your whole minde vnto her. But I haue other newes to tell you, for I understand certainly, that the Emperour intendes a matter greatly for your aduantage: he mindes to morrow to visite one of his Castles neere at hande, and there also, to passe the time, in honour of the Ladies will haue a Tourney. So that there(better then any where else) may you and Polinarda conserue togither: therefore courage your selfe, and

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

goe keepe companie with my Lord the Emperour, it may be himselfe will acquaint you with this Enterprize.

Now credite mee Vrbanillo, (saide Palmerin) thou hast don so much for mee, as I shall never recompence thee while I liue; but I pray thee tell me, did she not at the first take my message strangely? That did she(quoth the Dwarfe) when I perswaded her that you loued a Ladie in such sort as hardly could you liue without her fauourable regard: then she thinkeing it was some other and not herselfe, chaunged her colour maruellous passionately, but let it suffice you, that shee is as deepe in loue as you are or can bee.

So went Palmerin to the Emperour, who calling him to him, saide: Oy noble friend, I shall make knowne to you what hath bence concluded in your absence. The Ladyes of our Courte haue bene so long lockt in, for feare of the Enchaunted Knight whome you haue slaine, as they haue desired to progresse a little: for which cause, and to pleasure them, I am thus determined; Two leagues hence haue I a godly Castle, enironed with Woods and pleasant Meadowes, there may we haunte the wilde Harte and Woze, with other pastimes: but now haue I caused Scaffolds and other provision to be made there for a Tourney, and sozie Knights will I appoint in this Action, tenne against tenne, and the first Conquerours shall keepe the field against tenne other, that shall revenge the tenne vanquished: So having all iousted, they shall fight at Barriers, with rebated swordes, and the brauest Champyon shall haue a rich Jewell, whiche the Empresse hath prouided for that purpose. Now would I haue you one of the ten Challengers, and my Nephew Gannerino, on the Defendants side: for him do I esteeme one of the best Knights of my Courte: Will you not doo thus much at my request? God forbyde(saide Palmerin) that I shoulde refuse any thing you please to commaunde. These newes were immediately published thorough the Courte, which made every Knight spedily to prepare himselfe, hoping to be of that number of the sozie, that should performe the

## THE HISTORIE

The Tournay : and thus they priuily imparted to their Ladys, how they wuld b:zeake both Sworde and Launce for their Loue. Among whome Ptolome was not the last, for he so affected the young Princesse Brionella, as he had made her sole Mistresse of his hart, yet could he not find the means to acquainte her therewith : But the next day, as she rode among the Ladys, they had good leasure to confesse togither, & before they arrived at the Castle, they discouered throughly vnto each other their Affections, promising mutually such a iust consent in Loue, as the one should bragge of the others happiness. While they thus continued their louely amorous discourse, Palmerin who had but nevly presented himselfe to Polinarda, was much discontented, because so soon as he came to her, the Empresse called her, and left not talking with her till they alighted from Horsebacke : Notwithstanding, before night, hee gained recompence for that disadvantage : for after Supper, the Emperour and the Ladys went a walking, by a godly Riuers side, there to disporte themselves, in the cole of the euening. Now was it the merrie Maye moneth, when the fields were richly decked with Natures Tapistrie, and Cupid gave god opportunity to his Subjects, to contemplate theyr sweet and assable desires, and well came it to passe for Palmerin, while Trineus and Ptolome were conuersing with the Empresse, that hee taking his Ladie and Mistresse by the Arme, walked with her amongst the faire flowers, and seeing the tyme and place serue him so well, trembling, (as surpized with a vehement passion) thus beganne. Madame, your gracious nature will not count it strange, but rather take it in god part, that I a knight Errant, and as yet unknowne among Courtly assemblies, should presume to make knowne a secrete to you, which my selfe dare not imagine without reverence, and death can cause me declare to none : noz may I proceede without some assurance of my vncertaine hope, by her diuine pittie that giues me life. And althoegh the words of my Dwarfe haue acquainted mee with your Princely fauour, sufficient to expell all

feare

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

feare and suspition of reproape : yet such is the height whereto I aspire, as the greatest Monarch in the Worlde can scantly deserve, then well may I esteime my selfe vnworthe. But doubting whither your words were such, or that my Dwarfe (perhaps as hee often may do,) hath reported more then hee had given him in charge : I am desirous, (trusting on your benignitie and speciall fauour aboue all other) to understand, if your good pleasure be so highly to honour mee, as henceforth to accept me for your Knight and Servant. And if such vn-deserved fauour and grace may happily fall to my lot, I shall not only acknowledge, that Fortune hath directed my course, to the onely place of honour, but shall haue good occasion beside, to make knowne by my Knighthood, that I am the Fa- vourite of the most sayre Princesse. Herein god Madame, you shall not dissent from reason, if I having lost my Liber- tie (by beeing onely yours,) want the Medicie that shoulde helpe mee in your high regarde: Therefore may you swete Lady, in mine excuse, accuse Loue, and your celestiall beauty: both stronger to command me, then I to gaine say. My Dwarfe hath let you know (as he told mee) part of the paine I endure for your sake, which you cannot but thinke well of, in that my Destinie so commandid me, long time before I sawe or knewe you, not alone in Visions, but by manifest solicitings, so that in search of you, I haue suffered such tra-uell, as manuell it is that Nature could make mee able to su- staine. Notwithstanding, I account all right happily bestowed, if I may but gaine fauour in your gracious Eyes, without which, it is impossible for mee to live : For there is no parte possessing eyther life or spirite in mee, that is not vowed to your only service. These words were dipt in teares, and de- liuered with many a bitter sigh, which moued Polinarda to such compassion, as taking him by the right hand, shee began to playe with his Fingers, her trembling testifying her secret affections : and then breaking off Palmerins discourse, as hee thought to haue continued longer, thus answered. Syr Knight, it semeth by your countenaunce that you despayre

of

# THE HISTORIE

of something, or else hys more fortitude then I can conceyue.

Esteeme you me of simple iudgiment, that knowing your Valour and knighthly perfections, I shold not account my selfe happy to haue so braue a Champion? Let it suffice you, that what Vrbanillo tolde you, is true: and in regard of the paine you suffer for my Loue, and fancyng me so firmlye as you do: Believe me god knight, you feele no griefe, but it is as familiar with me, so that what thought you haue of me, the like haue I of you, as time and the unspotted loue I beare you shall witnessse: in meane time promise me not to departe my Fathers Courte without my consent. And because I see the Ladys approaching, referte me the rest vntill some other time, when wee shall haue more leasure to conserue together. And tell me now, if you haue determined to Iout to morrow? That will I Hadame, (quoth hee) if it shall please you to commaund me. In sooth (said shes) I will not hinder you, because I know the honour of the Tourney will be yours: For my sake therefore shall you weare this Bracelet, as a signe of my fauour, and pledge of my loue. So taking off her Bracelet, she gaue it to Palmerin, who receyued it with no little content: And so concluding their familiar talke, because many Knights and Ladys came about them, they walked where the Emperour and the Empresse were deuising with Ptolome and Trineus. Now because darke night dyew on, and the Cuening dew was dangerous, they returned to the Castle, entending the next day after dinner to beginne the Tournament.

CHAP.

# OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

## CHAP. XXIX.

How Palmerin gained the honour of the Tourney, and of that which happened afterward.



Aftre the order of the Tourney was set downe by the Emperour, as you haue heard, Palmerin did but expect the houre to goe to it, not doubting to perorme such chivalrie, as his Ladies fauour shold be worthily honoured: wherefore having prepared all his necessaries ready, immediatly after dinner, accompanied with none other Knights brauely armed, whereof Ptolome was one, he entered the lists royall. And espynghis Distresse Polinarda in the window with the Empresse, after he had done her humble reverence, he began to manage his horse with such braue carriers, as every one delighted to behold him, but especially the Princesse, whose heart Loue had thorouly conquered, so that she glorieth to be beloued of a knight so worthy and commendable, as that her eye was never from the object of her sweete desires. And marking his sheld, she beheld in a field of Sable, a siluer hand fast closed, the import whereof caused her to inquerre, in respect what had passed betwixne them before, and gladly would she haue knowne the meaning, but the place would afford no such countenance: wherefore perswading her selfe for the tyme, she was content in seeing her Bracelet, whch her knight wore vpon his right arm. And after many courses and losy poyncts done by Palmerin and

## THE HISTORIE

of the Knights before their Ladies, among whom Ptolomey, twelvē so expertent, as the presence of his Lady Briouella highly prouoked him. Then entred the Prince Ganareno, syply to the Empereur a knight of no small reckoning amongst the Allemaignes, and with him nine other, in most sumptuous armour; and their baueteries like wise tended to their Ladys (yet nothing comparable to Palmerin and his companions) they went to their tent, and while the Trumpets and Clarions summoned the field, every knight prepared himself in readines. Palmerin, not so much to win commen applause, as her loue who had the scueraigne power over him, seeing Ganareno overing himself to run first, tooke a strong latice, and encantēd him with such priuacie, as wylde man were both ouerthre lone and very sore bruised: notwithstanding, he was sone recovered by his companions, and in a Chaire caried sooth of the field. One of his knyghts woulde redēe revenge his misfortune, and was him selfe in like sorte served: in breese, the other eight had all one paymet, not one of them being able to moue Palmerin from his saddle. Palmerin tofull of his god successe, was departing away with his company, when one of them thus spake unto him. Sir Palmerin, you have sauied our labour, and got the hono: that wee desired. The time will come (quoth Palmerin) when you may do as much for me: but for this time (if you please) you may excuse me. All that were present, as well Lords as Ladies, maruailed at the valour of palmerin, and among the rest the Empereur, who said aloud, that hee never knew a more valiant Gentleman. Polinarda being so neare as she heard her Fathers wordes, and had her selfe beheld his high god fortune, was sodainely sollicitid with such affectionate pleasure, as forgetting her selfe, and where shee was, she thus spake to Briouella indifferent loud. What say you faire friend? doth not Palmerin worthily deserve to be loued? By my faith Madame, answered she, I never saw knyght give such rough encounters with the Launce, as he did to Ganareno and the rest of his compaynions. Polinarda woulde haue

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

haue proceded further, but there entred ten other knyghts, the formost being Ptolome, not content (as it seemed) that he ran not at the first: and then entred ten knyghts more, of whom the formost was Cormedes an Allemaigne Knight. They raunging themselves in order, Ptolome and Cormedes brauely encountered, but neither were vnhorsed: which grieved Ptolome to do no better in presence of his Lady: wherefore taking another Launce, at the second course Cormedes was cast quite out of his saddle, and thre more of his felloynes after him for compamie. Whiche when the Duke of Lorraines Brother perceived, a knyght well accounted of in the Country, desirous to recover the honour his forgoers had lost, spake thus to Ptolome. It seemes that these Grecian knyghts are come to rob vs of the hono: that is ours by inheritance, in unhappis houre were the Allemaignes borne if they suffer it: and so couching his Launce, met Ptolome with so full a carire, as losing saddle and stirrops he fell to the ground, and sone more of his knyghts after him had like entertainment, but a hardy knyght of the Emperors named Menadus, met the Dukes brother so rudely, as doowne hee fell to the grounde with his saddle betwene his legges. There were many brauely encounters with the Launce, to banquish one another, and all for the loue of their Ladys, who delighted to see their knyghts so brauely behauing themselves. The fust finished, each one alighted, and with their blunt swordes fell to the Battiers, and so cruelly they laid on each other, as they woulde not suffer one another to take breath: especially Ptolome, who buckled with the Duke of Lorraines Brother, to winne the hono: he lost in the Jousting. And new a fresh entred noble Palmerin, who was the onely man to whom Loue and Fortune were fauourable, raunged among the thicket, and with his sworde made way among them valiantly: at length hee came to the Duke of Lorraines Brother, and so camuaged him about the pate with his blunt fauchion, as he fell to the ground greatly astoned, charging him

## THE HISTORIE

him to speake no more in disgrace of the Grecian knyghts. All the port ended, the knyghts withdrew themselves into their Chambers to be unarmed, and each knyght wrappynge himselfe in his Mantle, palmerin was in his Ladies livery, for shee had sent him a very rich one, and so commynge into the Chamber of presence, the Emperour welcomed him in this manner. Welcme me my Lord, I account the Prince happy that hath you for his friend. As I am, my gracious Souaigne, answered Palmerin, I am your humble and obedient servant during life, ready to accomplish what shall please you to commaund me. The Emperour highly thanked him, and presently came the Empresse, one of the Ladies bringing with her a rich Cloke, and couered with pearles and stones of great value, whiche she presented to Palmerin, as the prize and honour he had wonne in the Tourney, and said to Polinarda; Fairie Daughter, I am sure you will belloewe some gift en Sir Palmerin, in that hee hath so worthily deuised. These words raised a sweet blushing in the Princesse countenance, not a litle rejoycing that hee whom she loued, had carried away the prize from all the other knyghts: so with a prettie modest smile, shee tooke a chaine of Gold from about her necke, saying; See here Sir Palmerin what I give you, this gift is to lye and chaine you in such sort, as you may never depart from the Emperours service. Palmerin with exceeding contentment received the chaine, and on his knee hee spake as folle weth. Madame, I am well contented to abide in such a prison, and never will I desire any other liberty, but still will be his bastaile that hath power to command me. This answere pleased the Emperour exceedingly, in that he desired to haue palmerin still abide in his Court. Wherefore he said to Polinarda, you haue done well Daunger thus to binde Palmerin, for now he cannot escape away when he list. So the Tables being couered, the Emperour and all the knyghts of the Tourney sat downe to meate, where much talke was spent as concerning the successe on

all

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

all sides, but Palmerin and Polinarda had enough to doe to viue each other, their eyes doing their office, and carrying betwene them the message of their passions, yet so discreetly shadowed, as none could perceiue them. Supper ended, the knyghts and Ladies went to dauncynge, and afterwards to their chambers, because the Emperour had commanded the next day another Tournement: a bries report whereof may very well serue, in that you can imagine there wanted no braue chualtrie. What Palmerin did that day, it were in vaine to tel, because the former day makes knowne his woythinesse, and Ptolome behaued himselfe in so god sort, that Brionella was as proude of him as the Princesse of her knyght, and therefore presented him with a very rich Diamond, as a token of his deuert and her loue. Thus while the the Jousts endured, the Duke of Lorrayne had great familiaritie with Palmerin, because hee had deliuered his Sister Cardonya, from the false treason of the Count of Ormeque. All pastimes thus finished, the Emperour returned to Gaunt, where Palmerin intreated his Mistris to appoint him time and place, where they might more priuately discouer on their loue, the which she promised, and awaited opportunity.

## CHAP. XXX.

How Polinarda discoursed her secrets to Brionella, and of the talke she had with Palmerin.



Polinarda not forgetting the promise shee made her friend, to mette him in some place where they might argue on their loue, he entred to discouer her affectiōns to Brionella, shee loued of Ptolome: well perceiuing, that without her helpe, shee could not attaine the end of her

## THE HISTORIE

her desires, wherefore without any longer stay, shee thus began with her. By chosen friend, I would make knowne one thing unto thee, which death can compell me discouer to no other, wherefore thou must have care to keepe secret my speeches, in respect of my calling, not doubting but in time to recompence any paine thou takest for me. Faire Princesse, said Brionella, in that you do me such honour, as to impart your thoughts to mee, rather will I die then sayle one iota of your commandement, and therefore assure your selfe, that what you declare shall never be discouered. Then Polinarda revealed to her the loue theer bare palmerin, what passions had tormented her, and in what extremitie her desires hadde druelt her: and therefore sweete friend (quoth shee with a deepe sigh) find thou the meanes that I may priuately talke with him. Brionella admiring the earnest loue of the Princesse, knew not readilly what to answe, but seeing that by this meanes shee might more easily conserue with Ptolome, whome shee likewise intirly loued, thus spake. It is no wonder Madame, you beeing so incomparabile, as I know no Prince living of whom you are not worthy, if you haue resolved your loue en noble palmerin, in that there is no knight in the world better deserves you, his rare chivalrie beeing such, as it cannot otherwise bee, but that hee is descended of royll linage, beeing accomplitshed with so many speciall perfections. Therefore Madame, so like you, I haue deuided well for your purpose, as thus. You know my chamber window stands so commodious, as you may with safety conserue with him at pleasure, whiche you may let him understand by his Dwarfe, and appoynt him time as you shall thinke conuenient. This counsell did not a little content the princesse, because shee longed to that with her louer, and therefore concluded at his departure to appoint Palmerin his time. New was the Chamber of Brionella joyning to the Cittie wall, and had a goodly prospect into the fields, and Palmerins lodging was neare vnto it, fasing the wall as the other did, so that one might easily

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

easly passe betweene the lodgings, nothing being betwixt them but a little garden, brauely decked with flowers, and goodly fruit Trees. The time appoynted, Polinarda called the Dwarfe to her, saying. Urbanillo, thou shalt go to thy maister from mee and after thou hast saluted hym with my manisfolde well wishings, will hym this night to come secretly to my Lady Brionellas chamber, where at the windowe we may safely talke together: and bid hym not middoubt my Lady Brionella, for I haue made her acquainted with all my secrets. And because thy selfe maist conduct hym to the place, come, and I will presently shew it thee. So went the Dwarfe with polinarda to Brionellas chamber. Where hauing stene the windowe, and glad to carrie such tydings to his maister, beeing well assured how they would content hym: hee departed, and tarried not long on his message, because palmerin thought each houre a yere to haire from his mistresse: wherefore hee beholding the Dwarfe comming, tooke hym in his armes, and demaunded what newes hee had brought hym? The Dwarfe with a chearefull countenance thus answered. By Lord, Fortune spedde you as luckie, as the newes that I bring you do well deserve. By this beginning palmerin perceiued that hee brought such tydings as hee long looked for, which was how hee might speake with the Princesse: wherefore embracing hym againe, he commanded him to make report of that his sweete mistresse had giuen hym in charge. Then the Dwarfe deliuered how the Princesse had great desire to see him, and where shee did intend to speake with him. whiche when palmerin heard, filled with unspeakable joyes, hee recorded the wordes to himselfe, with many iterations, and the more often hee spake the wordes, the more his delights increased. But tell mee (quoth he to the Dwarfe) didst thou marke the place well where I must talke with my goddesse? Thereof doubt you not my Lord, sayde the Dwarfe, for I shall not faile to bring you sure thither, if it be your pleasure I shall go with you, because the Princesse

## THE HISTORIE

her selfe, in company of Lady Brionella shewed it me. How am I beholding to her, said Palmerin, for this high fauour, which else were my death if I shoulde be denied? Upon this hee called Ptolome, to whom hee imparted every circumstance, which Ptolome reputed for his great auaire: this offering the meane for him to visit Brionella, and therefore they concluded to goe together the night ensuing, to the place appointed for this louing encounter. The houre of rest being come, and every one in their Chambers as best becommen, Palmerin, Ptolome and the Dwarfe, remayned together, and seeing the tyme readie to countenance their enterprise, tooke each of them a rich Mantle, and with their Swords vnder their armes, went out at a windowe vpon the walles: and albeit the passage was somewhat dangerous, yet loue had so encouraged them, as without regard of danger or fortune, they came to the windewe which the Dwarfe had shewed them, not scene by any. Polinarda who was most attentive, hearing the trampling of their fete, saide to Brionella. Is not this Palmerin? So opening the Casements, shee saw Palmerin and Ptolome attending like diligent Servants. If then both parties were pleased, it is not to be doubted, nothing in the world more contenting them then the sight of each other. And truly Palmerin and the Princesse had great reasen, soz beside that their fatall desseme vnd so preueke them; their equall natures were so commendable and corespondent, as though they had never scene, yet were they borne to loue together. Now was Polinarda very brauely accoustre in a glorious night mansle, and such soft white silkes, as shee shewed brighter then the morning Starre, her fieriest pointed lookes so wounding Palmerin, as rapt vpp as it were into a second heaven, hee remained silent a long tyme, not able to speake a word. The Princesse was likewise in the else same conceit, and so ouercome with regard of her paramour, as she continued mute, and was loth to give the onset. Palmerin ashamed to accompanie his Lady with such

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

such silence, beganne thus mildeley to Court his Mistresse.

I did never thinke, (sayre Madam) that Fortune would honour me with such extraordinary fauours, directing my course to your noble Fathers Courte, to be thus entertained into your gracious service, having no deserts in me to induce you to your choyse: but it may be in respect of some god report by such, to whome I account my selfe highly beholding, haing thus founde the place where I was preordaine to loue, my Starre hath thus appointed it, and will, to make me the happiest man living. And it may bee Madam, that such as enuie not my happynesse, haue acquainted you with some of my extierior actions, which God (not I) hath brought to passe: but they, ignorant of the entier and fervent loue I beare you, could make no iust reporte thereof to you, being a secret so speciall, and not to bee comprehended: Besides, the deapth and wonderfull nature thereof not to bee measured, therefore to be verryed in your heavenly opinion, which how ample so ever you please to graunt me, the more am I bound both in dutie and affection, which in despight of enuie and his confederates, shall remaine immoueable, and pleade the continuall leyalte of your Knight and Servant.

And if I should report how many times your diuine person hath beeme presented me in shape, I would therewithall discouer infinite passions, which I endured, seeing my selfe frustrate of that I now behalde. How many Countreyes and Citties? What perils and dangers haue I past to finde you, pronounced on still with never chaunging loue? If this then were sufficient to make me runne through a world of daungeras, I leauie it to your iudgement (Sweete Madam) what it may doe now, seeing with mine eyes what I dreameid on before, and now may with safetie say, (incamparable Beaulte. Here hence then procedeth, that these my extreame Affectiones haue ouercome all other partes in me, not once able to imagine how many reverend opinions I haue of you: which must intreat you on my behalfe, that your accustomed clemencie, will pardon my preuidate conceypte, be-cause.

## THE HISTORIE

cause being not mine owne, but yours onely, I may easily offend. These speches moystened with the teares of his eyes, and luke-warme Bloud of his heart, deliuered manifeste evidence how truely hee loued the Princesse, who bearing him company in all arguments of Loue, thus answered. I doubt not Sir Palmerin, but that the loue you beare me is exceeding great, noting your earnest Affections, and the great trauell you haue sustaine in searche of mee; and no other certaintie do I request to be perswaded by, being as vehement in affection towards you, as you are to mee: For profe wherof, this present attempt may suffice, that against my duety I should be seene thus secretly, in a place so suspiciois, and the Time so vnmetallarie. But yet if I haue offendred herein, then accuse those seemely perfections which I haue obserued in you, and the confidence I repose in your god Concreyt, coupled with the honourable estimation that is generally reputed in your vertues. Pardon me (sweete Ladie) said Palmerin, if by my longing desire to speake and conserue with you, I haue in any thing displeased, for earnest good will to do you service, constrained me to be thus importunate. The mater is farre from any desert of offence (quoth the Princesse,) for hither are you come onely by my commandement, to the ende that wee might see one another, and talke of such things as nearest concerne vs: and therefore resolute your selfe god Knight, that I esteime you aboue all other, and promise you by the faith of a Princesse and loyall Frende, to dye, rather then any other shall be Lord of me. Which very words, so raunshed his sens, as very hardly hee could sustaine himselfe: Wherupon Polinarda put forth her hand out at the window, whiche hee in often kissing well marking, behelde the Character theron as you haue heade before. Ah (sweete Madame, (quoth he) this is the token that makes mee the happiest man this day living. As how I pray you (said she) what know you hereof? Then Palmerin discoursed all his Dreames and visions, and briefly raune through repetition of his whole life, how the wise Adrian had sent him the Shielde of Sable, where-

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

in was figured a Hand fast closed together, signifying the same hand I holde at this present, because this hath the same marke the other had in figure. In truthe (said the Princesse) I was desirous to know the meaning of that Shielde, wherin I saw a Silver hand closed, whiche you bare the first day of the Tournamente, being now a little gladde in that you haue so satisfiied me. Afterwardes Palmerin made knowne unto her, the marke himselfe had on his face, which agreed with hers in perfect likelyhood. O God (quoth shee) happy be the time of this meeting: Blame mee not my Lorde to be thus surpized with your Loue, seeing our fatall Destinies haue so appynted: This will cause mee to live in more hope of god successe, then before I did, and that our amitie will sorte to such ende, as our two hearts shall both be combined in one: and yet let me see I beseeche you, the marke on your face, helwe neare it reembles this on my hand. Shee fetching a Taper which burned in her Chamber, lifted vp his comely locke of haire, and saue them both shayed in one forme, wherefore suddenly setting away the Light, shee embrased Palmerins head in her armes, and sealed many sweete kisises on his amiable Character. The like loving kinde salutations passed betwene Polome and Brionella, at an other Casement of the Windelwe, with soleume Bowes and Protestations, never to saile each other in theyr loue, and this to be the fittest place for conuincing on theyr deires, till Fortune accorded them better opportunitie: and longer would they haue shere continued, but that the dwarfe came to his Haire in this manner. By Lord, I think you can never finde time to make an ende: Will you haue the day light preuent you, and so discredit you all? In sooth it is time you were in your Chamber. Palmerin who was loath to departe from the pleasure of his thoughts, made small account of the Dwarfes words, and continued on in amorous deires: But the Princesse, a little more fearful then hee, conueniently the dwarfe said true, and loath to be seene suspicitiuously, said: By Lord, it is time to breake off, but I pray you sayle not of your promise; Let vs

## THE HISTORIE

visite one another, now you knowe the way and place. So Palmerin and Prolome tooke leaue of their Ladies, and passed to their Chambers without suspition : The successe of theye Loue you shall understand hereafter, as time and place shall fitt for the purpose: but now to satisfie you with choyse of delights, we will returne a while to another discourse.

## C H A P. XXXI.

¶ How the King of Fraunce kept a Royall and magnificent Courte : And how his Sonne Lewes became enamoured of the Duchesse of Burgundie.



At the time that the Emperour of Allemaigne laved in this hys pnesse, accompanied (as you haue heard) with manie hardy knyghtes: there raigned in France a myghtie Prince named Agariel, valiant, wise, and vertuous, who had thre sonnes, wherof the second was the hardiest knyght at Armes, being named Lewes.

This King Agariel, the more to honour his knyghtes and noble Gentlemen abiding in his Realme, determined to keep open Court for all comyners, as none of his predecessors euer did the like before him, and therfore sent abroade his Heraldes, Gentlemen of his Escutie, and others, to summon his Lords and Barons of France, that on a day appointed, they would all mette at the Courte.

And because none shold be ignorant what hee intended, hee requested that all Gentlemen professing Armes, at the Feast of Easter following, shold reapeare to Paris, being the head

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

heade and chieffest Cittie of the whole Kingdome. The Quene likewise aduertized all Ladys and Gentlewomane at whose commaund every one obeyed, so that in fewe dayes, the Court was well furnished with Lords and Ladys: nothing nowe intended, but delights and Courtly Pastimes, which made the Dukes of Burgundie likewise reapeare ther. Now was the Duke aged, a man of good prouidence, and a tryed knyght, having matched in Marriage with the King of Denmarkes Sister, a young beautifull Ladie, and of vertuous education: the Duke hoping to haue issue by her, because by his first wife he could not haue any. The King aduertized of the Dukes comming, commaunded his Sonne Lewes with an honorable traine to go entertaine him, which hee did, so that many soleyme reverences passed betwene the Duke and him, as also to the Duchesse, whome as hee welcomed with many salutations, so did hee earnestly contemplate her excellent Beaulte, reputing her farre fairer then the f. y. rest, and on a sudden became amorous of her: Such a violent breach made Loue into his heart at the very first sight of her. In this great and unlooked for vexation, hee conducted her to the lodging whch was prepared for the Duke, dissembling so well as hee could his new desire: But so vehement was his oppression, as without returning again to the King, hee went to his Chamber. Prince Lewes being thus alone by hymselfe, (Loue) not a little triumphing of his new p[ro]ye, tormented his thoughts with so many conceytes, as all the night he spent in sighs and dolorous lamentes, his minde still traueiling by what meane hee might compasse his intent. Sometimes, he thought it vnpossible in respect of the Duke, then againe as easie, because of his Age, a contrarie too yke some in his eyes, for the swete flourishing youth of the Duchesse: all whiche imaginacions wrought so diversly in him, as his spirite forsaking counsell and reason, made him breake forth into these exclaimes. Ah Heauens, haue you forned Beauty with such Excellencie, as to cause mee endure a torment more then mortall: Ah mine Eyes, too laish weare

You

## THE HISTORIE

you in beholding her, who cannot chuse but utterly disdaine her, shou haue an acquaintance with her, and therefore let thy death challice thy dolourate. Yet mayst thou be deeyued in thine owne opinion colch man: perchaps in offering her thy seruice she may chance to accept it, for the Duke is olde, and likely to dye: how happy were it for thee to be his Executor, for his Lady? Dispare not then man, for things thought impossible are easiest oftentimes in performance. In the e and such like fearnes he pent the night, and seeing the faire morning salute him at his Chamber window, he arose, intending that day to bewray his passions to the Duchesse: and knowinge that the Duke would goo visite the Quene, accompani-ed with many Knights, he came to bidde him god morrowe: Which the Duke taking very kindly, requited him with many thanks, ignorant that so the faire wife, he was so courteous to the olde Husband.

The Duke having taken his way to the Quene, Lewes kept company with the Duchesse very manerly, wayting opportunity to discouer his affections, and reuiewing her beauties so perfect and rare, not able longer to holde began thus. It is marueil Madame, if faire beautie shoule be so bitter, as a man cannot surfeite but he must needes dye. The Duchesse not knowing of whom the Prince spake, nor as yet regarding that hee was in Loue, answered. In sooth my Lord, the Ladie hath small reason, that shee shoule bise you so hardy, if you meane it of your selfe. In bries Madame (quoth hee) it is you haue wounded mee, and none but you can ease my afflictions: if then (Sweete Ladie) you retaine such pittie, as all your other Excellencies shewe you to haue, you will not disdaine to give mee remedie, whiche if you do, for euer I remaine your knyght and loyall friende. And in mine opinion Madam, you cannot well refuse my sute, seeing hard Fortune hath bene such an enemy to you in Marriage, the Duke being olde and full of melancholy, you young, tender, fleshy, and dainty as may bee: Haue more merte to keepe companie with Antropos the mortall goddesse, then liue with a sainct of

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

so rare perfections. But had my lucke bene such, before you were espoused to haue knowne you, I would with Malou-hauing hindered your weding so, or Fortune shoule haue so wry denye me: For such is my religion in Loue, as better death then discontent, and had I bene Lord of Europe, you had bene Ladie. Notwithstanding Madame, so like it you, I may be your friend and knyghtly seruant: for loue wants no wiles to compasse desire, and my sute is modest, if you count it not untemely. The Duchesse, whom sweete loue could easly intice to follie, hardly might resist a present Conquest: Wherefore chaunging countenance, and not daring to reueale what shee gladly would, saide. Trust mee (my Lord) your speeches are not comely, to violate chaste Medlocke is so monstrous, as you can haue no priuiledge to aske, nor I to graunt, and therefore content you.

This answere, albeit it was sharpe, and scant pleasing to the Prince, yet loue so perswaded him, that the Duchesse had another meaning then shee bewrayed: For, noting her countenance so full of change, he guessed that some sparks had fallen among her affections, wherefore he began againe. I beseech you Madame accuse Loue, if I haue spoken to your disliking, yet hope I to see the time, when I shal make knowne how great my affection is to do you seruice: and continuing this talk, he brought her to the Quenes lodging, Loue following them both so narrowly at the heeles, as the Duchesse was no lesse affectionate, then Lewes was most passionate. Whiche when he had gotte some light off, in hope to purchase his desire, hee sollicited her in more secrete manner then hee was wont: so that being one day in place where they might familiarly talk, Lewes persevering in his enterprise, declared what tormentes hee suffered for her Loue: Whereto upon the Duchesse not onely by the Princes reasons, which were perswasive, but as well to mittigate her owne opprestions, thus answered: Great is the force of your perswasions (my Lord) but greater is that of loue, whiche hath made me yours: So that what you request I cannot denye, and althought it stand

## THE HISTORIE

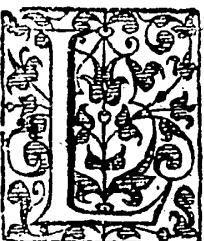
Stand not with mine honour, yet such is my fortune. Let mee intreate you therefore to conceale this Loue so discretely, as noone may know of it; especially my Lord the Duke, and expect the day that shall yelde me content, and make me happy.

This answere so highly liked the Prince, as never man thought himselfe in greater felicitie, and rendering her againe manisfolde thankes, he sayde:

I snewe to you Madame, by the divine force of Loue that governes vs both, to be for euer your Knight, and never shall any other desire abide in mee, then you shall like and well allow off: for otherwise I were not worthy this speciall fauor. The Duchesse thanking him, departed: and thenceforth so secretly shadowed their Loue, as none suspected that the Prince loued the Duchesse.

## CHAP. XXXII.

¶ Of the enterprise of Lewes the Prince of Fraunce, for the loue of the Duchesse of Burgundie.



¶ On continued the King of France this state in all Magnificence, there meeting many noble personages, as well strangers as of the Realme, that it was maruellous to behold, as also the Ladys and Damosels that accompanied the Queen: who on a day in the Presence chamber among many Knights, conferred of the bountie and yronesse of the flourishing braue young Courtiers: among whom the Prince Lewes making one, eache one spake in behalfe of his Ladys beauty, yet concealing theyr names to theselues, till better occasions might cause them deservedly to be knowne. All this talk the Prince well marking, who for the Duchesse loue,

## OF PALMERIN DOLIVA.

Loue was deprived of libertie, threw many sweete glaunces at the Mistresse of his affections, perhwading himselfe, that nature never made a more perfect creature, and not able to make her like againe, burs her mould, whereupon hee sayd, Lordes and Ladies, who with such aduantage haue chatfed on beautie, understand that such as you haue yet spoken of, or seuerally in your owne thoughts shall thinke vpon, may not be equall with one that I know, euen shee that is Ladie and comraunder of my heart, whose beautie is so far beyond all other, as bright Cinthia from the goodliest Star in the firmament. And because that none shall imagine, how (being carried away with private opinion) I v[e]e these speeches, I will make good my wordes by deedes of Armes, against any Knights whatsoeuer that dare say the contrarie. Now in regarde that none shall pleade ignorance, I will aduertise all Knights, how the first day of Maye next ensuing, and seauen dayes more immediatlie following, I will be in open fielden in my Tent, where I will erecte a stately monument, on the toppe whereof shall bee her figure whose Knight I am: and there will I defende it in this honorable quarrell, against such Knights as will Combat for the beautie of their Ladies, I affirming mine to excell all other in perfections. This condition must be obserued by such as enter the field, that they bring the Ladies figure with them whom they honour most: and if Fortune frowne on them in such sort as they be vanquished, there shall they leauie their Ladies Image, to be placed vnder my Mistresse as her subiect. Now if my unhappy Starres so crosse me, as I loose the credite I would bee loth, the conqueror shall enter in my Tent, and in my Ladies place shall his Mistresse bee mounted, if hee meane to maintaine her with such condicions as I doe mine. And hee that last shall accomplish these eyght daies, shall beare away the honour with the portraiture of the Ladies, which by him or any other all the sayde time haue beeene gained. And this libertie shall bes granted, that hee which receives the foyle with the Laine, shall Cobbat

# THE HISTORIE

bat with the ~~z~~ wozde (if hee please) before hee yeld. Now  
th at this nyme enterprise may be openly knowne, and put  
in execution as the vertue requireth: I will send yow  
men through all the prouinces of Christendome, that all  
Knights willing thus to aduenture, shall bee here received.  
His iurches ended, the Gentlemen present could not mer-  
uale sufficiently, at this great and high enterprise of the  
Prince Lewes, and the daunger wherinto hee thrust him-  
selfe, yet not knwing why was the Ladie hee wuld thus  
aduenture her selfe: but shee beeing present, perceiued that the  
Prince in hennir of her loue, tooke in hand this perillous  
hazard, wherein shee conceived such secrete content, as the  
passions of loue having penetrated her heart, made her feare  
his misfortune, whiche shee woulde not for her life. In this as-  
semble was present the Duke of Sauoye, a young Prince,  
braue, hardie and courageous as might be, and esteeming so  
banquish him, who to all were the Prince Lewes, arose  
and thus spake. My Lord, I woulde not willingly haue en-  
terred the Combat against you, but that I heard you so farre  
outreaching your selfe, as shee whose beautie you maintaine,  
is more perfect then all other Ladies: but shee that is the  
commaundement of my heart, is such a braue accomplished La-  
die, as (in truth) her beautie may not be matched through  
the whole world. And to affirme what I say, I swaere by  
the order of my knighthode, that the more w after you  
haue finished your eight dayes enterprise, I will enter the  
same fielde, and auerre against all Knights, that the God-  
desse whom I am dedicated, excelles all other Ladies in  
her heavenly gifts: and hee that dare maintaine the contra-  
rie, vnder my ~~z~~ sword I will make him confess it. All such  
therefore as will make profe of their valour, shall find mee  
therin my Tent at my appointed day, and nine dayes af-  
ter to sustaite the same quarrell in plaine Combat, eyther  
at the Lance, the Pace, the ~~z~~ sword, on horsebacke or on  
foote, at his chiose. And though I vanquish one Knight, it  
shall

# OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

shall not be lawfull for me to rest a minute space, but pre-  
sentlie take hym in hande that shall follow: and bee it my  
fortune to be soyled by him, hee shall keepe the field in man-  
ner as you my Lord deuised. And to the ende all may be the  
better executed, please you that in such places wher your  
intelligencers shall come, my enterprise may likewise bee  
declared, in respect I hope to behauie my selfe so well, as my  
Ladie will make speciaall account of me. The lady for whom  
the Duke of Sauoye thus attempted, was Daughter to the  
King, and Sister to Lewes named Lucemania, whom hee  
loued intirely, and above all things desired in mariage:  
whiche to compasse, and to honour his Ladie, hee thus offered  
the Combat against all knights. These Princes, intending  
to go thowzow with their intent, concluded betwene them,  
that the Duke of Sauoye shoulde breake it to the King, to  
gaine his god will: whereupon the Duke departing to-  
wards the Queens Chamber to finde the King, espied him  
at verie god leisure walking in his Garden, to whom hee  
went in all hast, and on his knee thus began. So please it  
your highnesse to graunt me one boone, I shall be bound to  
continue the loue I haue boorne your Maiestie, which is to  
prolong my life in your service, as the most forward Knight  
in your royll Court. The King who had long time fauoured  
the Duke, taking him by the hand, thus answere. Demaund my god Cozen what you please, and it shall bee  
graunted. Then the Duke deliberatlie discoursed, what  
the Prince Lewes and hee had intended for the loue of their  
Ladies: wherewith the King scant content, and mervauding  
at this hastie enterprise, said. Why Cozen, do you imagine  
your selues able to maintaine so hard a taske, in resistance  
of so manie hardie Knights, wherewith the world is now  
plentifullie stored? Believe me, in manie Countries are  
Ladies of greater beautie (I doubt) then is at this time in  
our Realme of Fraunce. I promise you, I hardly like what  
my Sonne and you attempt, but seeing my wod is past,  
you shall not now bee hindered: do therefore what your  
selues

## THE HISTORIE

selues thinke expedient, with this consideration alwaies, that the ending of matters is greater then the beginning, The Duke humbly thanking the King, answe red. We doubt not my Lord, but by the helpe of God and fauour of our Ladies, to ende our affaires with seruante successe: but if now wee shold give cur, and not go forward with our promise, we might worthily be reprooved of staine and a warden, the most villainous repreches that can be to any noble heart.

The King perceiving the earnest affectiō of the two yong princes, and that to deny their request would be more hurtfull then to graunt; commaunded him againe to proced with their intent, with such scritie against all strange knights, as what losse or victory happened to them, they wul be content with al that fell out. The Duke not a littleoyfull, killing his highnes hand departed, and immedately acquainted Prince Lewes therewith, but now in the quene understanding her sons enterprise, sent for him, & with sad countenance thus spakē. I would (my son) that the intent of you and the duke of Sauoy, were eyther a while deserted, or vtterly forgotten, because I greatly doubt, that the end will bring a further consequence then you expect. For thinkē you, that by all your forces & chivalries, the beautie of your Ladies shall be any tot increased: no beleeme me: but if they loue you as lou all friendes ought to do, as greatly will they dislike your enterprise, as feare the daunger wherinto you may fall, a matter causing other desire then you thinkē on, and more offensive (perhaps) to them, then any honour you may winne can please them. Lewes, who by no meanes woulde be dissuaded from his conceit, answe red. Good Mother, if soz no other feare, this matter shall not be rucked, in regard of the shame, and never dying dishonor I shall gaine thereby, which makes me desire a thousand deathes, rather then not to besy god as my warden: therefore per wade your selfe god Mother, that albeit her beautie for whom I enter the Combat, cannot bes more perfect hereby, in that it is without imperfection, yet such

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

such is my resolution in a matter so certaine, as her swete looks shall deliuer me strength enough to ende my taske, without dread of any inconuenience that may happen. The Duchesse (enflamed with loue) hearing these wordes on her behalfe, must needs speake, and thus began. I know not (my Lord) whois the Ladie you loue, nor what are her vertues, but herof I can assure you, that she is highele beholding to you, and (except great reason to the contrarie) ought to loue you, considering what perill you thrust your selfe into for her beautie. Madame (quoth the Prince) the frauale I shall take, and the bad fortunes may befall me, are little and of no account in respect of her gracious delects, therefore for her honour I will beare my inward paines with secret content, and attempt these outward actions with the greatest courage I can possible, desiring no other recompence then her fauourable conceit, wherof once assyred, nothing can seeme difficult to me, no, were it to dyne in her diuine seruice. And as hee woulde have continued longer, the King (not yet shrowly content with his promise past to the Duke of Sauoye) entered the Chamber, by whose countenance, Lewes well knew he was mal-content with him, wherefore falling on his knee, hee said. Oy Lord, no one is ignorant, how all my wel-fare and reputation consisteth onely in your Maiestie, as a Prince and Father, the most vertuous that I know: which great god in some part to recompence: I haue enterprised a matter vt worthe of dislike, so please your highnes (of your accustomed bountie) to excuse and accept it in god part, in respect that such as are borne to the highest place of dignitie, ought to bee more prompt and readie to all magnanimous actions then their inferiōrs, chearely in prouesse, chivalrie, and deeds of estimation. What brought such renowne to Horatius, Mutius Scauola, Marcus Curtius, Marcius Torquatus, and a number more of Romaine Knights, if not the courageous following of occasions offered: What made soe erect immortall the fame of Marius the Romaine Citizens, Hannibal the

## THE HISTORIE

Carthaginian, and Agesilaus the Greeke, is not the vndau-  
ted valour of their minds, delucred in their deeds of King-  
lie conseqeunce? Assuredlie I beleue, that their Fathers,  
uncles, and auncient progenitours never made them noble  
or eught reuernued: what then? onely vertue, the very  
fountaine of all nobilitie. For this cause my god Lord  
and Father, having now oportunitie, as my Cozin & Duke  
of Sauoye hath informed you, may it please your grace to  
permit my endeours with fauour, to the ende I may deli-  
uer perfect testimony, that I ne whit degenerate from your  
helycall and kingly vertues. The King somewhat mode-  
rating his furuer opinion, answered, Trust me Sonne, full  
well you know how to disguise and couer your folly with  
vertues colours, God send it to fall out so well: arise, and  
leit as your Cozin and you haue requested. See in meane-  
time that you provide all nedfull occasions, that when the  
day comes nothing haue wanting. Lewes humbly thanking  
his Father, arose, eury one present not a little reioyning,  
because they feared all would be squandered. Then began  
the Lordes and Ladies to conserue together, and the Du-  
chesse departing to her lodging, being manned by the  
Palace, did not (as I thinke) repente her selfe of her loue, as  
a number of you (marching vnder the same Ensigne) woul-  
do the like in such a case. In fine, the Duchesse fearefull of  
the thwarts of Fortuns, that he would wroke her disgrace  
by some bad conjectures or wounding reports, said. I know  
well (my Lord) the god will you beate mee, without any  
further shewes or confirmations by actions so dangerous,  
which I had rather die then behold, and therefore whatso-  
ever you shall perfore, will conuenie mee as unworthy  
of so god deserts: in this respect you shall therefore graunt  
me one thing, which is, that aboue all you haue care of your  
selfe, else will perpetuall discontent cut short my date, bee-  
ing bereaued of the honour of my greene desires. Now  
Madame (quoth the Prince) may I boast of my fortune,  
not doubting to follow the daunce of a Ladie so vertuous, for  
your

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

your swete words prolong my life, else ere this had death  
told you of your knight. The Duchesse haeth with an am-  
iable smile, answered. I must not leue you yet god Prince,  
for may I lengthen your life, it shall be for euer. Many soleine  
thankes the Prince returned, and by this time had brought  
her to her Chamber, where haing bise lamain, departed.

## CHAP. XXXIII.

How the Prince Lewes and the Duke of Sauoye, sent their  
Heraldes and horsemen into all partes, to make knowne  
to all Knights their enterprises, and the conditions of  
their Combats.



He Prince Lewes loyfull of the King his fa-  
thers consent, but of the gracious answere  
of the Duchesse most of all, dispatched imme-  
diately his Heraldes into all the provinces of  
Europe, who executed their charge with such  
diligence, as there was no court or Empe-  
rour, King, or Prince, but they declared the enterprise of  
these two young Princes. So that one of the Princes Her-  
aldes, accompanied with the King of Armes belonging to  
the Duke of Sauoy, came to the Emperours Court of Alle-  
magine, which then was furnished with a great number of  
Lordes and Knights, bearing thesse to solemnize the day of  
his birth, but especially Palmerin aboue all the rest, thy-  
mumphing in the loue of his Mistris Polinarda. The Her-  
aldes being entered the great Hall, found the Emperour  
sitting in his chayre of estate, with many Princes, Barous

## THE HISTORIE

and noble personages about him: who graunting hem li-  
bertie of spech, the Herald of Fraunce began first in this  
manner,

Illustrious and most redoubted Empereur, the cause why  
we thus presume before your Maestie, is by the comman-  
dement of the vertuous yong prince Lewes, son to our dread  
Lord Agarie King of Fraunce, as also of the Duke of Sauoy  
his Coxin, so god a knyght as may well comauand: what  
our message is, so please your highnes to call al your knyghts  
in presence, because it thesely concerneth them, we with du-  
tie will deliver it. The Empereur presently called for all  
knyghts and Gentlemen of his Court, who deuorous of the  
nelves, were not long in coming, before whom he said. Dread  
Lord, the prince Lewes of France my maister, commiseth him  
to your Maestie with this Letter, may it please your grace  
to command it to be read, and you shall soon see the effect of  
our Embassage. The Empereur caused his Secretarie to  
read it openly, and because it contained what you have heard  
alreadie, it shall bee needesse to wast longer time in talke  
thereof: but the letter being read, the herald thus proceeded.  
The Prince my Maister (worfie Empereur) giues the  
knyghts of your Court (as else where) to understand, that  
hee intends to prove by daede of Armes, how no Ladys  
in the world is comparable in beautie to the Ladie he loues,  
which he will bee readie to maintaine in Combat the first  
of May next, and seauen dayes following, in his Tent be-  
fore the Gates of Paris, there will hee verifie it against all  
commers that dare auerre the contrarie. Afterward hee re-  
hearsed all the conditions to bee obserued in this Combate,  
and the King of Armes to the Duke of Sauoy, made knowne  
his Maisters challenge likewise as you haue heard. The  
Emperoz meruailing at this message, said. Without doubt  
the Ladies had need to be sayre, and my Coxins your Mai-  
sters valiant and hardie, else it is doubtfull how such an en-  
terprise will fall out, for the affections of persons are diuers,  
and theyz fortunes daungerous, neuerthelesse I desire the

issue

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

Issue may sort to their honour. The Lordes and knyghtes  
haue hearde your Message, and I judge some of them will  
prouide to be there, because they prize the beautie of their La-  
dies at as high a rate, as your Maisters do esteeme theyz faire  
Friends: yet let them do what they thinke most expedient,  
because they are vnde enough to make you answere. As for  
me, you may salute (on my behalfe) the King, my Brother,  
and my Coxins, to whom I send thanks with all my heart,  
that they thus acquainted me with their honourable endeuours.  
All this while the knyghts conferred together, with  
diuers iudgements of their pretended Combats: Some  
of them were eyther fearefull or too forward; others well ad-  
vised and prouoked with discrete courage. Linding wholyn-  
repute we Noble Palmerin, all penisive, his eyes fixed on the  
ground, and not a word, hauing in his sprite discoursed hol-  
bitter the diuorce wold be of the Eyes from his sweete abiet:  
in the ende concluded the Combate, persuading himselfe,  
not in Christendome, nor in the other thre habitable partes  
of the Earth, eyther Empresse, Queene, or Ladie, was moys  
accomplished with perfections then his gracious Mistresse  
Polinarda: And in respect of this Embassage, it semeth to  
him vituperous, and a dishonour not sufferable, if hee shold  
not iustifie the truthe, and haue so god occasion: Whereupon  
he desired a thousand deathes, rather then he wold deserue so  
brave a Voyage: and so on his knee before the Empereur  
he thus beganne. Gracious Lord, and my most worfie  
Patron, I intend (with your god liking and leave) to depart  
with all spedee possible, to see the Joustes and Combates of  
Fraunce and Sauoy: Let it not therefore displease (for the  
honour of Chivalrie, that I leue your noble Court a while,  
but may commit my selfe to this iourney, with ycut fauoura-  
ble opinion. The Empereur very loath to let Palmerin goe,  
answering: In god sooth Sir Palmerin, I greatly doubted  
(so soone as I heard these newes from France,) that it wold  
not passe without your presence, which displeaseith me, not so  
much for their follie, as your absence, which is and wille be  
to

## THE HISTORIE

to me greater griesse then you iudge: but let me intreate that thy retурne may be þare, and stay no longer then thou hast god occasion. I wuld gladly know, wuld you graunt it mee, what Lady ther is, for whome you thus aduenture: you neare not Palmerin hide it from me.

My Lord(qd. he) the Dame for whom I enter the Combate is such, as none may or ought compare with so singular, rare, and (aboue all) vertuous, as never would I thinke my selfe worthy to beare Armes, if feare of danger, misfortune, or death it selfe shold haue power to plucke mee from my dutis. As for my stay (the Jousts once ended) within one moneth or sooner, I intend my retурne to your Maestie: and let me intreate you not to feare any thing in my tourney, because I go for your Honour, and my Sworde shall ring on the stoute creast, the ever continuing hō.ors of the Emperour of Allemaigne. The Emperour unwilling to forgoe him, and loath to hinder knightly Chivalrie, saide. Without question Palmerin in the Lady is indebtēd to you, and you declare vspeakeable Loue, that for her Beautie you deliver your selfe to such great hazard: but as for your intent to my honour, I rather delight to haue it by your presence, then thyself after such applause with your absence. But seeing that you will needes to Fraunce, happy Fortune goe with you, and make you victoriouſ in all your attempts: which I doubt not, but by your valour and the vertues of your Missesse, the French will not haue so much on the sixteenth of May, as perhaps they will on the first. Provide that before you departe, you demand and haue all things for your tourney, as well for such as goe in your compagnie, as for your owne necessarie provision: and some will I appoint to attend on you, that may prevent any treacherous inconuenience. Palmerin not refusing this bountifull offer, with great obesauance thanked the Emperour: and taking his leaue for that night, returned to his Chamber, determining to depart with all expedition, because the day of the Jousts were at hand. Now was Trineus the Emperours Sonne a young Prince, and had not yet received

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

reiuēd his order of knighthood, hee hearing of Palmerine departure, was marauilous desirous to beare him compānie: whereupon hee kneeled before his father, intreating him not to deny him one request. Demaund what thou wilt my Sonne (quoth her) I graunt it thee. Then I beseech you god father, said hee, to suffer mee, sic Fraunce with noble Palmerin, that I may bee acquainted with the courtesie and cunſtie of that nation, not doubting but sone to deserve my knighthood. And yet if before I receive my order, I see theſe high and worthy deeds of Armes, happily they may entice mee to follow their vertues: beside, if now I looēſo god an occasion offered, I know not when I shall compāſſe the like commodity, therfore (god father) let mee not bee denied. The Emperour offendēd for his rash promise to his sonne, laboured to change his minde, yet all would not serue, for the Prince promised to go ſo courteſy, as none ſhould know him. Wherefore he called Palmerin, who as yet was not departed the Hall, ſaying. I ſee Syr Palmerin, you ſhall not go alone in your voyage, for my ſonne Trineus deſires to be your companion: for which cauſe I comittēhun to you, and deſire you to conceiue ſo well of him, as at your retурne we may be all merrie together. Which Palmerin promiſed, whereupon the Emperour called for the maister of his horſe, commanding him that all things might bee in readines against their departure: all which was done with ſuch diligence, as the third day following all thiſgs prepared, they tooke their leaue of the Emperour & the Ladies, who at their departure ſhed many teares (a common matter with them) wiſhing the victorie and honour to Palmerin. Thus with Trineus and twentie other knights, a great number of Squires and ſervants in god equipage, they tourneyed towards Paris without any hindrance by the way, or matter of memorie.

Now before we paſſe any further, you ſhall underſtānd, that after the Heraldes of the Prince of Fraunce and Duke of Sauoye were departed, and that Palmerin had obtaimed

## THE HISTORIE

tained leauue of the Empoerour, the Princesse Polinarda aduertised hereof, was greatly displeased with his sudden departure, wherfore calling Vrbanillo, the Dwarfe to her, she saide : Vrbanillo, thou must goe to thy Maister, and will him this night to make mee at our appointed place, that I may conferre with him, of a secret materey concerning mee. Whiche when Palmerin hearde, the earth being couered with her blacke mantle, and euery one in their dead sleepe, he called Ptolome and Vrbanillo, who were all well acquainted with this loue-walke, and being there in presence of theyz Ladies, the Princesse with a great sigh thus beganne.

Alas my Lord what minde is this in you, thus to voyage towards Fraunce, and to leauue mee alone sadde and solitarie. Alas, not content to hazard so long a tourney, but also a dangerous Combate beside for my Beautie, which is a thing of so slender estimation, as may not Parragon with the Ladies of Fraunce, beeing Perrelesse (as I haue hearde) among thos of highest perfection. Ah my Lord, more comfort and content it is for mee to haue your companie, then to be crowned Queene of any Realme conquered by your worthy vertnes and prowesse. Wherfore (sweet friend) I intreat you with all my heart, and by the unstained loue you beare mee, to leauue such daungerous Enterprizes, where death is comonly more frequent then life. These words came with such amiable coniuration from the Princesse, as Palmerin, (though loath to be dissuaded) answered. Let me preuaile with you sefaire god Madame, as not to mislike my Enterprize for your gracious Loue, for the honour you haue done me in making me your Knight, I prize at no lesse value then my dearest bloud, and should I be helde from these French exployts, vnto whiche were I to bee your Servant : in that (as you well know) no Knight but carrieth the honour of his Ladie in such account, as she prefers that before his owne life. If then Madame, in religion of his office, I absent my selfe for a while, I shall accomplish nothing but my dutie ; whereto your selfe bound mee, and I hope to execute with such successe, as you shall beare

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

beare the prize of Beautie, not onely from the faire Ladies of Fraunce and Allemaigne, but from all Christendome, yea, the whole world, may I live to trauell it.

Do not then (sweete Mistresse) mislike, if I absent my selfe, for a cause so resonable, & continue me still in your fauourable conceit, as hee that was borne to do you service. And albeit I cannot depart without exceeding griefe and anguyl, yet perswaded of your rare arguments, I carrie my selfe with patience yelde to reason, beeing present with you alwayes, in that I carry your divine image in my soule, and loue hart, life, and all, till I come.

These words were sealed with many deuoute kisses, and Ptolome had like paine in perswading Brionella, yet this contented them in the ende, that the honour of their trauell was the recompence of theyz Beautie : and so with forced content they most louingly departed.

The next morning, the Princesse sent Palmerin an Arming-coate of greene Velvet, embrodered all ouer with great Orientall Pearles, and very thicke beset with Starres of golde, and in the midst of each Starre a costly Cimeralde : and he had caused her Picture to be most curiously drawne in the purest Arabian-golde : her face and hands formed wonderfullie neare the life, and all her Lineaments very singularly fashioned, and this portrait caused her to be set in a faire Litter, couered ouer with Crimson-Velvet, which hee had prouided onely for the purpose, and so set forward.

CHAP.

# THE HISTORIE

## CHAP. XXXIIII.

How the Prince Lewes came to see the Duchesse of Burgundie : And what happened.



S

oone as the Heraldes and Horsemens of Lewes of Fraunce and the Duke of Sauoye hadde dispatched theire Charge, their Lordes gaue direction to prepare all things in readinesse so soone as myght be: but yet the Princes affection to the Duchesse did so torment him, as hee daylie compassed new meanes to conferre with her, that he might know the passions he endured for her sake.

At length it came to passe, that the King and the Duke of Burgundie, & diuers other Princes, rode forth on pleasure together, and returned not againe for two dayes space, which made him thus beginne with the Duchesse, I neede not tell you Madame, for you know it well enough, how continual-ly I languish in remedlesse affections, till now this opportunitie puts me in some hope of comfort, that you performing so soleinne promise, will deliver me out of this extremitie. Wherefore faire Mistresse, since tyme and occasion hath pour-  
sed it, and Fortune (by Nature froward and inconstant) fauoure it: Let me intreate you to take the benefite of both, least hereafter we compasse not the like againe.

My Lord (quoth the Duchesse,) you must thinke I am more yours then mine owne, and make that reckoning of you, as no Lady can the like: how is it possible then for me (lo-  
wing as I loue) to ffe from that which loue commaunds me to fulfill? Let it suffice you then, that the regarde of mine honour

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

honor defended, I am ready to no ought may agree with your lyking. What happened afterwards I leau to your opin-  
ions, but by the halfe the whole may be discerned: notwithstanding, vertuous Ladys haue power to resist such moti-  
ons, though time, occasion, and such amorous solicitings did offer it them: but such may bee accounted more diuine then humane, and to them may worthily be erected a Trophee, in disgrace of the Temptresse Venus. But this fitle discourse not much dissenting from the matter, is written in repreach of such young dayntie wantons, that so vainely attend on their ouer-fond and vnchaste desires: And may likewise be a warning to undiscreet olde men, that theye chose theye Pan-  
tosome fit for theye soote.

But now is come the first of Maye, the day to begin the Enterpises of the Princes of Fraunce, and Sauoye: Lewes to entertaine the Duchesse Loue, begunne with such aduan-  
tage, had greater desire now to execute his intent then before. Wherefore this day was his Pavillion erected nere the Cittie Gates, being beautifull and very sumptuous: and at the Entrance thereof was placed a goodly Moniment of blacke Marble, curiously set forth with columnes of white Marble, very thicke embossed with golde and perle. At the side of his Pavillion was placed another moniment of greene Jaspis, adorned with many Wases, Pillars, and antique Imagerie of Golde, whereon hee intended the straunge Knights that came, shuld place the figures of their Ladys. On the other side was a seimely place appoynted for the Judges of the Fielde, who were the Dukes of Orléances and Burgun-  
die: Princes highly esteemed for their Nobilitie, and in their Tyme had bene hardy and aduenturous Knights. Many other Tents and Pavillions were that day there set uppe, as well for straunge Knights that came, as for Noble men and Gentleman of the Realme. And now comes in the Prince brauely mounted to the Fielde, accompanied with many young Princes, Knights, and Gentleman: the Heraldes and Kings of Armes ryding before, Drummes, Phises, Trum-  
pets

## THE HISTORIE

petts and Clacions sounding, so gallantly as made the Ayre  
detuer a most sweete Echo. Before him in a very sumptuous Coach, was carryed the curious counterfeit of the Duchesse, so superficially set forth, and with such perfection of Arte, as though it had bene the Duchesse her selfe.

After followed Prince Lewes, in rich and glorious guylte Armour, all ouer grauen with most artificiall flowers, and mounted on a Courser of Spaine, esteemed one of the best runniers of Europe, which made way with braue and lofty voltages, as did not a little delight the beholders: one of the chiefe Princes of the Court bearing his Helmet, and another his Lance. What neare I make further report of the Princes triumph, hee comming to the fielde with such Equipage, as well besemeed the house from whence he descended, and as besemeed a loutely knyght in presence of his Ladie: who as her fauour had sent him that morning, a costly Cyddle garnished with Rubyes, Diamonds, great Emeraulds, and other vnualuable rich stones, with a Sworde so god as ever knyght wore, and therewith rode he gyrded to the field. Before he went, the King his Father thus spake to him:

My Sonne, this day and all the other following, Fortune spedeth thee so well, as thou mayst winne the honour my heart doth wish thee. My most neerde, (answered the Prince) I hope before the semynight be finished, to accomylsh your desire effectually, so fauour me shre that may command me. So leauing the King, hee came to the place appointed for the Combate, the Judges placing themselves where they shold, and the Prince himselfe in his Tent, where having his Mistresse picture set on the appoynted place, he commaunded the trumpetes to sound, and a Herald to proclaime, that no knyght bearing Armes, should bee so hardie as to enter his Tent, except he first graunted his Ladie to be the most fairest creature in all the Worlde: and if any were so stubborne not to confesse it, by knyghtly prowesse he would force him to do it.

The Herald having done his charge, and the Judges caused the Conditions to bee openly read, the People diuided

them-

## OF PALMER IN D'OLIVA.

themselves in conuenient places, and the Lords, Ladies and Gentlewomen betoke them to their tents and Scattols. The first that entred the fielde against the Prince, was the Counte Durcell of Arragon, his fourre Squires conducting before him in a great gorgeus litter, the statute of his Mistresse Daughter to the King of Arragon; the fairest ladie in all Spaine, and for whose beautie hee tooke in hand this querell. After him came fourre other Squires, the foremost leading his Courier, the second bearing his Helmet, the thurd his Sheld, and the fourth his gauntlets and launce: and comming to the monument appoynted for strange ladies, caused the portrait of his lady to bee placed thereon: then comming to the princes Tent, said. I know not lord Lewes, if ouercome with glory, presumption of your strenght, or ouerweening your selfe, you haue made this large enterprise, to Combat with the best approued Knights in the whole world, in iudging no fairer lady, to bee this day living then your wome: for mine owne part, I am not so troubled in conceit as you are, to quarell for such a fabulous matter, yet dare I tell you that my lady is much more beautifull then yours, which if you will deny, I am ready by the strenght of mine arme to make you confesse it. Lewes seeing himselfe greued with these iuurious speches of the Count, answered. Proude knyght, I am ashamed to heare thy iudgement so simple, as to thinke I am come hither for a matter of so light moment, as though I wold not iustifie against thee and all other what I haue promised: but let that passe, before we depart he will cause thee know thy folly, by that time thy pate and thy body is thoroowy bumbasted, looke to thy selfe, for I intend to dreit. So mounting on horsebacke, and prepared as it had beeene to a warre mortall, encouered each other with such furie, as their Launces flying in shivers vp into the ayre, they met together so terribly with their bodies, their Sheldes, their Horses and their headees, as they were both dismunteed to the grounde. But earnest desire to vanquish, they beeing beside, streng

9

and

# THE HISTORIE

and swelldispesed knyghts, made them quickly begynne the secend assault with their swerdys, whiche was so dangereus, and handled with such dexterite, as it was hard to judge whiche shuld haue the hensur of the Combate. But Lewes behylding the representation of his Ladie, and considering her so excellent and fauourable to him, toke heart afresh, and (as it were inspired with new vigor) so laide on the Counte Durcell, as in short tyme he brought him vnder the mercis of his swerd, when holding it against his throte, he sayd. Heren poynty knyght, ifnew thou confesse not my Ladie to excell thine in beautie, thy vndiscrete head shall rausome thy sculpy. The Counte (for all this) wold not answers one word, by reason of the debilitie he felte hymselfe in, ha-  
ving lost so much of his blode, as for the grefe he conceiued to be thus banquished: wherat Prince Lewes not content, wold haue taken his head from his sholders, but the Juges of the fielde came to him, saying. By Lord, you ought to forbear, having brought your enemie beyonde his owne defensyr: your victory being sufficient to content you, forbids his death. The Prince perswaded, entred his pavillion, and ioyfull of his conquest, commaunded two Gardans of the field, to take the figure of the Princesse of Aragon, and place it at the fete of the Duchesse counterfeit: whiche was done imediatly, and the Counte Durcell brought into his swene Tent, wherethe Chirurgions toke diligent care for the curing of his woundes. Sone after came a knyght of Myllaine, who giuing such defiance as the other did, vnder the conquering swerd of Lewes, the imperfections of his Ladie, and her stature placed by the Princesse of Aragon. The same day were ffeue great Lordes of Italie brought in like subiection, and so the tryumph ended till the next day, when the first that came into the field was a knyght of Spayne, a knyght of god estimation, and specially reputed, who after a vaine gloriouys oration made (as the nature of the people is that way affected) put his

lefte ne

# OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

fortune to the triall of his launce: whiche hee sped so ill, as hee was vnhorseyd, and in the following Combate likewise reuined the foyle. After him seauen other knyghts of Castile proued as vnsfortunate, their ladyes pictures all reuerauting the Duchesse, whiche beeing not a little proude of her knyght, and the memorabile retowme hee witnessed of her beautie, I leue to your consideracions, both for her conceit that way, as also in loue towarde the Prince, who seeing no more readie to enter the quarell, returned thence to the Pallace, to conserue with his swete missis of his high god fortunes.

## CHAP. XXXV.

¶ Of the Combate beeween Prince Lewes of Fraunce, and Crenus the Duke of Gaule.



Great pleasure did the King conceiue, and all the nobility of the Court, at the gotten victories of Prince Lewes, against so many worthy knyghts, so that they altogether accounted him most fortunate. And now the thrid day when hee was entred his Tent, an English Knight (no leste braue in fearmes then the other) deuided the Prince, and betwene them begon a daungerous conflict, in the midst wherof, the King with many Princes, Barons, and Lords, as also the Duchesse and the Duchesse of Burgundie, came to their standing, and unhappy behelde the sayle of the English Knight, the Duchesse hearing him confesse her beautie, and behelde his Ladys portrait placed vnder hers. But now the curagious Duke

## THE HISTORIE

of Gaule named Crenus, came brauely mounted into the  
town, vpon his tasse to the King, Queene, and Ladies, who not knowing him, by his Armour judged him some  
great Lord, in that no knight before caused so god opinion  
generally, nor came with brauer countenance into the field,  
hee beeing indeede a Prince of wonderfull possessions, and a  
Knight at armes worthyly proued. The Duke (as all  
the other had done) caused his Ladys to counterfeite to be  
placed where it ought by his Squires, to the no little admira-  
tion of all the beholders, noting what rare and excellent  
beautie it was adorued withall, the workman having per-  
formed such exquisite perfections, as it had beene the Ladie  
her selfe naturally living; while the Squires were thus  
placing it on the monument, the Duke aduaunced himselfe  
to Lewes, in this manner. The ouermuch selfe conceit  
(Lord Lewes) of mindes but easilly acquainted with mat-  
ters of difficultie, hath often beene, and yet is the cause to  
plucke great personages more low then they expect: so  
that men haue seene them deceived of their intents, and re-  
warded with ridiculous shaine and confusion. This speake  
I to you, hauing heere begun a busynesse, the end whereof  
will bee more had to you, then as yet the beginning hath  
beene: for Europe is sufficienly storied with hardy knights  
to all wage your presumptuous opinion, and Ladys much  
more faire and excellent, then siche whom you contend for.  
And this (by the fauour of Fortune, gracious regarde of my  
Lady and mistreare, and helpe of my good Sword) will I  
enforce you to confess, that incomparable Agriola, daugh-  
ter to the King of England, for vertue, for beautie, and all di-  
uine perfections, excedeth yours whatsoeuer she be. Before  
such a leasing (quoth the Prince) shall passe the lippes of a  
Donne of Fraunce, eyther will I consent to be peccemeale  
tornynsunder: and before fayre Phœbus haue paced one  
houres iourney, I doubt not to make thee repente thy pride  
and arrogancie. By the soule of King Arture, said the duke,  
ooke then garde thy selfe well, for I haue with my course-

lat,

## OF PALMERYN D'OLIVA.

lat, abate the pride of a brauer man then thy selfe, and ere  
wee two part, I meane to trie if I can do it againe, there-  
fore resolute thy selfe to thy selfe defence, for (by my life)  
I will not fauour thee. Without any further speeches they  
encountred with such violence together, as Prince Lewes  
was thowt betwene his hores feete, and he for England  
lost his stirrups, but recoveren himselfe well enough by the  
mayne of his horse: then hee seeing his enemie got vp a-  
gaine, cast himselfe out of the saddle to haue taken his ad-  
uantage, but Lewes preuented hym, and came marching a-  
gainst the Duke with his Sword drawne, who staled hym  
thus: He thinks Prince of France before any worse be-  
fallthee, thou werst best to yeld thy selfe, and remember  
that our Combate beginnes for the excellentie of beautie.  
By God man of England, answere Lewes, thou canst not  
perswade me to a thyng so farre from my thought, therefore  
go to, and hee that hath the fairest friend shall soone bee  
knowne. In this great choller hee reached the Duke such a  
stroke on the head, as made hym set one knee on the ground,  
but recovering himselfe quickly, and both thowtly angry,  
they layde on each other so cruelly, as the very hardiest of  
the beholders feare the successe. Thus fought they for mat-  
ter of speciall value, the defence of theyr owne reputations,  
and honor of their Ladys, whose loue was more precious  
in their hearts then their owne liues. So long these eager  
charges continued on both sides, as Prince Lewes hauing  
receiued more then twentie wundis on his body, feling  
himselfe fainte, fell downe before his enemie, saying. O noble  
heart of Fraunce, the true succeder of thy famous  
predecessours. The viciozous Englishman letting his soote  
upon hym, saide; Lord Lewes, if now thou declare not my  
Lady to excell thine in beautie, it costs thee thy life, a matter  
nothing pleasing to me, in respect of the chualtie and singu-  
lar prouesse I haue found in thee, as also this magnani-  
mous enterprise of thyne, which in despight of thy foyle, and  
death it selfe, shall make thyne live for ever. But Lewes made

## THE HISTORIE

no answere, ryther for his weaknesse, or so ryche wylle conceit of his misfortune, wherefore the Judges came, who granting the Duke victorie, desired hym to preade no further, which hee honourably granting, was as it yfull of the conquest, as the Duchesse sad and penisue, thinking Prince Lewes had bene slaine outright: wherefore shee stung i way to her lodgynge, not tarrying for the king or any of his Ladys, who like wiue depeared the field in maruailes sorte, seeing their son so pittifull wounded: but above all, the Duchesse made moche lamentation, then shee wold haue done for the death of her husband, yet fearing what shee thought secretly, shold by her gryfe bee openly suspeid, comforted her selfe so well as shee could: and being by her selfe, with one other trully Gentlewoman, shee thus brea-  
shed forth her moches. Ah trecherous Fortune, enemie to allactions of regarde, why haue thou suffered the man that I most fauoured, thus to bee vanquished: and (which is most to be pittied) without heape of lise: Ah deceiptfull treynesse, seeing thou hast esyred hym so much wrong, do mee the fauour to beare hym compaie in death, that laved and died so honorably for my loue. Ah death, let it suffice thee that loue hath wounded hym, and make not thou expertent of thine inevitable stroke, vnselle thou wylst do as much for me. Ah falls and slattering Henrie of Verus, is this the guerdon thou rewardest them withall that serue thee faithfully: So ceasing her complaint a while, in great impatience she thus began againe. Alas, neither the one or other are cause hereof, but my most unhappy selfe, when (prouoked by my bea-  
uty) hee tooke in hand this enterprise: but if it bee so (deere friend) that envious fate deale so hard with thee, soone mayst thou bee revenged on her that caused it. And with these words shee fell betwene the armes of one of her Ladys present, whom shee specially trusted, who thus spake to her. Why haue now Madame: willyou persuade your selfe no eche wile? belue mee there is no remedie but you must change your conceit. What will you forget your selfe?

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

selfe? it is no time if you re nearebet your selfe well, for if hee whom you loue and endure the paines for, shold be deceiptfull her of, in swerde of seeking his health, you will shaf-  
ten his daies, if (as you say) hee haue not without you wel-  
fare. More requisite is it that you go comfort hym with your chairefull presence, then thus to bee the argyment of both your deathes. Beside Madame, if my Lord suruive, as no doubt hee shall, what may hee presume? trust me mat-  
ter sufficient (if you governe not your selfe better) that you  
seeke to discouer, what most of all besemes you to conceale. Alas ( my Friend ) answered the Duchesse, I know you speake the truthe: but how is it possible for mee to content my selfe, seeing what estate hee is in, onely for my loue? But if hee die, small reckoning will I make of my life: for let my honour bee blamed or otherwise, let all aduersities and misfortunes go together. Yet will I somewhat bee ad-  
uised by thee, and I will go see if my presence will any-  
thing comfort hym. To breaue off this talke, came an Es-  
quire from the Queene, to intreate her come to her Chambre: which she did, and went with the Queene to the Princes lodgynge, whos beholding the Duchesse so pale and full of greefe, with this conceit his wounds opened and bled a-  
flesh, for which cause the Chirurgions, who imagined the  
occasion to proceed by shame the Prince conceiued, that any  
one shold see what wounds he took by the Duke of Gaule,  
wherefore they forbad any to enter his Chamber, untill the  
yeare of death was better passed ouer, which was within  
short time, when the duchesse by her often visiting him, con-  
uertered his sorowes into many ioyfull conceits. But because  
our history appertaines not onely to his deedes, or the loue of  
the Duchesse, wee will retorne to the Duke of Gaule, who  
as hee had thus conquesed Prince Lewes, followed the  
conditions of the field, taking the portrait of his Ladys  
Agriola, and placed it where the Duchesse picture stood,  
setting it among the other conquesed Ladys. That day di-  
vers other knyghts cam on behalfe of their Ladys, whom

## THE HISTORIE

the valiant Englishman entertained with such valour, as all his paines turned to the honour of his Mistresse Agriola, who now was seated as paragon of the field.

## CHAP. XXXVI.

Of the Combate betweene Palmerin and the Duke of Gaule, and of the successe thereof.



¶ the same day that the Prince of Fraunce was vanquished by the Duke of Gaule, arrived at Paris Palmerin, Trineus, and their traine, but the combate was first ended, h heresore they commanded theyr Squires to prepare theyr Tent. Palmerin understanding that the duke was conquered, grieved not a little, in that he came no sooner to win the honor of the Prince; yet knowing, if new he could conquer the Duke, more honour should arise to him then by the Prince Lewes, hee contented himselfe, passing that night in his Tent with the Prince Trineus, in diuers arguments of the Combate betwene Lewes of Fraunce and the Duke: yet was Lewes highly commended of Palmerin though hee were overcome, because hee had so brauely done the two former daies against all the knyghts that came. All this night could not Palmerin sleepe, thinkeing on the day ensuing, but rising early in the morning, and commynding himselfe to God in his prayers, hee put on the Coate of armes his Lady Polinarda gaue him before his departure, and tooke the counterfeit of his Lady in his armes, not thinking any of his knyghts or Squires wroth to beare it, and thus accompanied with Trineus and other

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

other Allemaigne Lordes, entred the Lystes with so braue a gesture and countenance, as every one commended him for a godly knight. And hauing placed the Picture on the accustomed Monument, as it had beene to the lively creature her selfe, he thus beganne. Ah perfect myreur of all beautie, vertue, and excellencie, resolute thy selfe this day, to beare the Palme of honour from all Ladies in the Worlde, in that your knyght craves a thousand deaths, before hee give consent to the contrarie: and perswades himselfe so assuredly of your present fauour, as he durst venture on a whole armys, to keepe his religion in your divine seruice. These wordes were spaken solow, as the Duke of Gaule heard him, wherwith not contented, he answered. What now knyght, demandest thou (conge) of a Ladie to defend her Beautie? Ill canst thou performe what thou speakest, if thou be no better prouided. For all that Sir, said Palmerin, I hope to makst you graunt what I say, and that there is not a fayrer Ladie living, then hee whose figure thou here beholdest, oþer wise I shall constraine thee to verifie it, whether thou wolt or no. That shall weskone see (quoth the Duke) So departing into theyr Lents to be arm'd, and ready to Joust, they met so brauely together, as both of them brake their Lances brauely without meeting each other, and taking newe Staves, encountered againe, where the Duke was unhorred, and Palmerin very lye incurred: hee braking them to theyr good Swords, continued a dangerous and doubtfull Combat, till in the ende Palmerin overcame the Duke, and holding his Swords ready to cut of his head, sayd, Knight thou art dead, if thou graunt not my Lady to excell thine in beauty. Ah Sir, (saide the Duke) unhappy be the houre that you tooke in hand this voyage, to deprive me of that which made mee the most happy knight of the Worlde, with what countenance may I present my selfe before her, seeing fortune hath bene so aduers to mee? Thus filling the ayre with his regreets, the Judges came, desyring Palmerin to saue his life, whereto hee consented: whiche wordes were more bitter to the Duke then death

## THE HISTORIE

death, who in these complaints was ledde into his Tent by his Squires. Palmerin not forgetting the honour due to his Ladie, tooke downe the Image of Agriola, and sette his Ladys in the coine, saying : Now are you in the place Madame, which is your owne by right. This victory was not a little pleasant to the Frenchmen, but especially to the Prince Lewes, when he heard thereof: Who the better to make his ioye knowne to Palmerin, sent him two of the best Horses in his Stable, as glad of the reuenge on the Duke, as that Palmerin remained Conquerour. Palmerin sent hearty thanks to the Prince, as well for his present as his good will, and so continued in his deuote to his Ladys Beautie, as that day he honoured her with the conquest of four French Knights, and the submision of their Ladys portraiture: yet aboue all, Palmerin commended to Trineus, the valour of the Englishman, confirming the Duke for a chosen Knight at Arms, and neither Frenchmen, Italian, Spanyard, English-man, Romane, or Greeke, that attempted against Palmerin, in the following dayes, but stille bare away the vitorie, and Polinardaes Picture thei Ladys obeyiance: The last of the eyght dayes, came into the field the Lord of Albrat, greatly esteemed for Prououse and Chiualtie, and hee wold defende the Beautie of his French Ladie: but Palmerin after a long and tedious fight, brought him and his Mistresse among the vanquished, and so concluded the French Princes enterprise, to his owne immortall honour. Afterwards came the King Agariel, with the Princes and Lords of his Court to Palmerins Tent, making him the greatest entertainment could bee denised, whereof Trineus, and the other Allemaigne Lordes were highly contented, and after his Wounds were healed, caused him and his companie to bee lodged in his owne Palace, where the Duene and her Ladys would often visite him, and the Prince Lewes likewise, who by manie intreates with Trineus, vnderstood her Name for whom Palmerin thus aduentured. But when the King vnderstood, that Trineus was the Emperour of Allemaignes Roome, and all

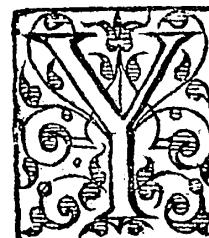
This

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

this honourable Companie came from his Fathers Countys, theyr Welcome cannot be sufficiently sette downe, nor Palmerins prayses effectually rehearsed: Whome the Prince Lewes thus entertained. In god sooth syr Palmerin, the Prince may imagine himselfe happie, that is hencured with your knighthly service, but aboue all, the noble Emperour of Allemaigne. By Lord (qd Palmerin) it likes you to speake your pleasure of mee, yet did I never kniue knyghtes more worthy in fight then your Country-men, among whom your deserts may not escape unreported, no more then the deedes of Scipio can among the Romanes. Manie other honourable and familiar speches passed betwene the Prince and Palmerin, about the Ladys Figures, that we brought to the Joustes: Polinarda, onely triumphing beyond all the rest, having no secound, but faire Agriola of England, the goddesse and Mistresse to the Duke of Gaule.

## CHAP. XXXVII.

¶ Of the Combate which the Dukes of Sauoye and Lorrain had togither, for the beauty of their Ladys: and what was the issue thereof.



Du haue haere before hearde, the Enterprise of the Duke of Sauoye, for the beautie of his Ladie, and how after Prince Lewes his dayes of Combat were finished, hee shold maintaine nine other in the like quarrell: Wherefore the day after Palmerins victory, he put himselfe in order as the tyme required, and hauing in the fiedle erected two Pillars of Porphrye, displacing them that belonged to the

## THE HISTORIE

the Prince Lewes, his Tent was there set by all of Crimson Velvet, very curiously embrodered with Gold and pearle, and round about within, were Inscriptions of many braue sentences of Loue, extracted from Hystoriographers and Poets, as well in Greke, as in Latine, in pracie of the Mistresse of his deuoted affections. In the morning hee went to gaine the god morrowe to the Princesse Lucemania, Daughter to the King of Fraunce, whome hee had chosen for his Spouse and Wife. After many solemne courtesies passed betwene them, fearing the Queene should finde them together, he tooke his leaue of her, shee giveng him from her arme a sumptuous Bracelet, garnished with sixe great Diamondes, and sixe faire Rubies: which gift much encouraged him to follow his Enterprise. Being come into the Field, the Judges appointed were the eldest Sonne of Fraunce, and the Counte of Aragnac: wile Princes and valiant Knights at Armes, and standing in the gate of his Tent unarm'd, because hee sawe none ready to offer him Battell, the Duke of Lorrayne at length entered the field, attended on by a braue company of Knights & Squyres, who brought the portraite of his Lady, being a figure of rare Beautie, and hauing a Crowne on her head, where ouer was written in great Letters of Golde, This is Polinarda, exceeding in Beautie all Ladys in the worlde: Which was read by manie, who could not satisfie theyr eyes in beholding so braue a spectacle, and beeinge sette on the Pillar appoynted, hee came to the Duke of Sauoye, saying: Blasphemous Knight, detractor of the Beautie of Ladys, heere may thine owne eyes witness how thou hast belied Beautie, in presuming to thinke any more sayre then this incomparable creature, to whome thy Ladys may not worthily be hand-mayde. And if thou wilt not presently confess what I comand thee, shalde thy head from my Weapon, which I meane to knocke well for thy great indiscretion. The Duke of Sauoye enraged with these words, arm'd himself presently without any answere, and mounting on Horsebacke, with a strong Lassice in his hande, en-

{countred

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

countred his Enemie so couragiouly, as breaking both their Staues brauely in shiuers, to their very Gantlets, passed on without any further harine. The Duke of Sauoye angry that he had not dismounted his enemie, with his Sword drawne recurred furiously vpon him, and laid on such strokes as the fire sparkled from his Helmet: yet the Duke of Lorraine, like a god and hardie Knight, defended himselfe most valiantly, and reached the Duke of Sauoye manie threwele Wounds, so that both of them (beeing throughly nestled) rent each others Armor in such sort with their Swords, and mangled their flesh so unmercifully, as the Judges could not imagine who hadde the better vantage. The Duke of Sauoye vndering to see the Duke of Lorrayne holde out so long, beganne to scorne more like a fiend then a man, rayling on fortune, that (in respect of his Ladies beauty) she assisted him no better, and being at the very point of dispaire, tooke heart afresh, and recouering his stroakes vpon his aduersarie, at length slew his Horse vnder him, who falling downe, and his Master with him, by reason that he was so soore weareied, and bruised, & beside had broken his thigh in the fall, could not recouer himselfe, before the Duke of Sauoy (being alighted) set stoe upon him, and in furie woulde haue parted his head from off his shouulders, but clych that the Judges ranne quickly and slayed him. Then was the Duke of Lorraine halle dead carried into his Tent, and the Duke of Sauoye rauled Polinardas picture to be sette at Lucemanias feete: a thing very strange in respect of their great difference. Afterwards hee was unarm'd, to haue his Wounds bound vp, which were so daungerous, as gladly hee woulde haue beene excused from the Combate with any other Knight for that daye, did not chance, and the Duke he had made himselfe prouoke him to the contrary. But within an houre after, was desyed by a Knight of Scicilia, who woulde Combate on Foot, with the battel-Axe, in which censur the Duke was very nare overcome, hee had lost so much bloud before; but yet in brefe, the

Scy. c.

# THE HISTORIE

Scicilian Knight io<sup>t</sup> the day, his Ladys picture was yelden  
conquered, and the Duke of Sauoye went to reff him in his  
Tent.

## CHAP. XXXVII.

¶ How the Duke of Sauoye entered the Combate ag  
ainst Ptolome, and how hee sped.



Almerin not as yet in perfect health, was aduertised how the Duke of Sauoy had conquered the Duke of Lorrain, fighting for the beautie of the Princesse Polinarda, the conceite whereof so grieved him as nothing could moze, to see her honour so badly defended whome aboue all other he esteemed dearest, which made him in great choller, say before the Prince Trineus. By God (my Lord) Loue made a slender choyse of the Duke of Lorrain for his Mallas, and Madame Polinarda seemed to bee scant wise to choose him for her Champion, in respect of the excellent Beaulte Nature hath bestoweded on her. And yet it could not bee imagined, how the Duke of Lorrayne should gayne the victorie without shame, in seeking honour beyond his deuert, because hee is unworthy such extraordinarie fauour, which makes me repute it rather of a sainte heart, then any want of a iust quarell. Trineus hearing Palmerin so affectionate in his speeches, in a merry laughter, saide. In god sooth sayz Palmerin, the Duke of Lorrain was but ill counseled, to enter the Combat for my Sisters beautie without her licence, in that hee once learned, how you could defend it much better then hee. Palmerin fearing hee hadde spoken

moze

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

more then hee might, because hee discoursed his Loue too openly, excused the matter thus. If it were not (my Lord) that I doubt to offer wrong to a Lady, en whome dependeth my life, and whome I loue more deare then my selfe : I wuld cause the Frenchman well to understand, how madame Polinarda your Sister, surpasseth in all perfections, ryther of grace or beautie, all the Ladys of the Countrey: yea, I dare say of the wholle World: therfore one may easily conjecture, that the Duke of Lorrain during the Combat, had his mindes fixed on baser occasions. Then Trineus smiling to see Palmerin so diligent to shadow his Loue, saide: It is no strange matter (Friende Palmerin,) to see presuming mindes payde with selfe-same Coyne, as the Duke is: and yet I cannot maruell enough, that my Sister Polinarda would not commit this matter to my charge, shew having had so god knowledge of your Valour and Prouesse. These speeches pleased not Palmerin a little: and did in such sort encourage him, as for the iniurie done his Ladie, by the Duke of Sauoy, in setting her Figure at the fete of Lucemania, hadde not Trineus perswaded him with faire speeches, all sick and soore as he was, he would haue gone to reuenge this dishonour. notwithstanding, hee called Ptolome secretly, saying: Thou knowest (my deare friende) what shame is offered her, to whom I was Destinated before my byrth, by the presumption of an swer-bolde Knight, and what griefe it is to mee, that I cannot at this present reuenge this wrong my selfe, I pray therfore supplye my insufficiencie, and enter the Combat with that beaute-glozious Duke, of whome thou mayest gaue honour and yeld me content, in giuing easie to my afflictions, which else are insupportable. I promise you (my Lord, answered Ptolome, before you made the motion I intended it, and I will accomplish it with such god will, as I make no doubt to ouercome the Duke of Sauoye. And for my Mistresse Brionella, will I enter the Fielde, whose Beaulte is sufficient to enrich me with the Victoria, for surely in my conceit, she farre surpasseth Lucemania. Therefore my

Lord

## THE HISTORIE

Lordes let mee request one courtesie, which I am loathe you shoulde denye me: that if you shall be able to morrow, but to accompayne me with you presence in the feldie. If the kyng will suffer mee, (quoth Palmerin, I will, in meane while, I will pray, that th<sup>e</sup> fortune may fall out to my hearts desire.

Thus Trineus, Palmerin, and Ptolome, were passing the time, conserning with other Noblemen, of the valour of the Duke of Sauoy, against all strange knyghtes: and how he had soyled the Duke of Lorrayne, had not his horse falle on him, and maimed him: otherwise, he brought the Combate to so god a Judgement, as he had wonne the honour of the field. Whereat Palmerin was more offended then before, becausse himselfe was not able to revenge this misfortune: Wherewithall, hee conceyued a kynge of Jealousie of the Duke of Lorrayne, because hee hadde chosen his Ladie Polinarda for his Mistresse, and on her behalfe hee hadde entred the Combate: and how hee durst place her Picture on the Pillar with her name, without hee had receyued some commayndement from her: Whiche concept so grieued him, as his wounds began to be as dangerous as at the first, continually labouring in his thoughts; Now with the lightnes, then againe with the inconstancie of Trineus, neuertheles, he could not judge, (affecting earnestly the vertues of his Lady) that shee would be of such a double liking: and in this doubtfull estate, sayds. Ah God, I see that Women winne lightly, and lose againe more easily. Then repeating his words, folloynes on thus: O heauens, and what shall I say? It is impossible that shes (meaning Polinarda) should be so forgetfull, and never will I belieue, that a Princesse so wise and vertuous, would reward mee with such Treason, which may not, nay I dare swere cannot, once enter her thoughts. Yet would not all opinions serue to allaye this new iealousie, but still it hadde power to confound reason: and all the night continued he in this barkable conceit, til the next morning, when Ptolome (so soone as the Sonne arose) accompanied with Trineus, went to his Tent, where beeing Armed, all saving his Helmet,

having

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

having his Launce and Sheldre, hee came to the Duke, saying. Thou knowest knyght the cause of my comming, stand vpon thy guarde, for I fight for beautie. The Duke sudainly at these wordes mounted on horsebake, and ranne agaist his enemie with such strength, as Ptolome cast the Duke forth of his saddle, and sudainly alighted with his sworde drawne: but the Duke recouering himselfe, enterained him in sharper sorte then hee expected. Now beganne betweene them a cruell and pitious Combat, as their Armour, sheldes and swordes, flew about in peaces, and the blood trickling downe their bodies in many places, so that it was generally reputed, how the fight could not end without the losse of both their lives. Yet in the ende, the Duke beeing of stronger constitution then Ptolome, and greedy of victory ouer his enemie, ran so violently vpon him as hee got hym on the grounde, and he being uppenned, offered to take the aduantage of his life: but the Judges forbidding it, caused Ptolome to be carried into his Tent, where the Prince Trineus stayed, not a little, sorry for this great misfortune. The Duke likewise sore wounded was carried into his Pavillion, but first hee saw the portrait of Brionella sette in the rancke of the conquered. The same day did the Duke fight with a knyght of Scotland at the Mace, who not nimble enough in usynge that weapon, in the end had the soyle, and thre other knyghtes afterward at severall weapons, so that it was admirable to beholde the exploits of Armes the Duke did, in that no knyght as yet mealed with him, but departed with shame, and their Ladies pictures placed as vanquished. And now was Palmerins Combat against the Duke of Gaule not talked on: for the Duke of Sauoy was accounted the onely knyght in the world, to the no small ioy of the Princesse Lucernaria, who perswaded her selfe now, that her beautie was most excellent. But shes was not so pleasant as Palmerin was pensive, and enraged out of measure: notwithstanding his weakenes, and the often intreaties of Trineus, he would needes to the feldie, saying,

## THE HISTORIE

ing. God my Lord perswade mee not, for I reckon not my  
life, so I may take vengeance of the dishonour done to  
my Ladie your Mistresse: the manifold courtesies of the Em-  
perour your Father, haue so bounde me to her and you, as  
excede my life farre, and therefore I beseech you not to hinder  
me. Trineus yet overcame him by perswasions, assuring  
him to haue time sufficient for his reuenge, whereat great-  
lie displeased, hee feigned himselfe to be ihole sooner then hee  
was indeede, for the great desire hee had to deale with the  
Duke. And Prince Lewes angrie, to see the Duke hold the  
fielde longer then hee did, not able to bee overcome by any  
Knight, came to Palmerin, saying. I kno w not my Lord,  
whether you understande the Duke of Sauoies victories a-  
gainst so many hardie Knights, but belike his strength is  
much better then mine was, or Fortune allwes him more  
fauour then shee did to me. In my conceit, if you enter not  
the Combat, you do me iu wrong and your selfe too: and if he  
depart hence with victory, then shall I haue cause to com-  
plaine of you: in that his successe hath made him so haue  
and presumptuous, as though no Knight is able to answere  
him in the fielde: let me intreate you Sir Palmerin to abate  
his pride, and (as well hee de crues) make him know his  
folly. Palmerin hauing greater desire to execute this mat-  
ter, then thus to be intreated, returned the Prince this an-  
swere. My Lord, God gives honour and victory to whom  
hee pleaseth, without eyther regarde of the cause or the per-  
sons. If according to bountie or nobility of minde he distri-  
buted such gifts, then had you bee ne among the better sorte,  
so furnished suffiently with valour and magnanimitie:  
yet if your enterprise haue not sorted to your desire, account  
this for certaine, that it is for your god, and for other rea-  
sons then are to you known, for such matters are his secrets,  
and hee doth ballance them by his divine wisdome. Not-  
withstanding, as well to satisfie your request, as ease mine  
albeit my present estate would haue me stay a while: there  
will

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

will I Combate with the Duke, not certaine how fortune  
meanes to deale with mee. But happen what shall, I go  
with a minde to conuere, and doubt not but the issue will  
be such, as shall yelde you content, and mee the victory: so  
shall your sadnes and mine be conuerted into pleasure. With  
this answere the Prince satisfied, departed, yet was hee  
ignouaunt of Palmerins intent, which was far otherwise  
then hee imagined: but pleased as hee was, he went into the  
presence Chamber, where many Knights were consering  
of deedes of Armes past, to whom hee opened the fantasie of  
Palmerin, which caused a generall doubting of the Duke,  
setting him downe for vanquished, except Palmerins weake-  
nes were his greater friend.

## CHAP. XXXIX.

Of the perillous Combat betweene Palmerin and the  
Duke of Sauoye, and the issue thereof.



In daies together had the Duke of Sauoy maintained this quartell, for the beau-  
tie of his Ladie Lucemania, & no knight  
as yet could get any aduantage of hym,  
untill the seauenth day, when Palmerin  
prepared himselfe to the fielde, and en-  
tered his tent, accompanied with Prince  
Lewes of France, Trineus, and many o-  
ther Princes. The King with all his traine taking their  
standing to behold the Combat, Palmerin came armes forth  
of his Tent, sauing his Helmet, which was carried before  
him by two Squires with his Shield and Pace, and next  
to them came two Princes, who bare the portrayture of  
his Ladie Polinarda, which being sett on the Pilair, hee  
claged

## THE HISTORIE

clasped on his Helmet, and taking his Pace in his hande, marched to the Dukes Tent, and thus summoned hym. Knight, thou hast long enough defended the field, and to my great grase that it hath beene so long, my turne is now come, and it is god r eason I shoulde keepe it the rest of the time: for the Ladie whom I loue, is not onely much more beautifull then thine, but beside, excelleth all other whatsoeuer, and if thou wilst not confessethe same, I will not leaue thee with this Pace till I haue forced thee to doo it. I know not saide the Duke, what thou canst do, but I am of the minde, that I shall sone qualifie thy overbolde brauning. At these wordes the Duke taking his Pace, deliniered Palmerin so sounde a stroke on the heade, as made him to stagger, but Palmerin requited hym well againe for it, and long had they fought together, and bruised each other very pitifully, till at length Palmerin gave the Duke such a cruell stroke betwene the head and the shoulders, as hee fell to the grounde cleane bereft of sense: When Palmerin taking off his Helmet, would not offer him any further violence, but setting his sworde against his hest, said. Now am I suffiently reuenged on hym, that so ill intreated the figure of the most sayzest among Ladies. The Judges of the field, thinking Palmerin would haue slaine the Duke, came runnig to him with these wordes. Content you sy, hee is vanpon Palmerin put vppe his sworde againe, and leauing the Duke, went presently to the Piller where his Ladies portrait stod, which embracing in his armes, hee placed highdame to pardon your knight, in that hee did no sooner repel the famous iniurie offered you, and impute it not to feare, or want of courage, but debility of body, which once a little recovered, I came to maintaine your honour, and heere confirmee you for the most beautifull Lady living. While Palmerin thus contemplated his Mistresse figure, the Judges commannded the Duke to bee carried into his Pavillion,

where

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

where, with soueraigne drunks life was got into him again, but when hee knew himselfe to be vanquished, and that in one houre hee lost the greatest honour of all his life-time, very conceit of grasse had well nere slaine hym. No lesse was the sorrow of Madame Lucemanis, but shee and her Knight were got so much discontented, as Palmerin, Tri-neus, and Ptolome were ioyfull: but aboue all other Prince Lewes of Fraunce, more pleasant then if himselfe had tryumphed in victory, thinking hee could not sufficiently extoll therenowne of Palmerin, calling hym y onely puller downe of the proude. That day did Palmerin encounter with seauen other Knights, and in his conquests shewed himselfe not onely magnanymous, but mercifull, sauing their luyves, and honouring his Mistresse with the humilitie of theirs. The next day likewise after many braue exploits, beeing readie to leaue y fielde because none came to resell hym, on a suddain there entred a Knight in blacke Armour, striped all ouer with Golde, and bearing in his shield of Azure the Golden Sunne, whose braue order of entraunce declared hym to be a hardie Knight at Armes, who aduaunting himselfe to Palmerin, said. My intent of comming hither (Sir knight) is to let thee understand, that I am the Secretaunt and beloued of a Ladie, who may not bee equalled with any other, and because I am enformed, y thou maintaineest thy Freend, to excell all Ladies whatsoeuer, I offer to proue the contrary, and will make thee confesseth. I never spake wordes more true, aunswere Palmerin, and heere abide to iustifie them but this place is ordyned to no other ende, then to make thee and thy like know, what vnadvised enterpryses you take in hand. And one thing is required of thee, that before thou begin the Combate, thou sette vppon this Piller the counterfeite of her, whom thou perswadesst thy selfe to excell my Ladie in beaultie, according to the conditions of this field published through all Europe. That cannot I do, aunswere the Knight of the Sunne, for I haue no other picture of her then is imprinted in my heart, where loue hath

# THE HISTORIE.

so lively figured her person, as she is dayly presented to mee by her incomparable beautie, which cannot bee taken from me but only by death. And if loue sole in the scule, (as divers holde opinion) whole worldes cannot separate me from her. And therefore are all men unworthy to receiuе fruition (by their regard) of a thing so precious, which makes me imagine, none but my selfe worthy to looke on her diuine figure. Prepare thee therefore to thy Horse, and defende thy selfe. Palmerin desirous to know the name of this sayre Ladie, said. I see sir Knight, that thou art meruadous proud and surlie, which make mee rather desire to Combat with thee then any other to abate this hotte honour: albeit this is contrarie to his conditions; who was the principall Author of this enterprise: which is, that thou shouldest set on this Pillar her portrait whom thou so esteemeest: yet this exception shall bee graunted thee, for the desire I haue to know what thou canst do, as also her name, if thou daresst reveale it. To tell thee her name (answered the knight of the Sunne) I will not sticke with thee, and because in concealing it, I shall offer her wrong, nature hauing in her sette downe the onely worke of beautie: know therefore that her name is Polinarda. Daughter to the myghtie Emperour of Allemagine. These wordes were so yzckesome to Palmerin, and troubled his thoughts in such sort, that hee knew not readilie what to answere: notwithstanding in midst of his choller, thus spake. By God knight, thou haft made a god choyse; for against her beautie will not I contende, hauing it in greater estimation and reverence then thou canst haue: but I am readie to proue, that thou deseruest not to be named her Knight, no not so much as her meanest Servaunt. That shall we try, said the knight of the Sunne, before wee part: and albeit her excellencie de serue farre greater seruice then mine, yet so it is, that for the loue I beare her, and the affection I haue to obey her by some agreeable seruice, I may by god reason name my selfe hers. At these speches Palmerin conceiued such iealousie, as without attēnding

# OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

tending any further matter, mounted in great anger on horsebacke, and met the Knight of the Sunne so forcible, as both of them were sent to the grounde: whereupon they drew their swordes, and charged each other with such furie, as theyr Armour and shelds were hacked in pieces, and the ground coloured with their expence of blood. No perission of breathing was suffered betwene them, but blood and death earnestly desired on either part, so that the King, the Lordes and the Judges, reputed this for the straungest Combat that euer they saw, nor could they say who was likeliest to win the fiede, but if the one died, the other could not escape, so that the King moued with compassion, caused them to be seuered, and commauded them to enter their Tents. Which motion liked well the Knight of the Sunne, for long he perswaded himselfe he coulde not hold out, wherefore he mounted on horsebacke so well as he coulde and withdrew himselfe, Palmerin beeing wonderfully displeased, that he coulde not obtaine the victorie of this knight. Sone after, the King and the Prince Lewes came into his Tent, and seeing him very soze wounded, would not let him stay there, but said, Believe me (Sir Palmerin) you haue great neede of rest, and your wounds I see are very dangerous, you shall therefore be conveyed to my Pallace, where all helpe that may be deuised shall be given, assuring you, that greater honour could never knight purchase, then you haue done. And though this last Combate were not ended, you neede not be displeased, the issue thereof importeth the death of the one or the other, and perhaps of both, which I would not haue scene, for two of the best Provinces in my Realme. And mee thinks you shoulde content your selfe, hauing receyued before such honour ouer so many Lordes and Knights of name: come you herfore with me, and Lord Triarius beare vs compaine. Great thanks receiued the King of them for this honourable courtesie, and Palmerin went with him to the Pallace, where the Kings Chirurgions tooke care for his wounds, hee being lodger in the most lately Chamber

## THE HISTORIE

At the Court. Now the Prince Lewes begant to loue Palmerin so dederly, as hee could not bee an houerforth of his companye, desiring his health as his owne welsare; wherfore all things that hee imagined Palmerin tooke pleasure in, would hee performe with his uttermoste endeouours, and would suffer none to hold him talkie, but onely of matter that might yeld pleasure and delight. Notwithstanding, divers Knights conferring with him that evening, as concerning the Knight of the Sunne: Palmerin aunswere them, that his minde shold never be thorooughly quieted, vntill such time as he fought with him againe. The Prince, who still endeououred to keape him from sadness, said, I belaue (my lord) that hee will not easily be induced to deale with him againe, for you brought him into such estate, as hee will keape himselfe hereafter out of your handes: and well I am assured, that had you continued but a little longer, the victorye had beeene yours, for the Knight was so weatened, that hee did nothing but defend your blowes. It pleaseyth you (my Lord) to say so quoth Palmerin, but had hee felt such valour in me, or such courage as besemes a vertuous Combatant, hardely coulde hee escape as hee hath done: neverthelesse, I hope (with the fauour of Fortune) to mete him once more, and then we will trie who is the strongest. Much other talkie they had, but Palmerin intreated the Prince, that all the portraites of the conquered Ladies might bee brought him, which were aboue an hundred, of divers beauties and most strange fashions, and among them all could be found none second to Polinarda, but (as we haue said alreadie) that of Agriola the Princesse of England: who (by thereport of a Gentleman present that hadde seene her) was much more beautifull then her figure presented. Such spachess they continued so long of the English Virgin, as Trineus (albeit hee never saw her) became amorous of her, and at y instant hee so solemnly vowed himselfe hers, as thenceforward hee swore never to loue any but her, so that for her sake he thrust himselfe into manie perillous fortunes, as in the following discourse

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

discourse of the History you shall reade more at large. From whome let vs returne to the Prince Lewes, who seeing so many portraites of Princesses and Ladies, would daily congratulate Palmerins god fortune, and embracing him, said. O helpe me God, my noble companion, I would never desire greater riches in the world, then to resemble you, especially in chivaltrie, which in you is so surpassing all other, as you haue ended to your hono: what a number haue sayled in. Oh how happy may the Lady account her selfe, that hath such a knight? and were not the condition to: cuell towards my selfe, I could wish I were a Woman in her place, to haue so high rule and commannde over you. At which words all present beganne to smile, yet shewing god countenance to Palmerin, for the affection they saw the Prince bare him, which is yet to this day a comon vsage and practise among Courtiers: but Palmerin somewhat ashamed of such superstitious prayses, answered. Trust mee my Lord, I account my happiness the greater that I haue done seruice to so high a personage and so god a knight as you are, desiring to mete you in such place hereafter where you may perceiue the god will I bear you, not onely for this high entertainment, which is more then I can deserve, as for the pleasure I haue to honor so god a Prince, which if the occasion happen, you shall perceiue the experiance. I haue spoken nothing (quoth the Prince) but what is more acquainted to others then my selfe, and if I would conceale them, then will they bee most openly knowne, because vertue doth so apparantly shone in them. Many other spachess passed betwene them, and longer had continued, but that many Lords which came to see the Jousts, were now upon departing, and therefore would take their leaue of the King, whereupon they were constrained to breake off, the Prince going to his Chamber of presence, where hee gaue thankes to a number that honoured the Court with their presence, and so one after another all departed, the Duke of Sauoye being one of the first, ashamed (God knowes) to

be

## THE HISTORIE

be so conquered by Palmerin, and not abiding his Lady Lucemania farew all. But Lewes did not seue the Duchesse so, for her loue continued as resolute as before, and she loued him as well conquered, as had hee bæne the conquerour, whereof shee assured him by many amorous meetings, by which meates the Prince stayed the Duke at the Court longer then himselfe would haue done. Lewes thus louing Palmerin as you haue heard, intreated the Duchesse to come and visit him, which shæe accomplished the day following, when Palmerin spent many discourses with her, rather of loue then entring into religion, for hee perceiued by her countenance that shæe had no will to become a Nun, where wee will leauue them together, and tell you who the knight of the Sunne was, that fought the last Combate with Palmerin.

## CHAP. XL.

Who the knight of the Sunne was, and of his strange ad-  
uentures.



He King of Hungaria, Father to the Prince Tarisius, that married the sayze Griana, Mother to Palmerin, had in his latter yeres a Sonne named Netrides, and after hee had long liued in rest and prosperity, hee dyed, leauing the yong prince Netrides, fiftene yeres olde, and in the custody of his elder brother Tarisius. This Netrides growing in god constitution of body and behaviour, beeing well beloved generally, so gracious, gentle, and well governed hee was, as the Lords, knights,

Gen.

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

Gentlemen, and people of Hungaria, esteemed him more then theyr King Tarisius, who beeing Crowned after his Fathers decease, loued Netrides as Brother-hood requyzed, till Fortune (envious of this Concord) not willing that the vertues of this young Prince shoule be there extinguisched, chaunged his loue and affection into exceeding hatred, by an occasion hereafter following. One day the King Tarisius walking in his Garden to take the ayre, left his Brother Netrides in the Chamber, accompanied with the Quene, who without imagination of any harme, nor that his fatall starres would sort him any misfortune, satte downe in the Kings Chayre, as hee talked with the Quene, and continued there so long, till Tarisius came uppe and found him there sitting, which hee tooke in such ill parte, as in a great rage he thus beganne.

Who made thee so audacious and presumptuous to sitte in my Seate, against thy dutie and my liking? By mine honor thou hast done more then thou wertell: and if I see the like againe, or may I but heare thereof, thy Head shall pay the price of thy follie. Netrides, who of his owne Nature was humble and gentle, fell downe on his Knee, intreating the King his Brother to pardon him, for what he had done was not with any intent or meaning to displease his Highnesse: but an ouer-sight, and that so he would permit it to passe. The King made him no answere, because hee tooke Netrides reasons for no payment, but conceiued a secrete hatred in his mind by this occasion of so slender moment, which increased thenceforward, as the master prouoking a fiery Meteor: so that he did revine at his Brother so much, as hee would not once speake to him, nor afford him a god countenaunce.

Then called hee to remembraunce the loue of his people to-wards his Brother: And if this hatred should come to theyr knowledge for so small a cause, hee imagined they would displace him, and make Netrides King. For which cause hee intended to haue him slaine, and the execution hereof he committed to one of his Archers, but God (who is euermore the preseruer of the innocent) would not suffer such a damned deede

of

## THE HISTORIE

of Paradice to take effect. Which Tarisius percey ving, and finding one day his Brother alone, enflamed with this discontented humour, saide: Nerides, thou hast offended mee more then I will now stand to argue on, I therefore banish thee my Courte and Kingdome: and looke that within thre dayes thou get thee hence, and on thy life not to discouer it to any man, or take any one with thee to beare thee compaie.

The young Prince obedient to his Brother, made answer, that he would accomplish his charge, and so withdrew himselfe into his Chamber, not declaring to any one his cause of heauiness. Then willing one of his Squyres to saddle his Steede, departed away as close as he could, forbidding any of his Servants to follow him: and such expedition hee made, as not resting but one night in any Lodging, he left his Brothers Kingdome, wandering without any care of himselfe, or which way hee went, but went here and there, as Fortune pleased to guide him. Having long time Trauelled in Allemaigne, his Money sayled him, in that at his departure hee was but badly prouided: yet could not his Princely imbre abase it selfe to Beg, so that beeing without meate or drinke, or any place to rest himselfe in, ashamed of himselfe, he sought the meanes to shrowde him where none might discrye him, and so entring a great Forrest, very thick and set with Trees, shrubs, and bushes, hee esteemed that a conuenient place for him to rest in, wheresoe alighting from his Horse, and turning him to feede, layde himselfe downe at the roote of a Tree, and thus beganne to breash forth his complaints. Ah inconstant Fortune, and to mee most of all inconsistent: didst thou erect me so high, and reiet me now thus lowe: well then may I say, that more wrong thou doest a man in one houre, then right in all his lifetime: For if heretofore thou diddest lende mee pleasure and delight, that now thou makest mee pay for it: (and that with Ulurie so rigorous) not leaving any hope to comfort mee. Ah tyrannous King, cruell, and unmanlike Brother, thou hast with shame banished mee, and brought mee into this pore estate wherein I must dye: Oh happy if

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

I might, rather then to liue in the vile estate of Beggarie, So saying, hee layd him downe amoung the Heaths, and was surprised with such extreame feblenesse, as he fell into his lamentations againe, thus. Ah my Lord and Father, too soone diddest thou leau me, would God I then had borne this compaie, or else that at this instant I might come to thie. Ah men of Hungaria, I am well assured (knowing the loue you euer bare mee) that you will pittie when you heare my afflictions and calamities: alas, I never deserved this unhappy ende. And beeing vnable to continue longer speche, hee there determined to finish his life. But better Fortune besell him then hee expected, by the meanes of an Auncient Knight named Lombardo, who being neare, heard all his dolorous complaints. This Knight being rich and of Noble blood, had neare that Forrest a strong, delightfull, and sumptuous Castle, and delighted to walke among the Woods for his recreation, as god happe it was for Nerides, that hee walke this Evening. Hee hearing these sadde and sorrowfull regets, pittie so touched his heart, as the teares bedewed his cheekes: yet would hee not trouble him, while he continued his moanes, but afterwards came and tooke him by the hand, saying: Arise my Friende and take courage, for you are in the place where you shal finde more god to benefite you, then harme to offend you, wherefore cherish vp your spirtes, and forget this your heauiness, whiche may endanger you beyond recouerie. Nerides seeing this Honourable Gentleman, with his bearde so white as snowe, hearing his courteous offer, and for him now so necessary, with ioye, feare, and bashfulnesse, all coupled togither, accepted it; and humbly thanked him, albeite (quoth he) a contented death is better to mee, then a miserable and despised life. The Knight comforting him, aunswere him thus, that it was not in his power to chose life or death, but the Founder of the Heauens reserved that authoritie in his owne handes. With these words hee tooke him by the hand, and conducted him to his Castle, where hee was worthilye entertained by the Knight himselfe, his La-

## THE HISTORIE

die and her Daughter, one of the fayrest Virgines in all that Countrey. Lombardo having heard all his misfortunes, and harde Aduentures, in the night discoursed all the whyle to his Ladie: wherefore (god wife, quoth hee) entertaine him so well as may bee, for I assure you hee is descended of high degree: and if his manners and vertues be correspondent to his Byrth, we will give him our Daughter in Marriage, if so himselfe accept our Offer. The god Ladie misliked not her Husbandes opinion, wherefore the next Morning shee went to entertaine her Guest, saying: My Lord, your coming hether hath wel contented my Lord and Husband, and so please it you to stay here, we will be very glad and faine of your god compaie, which gentle offer Netrides accepted, thanking God and the Ladie for his happy fortune. Thus remained hee with this ancient Knight Lombardo, who afterwards never remembred him of his miseries in the forest, but intreated him so well, as though hee had bene his owne Sonne. Netrides seeing the Knights Daughter so faire, and so well conditioned, and she regarding not only the vertues of his minde, but also his comely and well-featured Bodie, they beganne amorously to affect each other secretly, but Loue invented the meane to reueale it openly: for Lombardo well noting the great discretion of this young Gentleman, and knowing him to be descended of bloud-Royall, resolved to cause him Marrie his Daughter, demandinge the question of Netrides, among many other speeches, if so hee liked to marry his Daughter. My deere Lord (quoth he) it is the summe of my desire, and greater honor, cannot you bestow on mee, so please her to conceyue the same opinion I do. The marriage was solemnized with all expedition, with the presence of many Gentles, neighbours thereabout, who maruelled the Knight beheld his Daughter so, in that they esteemed Netrides but a pore Knight errant. It fortuned afterward that the ancient Knight and his Lady deceased, leauing their Daughter great with Childe, to the no little content of Netrides, that after all his sorowes he would become a

Father.

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

Father. Thre dayes before this Ladie fell in Trauell, shē Dreamed that shē was shut uppe in a very darke Chamber, whereout shē could by no meanes get, and therefore called for helpe to one of her Gentlewomen. Then was shē advised to take her Childe in her armes, and to stay there still, whereupon shē beheld her Infant, and saw that his Face somewhat resembled the beames of the Sonne, the brightness whereof chased away the Darknesse, so that shē might beholde the place as clere as any other, saying: My Lord, forgette this heauiness, and you shall reioyce by this Infant, for this is he shall reestablish you in the place you haue lost, and shall seat you in the Chayre with Honour, for which you were exiled thence, giving you his Crowne, that Traiterously chased you from his Kingdome. Hee comforted with these words, toke the Childe in his armes, and saide: Little soule, I pray God thy Mother speake truth, and that thou mayest be able to execute it. So saying, he espied a furious man, who snatched the Infant forth of his armes, and notwithstanding all his intreaties and supplications carayed it away with him.

This sorow we for Netrides made her give a loude shooke, when hee calling his wife, demanded the cause of this her sudden affright: whereupon shē rehearsed to him the whole manner of her Dreame, and reioycing thereat, saide: I hope (my Lord) that it will so happen to you as I haue dreameid, and therefore comfort your selfe without feare of misfortune: notwithstanding hee remained in many doubtfull varieties of opinion, till they understood by effects the pretended certaintie of this Dreame. Now was come the time of the Ladies deliuerance, which was a godly Man-childe, so fayre and well fauoured as one shoulde lightly behold, being named Frysol, and shē would suffer none to purse it but her owne selfe, for the certaine hope shē reposid in him. The Childe growing in time to such comely stature, as eache one tooke great pleasure in beholding him, whereat the Mother was so glad, that albeit shē had afterwards two other Sonnes, yet shewed shē no such speciaill loue towarde them as unto Frysol,

## THE HISTORIE

Frysol, which procured some hatred betwene his brethren and him. This young Lord growing to fourtie yeres of Age, was in stature very tall, delighting himselfe in ryding great Horses, shooting in the Long-Bow, casting the Barre, and divers other Gentleman-like exercises, as also to chase in the Forrest, where olde Lombardo met with his Father. So that on a day after long and weary Chasing of the Hart, hauing sweated very soze, and growne maruellous drye for want of drinke, finding a little Syring by the fote of a Tre, hee lay downe and dranke, but afterwards hee became so ill and sickly, as hee trembled, shuering very soze: So that one of his Squyres could hardly leade him againe to the Castle. Netrides seeing him so exceeding ill, was maruellous sorry, commaunding his Physitions to seeke some present helpe for him, who pleyed him with such wholsome potions, as his Feuer left him, but his Face and all his Bodie were so painted as he had bene a Leaper, which made him to be mocked of his other Brethren, and scorned of all the Servants, except onely of his Father and Mother, which was such a grieve to him, as he would haue dyed with fretting at them, but his Father rebuked them, and comforted him in this manner.

I ad hope (my Sonne) by thy meanes to be restored again to the Kingoome of my deceased Father: but now, how long it will be before God knowes, if this strange malady of thine be never holpen. Frysol amazed at his Fathers words, desired him earnestly to report the whole circumstance: which Netrides at length did, rehearsing how hee was Brother to the King of Hungaria, the harde entreatance hee had had towards him, and lastly, hee tolde him the Dreame of his Mother. Frysol studing a long space on his Fathers wordes, at length answered. My Lord, you are not ignorant of the Soueraigne power of the Highest, who by his divine iudgement hath sent mee this disease, that thus tormenteth mee: Euen so, when it pleasest him, he wil take it from me againe, and give mee health and strength much more then ever I had before, with meanes sufficient to give you ayds and succour,

ACCO<sup>2</sup>

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

according to the matter whereon you haue diuined. And albeit I feele so extreame anguish, as death may not be like ned to it, yet doth this hope comfort me in such sort, that me thinks already I am become more healthfull: therefore my Lord dismay of nothing, but persuade your selfe there is comfort behinde. These words were so pleasing to Netrides, as meere ioy caused the teares to tricke downe his cheakes, maruailing at the wonderfull courage of his Son, enduring such terrible paines as hee did: wherefore what hee thought hee could not reueale, but withdrew himselfe into his Chamber.

## CHAP. XL I.

How Frysol persecuted with his disease, and the mockery of his brethrē, determined to go seeke strange aduentures.



Rysol hauing heard the originall of his birth, as also the vision that appeared to his mother, was thence forward more pensue then hee had bene before, and perceiving his brethren continued their bad disposition, and day by day mocked him more and more, hee determined to forlaine his fathers house, and to seeke aduentures, and remedie for his sicknesse, if any were to bee founde. And being one day in the Forrest more melancholyke then accustomed, hee espied a knight bered with Leprosie come by the high way, mounted on a pore Palstry, to whome hee sayd. My Friend, I am infected with the same disease thou art, wherefore wilt thou suffer me to beare thee company,

D

and

## THE HISTORIE

and I will bee ready to do what thou shalt commaund mee. The knight perceiving hee might gaine some benefite by Frysol, was well contented, and so bad him mount vppre behinde him. So was hee glad to doe what was contrary to his nature, and in this life continued two yeres, traualing many countries, bearing continually the wallet, and what profit came hee deliuered his maister, reseruing nothing for himselfe but what hee gaue him, and bearing a mind so noble and vertuous, as hee desired rather death, then to enrich himselfe by any villainous or dishonest act. So many countries and prouinces had they traualled, as at last they came into the Realme of Hungaria, when Frysol remembred that he was in his Uncles Land, who ledde a life so base and ignominious: hee was overcome with exceeding heaninesse, which ill agreed with his daungerous disease, so that his companion desired to know the cause of his sadnessse: but Frysol prayed him to content himselfe, saying that death was more agreeable to him, then a life so dolorous and misera ble. At which words the knight growling in choller, thrust him beside his Horse, and rode away, leauing pore Frysol there, hauing no other comfort then to fill the ayre with his teares and complaints, till at length hee received succour by a young maide named Leonarda, the Daughter of a rich Countreyman that dwelt on a mountaine neare at hand. This maiden leauing her Fathers Beasts and Cattell to pasture, tooke great delight in gathering herbes and roots, wherewith to make oyntments for all woundes and diseases: and this day (by the divine permission) shee chanced that way where shee heard the murnefull lamentations of Frysol, whome when she behelde, overcome with pittie and compassion, said. Alas my Friend, how came you into this desart and comfortlesse place, being oppressed with such a bad and dangerous sicknesse. In god sooth myfresse (quoth hee) by no other meanes then the misfortune and displeasure of my life: Oh how happier were my death at this instant, then to liue any longer in this monstrous languishing.

Friend,

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

Friend, answered the mayne, you ought not thus to dis payre in sicknesse, but consider that the Lord and gouernour of the heauens and earth, doth by these meanes trie and prooue his people, whom if hee perceiue thankfull and patient in their afflictions, of reproue enemies, he makes them his Friends and Children, onely by the ransome of his be laved Sonne paide. If then you will put your whole confidence in him, I am perswaded you shall soone finde reme dy. So causing him to ryse, shew conduced him to her Fathers house, where for certayne dayes shew bathed him with wholesome Herbes, and annointed him with such precious oyntments, as in short tyme his disease forsoke him, and hee was as cleane as at the tyme hee dranke the Water: for which hee humbly thanking the maiden, said. God make me able (sayre Virgyn) to repute this wonderfull kindnesse received at your hands, accounting my selfe more indebted to you, then to my parents that gaue me first life: and this perswade your selfe, that wheresoever my body bee separated from this place, my heart shall remaine ready to do you any service. That is my will & intent (quoth Leonarda, but thanke him chiesely that made mee able to helpe you, and in so dooing shall I account my labour well bestowed. Frysol for this vnderexpected good fortune, was henceforward very dutifull and louing towards Leonardas father and her Brethren, as the readiest Servaunt he had in his house: but the good man esteemed so well of him, as by no meanes hee would suffer him to be so painfull, but with such fare as God sent him, entertained and welcomed him, not suffering him to depart thence in the space of a yere and more. Frysol often accompanying Leonarda to the fieldes, shew seeing him so sayre and comely in personage, began secretly to affection him, yet would she not acquaint him therewith, fearing more to offend then to be refused. So soone as Frysol had thus recovered his strength, he determined to stay no longer there, wherefore finding Leonarda at leisure conuenient, hee sayd. I know very well (faire Mayden) how much I am behol

## THE HISTORIE

beholding to you, for the speciall grace and god I haue receiued by you, which induceth mee to make you this promise, that you shall not comand any thing, but I will gladly accomplish it. And because I am desirous to trauaile after strange aduentures, I would request that it might bee with your willing consent, promising you to stay no longer hence then the tearme of thre yeres, in which time I will not sayle to visite you againe: and if my fortune so fall out as I am perswades, I doubt not to recompence what you did for me. That which I alway feared (sir Frysol) quoth she, is now come to passe: notwithstanding, seeing it is convenient I shold loue honour more then mine owne pleasure, I am content you shall goe seeke your aduaancement so wellbegunne: but I pray you not to cast your promise in oblivion. I will not to the death (quoth hee) do any thing that may dislike you, or against your will, and since you haue so freely graunted mee libertie, per swade your selfe my word shall bee my deede. So taking his leaue of his Father and Bretheren, hee trauelled towards Allemaigne, where hee hearde that Chivalrie was more maintayned then in any other place, and so Rode hee foure dayes together without any Aduenture: till passing through a Forrest, hee hearde (as it were) a great noyse of people fighting, wherefore making haste that way, he espied an ancient Knight assaulted by three Villaines that sought to murther him, whome hee ressisted so well as he could, albeit he had nothing but his  $\mathcal{S}$  word to defend him. The Knight espying Frysol, called to him for helpe, when hee (suddenly finding a young Trewe, pluckt uppe by the roote, came therewith to the Villaines, thus saying: Why Traiterous barlets, what prouoketh you to offer such shame to a Knight? wherewith hee tooke one of them so suddenly on the pate with his Trewe, as hee never rose, to tell who hurt him. The Knight and he together, so behaued themselves, as three of those Villaines were laid dead before them, which the other three perceiving, tooke the wselues to flight: whereupon the olde Knight seeing himselfe so well deliuered, came

and

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

and embraced Frysol with these wordes. Now may I say my god frens, that my life had perished without your assistance, bethinke your selfe therefore how I may gratifie this gentlenesse: in meane time, I haue a house not farre hence, let me intreate you to lode with mee this night, and I will make you the best entertainment the Countrey will afford. Whereto Frysol agreed, promising to leaue him in safetie before hee departed: for which the old knight thanked him, and as they went hee discoursed to him, how these villaines assailed him, because hee had enforced them to surrender certaine heritages, which vniuersally they detained from pore Orphanes, and for that cause set spies to watch him, that they might set upon him and kill him: which surely they had done (quoth hee) without your succour. In the continuance of these speches, they arrived at his Castle, where many of his Squires maruailed to see him so sore wounded, but specially his Lady and his two Sonnes, to whome hee rehearsed the summe of his aduentures, and the great fauour and helpe hee found by Frysol, for which cause hee entertained him with exceeding honour. And so long abode Frysol there with the Knight, till beeing desirous to receive the order of knighthood, hee came to the knight in this manner. May it please you Sir to bestow on me horse and armour, I will go to the Emperours Court of Allemaigne, hee beeing the most renowned Prince in the world. The good knight seeing him so forward to chivalrie, gaue him horse, armour, and money for his tourney, wherupon hee set forward, and the third day after hee arrived at the Emperours Court, from whence (a little before) Trienus and Palmerin were departed towards Fraunce: which newes made Frysol earnestly desire his knighthood, because hee intended with all speed to trauaile thither likewise, in respect of the honour was there to be won. Frysol understanding the Emperour was in the Chappell hearing divine seruise, went thither, where beholding the Princesse Polinarda, hee reputed her the onely faire Lady of the world, thinking

## THE HISTORIE

thinking he could never glut his eyes with regarding her: whereon, service being ended, he fell on his knee before the Emperour in this manner. Because I knowing (invincible Lord) that you are renowned beyonde all other Potentates whatsoever, and that you make no small account of Knights aduenturous: I desire that by your hand I may be numbered among them. The Emperour seeing him so young and yet valiantly given, answered. I would be loth my friend to deny a request so reasonable, but I will first know if you be Gentle borne, or no. By Lord (quoth he) I sweare by the faith I owe to God and your Maiestie, that I am noble borne, and of the blood royall by my Fathers side. God forbid then (sayd the Emperour) but you shoulde knight, and Fortune sheld you so well in chualtrie, as she haue indued you with comely shape and beautie. Then was the Spurre put vpon his right heele, and the Emperour bad him rise a Knight, commanding his Daughter Polinarda to guyd his Sword to him, which she did, saying. Worthily and with happinelle (Sir knight) may you employ the order you haue received. Madam (quoth Frysol) if hereafter any vertue or valour abyde in me, it shall be employed enely for you, having thus honoured mee with my Sword, wherewith I hope to accomplish such daedes of armes, as shall renowne her name that gaue mee my weapon: but Polinarda made him no answere, because Palmerin was the onely Image of her thoughts. After Frysol was thus knighted, taking his leaue of the Emperour and his Daughter, he departed, making no small hast till hee arrived at the Iourts of Paris, where hee determined for his first deed of chualtrie, to enter the Combate for the beauty of Polinarda. But hee could not get thether so soone as he intended, for hee was hindred by the way with an unexpected aduenture, which was, in a fayre forrest, where hee beheld some Knight carry away a Lady perforce, who seeing him, cryed: Ah god Knight, for Gods sake succour mee; whereupon Frysol couching his Lamente, sent one of the Knights

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

Knights headlong to the ground, and in short time wounded another in such sort, as now hee had but two left to resist him, on whom Frysol made tryall, how well hee could employ the gift of Polinarda. The knights seeing the hard fortune of their two other felloves, the one having broken his necke in the fall, and the other wounded past hope of recovery, tooke the wiest way for themselves, postling thence so fast as they could ride, but Frysol would not follow, least they had some other company in ambush that might haue intrapped hym, wherefore hee conducted the Lady to her mothers Castle, where hee remained that night, and the next day sette forward to Paris, where hee arrived at the tyme hee fought with Palmerin, according as it hath beene before rehearsed.

After the knight of the Sunne, (who henceforth shall passe by the name of Frysol) had left Palmerin, and was departed the field, the night was so obscure as hee knew not which way hee rode, so that the moysture of the evening dew did great harme to his woundes, as if God had not armed him with the better strength, hee was in danger not to escape with life. The very same day was the Duke of Gaule departed from Paris, to go ayde the King of England against the King of Scots, and Norway, who was Neephew to the Emperour of Allemaigne, for that they molested him with troublesome warres: and the Duke being benighted, was glad to pitch his Tents in a fayre field, through which it fortuned Frysol to passe, complayning of the danger hee felthimselfe in. The Duke of Gaule being abroade sooth of his Tent to recreate himselfe, heard this sorrowfull noyse, which made him sende his men to see who it was, and to bring him with them to the Tent: whether when they had brought him, the Duke pitting his estate, demanded whence hee came, and who had wounded him in that sort. Then discoursed hee the whole matter, how he had fought with the knight that overcame the Duke of Saoy, and so long the fight endured, that the darke night

## THE HISTORIE

and the king caused them to be parted, neyther of them as yet conquered, and because hee would not returne into the Citie, sought some Village where hee might conveniently lodge. The Duke of Gaule hearing the wordes of Frysol, esteemed him for a worthy and valiant knight, having so long endurid against Palmerin vnvanquished, wherefore hee sayd. Sir knight, you are very welcome to me: all the aide and succour I can glue you, you shall be sure to finde with hearty god will; assuring you, that there is no knight living to whome I wish more euill, then him whom you haue this day fought withall. So causing him to bee unarmed, willed him to rest himselfe vpon his owne bedde, and made his wounds be dressed, abyding there eight daies for the health of Frysol. In which time, the Duke had imparted to him the warres of the King of England, which made him make more hast to be gone, or else he would haue kept him compaine longer. My Lord (quoth Frysol) so please you to accept my compaine, I hope to behauue my selfe so wel, as you shall not be discontented with me. The Duke thanked him, and reioyced that by this meanes so god a knight was preserved, and did him all the honour hee could devise, taking him with him into England, where hee found the Country very much desolated with warres to his no little greefe: but leue we them, and returne to Palmerin.

## CHAP.

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

### CHAP. XLII.

¶ Of the great courtesie the King of Fraunce vsed to Trineus and to Palmerin: And of theyr returne into Allemaigne.



Diligently were Palmerins Wounds attened, which hee had receyued by the hand of Frysol, as not long after he recovered his health, whereof the King and the Prince Lewes were hightly glad, and much moxe Trineus, vnto whom the king desired to gaine his Daughter Lucemania in Marriage: which to compasse, he intended a sumptuous Banquet, whereto hee would invite these twaine: yet first he would acquainte the Queene therewith, and therfore beganne the matter with her thus.

I see Madame, that our Daughter Lucemania is of yeres sufficient for a Husband, and because I euermore desired her highest preferment, and for that I would know if the Prince Trineus to whom I could wish she were espoused, were any thing in loue that way affected, for hardly in my Judgement shall we find a greater Lord, being heye to the famous Empyrouer of Allemaigne: for this intent (I say) will I ordaine a Banquet, whereto both he and Noble Palmerin shalbe invited, and our Daughter to beare them compaine in the best sorte you can devise. The Queene, who moxe desired this Marriage then the King her Husband, aunswereid. You doubt not (my Lord) that I request her chieffest aduantage, wherefore let it bee as you haue determined, and shee shall be present as you haue appoynted. This matter thus pro-  
ceeding

## THE HISTORIE

ceding, two dayes after were Trineus and Palmerin called to this Banquet, and to honour them the more, the King caused his Sonne Lewes, with a braue companie of Knightes and Gentlemen, to conduct them into the stately Hallace, where they were royally receiued by the King and Queene, so ledde uppe into the Chamber appointed for theyr Banquet.

After they had washed, the King caused Trineus to sit by Palmerin against him, aboue whom late faire Lucemania his Daughter, heireing placed iust opposite to the Prince Trineus, the Queene to furnish the Table, sat dwyne by the King. And albeit Nature had bestowed on the Princesse most exquisite Beautie, yet her sumptuous Accouftremens made her appears most amyable: but all could not moue the heart of Trineus, to forget her, to whose Shraine he was dedicated. The Banquet ended, and the Tables withdrawne, Trineus daunced with the sayre young Princesse, Courting her with many honest and decent speeches, which made Lucemania suppose he loued her: but the Prince noted it well enough, albeit his affections were bound to English Agriola.

In this time the other Ladys were conferring of Palmerins Knightly valour, when the Counte of Armignac his Sonne, intreating the Duke of Orlaunces Daughter to daunce, was thus stayed by her speeches to the other Ladies.

You see faire Ladies (quoth she) that Palmerin hath misprized our Beauties, to revenge our Inurie, let vs fall upon him, and shutte him in some place, where he may never come forth: For if he escape vs, the Allemaigne Ladys shall beare the honour from the French, which will bee to vs perpetuall disgrace. These wordes shee uttered with such a pleasant countenaunce, as moued all the other Ladys to smile, whereupon the Duchesse of Burgundie answered. In sooth it is necessarie wee shoule do so, and let vs not suffer him to gette out of our handes so easilie, as hee did from the Knightes that came to the Combate. All the companie liked this motion well, but the King said. Ladys, I will not consent that Palmerin shall haue any wrong, because I haue taken

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

taken him into my Guard. And who shall make recompence (quoth an othea Ladie) for the wrong he hath done vs? You ought to suffer for satisfaction (said the King) and be glad that you had the meane to see the best Knight in the Worlde, for mine owne part I promise you, I rest so contented. Palmerin hearing the King so commend him, bashfully thus answered. Alas my Lord, there is no such matter in me as pleaseth your Maiestie to report, but what my abilitie is, it remaineth to doe you service: accounting my selfe more then happy by couening to your Highnesse Courte, to haue knowledge of a Prince so Noble, and vertuous, and no man living (next my deere Lord the Emperour) that my command me more then your Highnesse. Among other speeches, the King brake the matter of his Daughters mariage to Palmerin, desiring him to labour in the caule to Trineus, which he promised, but all in vaine: for after they had taken their leue to returne towards Allemaigne, though Palmerin was earnest in the matter, in respect of the Beauty and Noblenesse of the Princesse, as soz the supposet he might haue by matching with the Daughter of France, yet Trineus thus answered. I thanke you my Lord, for the god you wish me, as also the honour the King affords me: but another beyond her (whose renowne hath conquerred me) is Lady and Mistresse of my affections. And because you are hea from whom I will not hyde or conceale my most secret thoughts, knowe that it is Agriola, Daughter to the King of England, to whom though my Father be an enemy, yet by your ayde, and mine owne god endeouours, I doe not doubt to compasse my Loue. You know my Lorde (quoth Palmerin) that I wish as well to you, as mine owne heart, and when occasion serues, byall shall make manifest. And seeing you haue fixed your Loue on faire Agriola of England, impacting likewise the same so confidently to me: I am perswaded you could never make a beter choyse, therfore let nothing chaunge your opinion.

Thus rode they on with many sundry speeches, not a little gladde they were returning to the Emperour, but Palmerin

## THE HISTORIE.

merin, much more then was Trineus, for the great desire hee had to see his Lady Polinarda : wherefore with the consent of the Prince, he sent a Squire before to aduertise the Emperour of their comming : Before whom he had no sooner done reverence, but hee was presently knowne, and demanded in what estate his Sonne Trineus and Palmerin were, where he had left them, and what accidents had hapned in France ? Then the Squire rehearsed the Combates and Victoires of his Maister against the Knights of Fraunce, and the Dukes of Gaule and Sauoy, with theyr roiall entertainment by the King and his Sonne, how many Portraites of Ladys Palmerin had conquered, with the whole circumstance of every action. Whereof the Emperour, the Empresse, and all the Lords and Ladys were maruellous glad, yet was not theyr ioye comparable to the Princeise Polinardae, hearing the Squire reueale the honorable daedes of her Loue : so that her concepte might bee discerned by her countenance, and needes must she thus demaund of the Squire. I pray thet tell me my Friende, how fares my Lord and Brother, with his Noble companyon Hyz Palmerin ? The Squire well aduised, because hee knewe the Loue betwene her and his Maister, sette his knee to the grounde againe, with this answere.

I leſt the Prince your Brother, accompanied with my Lord Palmerin, well and in god health : but chiesely my Lord, who ſince you ſaw him, hath wonne the greatest honour that euer Knight did. Afterward hee reported the manner of the Combats to her, and what grieſe his Maister ſustained in his ſicknes, when hee could not be rauenged on the Knight that lost her Counterfeiſt, which the Duke of Sauoye placed at the ſete of Lucemania : and laſt of all, the perillous Combat between his Maister, and the Knight of the Sunne. Which ſhe tooke ſuch delight to heare, as ſhe made him repeat one thing manie times, and could not ſatisfie her ſelfe ſufficiently with theſe worthy reports. Which the Squire perſeyuing, delighted as much to iterate every thing, and ſaide, Believe me Madame, the Loue my Maister beares to her,

for

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

for whose Beautie hee entered the Combat, in my opinion is incredible : For hee is more heire then his owne, and I haue ſeen him in ſuch a penſive ſort thinking on her, as one could hardly iudge whether he were aliue or dead : fearing leaſt any other ſhuld robb him of his Loue : ſuch is the iealousie of his unſpotted affection, albeit my Maister reputes his Ladie immoveable. Polinarda changing countenance oftentimes at the Squyres words, answered. The Ladie ſhould be very ill counſelled, being honourēd with the Loue of ſo god a Knight as Palmerin, to make refuſall of his worthy ſervice : and I promise thet, by the Faſhion of a Princesse, that if I knew her, for the unwillingneſſe I haue to heare him ſo complaine, I would endeauour to cauſe her like none but him, and therein to think her ſelfe the moſt happy among Ladys. Wherefore (iſ thou mayſt be ſo holde) tell thy Maister at his returne, that I will be a meane to ayde him towrds her hee Loues : and therewithall, preſent him my fauourable Salutations, in that I evermore deſired the fortunate ſuccesse of his Enterprize : not ſo much for the liking of his Ladie, being beloued of the beſt, as for the renowned Chivalrie that harboures in his heart. These ſpaches ened, the Squire returned to meete the Prince Trineus and his Maister, to whom hee reþoþed his talke with Polinarda : which Palmerin reþoycing at, let fall all Jealousie, esteeming her now the trueſt Ladie living. The men of Gaule, ſo ioy of his returne, that ſo worthily had deliuered them from the oppreſſions of the Enchaunted Knight, went forth in ſeverall companyes, according as honour, vertue, and office directed them, to meete him, and ſo conneied him with ſignes of ioy to the Pallace, where the Emperour ſo much abased himſelfe, as hee came downe into the open Courte to entertaine him, and glad likewiſe, to ſee the ſafe returne of his Sonne Trineus, ſaying: My Sonne, right happy is thy returne : and you Hyz Palmerin, perſwade your ſelfe ſo welcom as heart can deuife; aſſuring you, that your ſuccesse hath not a little pleased me. And needes muſt I account that Lady especially bounden unto you, for whose ſake

## THE HISTORIE

Ioue you haue pass so many daungerous Combates, god reason hath shē to Ioue you, in respect of your Trauells for her, renowning her so much by your Knightly Chivalry, so that it make you not recompence according to your merites, woor-  
thily may shē be condemned of Ingratitude. Alas my Lord (quoth hee) her Beautie commaundeth higher matters then all my Labours. Polinarda beeing in presence, remembred well her Fathers words, and therefore she intended to shunne that condemnation, saying to her selfe, He that winneth hon-  
our, ought to weare it. And he that commandeth the soule, may easily ouer-rule the Passions of the minde : Lette my  
Knight then be rewarded as shē hath rightly deserved.

All this while, the Eyes of these two Lovers so well dis-  
charged theyz office, as Palmerin wished that Iuno had gra-  
nted him so much, as shē did sometime to Argus her Shephearde,  
that he might haue more ease in his affliction : for he thought  
it not enough, onely to beholde the Beautie of so rare and ex-  
cellent perfection. Againe, hee was not a little tormented,  
because Polinarda (to couer what shē would) gladly none  
should discerne cast her looks on the ground, whch sometimes  
she likewise compelled him to do : but her presence whome  
he esteemed aboue all other earthly things, would not allowe  
him that consideration. The Emperour at length coman-  
ded, that all the Figures of the Ladyes which hee had wonne  
in Combat, should be brought before him : but when he saw  
so manie, and of so contrarie qualities, hee could not but com-  
mende sy<sup>r</sup> Palmerins victorie. Then were divers iudge-  
ments giuen of the beautie of the Portraits, eache one of the  
beholders after their severall opinions. Peolome made de-  
scription of whom they were, and who did entercombate on  
theyz behalves, omitting at no time the honour of Palmerin :  
Wheretoat they all admizyd : some of them commending their  
Complexions, others, their sweete young yeares, and all to-  
gether the valor and prouesse of him that brought the conquest  
with him, wherupon the Emperour said. In god faith sy<sup>r</sup>  
Palmerin, I blesse the time that Fortune sent mee so god a  
knight,

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

Knight, and thinke not to carrie away all the glorie of your  
Victory your selfe, for I meane to have part, because you gaue  
your selfe mine. And woulde the Ladie you loue were in  
this Courte, or in my Empyre, to the ende that I might so as-  
siste you in your Suite, as yee might be both mine. My Lorde  
(quoth Palmerin) the victorie is wholly yours, being gotten  
by your Knight, and if the Lady I loue were not vnder your  
Regiment, then shoulde I complaine of a greater matter then  
a cryng with you, being obedient to your Highnesse, as your  
humble Subiect and Servant. Whith which answere the  
Emperour seemed highly consented : and Trineus comming  
to his Sister Polinarda, saide :

Trust me faire Sister, you are more indebted to Palmerin,  
then to any other Knight in the World beside, and rather ac-  
cept of him, then of the Duke of Lorraine, who maintaining  
your Beautie, was ouercome by the Duke of Sauoye, and  
your Picture placed at the fete of Lucemania, where yet it  
had remained, but that Palmerin Conquering the Duke, re-  
moved the figure of the French Princesse in obesiance to  
yon. Polinarda not content with the vndiscreete enterprise  
of the Duke of Lorraine, answered, In sooth god Brother  
the Duke of Lorraine is none of my Knight, and I repute  
Palmerin to haue more Bountie and valour then the Duke  
can haue of wit or courage : therefore great maruell that he  
was not slaine. The Emperour hearing Polinarda was of-  
fended with the Duke of Lorrayne, answered, you cannot  
(Daughter) forbide men to execute theyz owne pleasure, and  
if the Duke liked to enter the Combate for your Beautie, it  
was for the honourable god will hee bare you, and albeit he  
could not reache his desire, yet haue you no cause to thinke the  
worse of him. Polinarda being a Princesse of so rare a wit  
and Judgement, as any of her time, would multiply no more  
words, but continued silent : Neuerthelesse, Palmerin re-  
membering the answer she made to Trineus, intreated her to  
keepe all the Portraits of all the Ladys, determining to send  
them to whome they belonged, according to their degrees in  
birth,

## THE HISTORIE

Byrth and honour. Which shee thankfully accepted, and spending this whole day in divers delights, Palmerin beeing in the Euening in his Chamber, accompanied with Ptolome, sent his Dwarfe to the Princesse, to appoynt the tyme of theyr next meeting: and shee seeing the Dwarfe, caught him about the necke, demanding of him what newes hee had brought her?

None but god, Madame (answering the Dwarfe) my Maister hath sent you the Bon-Soir, and therewithall his humble dutie to your Highnesse: For, being your Knight, and living onely to do you seruise, he hath god hope that your vertuous Nature will not forget, how many dangers hee hath past for your sake: and now dooth Loue appeale for his desired reward.

Wherefore (god Madame,) as you are heart-faile, unite your selues hand-faile, giue my Maister life, your selfe comfort, and make me happy, by carrying of this Message: For I boine by the Reuerend faith I beare you both, that I will not depart without some gracious answere.

Polinarda smiling to heare Vrbanillo speake so earnestly, said. The assurance thou giuest me of the trusste affection thou bearest thy maister, doth not a little content mee, and pittie it were so god a Knight should labour all this while in vaine: Therefore perswade thy Maister, that to morrow at night I will meeke him where we were wont, and there will I resolve him to his owne content.

## CHAP.

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

### CHAP. XLIII.

How Palmerin went in the night to the appointed place, to confer with his Lady Polinarda, and the amorous communication they had together.



Rbanillo with chearefull countenaunce returned to his maister, declaringe to him his talk with Polinarda, her sweet looks, her gracious answers, how chesely shee loued him, and lastly her promise to meeke him in the accustomed place: yet is not this all, for before you depart with her, she hath assured me to resolute you to your own content. And that is it I want (qd. he) for might I once receive my content, then shold I think my trouailes rewarded. And doubt you not theressaid the Dwarfe, if she be a woman of her word. Then Ptolome beeing present, asked the dwarfe if hee saw Bryonella. No in sooth (quoth he) she was not in the princesse Chamber, nor (to my knowledge) was she acquainted with my comming, yet dare I thinke she will be there with my Lady. The tyme being come, the Ladies were at the place with deuotion, answerable to those silent houres, and theyr Knights not sayling theyr appointment, what pleasure on each side was conceiued, is not to bee enquired, for all wisshings are nothing in respect of their contentments. Polinarda hauing her friendye Knight before her, so swete a blush eclipsed her countenaunce, as would dyne nature into a studie to scame the like, and thus she began. Alas my swete friende, in what paine, anguish and heauynesse of

## THE HISTORIE

heart, hath your absence brought me? what teates haue fallen from mine eyes, and dyps of blood st in my heart, by renting sighs and ceselesse acclamations, remembryng our pleasures past, and present comfort, and the hope of better hap to come? What dolozous conceit hath often wounded me, thinking on so many hazards and perils as might hinder mee from seeing you againe: and not without a cause, belieue me, for had you miscarried, never Lady sustained such a losse, in respect of your knightly valour, and the vna-  
ssuredly I haue you, wherof (before I depart) I meane  
travailes for maintenance of my beautie. And hereroe per-  
suade your selfe god Knight, that to haue you, I refuse all  
other god fortunes whatsoeuer: and therefore I care not  
though it were openly knowne, how especially I prize you: de-  
sire, loue, and esteeme you. Palmerin confounded with this  
long expected comfort, and not able to endure with silence,  
interrupted her in this manner. By the faith of your swoone  
Savant, swete Madame, the perils, mishaps, and dan-  
gers I haue past since my departure, never deserued the  
very least of your complaints, nor could my endeouour proue  
such, as your incomparable perfections merited, the only  
rehembrance whereof, was sufficient to make me invi-  
nible: wherefore swete Mistresse, if I haue wonne any ho-  
nor, your fauour was the meane, and your beautie gaue me  
the vertue, streaming so plentisly from your chalst eyes,  
as the water from the Fountaine. To little purpose were it  
new to rehearse, the strange assaults, massacring thoughts,  
and violent flames, wherein I haue burned and continual-  
ly haue crucified, since the houre it pleased you to let mee  
see Fraunce: undoubtedly the very meane of my sufferings  
was able to destroy me, without the resolute assurance of  
your divine fauour, which triumphing ouer death, shall make  
me live continually. So that the desire to let you know  
how assuredly I am yours, and the continuall wishing to  
see you againe, gaue mee victory ouer your enemies, and  
brought

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

brought mee safe thow all extremities, to honour you as  
I do at this present. It now remaines Madame, that you  
regard the truth of my loue, the permanence thereof, and  
the iuliant passions wch: their death to mee, yet with  
this prouiso, that I presume not of any action meritorious  
but your grace, whiche is able to strengthen mee in greatest  
debilitie. And no where know I to sike for pittie and sup-  
port of my cares, if not onely by her who hath the soueraigne  
power to chace hence the cruell and euer threatening me-  
naces of death. For heare god Lord, quoth shee, thus to  
talke of death, considering I cannot liue one houre with-  
out you, or holde I any comfort of my life, but onely in los-  
ing you, to enjoy you: so that what you endure, I suffer,  
and no passion tormentes you, but I haue a share therein, so  
devoutly is my spirite consorted with yours. And therefore  
thinks not your oppressions greater then mine, for if you  
doe, it procedeth by want of experiance of feminine passi-  
ons, the extremity whereof faire surmounteth your sexe.  
For which cause, to givesomewhat to our long and ouertra-  
uelled delires, I give you haere my hand, and there withall  
a chalst heart, accepting you onely for my Lord and husband,  
and to my promise call heauen and earth to witness. Where  
is the wit so daintie, the tongue so flourishing, or the pen so  
diligent, as can conceiue, report, or set downe in perfect co-  
lours, the joyes of these louers? You sayre Lordings, and  
you likewise swete Ladies, that longhaue traueld in a-  
morous affections, and in the end received the reward of  
your passions, by your owne conceits can imagine the con-  
tent of these twaine: for Palmerin was in this opinion,  
that Jupiter had not the like pleasure with sayre Aleimena,  
for whome hee caused one night to endure the space of thre  
daies, as hee hadde with his gracious mistresse Polinarda.  
For now the manisfolde strokis hee gaue for beautie, were  
haere remembred, his dangerous trauailes in all places  
recounted, his absence with kinde gratulations welcom-  
ed, his teates, sighs, complaints, and seares resolued,

## THE HISTORIE

and lastly, his long, vnchangeable and most faithfull loue, friendlie leualded. Let vs not haue forgot, that Ptolome and Brionella were in the same predicament, for hee knowing her to bee of the noble and auncient ligne, beside, sole heire to the house of Saxon, might count himselfe highly honored with such a wife: and therefore the like coniunction was made betwene them, so that now these Knights and Ladies were espoused before God, there wanted nothing but the ceremonie of the Church to confirme it. But now comes Vribanillo, and hee breakes off this pleasure, because the time was so farre spent, as they must needs depart: which with much ado they did, leauing their Ladies examining their content, the Princesse sone after, thus conferring with Brionella. Alas faire Friend, it is doubtfull what danger may arise, because you haue contracted your selfe to Ptolome without the Emperors consent: how will you answere when you are charged with the fault? Brionella who now feared nothing but the preventing of her loue, answered, In sooth Madame, you speake with great reason, you nowe counsell when the deede is done, and cannot bee reuoked till it bee dispatched: would you haue all the god for- tune your selfe, and suffer your friende to enjoy no parte with you? trust mee that is unconsciouse dealing, for hee that made you to loue, framed me to the selfe-same mettall. But I see you make the occasion to mee, to leare hōl to answere your owne deede: let vs reserue all to him Madame, that appointed your choise by destenie, and mine by mine owne lyking. Many other pleasant speeches passed betwene them, and divers times their knights came to vi- sit them, till ffortune who will never suffer things long in one estate, sent an occasion to hinder this delight of their loue: for there was a messenger come to the Courte from the King of Norway, Nephew to the Emperour, who being admitted audience, thus delivered his message. Woz this Lord, the King of Norway my Father, requires your assistance in his great distresse, against the King of Eng- land,

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

land, who with a myghtie and puissant Armie is entered his dominions, where he hath made great wast and slaug- ter of his people, in divers skirmishes and conflicts passed be- twene them, so that hee never had like neede as at this instant. Trust mee (quoth the Emperour) I will assysshim with right god will, and his misfortune doth not a little graue me, but I will take order for it immediatly, and my power shall be with him soone as possible may bee: with which answer the messenger departed. Now as concer- ning the cause of these warres, betwene the warres of Nor- waye and England, it was procured by displeasure of succor that the King of Norway gane to the King of Scots his bro- ther, who helde warre with England about the taking of certaine shippes: the Emperour likewise his hearey ene- my, and for that cause he promised helpe so soone to the King his Nephew. Which when Trineus understood, that his Father declared himselfe displeased with the Father of his beloued Agriola, (whose loue no occasion could alter) he was greatly discontented, yet dissembling his conceit, de- termined rather to ayde the King of England, then his Co- sin, and therefore intreated Palmerin to accompany him to his Chamber, where hee would acquaint him with some part of the sorow hee conceiued, by the succour his Father would send to the King of Norwaye, against her Father whose servant he had vowed himselfe, and therefore (quoth hee) let me desire you to conceale a request I shall make to you. You know my Lord, saide Palmerin, that I will no lōe obey you then the Emperour your Father, command therefore what you please, and be it in my power, it shall be executed. So it is, quoth Trineus, that I would haue you not accompany the power my Father sends by sea, but do so much for me, that you, Ptolome & my selfe (unknowen to any) may assyssh the King of England in his warres, by which meanes I doubt not to compasse the thing I most of all desire. And this I dare tell you, that my life is onely dedi- cated to her service, and so well doe I hope to imploy my

## THE HISTORIE

paines, that she shall haue cause to loue mee, and regard the paine I suffer for her sake: and but I gaue the forme to purchase my loue, right sone and suddainly, shall you haue of my death. You that haue felt the like tormentes can censure of mine, which I dare not impart to the Emperour my Father, because of the hatres he beares the King of England aduise me therefore good friend what I shall do.

These speches were nothing pleasing to Palmerin, saying hee must now againe depart from his Ladie: but because he earnestly affected Trineus, and knew how well hee might helpe him in his loue, answered. Assure your selfe my Lord, that I will labour diligently for your god, and shall assist you to my uttermost, in that you beare such loue to the Princesse. And I am of the opinion, that hauing receiued the order of knighthood, whiche the Emperour your Father will not denie, it would auarie you much, to tell your Father how you desire (unknowlene) to aide the King of Norway.

For my part, if he demandyd my advise, I will like it so wel, as because the Arme cannot bee readie so sone, your honour, Ptolome, and my selfe, will ride before towards the King, and so may we accomplish what wee so earnestly desire. This counsell pleased so well Trineus, as he intended on the morrow to request his order of the Emperour: as also how gladly he would assist the King of Norway, and how necessary it was for him to go before the Arme, as Palmerin and he had deuised together.

## CHAP.

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

### CHAP. XLIII.

How Trineus was knighted, and what happened to him afterward.



On the morrow, this young prince seeing that to accomplish his intent, it was necessary he shoulde be knighted, he gaue attendance to find the Emperour at leisure, when hee might sollicite his highnesse with his fute: and understanding that he was walking in his gallery, he went to him, and on his knee thus began. Dread Lord and Father, so pleased your Maestie, it is now time I shoulde receive my order of knighthood, and more necessary now then at any other time, in respect of my earnest desire to aide the King of Norway my comyn in his wars. The Emperour marauailing whence this humor shoulde proceed, answered. Why Trineus do you think your selfe able to take so waightie a charge in hand: truly such honor is sone received, but to maintaine it as it ought to be, and prevent the dangers incident thereto, is more hard then you were, and maketh prose of the most courageous stomach, in that neither paine, feare or danger must hinder, what matter of so great consequence doth command. And per swade your selfe, that such as counselled you thereto, knew scant themselves their dutie in those affaires, wherefore for a time haue patience, and deserte it till betterabilitie: for I will send god soone of other knightes in this expedition, who shall well excuse you to the King my nephew.

Trineus not contented with this answer, replied. In truth

## THE HISTORIE

my Lord, if I were not desirous to fulfill what is required in chivalrie, I would not so boldly haue made this demand, therefore for such exceptions as you admitted, let mee not I beseech you be denied at this time: and let this induce you, that such as are boorne to gouerne Kingdomes, if they giue themselves onely to pleasure, without passing through the pykes of some dangerous hazard, they are not worthie to be listed to such honour. The Emperour hearing the braue minde of his Sonne, and that his wordes fauoured of courage, conceiuing well thereof, answered. Since your desire is so earnest to be made Knight, I am well contented, but I would haue it done honorably, and before a greater assemblie then now is in our Court. Alas my Lord, said Trineus, there is no neede of triumph before victorie: let such pompe remaine I pray you, till I haue wonne honour and account by my deedes. The Emperour ioyfull of the Princes god opinion, periwaded himselfe he shold proue fortunate, wherefore he graunted his request, so that Palmerin might accompany him in his voyage. Of which condition Trineus was not sorry, because in him consisted all his hope of successe: so his Father commauded him to prepare himselfe for his order, whereupon Trineus made himselfe a costly Armerie, and another for Palmerin, the deuiles beeing changed, because they intended to passe unknowne. Now had the Emperour leuied an Arme of tenne thousand god Souldiers, the conduct whereof was appointed to the Counte Tolano, a knight valiant and hardie, having had like charge in sundry occasions of warre: therefore so sone as all things were in readinesse, they were imbarked, and sayled with such venturis of winde and weather, as sone after they tooke landing in England. There a while we will leauue returning to Polinarda, greatly discontent with her Brothers departure, because of Palmerin, and Brionella no lesse troubled for her friend Ptolome: but the Princesse ieling newe affictions for the absence of her loue, came to her Brother, saying, I know not (Brother) who hath aduised you to

venture

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

venture so dangerously, our Cousin hauing assistance sufficient without hazarding your person, let mee then intreate you (god Brother) to affect occasions that promise better security. Better occasions Siffer (quoth hee:) it is impossible, if it bee a thing allowable and vertuous to succour a stranger, how much more then is it to our own kin man, especially such a one as is our Cousin of Norway: therfore I pray you bee of god comfort till my returme. And if it so happen that my Father in my absence intend your Marryage, loke that you consent not till I come home againe: for my not being here will serue you for a sufficient excuse. Which Polinarda promised: and her word so past, stode her in no small dread afterward, as you shall finde in the discourse following.

So sone as Trineus was prouided of all things fit for his knighthood, he came to the Emperour in this manner. I desire you (my Lord) to accomplish your promise, hauing done my dutie as you commannded mee. With right god will my Sonne, sayde the Emperour, goe arme your selfe. Then went he, Palmerin, and Ptolome, Armed to the Chappell, Trineus being in greene Armeour, figured all ouer with hearts of Golde, and in his Shielde was Deuised a Knight unarmed, holding in his hand a Bowe bent, with an Arrowe ready to shute against a great Tree, whereon hung a Scrole, which had written in it in Letters of Golde, this Netto: Madame, quand Mourray-ic: Whereby he meant, that the Loue which made him enterpise this Voyage, shold beare him company till death. Palmerins Armeour was all blacke, declaring his mourning for his absence from his Ladie, and in his Shielde for his Deuise, was figured a godly Eagle, shrowding a little Wyde under his wings: declaring therby the fauour he had receyued of his Mistresse. Sone after came the Emperour to the Chappell, where hee Knighted his Sonne put his Spurrie on his heele and gyrded his Swerd about him: afterward they went to Dinner, and spent the whole day in many pleasures, for ioye of this newe Knight. Palmerin and Ptolome to comfort theyr Ladies before their depar-

## THE HISTORIE

departure according as they were wont, when the Princesse Polinarda thus beganne. Alas my Lorde, what grieve will your departure be to mee? with what patience do you thinke I am able to endure it? per swade your selfe, the very conceit of your absence will bee my death, or at least a cause of such daunger as I shall never recover. Bee well advised therefore how you deale with mee, for the intent of my Brother might be broken, if you would labour in it: but if it may not be, then save my life by your spedie returne. These words were delivered with such teares and reking sighes, as Palmerin might well perceiue the behemencie of her grieses, and answering her heauinesse with as earnest oppression, saide: So wate Ladie be perswaded, and temper your sorowe with patience, considering the biton of our spirites makes a sympathie of afflictions: If then for my sake you will not pacifie your selfe, yet to thalde your owne perill, let mee intreate you to be resolved, in that my returne shall be with such expedition as you will command. But if you continue thus in Melancholie, you will too soone bewray what as yet shold be concealed, and so may great harme ensue to vs both. Wherefore I desire you to moderate your impatience, and to thinke well of my departure, which is chiefly to setke out a knight, against whom I haue sought in France for your Beautie: as for any other matter you may believe me.

Wherupon hee reported his Combat with the Knight of the Sunne, which made the Princesse (as well for Palmerins promise, as the account hee made of Frysol) semewhat better quieted, to answere. If it be so my Lord, that your returne will be with such speed, I shall then enforce my selfe to beare the burthen of my Cares with as much patience as I can, and see you sayle not your appoynted time: but tell me I pray you, what Armes beares the Knight of the Sunne, you speake off? which Palmerin describing, Polinarda remembred him, saying: By Lorde, I know now very well what he is, for eyght dayes after your departure towards France, the Emperour my Father knighted him, comman-

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

ding me to gyrd him with his sword, which I could not but obey: wherein the Knight glooming, solicited me with affecti- ons not liking me, which I pray you revenge, being the man whome the matter neceit concerneth. After many other a- minable conserences, the Knights humbly tooke theyz leaues of their Ladies, and in the morning betimes, the Matiners cal- led on Trineus and his company to haste aborde, because the wind serued well for England, whiche they performed with all sped, having first taken theyz farewell of the Emperour and the Court. So hoy sing sayle, they set on to Sea, and in god time came within the heming of England: where wee will so faire them a while, and returne to the Emperours Arme, whiche he sent to the King of Norway his nephew.

## CHAP. XLV.

¶ How the Arme of the Emperour of Allemaigne ar- riued in England vnder the conduct of the Counte Tolano: and how they were discomfited.



Cheased it hath beeene already, howe the Emperour of Allemaigne promised the messenger of Norway, to send his waister the aide of tenne thousand men at Armes, of whome the Count Tolano was made Generall, and they attiued in England, without any resistance. The Counte understanding by his Avant-coureurs, the Ordre of the Enemys Arme, and where the King of Norwaye was Encamped, raunged his men in god order, and marched toward theyz Forte, which the King had made in

## THE HISTORIE

in the Duchie of Gaule, and whiche hee had destroyed during the time the Duke was in France, having there soiftised the strongest Cittie, and the Haven that stood fittest for their commoditie. Crenus at his returne with Frysol, as you haue heard, understanding the spoyle of his Countrey, assembled his people together, and with the aid of the King of England, came within a dayes Journey from his enemies. The Countie Tolano, hearing thereof, appointed his men in seuerall companies, and the next day he gaue such sharpe skirmishes to the Gaules, as they were constrained to keepe within theyr defences. Whereupon the Duke determined to bidde them Battell, and to helpe him in his attempt, hee caused an Ambush of a thousand Light-Horsemen, to place themselves in a Forrest neare adyning, of whiche companie Frysol was the Leader: and to provoke the Norwyses to the fieldie, hee sent out certaine men at Armes well prouided, who soulded haire and there, to the erde the Allemaignes, who had bene so hote the day before, shoulde be compassed with the secret ambush, which fell out according to Crenus his expectation, for so soone as the Allemaignes sawe the Englishmen so scattered, they dislodged themselves, and followed them, with the whole Armie of the King of Norway, because they were perswaded that they betooke themselves to flight: but the Cawles not dismayde with their comming, being but foure thousand Horse-men, and tweyne thousand Ffoote-men, came valiantly against the Allemaignes Ensignes, and then beganne a very fierce Encounter, but the Englishmen wise and politique, fearing misfortune, came on with theyr Regard towardes the Forrest where the Ambush lay. When the King of Norway ignorant of theyr intent, suddenly made after them with the greatest parte of his Power, but they had a worse welcome then theyr expected, for the Englishmen aduertised what they shoulde doe, gathered vpon the Forrest side, charging theyr Enemys with such a sharpe Assaulte, as in lesse space then an houre, two thousand of them were slaine. Frysol perceiving that the time was come to shew himself, calling his

squa-

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

squadron together, cryed: Upon them valiantly my Friendes, the spoyle is ours. So they entered pell-mell among the Allemaignes, making such slaughter of them, as was wonderfull to beholde: for albeit they thought not of this deceipt, they were so ouer wearied with dalliance, as when they came to the exployt they could doe nothing, but were slayne downe right, such valour shewyd Frysol, and his fresh supply, bring them to flight, and they following them, being glad to take the Cittie of Tomar, which was strongly foiftified. Whiche when the King of Norway perceyued, hee stayed not long after them, because he saw it was not well for him, and therefore fled after them for compaine at the hard heales, and got the Cittie in god time, or else they had all perished. Thus remained Crenus Maister of the Fieldie, and following his successe, the next day begynt the Cittie of Tomar with Siege, swearing never to depart from thence, till he saw the Citizens eyther through the Gates or the Walles. Yet had this courage of his beene sone coled, if Frysol (like a god Captaine) had not cherished vp his men, when Crenus at one Saille of the enemie lost two thousand men, and therefore saide. Why how now my louing Friendes and Compaynions: will you syre or sainte at the houre of god Fortune: desire you not to purchase the vertue so highly esteemed? Know you not that you deale with people halfe conquered, and altogether discouarged? Courage then my Brethren, courage, and let vs not exchange our Reputation with their feare and fainting: you give me double strength god Friendes, if but with your god countenance: you will make them knowe what cowardly trauaions they are. Follow me (braue Englishmen) and this very day will wee give them punishment, as their Treason and Rebellion hath well deserved. These words renewed each others courage maruellously, so that the Duke with a fresh supplye beganne againe thus to animate them: You knowe my god Friendes, that although wee are but a handfull in respect of them, what successe wee have already had in these our encounters, so that with greater ease may wee now

con-

## THE HISTORIE

Conquer, weakening them so mightyly as we haue done: Let vs not dismay then, but witnesse that the wort man e-  
mongst vs, is more valiant and hardy in Armes, then the  
greatest Lorde that is in theyr Companie, eache man there-  
fore cherish his hope, and bearde our Enemyes to theyr very  
teeth. The day following, the Enemys came forth at a Po-  
sterne-Gate, and helde the Dukes poues very god play, and  
the Norwyaes being very well appoynted with Bowes and  
Arrowes, gaule the Horse so cruelly, as they were gladde to  
take theyr Campe: Whereupon the Counte Tolano in hope  
of the day, followed upon them with his Allemaigne Court-  
laces, which Frysol perceiving, mette him in the face with  
his English Squardon, and giving the spurres to his Horse,  
ranne with his Launce quite through his bodie: Whereat  
the Allemaines much amazed, when they saw theyr General  
fall dead from his Horse, determined valiantly to revenge his  
death, but Frysol and his men dealt with them so roundly, as  
the stonkest of them were glad and faine to make them way.  
Yet had they hende in Frysol, with such a troupe, as if the  
Duke had not speedily come with rescue, they had taken him:  
and then beganne the sharpest bickering: For the Duke of  
Gaulc and Frysol with theyr men, so besyred them, as the  
Allemaignes cleane discouraged, beganne to disorder them-  
selves, and with the Norwyaes fledde to the Cittie, so farre as  
they coulde, where Frysol and his men had entred, but that  
the King of Norway not daring to come into the fielde, was  
there with man sufficient to resist his entrie. Thus remai-  
ned the victory of the Duke of Gaulc, by the braue policies  
of Frysol and his men, hee being generally commended of the  
whole Armie: and thus retyred the Allemains and Norwyaes,  
to theyr shame and dishonour. After the Retraite sounded by  
the King of Norway, hee sent to the Duke to demande truce  
for fourre and twenty-houres, to the ende they might bury the  
dead, among whome was the Counte Tolano: which be-  
ing graunted him, hee caused the Countes bodie to bee Em-  
balmed; who by the counsell of his Lordes and Captaines,  
was

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

was sond home into his Countrey. The King and his com-  
pany secretly in the Night embayned themselves, to ioyne  
with the King of Scots, who expected his comming, and then  
did the Citizens sent word to the Duke, that by the breake  
of daye they wold yeld vp the keyes of theyr Cites to him:  
whereupon Frysol was Lieutenant-General for the Duke  
of Gaulc, and entred honourably the Cite of Tomar, where  
the Englishmen refresched themselves for two or thre dayes,  
forecompence theyr paines with profit and pleasure. The  
Enemie was no sooner deparred vnder Haile, but there arose  
such a terrible Tempest, as the most part of theyr Vessells pe-  
rishid in the Sea, and the other were so scattered, as they had  
lost the sight of one an other: yet was some small number  
remaining with the King, as well of Allemaignes, as of his  
owne Countreymen: So getting safe to shore in his King-  
dome, he determined a revenge for his great ouerthow, but  
he could not compasse his intent, as you shall reade hereafter.

## CHAP. XLVI.

¶ How after the Princes Trineus, Palmerin, and Prolome,  
were arriued in England, they went to the Courte, and  
what torments the Prince endured for his Loue to the  
faire Lady Agriola.



Rineus, Palmerin, and Prolome, being lan-  
ded within fourre dayes journey of the Kings  
Campe, which was prouided against the  
K. of Scots, were aduertised that the King  
stated but the comming of the Duke of Tin-  
triel, and then he went to bide his enemy  
Battell, so that hee had boldly presumed vppon parte of his  
Realme,

## THE HISTORIE

Realmes. The Garders of the Porte where they Landed, seeing they were straungers, would suffer them passe no further, till they knewe theri Names, whither they went, and what they came for: Palmerin answering on the behalfe of them all, saide:

Good Friends, we are Grecian Knights and travell strange Countreys to sake aduentures: and because wee heard that your King menaceth warre against his ancient and malevolent enemie, the K: of Scots, we came to offer our selues and our service to him, so please his Maiestie to accept it. This answere so wellcontented the Officers, as by theyr meanes they were conducted to the Courte, where they were honourably entertained, and two dnyes together were there Feasted with the King: In which time Trineus vnderstood, that the Queene and her sayre Daughter, were aboue twentie miles thence: Whereupon, the next morning they tooke their Journey thither, and by Dinnertime they came where then the Queene lay. But it fell out so happily for Trineus, as before they came to the place where the Court abode, they met the Queene and her traine, who daily went to a chappell, not a quarter of a mile from the Cittie, to heare divine seruice, as she kept it for a continuall exercize, and with her was the sayre Agriola her Daughter. The Queene and all her Ladys alighted from off theyr Horses, they entred the Chappell, the Prince well regarding the Goddess of his heart, who belike making her Prayers more brieue then her Mother, came forth with her wauyng Ladys, to walke vnder a companie of greene Trees useruadoyning. Trineus seeing her a Creature, so rare and excellent, made doubt in a matter of assurance, least he should bee surprised as Acteon was, when he found Diana bathing among the Nymphs. He being thus carried away with maruellous conceit of her Beaulte, saluted not the Princesse as shee passed before him, nor hearde Palmerin, who reproched him for omitting his courtesie: but wading further and further into this Amorous swite, spake so lowde, as he was easly hearde in this manner:

D

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

O heauens, will you suffer the perfections of a Ladie so diuine accomylshed, to be y: cause of my vndeserued death? when may the tyme come for me, to let her vnderstand my desire to do her seruice? or how might shee know the loyall affection I beare her? One of the Ladies of honor attending on the Princesse, reputing his words vnuise & quer-boly, answered. Why Sir knight, where learned you so little courtly, as when the fairest in the Westerne world passeth before you, you make no gentle gesture or salutation? I doubt not what is counted honeste and vertue among men of qualite, with you is esteemed harsh and vnicuill, which makes me reput you more meete for the Kitchen, then to beare the honourable office and rich armes of a Knight, as you do. Trineus as it were awaked out of a traunce, said. Ah sweete Ladie pardon me, so by my faith, I can neither tell what you said, nor well where I am my selfe: for euer as you ended, I fel such a passion strike me to the very heart, as death will sone arrest me without remedie. The Ladie, who knew not his meaning, checked him againe, thus. Were it not better then for you to be in the field, then here in this foolish and vndiscrete pensiuenesse? It is true Ladie, (quoth the Prince) that at this tyme I haue shewed my selfe vnmannerly, and a slender Courter, yet is not the blame altogether to bee throwne on mee, ignorant wha the Ladie was whch you speake of: for wee are straunge Knights, and are come farre from this Countrey, with intent to aide and succour the King in his warres, with our vffermost endeouours. Notwithstanding, because we haue with no more regarde done our dutie to your Distresse, may it please you to entreat her on our behalfe, to pardon this offence: for satisfaction whereof, wee will go serue the King her father in battell, where we doubt not so well to behau our selues, as shall deserue our pardon, if so be shee will not at this instant so fauour vs. And I gladly woulde, faire Ladie, that such seruice should bee done by her commaundement, for our strength and vertue by her affections augmented, will at

N

tribute

## THE HISTORIE

tribute the hono: to her that so graciously assisted vs, wher-  
fore, so please you to make knowne our god intent towards  
her, we shall for such kindnes remaine indebted to you. The  
Ladie tooke pleasure in hearing Trineus, especially per-  
ceyuing the zeale of him and his companions, to imploy their  
valour on the kings behalfe, which caused her immedietelie  
to this message to the Princesse, who at that instant (as a  
thing fatall to her) was woundad with loue: wherevpon  
she sent them an: wereby her Gouernesse, that shee enter-  
tained them as her Knights, and as her Servants desired  
them to goe aide the King her Father, yet would shee not  
consent to pardon them, till the renoune of their employes  
micht shew them to deserue it. Trineus tooke this answere  
for better aduantage then the Princesse thought on, account-  
ing himselfe happy by such a god beginning. and therefore  
saide to the Ladie, I thinke my selfe (sayze Ladie) one of the  
most fauoured by fortune, hauing the meane to obey your  
Mistresse in her commaund, and hope to execute her charge  
in such sort, as I shall deserue the grace shee doth now de-  
nie mee, yet with all humilitie on our behalfe, I intreate you,  
to yielde thankes for her princely kindnesse. The Lady re-  
turning to Agriola, accomplished what Trineus desired  
her, wherevpon shee turned her selfe, and gaue them a coun-  
tenance of fauour, which was answered by Trineus, Pal-  
merin, and Ptolome, with great reverence, the Princesse,  
(shewing her selfe not too stately towardss the Knights)  
with her hand and gesture gaue a signe of her content, which  
was not a little welcome to Trineus. Then the Queene  
comming forth of the Chappell, with Agriola and her traine  
mounted on horsebacke, taking their way to the Court a-  
gaine: but when Trineus had lost the sight of them, won-  
dersfull vererations began to assaile him, so that hee sayde to  
Palmerin, Ah, my god Friend, how happy may that man  
account himselfe, whose fortune hono: him with the beau-  
tie of Agriola & Ah sir Palmerin, I feele my selfe so exceeding-  
ly tormented, as I doubt my death will be inevitable. But  
tell

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

tell me the truth and dissemble not, how thinkes you of my  
Mistresse: is shee not a Ladie more then divine: In god  
faith my Lord, said Palmerin, what the Knight in France  
tolde vs, was but fables, in that shee exceeded report beyond  
all opinion: notwithstanding, it is necessarie for you to neu-  
erish your hope, having thus spaken to her, and bewrayed  
your afflictions, not doubting but this god beginning of  
your enterprise will cause the ende fall out to your content.  
So rode on these thre Knights, pleasing their humors with  
their seuerall iudgements of their Ladies, yet Palmerin had  
seen such matter in English Agriola, as, but his plighted  
promise to Polinarda, was of force sufficient to chaunge his  
fancie. The next day they arrived at the King of Englands  
campe, where, because they would not be knowne, they pit-  
ched their Tents beyond all the other: and sone after came  
the Duke of Trintrie, bringing with him a number of har-  
die men at Armes, so that in short tyme the Kings strength  
was such, as they exceeded their enemies in number. Here-  
vpon the King assembled his counsell, and concluded, that  
the next day they wold goe setke out the King of Scots,  
who in two encounters had the upperhande, which made  
him so peremptorie, as hee perswaded himselfe vtterly to con-  
found the King of England: who raysing his power, follow-  
ed so diligently, as the thrid day after hee encamped with-  
in halfe a mile of his enemie, that had besieged the Towns  
of Corsania, and had brought it ready to yelde, but that the  
King preuented it by the strength he brought.

# THE HISTORIE

## CHAP. XLVII.

Of the cruell battell betweene the King of England, and  
the King of Scots.



hen the King of Scots understanded the coming of the King of England, and that in all hast hee would bid him battaile, hee wuld no longer busie himselfe in besieging Corfania, but refred a little for his better aduaantage, conferring with his Captaines about their present affayres, concluding to offer the enemie no skirmishes, because thereby they would know their intent: notwithstanding hee gaue order to prepare for battaile, because hee knew the King of England came for no other purpose. The Englishmen not suffering the Scots to haue any leasure to fortifie themselves, were by the King the next morning commaunded in array, and all wings and squadrons appointed: the Duke of Trincket was made leader of the auantgarde, wherin likewise were Trineus, Palmerin, and Ptolome: and to the Dukes Brother was committed the charge of the arraigard: and being all ready to march on, the King himselfe beganne his Dration. I thinke my friers, that no one of you, but sufficiently is acquainted in what respect wee continue this warre, namely, to defend the honour and reputacion of our Realme, and to save the lives of you, your wifes and children, and your goods, which the enemie woulde violently spile and take from you, intending to thys w perpetuall bondage and slauerie on your necks. Will you not then defend your liberties? will you not

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

not maintaine your auncient renowme, which is to bee  
Lordes and commaunders of the Scots? assure your selues,  
that how strong soever our enemie be, I hope with the aide  
of God, your undaunted courages, and the right of our cause,  
to make a noble and victorious conquest. For I know that  
our enemie hath not one man in his Arme, endued with  
such an entire hart and magnarumons courage, as you are,  
nor that valueth his title of honour with his life, as you doe:  
and therefore if we march on valiantly, continuing resolu-  
tione and confident together, euerie man labouring for his  
Prince, Countrey, friende, and fellow, and God for us all,  
your forwardnesse will make them fearefull, and your verie  
counterfaunces enough to conquer. Euerie man then bee  
charfull, with a desire to vanquish. And here I wolo to  
you on the worde of a King, that if fortune stande so well  
with vs, as to winne the day, never shall the Scots hereaf-  
ter dare to lift vp themselves against vs. Thus did the King  
of England arame his men, and so marched on in god ar-  
ray to the sight of they Enemys, wha by this time had em-  
paled themselves in order of Battell: they Avant-gard con-  
ducted by the Marquesse of Monthel, the King of Scots him-  
selfe in the maine Battell, and the Kers Ward led by the King  
of the Isle of Magdalen: and as the King of Englan had  
encouraged his Souldiers, so beganne the King of Scots to  
hatten his men in this maner. The time is now come (les-  
sall Subiects, and deere Friends) that the pride of the English  
must be abated by the valour and Prowesse of the Scots, so  
that if you set before your eyes the occasion whiche calleth vs  
to the field, there is no one of you but will blanke his Pre-  
decessor for stayng so long time to recouer, what by true Pa-  
trimonie belonged unto them, and by the Kings of England,  
(most Tyrannous Surperers) against all right, violently ta-  
ken from our Auncelours. Will you not then recouer your  
losse, and reenter on these Possessions, from whiche your Fa-  
thers (against all right and reason) were expulsd? Duty doth  
challenge it at your handes, being the god not onely for your  
selues

## THE HISTORIE

selues, but for your childeuen and successours. Would you then haue so godd opportunitye, to reestablish things so lost? Are your hearts more timorous then your enemies? are your mindes made of worse mett althen thetts? So, no, we thinke I assured that the least among you, is of higher vertue and account then the best in their company. If it hath bene their custome, (as they themselues haue) to triumph ouer vs, let vs learne them to confess with patience, that they haue no such right or custome to vanquish, as in these skirmishes alreadie we haue sufficienly made knowne, with what fortune and unconquerable spirites you entertained your enemies. Dif may no more new (my god Frierdes) then you haue done; let each mans sworde make his enteraunce amidst his foes, and sauer one anothers life, so shall wee successe returne you with victorie. The King hauing ended, they diected the English power eager to encounter, and so the armes meeting, began a dreadfull and daungerous battaile. There might you haerte the Drummes thunder, the Trumpets sounde, the Clarions ring, the Phisces warble, Lances shuered, knights dismounted, footmen scattered, heedes defended, armes and bodies mownded, some crying, other dying, a matter more then lamentable to beholde, and so long continued this cruell and blodie confit, as the most part of the Hauntgarde were slaine, sore wounded, or taken prisoners. Whiche when the King of Scots perceyued, being a Prince so hardie and valiaunt as might bee, commaunded the maine battaile to give the Charge, in the middest whereof hee was in person: whereupon the fight beganne againe much more fierce then before, so that yee might haue heard the Horses storme, the Armour clatter, and on every side beholde god and venturous Knights give vppe their lives. At this furious onset, Palmerin seeing the Scots to retayne for aduantage, cryed to the King of England. Why how now my Lord: doo you forget your selfe? Why do you not follow on with your maine battaile, seeing the enemie playes vpon aduantage: charefully let vs vpon them, for the day

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

will be ours. The King seeing that Palmerins counsaile was verie expedient, commaunded his men to march on valiantly, which they did with such courage, as not one of them but was thorowly basted. Palmerin fearing least Trineus would bee ouer venturous, because the yong Prince was maruellous forward, desired him not to runne to farre into daunger, but kepe by him, to the end the one might succour the other, if necessarie required. With these words hee ranne vpon the Scots like an angry Lyon, and no man durst withstand him, they saw him make such slaughter: the King of England following him at an inch, deluining true testis, monie of his invincible heart. On the other side, Trineus met with the Kings Brother of the Isle Magdalen, piercynge his Launce quite through his boodie, so that hee fell dead among his owne Souldiers: and Ptolome all this while was not idle, but where hee haue came, he layd his enemie at his feete so that the Scots wondered at the behauiour of these three knyghts. When the King of the Isle Magdalen vnderstood the death of his Brother, incensed with unquenchable anger, ran fiercely among the English, till hee came whers Trineus, Palmerin and Ptolome were, one of his knyghtes shewing the King the man that slue his brother, wherupon hee making towards Trineus, lifted vppe his sworde, and thought to haue slaine him, but Palmerin stapping betwene them, sayd. To me Capteine, to me, and so the King and hee encountered together so terrible, as Palmerin was wounded in two or thre places, for which hee made such recompence to the King, as faltring his sworde on his Helmet, cleft his head in twaine: that done, hee fell dead to the ground. The sight hereof enflamed the Scots with such rage, as like mad men they ranne cutting and killing among the English, as well to revenge the King of the Isle Magdalens death, as to defend their owne King, whoe danger they feared. In this hotte skirmish, the Kings of England and Scots, met together, who charged each other with their sworde strokes, as the King of England was vnto

## THE HISTORIE

horsed and sore wounded: but Trineus being at hand, seeing his deere friendes Father in such perill, buckled with the King of Scors so valiantly, as hee gaue him many a cruel wounde, and had not his men made haste to conuey him through the throng, hee had beene slaine by Trineus, so was the King of England mounted againe, and revenged his soyle on his Enemie with maruellous valour. There triumphed the thre Grecian knyghtes, with inexplicable honour, the Englishmen making such haucke among the Scots, as utterly dispayring, they fledde: one part to a Forrest neare at hand, and the other part towards the See, to their shippes, the king getting into one of them to sauie his life, by the helpe and meane of one of his knyghtes, that lent him a good Jennet of Spaine, to escape away withall. And so sailed thence the King with greater shame, then did the Emperor Antonius from Octavius Cæsar, leaving his men fiercely pursued by the English, who terrified them in such sort, as many of the pore Scots chose rather to runne into the See, and drowne themselves, then to fall into the handes of their conquering enemies.

## CHAP. XLVIII.

Of the retreate of the King of Englands armie, and the honour he did to the three strange Knights.



After the King of England was Maister of the field, hee caused the retreate to bee sounded, and his men called together, commaunding likewise that search should bee made through the field, to stacour such as were sore wounded, and to buri the deade, least the

ayre

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

ayre should bee infested, whereupon the Englishmen tooke the spoile of their enemies, chiefly their bag & baggage which they had left behind them. In the meane while the King withdrew himselfe into his Tent, where remembraunce the great service of the thre straunge knyghtes, hee commaunded his Nephew Cerides to sake them immedately, who found them in a Scottish tent, bindyng uppe their woundes: and being not a little glad of his god fortune, hee came to Palmerin, saying. Gentleman, the King my Uncle earnestly desirous you to come to him, because hee will neyther enter the towne nor braue himselfe, till hee heare some tidings of you. Seeing it pleaseith him, said Palmerin, to command, woe humbly obey, wherefore wee pray you Sir to retorne his maestie our dutifull thankes, and diligent attērance. After Cerides was departed, they resolued among themselves (at the earnest request of Trineus) that Palmerin should bee the cheefest among them, and him they would honor as theyr Lord, because the prince feare to be knowne if such account should bee made of him: so went they presently to the kings Tent, where they were no sooner entered, but the king (albeit hee was sore wounded) arose from his Chaire, and embracethem lovingly one after another, not suffering them to kniale before him, but honorably thus spake to them. Worthy Gentleman, how welcome you are I cannot expresse, for I account my selfe so highly beholding to you, as the Realme of England had sustaineid this day great soyle, but by your fortunate valour: thinke then worthy Lords, wherein England may recompence you, and on my wrod it shall not bee denied: in meane while I pray you let mee haue your Companie, because I will see your hurtes carefully attēnded. The knyghts with great reverence accepted the kings noble offer, and were conducted into a faire Tent next the kings, where the Chirurgions with great diligence dressed their woundes, and afterward they came and supped with the king. And because the king intended on the morrow to gos refresh hymselfe at the

Telone

## THE HISTORIE

Towne of Corsania, which before had bene etually besieged by the Scots, to give God thanks for the happy victorie, a famous Sermon was made before him, by the Archbisshop of Canterbury, to whom likewise hee gaue order for enterting of such as had bene slaine of account, and in that place for memorie of his god Fortune, hee caused a godly Monastrie to be builded, and dispatched a Posse presently to aduertise the Daene and the Nodde Lords of his god successe.

Now was his Maiestie very desirous to know the three straunge Knights, that had so valiantly assited him, especially, the man that sau'd his life: whereupon, the next morning he went to see them, demanding how they fared: For (qd he) we will now set forward to Corsania, where wee will make you better entertainment then we can do here in the field. Then mounted they all on Horshooke, and rose to Corsania, where the King remained, till he and his knights were better recovered. And where the King made the Duke of Tintrel L: high Marshall of England, committing to his charge six thousand men, commanding him to chace all the Scots forth of his kingdom, wheresoever he could find them, and to seize to his Highnesse use, the Townes and Castles, which they before had in use: which the Duke executed with such expedition, as hee left not a Scot in any Wyllage or Hamlet, placing faithfull Officers for the King in every Jurisdiction.

During these labours of the Duke, the King every day visited these three knights, and finding Palmerin at a time convenient, hee requested to knowe of whence hee was, and the names of his Companions. Let me intreat you (qd he) not to hyde your selues fro me, because I shall not be in quiet till I knowe, that I may remunerate your deserts according to your persons: Palmerin, who now feared to be discovered, could not readilie well devise what answere to make, yet at length in great humilitie, thus said, We wold desire your Maiestie, that it might so stand with your god liking, as this time to excuse the knowledge of our present affaires, as also what wee are; yet thus farre will I resolue your Highnesse that

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

that we are all Gentlemen of Greece, nourished in the court of the king of Macedon, who in seeking strange aduentures, haue travelled many Provinces, and now at length came into your kingdome, well stored at this time with knyghts Errant, and governed (as we well perceyue) by a King so gracious, as no king where we yet haue come deoth the like. For this cause my Lorde, as also understanding that the King of Scots merched warre against you, came we into your countrey, to do you seruice in all obaysance, as the very simpest among your Souldiers. Trust me (said the King) I haue well noted your seruice, and a man might be deceyued in expecting better assistance. For which I tell yours, in ought I may, while I live: but if you wold haue your selues, then shold I knwo to whome I were indebted, as also that my Subjects might honour you accordingly. That (qd Palmerin) wll neither profit nor preindice your Maiestie, let suffice that I beseech you, the unsainted godd will and seruice we owe to your Highnesse. The King, seeing he could not get what he wold, changed his talk, saying: Was it you Sir, that on the day of Wattell was Armedall in blacke? Yea my Lord, said Palmerin, and this knight (pointing to Trineus) is my Brother, who shold you from daunger against the King of Scots. Ahdere friends (quoth the King) this made mee so importunate: And may it like you to stay in my Countrey, I will regard you according to your speciall deservings, as the onely knyghts of the world, in my fauour, yealding thanks to Heaven, for the god I haue received by your meanes. Humbly did the three knyghts regratiate the King, promising for a while to sojourne with him.

CHAP.

# THE HISTORIE

## CHAP. XLIX.

¶ How the Queene of England was aduertised of the victory against the King of Scots, and the ouerthrow of his whole Armie.



Then after the King of England had sent writings to the Queen of his good fortune, and the honour hee intended to the three Knights of Greece: the messenger was so speedy, as the second day following hee came where the Queen kept her Court, and presented her the letters from the King her Husband, reciting the whole manner of the Battell, with the rare employes of the three Grecian Knights, and how one of them preferrred the Kings life, omitting nothing that was needfull to be reported, and how the King intended to come with the three Knights in great Royaltie to London, and therefore shee should provide equal Entertainment. The Queen highly contented with these Newes, demanded of the Messenger if hee knew the three Knights, that gaue assistance to the King. So indeed Madame, answered the messenger, neyther yet did I see them, but at the time I was dispatched with my message. Agriola finding in her selfe the puissance of a little god that made Loue, suddenly suspected that these strange Knights were they which shee saw at the Chappell, and therefore saide. I pray thee tell me my Friend, what Armes beare the Knights? One of them Madame, (quoth hee) who seemes the very best Knight in the world, is in green Armour, and that is hee that sau'd the King your

hearts

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

thers life, when the King of Scots had neare slaine him, but he remounted my Lord, giuing his Enemy such a dangerous wound with his Lance, as it was greatly doubted hee had kill'd him, hee lost so much blood, and this was one of the principall occasions of our victorie. This Knights Companion in blacke Armour, behaued himselfe with wonderfull Chiualrie; for as a Lyon makes haunce in a Heerde of Cattell, so did hee cut, slash, and mangle the Scots, as the very hardyest durst not abide before him. The thirde is in blacke Armoz, sparcled all ouer with white Roses, a Knight of no lesse courage then his companions, and one that fought for England, with incredible prowesse. Let mee die, saide Agriola to the Queen, if these be not the Knights that pass by this Cittie, when we went to the Chappell to perorme our exercise: and therewithall shee rehearsed what speache her Gouernesse had with them, and what shee comandued them. In sooth Daugther (quoth the Queen) your Gouernesse and you may well be blamed, for the slender account you made of them: I pray you therefore when they retorne, let your former fault be sufficiently recompenced. That shall I not fail to doe saide Agriola. So the Queen honourably rewarded the Messenger, sending him backe with answers, that the Kings charge shoulde be effectually executed. The King aduertised of the Queens replye, sette forward with the Knights of Greece, and his Crayne to the Court, and by the way, rememb'ring the power sent by the Emperour of Allemaigne to the King of Norway, hee said to Palmerin. I cannot sufficiently maruaile, gentle knight, why the Emperour shoulde declare himselfe mine enemie, and gaue assistance to the King of Norway, against mee, considering I never did any thing might deserve his displeasure: but I sweare by the faith of a King, that I will reuenge my wrong, and let him assayle himselfe, that while I haue one foote of ground or a dozen of my Soldiers to helpe mee, I will never haue peace with him: to molest me within mine owne dominions: by God, my Friends, I cannot forget it. These words greatly displeased

## THE HISTORIE

sed Trineus, but especially Palmerin, who answered. In my opinion my Lord, the Emperour did but reason, and as dutie bound him, in respect he could not honestly refuse to ryde the King of Norway his Cousin, and whereof I can assure you, in that I haue sometimes beeue in his Court, that hee is one of the wised, and best governed Princes that euer I could heare of. Wherefore (be it spoken vnder correction) your Maiestie should forget this light offence, and consider if the like had beeene done towards you, you would haue no lesse. When the King heard him so support the Emperours cause, hee presently iudged him to bee of his Courte, and therefore saide. Are you he syr, that wonne such honour and renown in France, at the Combat maintained by the Prince Lewes, for the Loue of his Ladie? If you be so, I pray you doo not deuise it, for I shall henceforth thinke my Courte most happy, to harbour the most Excellent, among all knyghtes: and I promise you I am so iealous of mine owne conceyse, as you can hardly perswade me otherwise, such Experience haue I made of your Wounte and vertue. Palmerin blushing at these his words, and doubting least he should now be certaily knowne, answered. We most humbly haue intreated your Maiestie heretofore, and so we do now again, that you would not enquire of whence we are, suffiseth your Hignesse, that we are his humble Servants, in any thing that shall like him to commaund vs. The King this hearing, repented himselfe that he had boorne so impotunate, for he feared least his speeches wold make them forfaine his companie, wherefore by this time being come neare unto his Pallace, he sayd, What I haue saide Gentlemen, I hope shall not offend you: in my excuse admit my earnest desire to know you. By and by overtoke them the Duke of Tintrel, who went to rescio the Croone, (as you haue heade) what the Scots vsayd, and he aduertised the King, that the Dutone and her Ladies were ridden to a Cattle about soure miles from London to solace themselves: wherevpon the King resolved to ryde thither: whereof the Prince Trineus was not soote, such was

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

was his desire to see his faire friende, whose Loue still crost him with so many Passions, as he seemed a man of another World, and did not his wounds seeme somewhat to cover his Disease, hardly could hee haue found out any shifte to conceale it so closely, wherefore hee beganne with Palmerin thus: You know my chosen friend, that the god hope of my Loue mad me leaue my Fathers Court, and to prevent my meaning consisteth onely in you: Powre in respect of my forseable Captiuitie, being vpproximed of strength, lence, or any means to discouer my Loue to her, who onely can helpe mee: I intreat you by the inviolable league of our amity, that whē you shall chaunce to speake with the Goodeise of my life, my paines and anguishes may serue for my Salutations, and in departing to her the extremite of my sorowes, shē may well perceue in what estate I am, and what need I haue now of her gracieus pitie. These words were deliuered with such sorte of sighes and teares, as Palmerin was amazed therat, albeit hee knew how hevy the burthen was, and how it exceeded patience in suffering, comparing his absence from his Mistresse Olinarda, to bee as insupportable, as the presence of sayre Agriola, (not dater to speake to her) was to Trineus: wherevpon he answered. My Lord repose your trust in this matter on me, which I doubt not but to handle in such sorte, as you shall haue no cause to bee Mal-content, or the Princeesse any reason to be ingratefull. But what thinke you if my Dwarfe did carrie this message? in my opinion (through the whole world) you could not finde a more fitte fellow, such is his subtile and present invention, as hee will proue the onely stryng to your bow. Alas sayd the prince, I care not who were imployed herein, so I were sure of comfort. Then was the dwarfe called, to whom Palmerin in this sort began. It is well knowne to the Vrbanillo, with what god will I wuld do any service I could to my Lord Trineus, as well for the incomparable kindnes I haue received of my Ladie his Sister, as for the affinitie I hope shall one day be betwixne vs by his meanes. So often haue

## THE HISTORIE

I made Experience of my loyall seruice and fidelitie, in my chieffest and very nearest assayes, as well may I impart to the, the secrets of my noble Companyon, perswading my selfe of thy surety and secrecie. It now remaines that thou pleasure the Prince Trineus, in breaking his Lone to the Prince Agriole, as thou diddest for me to my Mistresse Polinarda: but aboue all things haue regard, that thou bewray not of whence, or what wee are, yet must thou assure her, that the Prince is one of the greatest Lordes in all Europe. My Lord (quoth the Dwarfe) I was never yet disobedient to you in all my time, and very loath were I now to beginne: but because I am such a little wixthen fellow, you, make mee your Broker in these perilous Loue-matters. Notwithstanding, I will doe it though I dyed for it, esteeming my life well bestowed to pleasure such Princes.

There can no inconuenience arise heereby to the (quoth Palmerin) but profit every way; be not enemie then to thine owne god. That will I never (saide the Dwarfe) and well might the Ladie bee iudged unprovided of reason, and very farre from understanding, if she make refusall of the Princes honourable offer: the King himselfe (if hee knew it) would imagine his dayes blessed: the issue of this Enterpise can not but sort to god. The Dwarfes words pleased so well Trineus, as hee looke him in his armes, saying: I commende my selfe and my happiness to the. Let me alone (quoth Vrbanillo) if I bring you not hearbs that shall cole this hote Feuer, then let mee never bee counted for a tall man: So went he about it as you shall understand hereafter.

## CHAP.

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

### CHAP. L

How the King of Englād went to the Castle to the Queene and her Ladies, and of the honourable entertainment made to the three strange Knights.



Nouene being brought to the Nouene, that the King was not farre off, hee sent a verie honourable traine to mette him, and with them his sonne the yong Prince Frederick, ten yeres olde, but beautifull and of such perfection, as promised great hope in time to come. Hee having made reverence to his Father, and the other Princes, demanded for the straunge Knights, and saluting them with such kindestesse as was rare in a Childe, hee rode betwene Trineus and Palmerin, giving them harty thankes for theyz friendly succour to his Father, without which, sayd hee, as the Nouene my Mother tolde mee, hee had dyed, and wee all bene distressed. By this tymne they were come to the Castle, all the way so thicke pesterred with people, as there was no come to stirre among them, euerie one crying, Haplie be the Knights that foyled our enemies. So entring the Castle, in the vthermolt Court they mette the Nouene and her Ladyes, among whom sayre Agriole hymed, as beautifull Venus among the other startes, where with the Prince of Allemaigne was so nipt in the head, as an offendour with his gulf before a Judge, so that not regarding what yon Fredericke, or the other Lords countenancie said to him, hee was readie to fall beside his horse with ouermuch gazing; But Palmerin suddenly twitching him softly

## THE HISTORIE

softly, said. Fie my Lord, what meane you to forget your selfe thus? see you not her that is ordayned yours, and will you not triumph in your happie sight, but sitte as one vtterly discouraged? For shaine let passe this pusillanimite, and with chearefull counte naunce goe give her the god morrow. The Prince did so, but with such timorous conceits, as having saluted the God her, he durst not speake to the Daughter: who imagining the best, and that bashfull reuerence did so with holde hym, shre came to him in this manner. Are not you sir, the Knight in the grene Armour, that not long since promised one of my Ladys to ayde my Father in his warres? I am sayde Princesse, quoth hee, and what I haue done, was at your commaundement, the vertue whereof gaue me such strength, as some of the Scots haue felt to their cost: but had I gone vnprouided of such fauour, I am perswaded I could never haue returned aliue. It now remaines, sweete Ladie, that according to the request I then made your Ladie, it would please you to remitte his offence, who deserued the sharpest punishment can bee denised, for not honouring that Princesse, which carres the Palme from all Ladys living. In trueth, my Lord, sayde the Princesse, not onely is your fault to bee forgiven, if it could be named a fault, but also ought I to recompence you to my vttermost power, seeing by your meanes my Father in safetie, and the Realme of England delivred from the tyrannous servitude of the Scots: Wherefore you may assure your selfe, that if I can stand you in any fiedde towards the King my Father, you shall commaund me to my vttermal. The Prince returned her a thousand thanks, and sayde. Belseue me, Madame, the very least title of your god will, is recompence to mee more then sufficient, and would prouoke such affection in me towards your seruice, as you coulde not demand the thing, but I should with dutifull willingnesse perfore it, as I doubt not but better occasions shall make manifest unto you. Then entred they the great Hall, where such a sumptuous banquet was

prouided,

## OF PALMER IN D'OLIVA.

prouided, as will as ke more time to report, then leasure will admit. Likewise here to set downe the wonderfull passions of the amorous Prince Trineus, in regard of a Lady so exceeding in perfections, surpasseth my capacite: but he that is seated so opposite to so faire a creature, and loues so earnestly as Trineus, yet dare not speake least he should be spied, may iudge of that which I cannot utter. But seeing the liberty of speech was denied, the spedy eye posset betwene them with wifeconveyances, and still must shee countenance the stranger Knights, till fearing to be taken fadie, shee closely conferred with the Princesse Eusemia, daughter to the Duke of Norgalles, saying: What thinke you Cozen of these strangers? are they not the seemlyest personages that euer you sawe, both in fauour, countenance, god grace and hardiesse? I am of the opinion, that although they report themselves but as simple Knights errant, they be doubtlesse great Lords, descended of Noble and Princeley parentage: as one may easily gather by their ciuill and vertuous behauour, which is euerwhere the witnesse of true nobility. These words caused Eusemia to marke well Trineus, as her Cozen Agriola did, which hee perceiving, and judging that they talk of him, his alterations were so sensible as they might be easily discerned: for the more they eyed him, the greater was his torment, till the Table being withdrawne, he had some ease in opening his minde to Palmerin, whose comfortable words were as god to him as restoratives. Agriola on the other side escaped not free, for her ease was no greater when she arose, then when she sate downe, and that must be little, haing so daunty a dish before her to fill her stomacke.

The next morning, the King and the Ladies mounted on horse-back, setting towards London, & God knowes the Prince was not farre behinde them, living onely by the regard of her, with whose rare beautie hee could never satisfie his eyes. And as they rode thowte a Forrest, the King seeing the Trees so greene and delightfull, and because

## THE HISTORIE

the heate of the day hindered their trauaile, hee caused his Pavillions and Tents to bee there presently pitched, and intended to dine there vnder the coole trees. Dinner bee-  
ing ended, hee would needes go course the Hare, walking the  
afternone in that pastime, and on the next day, rode to  
chase a Hart which was taken in the foyles, and therewith  
all a huge wilde Boore, the mightiest that ever was seene,  
hauing wounded him in so many places, as the Dogs and  
Bloodhounds might easily track him. Afterward they  
rowled a fallew Deere, when the Huntsmen made the Woods  
ring so brauely with barding their Hornes, and the Grey-  
hounds pursued the course so speedily: as Pelemedes choise  
was not comparable to this, till in the ende the Deere was  
saken. These pleasures finished, the King with his compa-  
niere turned to his Tents, shewing to the Queene and her  
Ladies the fruits of their pastime, saying. I promise you  
Madame, I thinke these Grecian knyghtes excell in euerie  
thing: soz as in chivalrie, so this day haue they shew-  
ed themselves excellent woodmen, as none in our trayne  
may compare with them. By this time the Table were  
couered for Supper, all which time was spent in discou-  
sing of theyr spots: till the good night gien on all sides, the  
thre knyghtes withdrew themselves into their Tent. All  
these pleasures made not Vrbanillo forgetfull of his Ma-  
isters charge, wherefore practising how to accomplish it ef-  
fectually, hee found meanes to come acquainted with the  
Ladys attending on the Princesse, and in respect he atten-  
ded on the knyghts of Greece, he was licenced the ostner in  
to theyr company. The next morning, the king and the  
knyghts walking into the Woods, the Dwarfe watching  
tyme to deliuer his message, made so many walkes and re-  
turnes before the Princesse Pavillion, as at last he espied  
him, and calling him to her, sayd: I pray thee, my friend, by  
the faith thou bearest thy Maister, tell mee the trueth of a  
matter I shall aske of thee: Madame (quoth the Dwarfe upon  
his knee) command what you please, for there is nothing

(m)

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

(my Mistresse prejudice excepted) but I will truly tell you.  
Which of the thre, sayde the Princesse, is thy Maister?  
My Maister (quoth the Dwarfe) hath not his second in all  
perfections, heit is that was in the blacke Armour, who in  
the battell for your Father did so many wonderfull explayts,  
as farrre exceedeth the fabulous reportes of sir Gawine or  
Launcelot du Lake. In sooth (quoth shee) so haue I heard,  
and besideth thy dutie reserued to thy Maister, I see thou canst  
settehim forth for a most hardie Knight: but tell mee of  
whence he is: what are his companions? and why do they  
make it so daintie to be knolone? Herein Madame, sayde  
he, I cannot with my dutie answere you, for I am restray-  
ned by a former promise, not to reveale the least matter that  
may be hurtfull to them. Neverthelesse, in regard of the re-  
verent god will they beare you, and that I would not haue  
you offended with such an abiet creature as I am, I would  
gladly tell you some thing to your content, so you will pro-  
misse me on your princely worde, that what I reveale shall  
never be discovered by you. Perswade thy selfe thereof, sayd  
the Princesse, and loke whar thou sayst, by my hono: shall  
never turne to thy afterharne. Then know sayre Madame,  
(quoth hee) that the greene knyght is of the most noble and  
illustrious house in Europe, louing a Ladie as his proper  
life, soz whom he hath left his Countrey, parents & friends,  
to come and do her service. The blacke knyght, as I haue  
alreadie tolde you, is my maister, and further then this I  
may not tell you. What am I the nearer my desire, quoth  
shee, by this answere: ryther thou shouldest haue said no-  
thing, or else thorowly satisfied mee, for now I can not bee  
quieted, till thou tell mee what Ladie it is, that the greene  
Knyght loues so dearely: let mee not make so many intrea-  
ties, for I promise to thee againe, by the faith of a Princesse,  
that never shall any creature know it by my meanes. You  
urge me so farre, quoth the Dwarfe, and haue made me such  
great promises, as I am constrained (beyond the charge  
gien by my maister), to acquaint you with the trueth, in

## THE HISTORIE

respect, the fault will be greater in you to make refusal, then in yelding. Resolue your selfe therfore good Madame, that the braue grene Knight, so rich in Armes, but more in minde, is the Prince Trineus, Sonne to the Emperour of Allemaigne, so passionate in loue, and so deprivid of liberty, by devout seruice to your excellent bountie: as against both dutie and nature, he hath deceived his Father, feigning to come ayde his Kinsman the King of Norway, where contrariwise, he hath helved himselfe his mortall enemtie. And to no other ende hath he thus offended both Father and Cozin, then to make knowne his long & laborous desires, to make you Lady and Mistresse of him and his: and such is his feare to be refused, as he endures more tormentes, then the martyred bodye of pere Prometheus. Bee not then the cause swete Ladie, that a Prince so famous, and a Knight so gentle, shall buy his great god seruice to your Father and Countrey, yea the most loyal loue hee beares to you, with vntimely, unforntunate, and cruell death. Thinke with your selfe, is it not the highest among all honours, to be wife to such a Lord, and Empresse (in time) of renowned Allemaigne? Is it not perpetuall report, to bee Lady and commaudresse of the principall parte of Europe? Let not him beare record that a bodie so adorned, and countenaunce so milde and gracious, can entertaine tirannie or crueltie: yea Madam such crueltie, as if you receive him not into your favourable conceit, you shall procure the death of the truell Knight in loue, that euer lued. The blacke knight is the renowned Palmerin Oliua, the wonder of the world for valour, conquering in Fraunce the Duke of Sauoy, in maintenaunce of his Ladies beautie, sayze without compare: conforming his Shielde and Armour, equall to his mourning thoughtes, for his absence from her that triumphs in his loue. The third Knight, so adorned with White-Roses, is called Ptolome, Loued by a Ladie well worthie of him. It now remaineth Fayre Princesse, that you make the Prince Trineus equall with the rest in felicitie, for you haue the Maiden-head of his loue

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

loue, which with honor you may entertaine into your chaste thoughtes. Thus haue I acquainted you with such a secrete, as no creature but your selfe could haue got of mee, and the danger to fall into your misconceit, hath made mee such a blab: leauing all you haue heard to your gracious construction. Agriola, mettelie faire enough in loue before, but now utterly denide of longer libertie, hearing the wordes of Urbanillo, was surprised with such a strange alteration, as a long time she was driven to silence, not able to bitter the secrete conceits of her minde; yet at length (to shadow her suddaine change from the Dwarfe) shée sayde. Ah my Frende, thou acquaintest mee with matter altogether incredible, is it possible that Trineus Sonne to the Emperour of Allemaigne, would venture into this Court, considering the mortall enmitie betwene our Fathers? Trust me my Frende I cannot credit thes. I renounce mine owne soule saide the Dwarfe, if it be not as I haue told you: then iudge Madam what acceptance shoulde bee made of his seruice, when loue to you exceedeth nature: may it not bee termed loue surpassing all other, eyther registered in antiquities, or present memorie? If it shoulde bee, quoth shée, as thou sayest, it is beyonde my power to returne condigne recompence, yet in respect of thy secrete, I dare assure thes, mine owne opinion of him hath so ouer-maistred me, as in honorable modestie he may command, and I am not so well nurtured to disagree. But if eyther by my words thou hast gathered, or by any chaunge of countenaunce perceived, the suddaine yelding of a flexible nature: interprete it in this god sort, that Princes affections make each other melt, as framed of one mettall, which I charge thee conceale from him, as thou regardest my word and his safetie. Pardon me Madame, (quoth the Dwarfe,) it standeth not with me allegeance to obey you herein, what a villaine might I be accounted, and unworthy the name of a faithfull servant if I should hide these happy tydings from him, to ease those tormentes that every houre threaten his death? Yea

## THE HISTORIE

Madame, did my maister but thinke I would so abuse him, well deserued I to be toyned in peeces. Well, quoth he, if thou findest time convenient, tell him, but no other I charge thee on thy life: and withall certifie him, that I would not for my Fathers Crowne hee shold be knowne. Feare you not, god Madame, sayde the Dwarfe, they are alreadie so well aduised, as none but your selfe can any way endaunger them. It sufficeth that the Prince vnderstante your pleasure, which I will impart to him when the King is returned: so killing her hande hee departed, leauing her so highly contended, in assurance of the loyall loue of Trineus, as she never determined any other Husbande, yet would she not disclose her minde, no not to Eufemia, her secret companion, thinking her selfe too much bewrayed, because the Dwarfe knew it. Soone after the Queene sent for her, to walke in the coole shadow of the Trees, where not long they stayed before the King returned, who reported what pastime they had all that morning. The knightes hating saluted the Queene and her Ladies, Trineus saluting the Princesse Agriola, was so tranported as hee scant knew where he was. The Princesse likewise fixed with a stedfast eye on him, as wounded both him and her selfe together, her complexion so aptly decyphering her sicknesse, as the Prince perceyuing it, sayd to himselfe. Ah loue, hast thou wrought so happily for mee, as my Ladie knowes my secrete afflictions: shall I bee so fortunate, as she will take remozle on my Passions: sweete hope perswades me so, for the osten change of her Divine countenance, telles me there is some mercie in working. The King and Queene departing into theyz Pavillon, Trineus and Palmerin did the like into theyz, the Prince taking Vrbanillo aside, demaunded if he had any god newes for him. If you will graunt mee one thing (saide the Dwarfe) I will tell you such tydings, as cannot but content you. Demaunde what thet wil (quoth Trineus) and by the Faith of a Prince, thet shalt not be deuyed. Then beganne the whole discourse hee had with the

Prin-

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

Princesse, and what deuotion we had for the recovery of his health. Judge you in what rare humour the Prince now felte himselfe, without question he imagined himselfe in a more beautifull Paradise, then euer was tuented by Epicurus himselfe, and embrasing the Dwarfe, he said. Ah my god Friend, what wilt thou that I give thet: tell me what thou demaundest: thou hast my whole life so much at thy command as thou mayest liberally share out thine glone recompence, but seeing the beginning is so good, no doubt, much better remaineth behinde. Why my Lorde (qd. the Dwarfe) you knowe, I was borne to do you service, commaund what you please, and I will accomplish it. Then shalt thou (saide the Prince) retorne to my Mistresse againe, and killing her Hand, present her from mee this Emerald, desiring her to weare it for my sake: with remembrance to pity his painfull miseries, whose Life and death is onely in her hand. Vrbanillo taking the King, Trineus and Palmerin, went to spoile with the King, and the Princesse at theyz Entrance regarding Trineus, perceyued well by his countenance that hee vnderstood her Message, for that his blood was neuer risen chearely in his Face, which before was sunck down with much languishing: So that shee imagined her selfe more happy, in beeing so beloued, then to Loue, and knewe not well how to dissemble her ioy.

Ah poore Trineus, the paine thou hast endured, in attending the wished houres to speake with her, farre surmounteth the tormentes of Leander, awyting when Phœbus wold goe bathe himselfe with Thetis, and the Marine Goddesses, that he might afterward swimmre to his affianced Heroe: and had not shee given thee a better signe by her Eye to aduenture, I wold haue reckoned thee more infortunate, then the betrothed Spouse to the prisoner of Abydos. Now had Trineus basifullly taken the Princesse by the hand, when unhappy he one came to aduertise the King, that the Hart he had chassef the day before, was now again gotten within the foyles, that if it pleased hym to hunte in the morning, hee shold no doulb kill him with little labour. These newes were so welcome

come

## THE HISTORIE

come to the King, that because hee woulde the next Morning  
more early goe to his Pastime, he withdrew himselfe for that  
Night, the Duone and Agriola likewise departing to they  
Pavillion. So that Trineus encounter was thus preuen-  
ted, and he with Palmerin returned to they Tent, but tru-  
ing still on the Dwarres diligence, that he shoulde perfect all  
things to his heartes desire, and to perswade him the more,  
Palmerin thus beganne. I haue this hope my Lorde, seeing  
already so many good signes, that you cannot any way be de-  
ceyued in your Loue: and this I would advise you, Fortune  
being so fauourable, and assisting you to her very uttermost,  
you shoulde not henceforth shewe your selfe so Feminine, but  
in hardy manner reveale unto the Princesse, when you shall  
 finde her at conuenient leasure, both how you Loue her, and  
what fauourable grace you expect at her hands. I must con-  
fesse, that Letters and Messages are able to do much: but  
the Person being present, and knowing how to request, and  
how to bee answered, is more auayleable a thousand times:  
and in briefe, no Messenger can bee like himselfe. I speake  
not this, as though my Dwarre were vnsaithfull, but to this  
ende, that shee might receyue no occasion of displeasure. In  
how many daungers haue Gentlemen beeorne plunged, onely  
by the bad constitution of they Servants message: the rea-  
dyest wit that is can not number thein: therefore if you find  
opportunity, attend no other luter then your selfe. This coun-  
sell well liked the Prince Trineus, wheresoever hee determined  
to speake to her himselfe, so soone as time and leasure would  
permit him, and in this resolution they went to they rett:  
but the remembrance of Polinarda, woulde not suffer Palme-  
rin to sleepe: comparing his ioy in her preience, with his tor-  
menting Passions ioy in her absence, breathed forth many  
sighes, and shed many teares, till at length he began to slum-  
ber, wherein hee thought hee discerned this sight. Being in  
companie with the King, hee saw forth of a dache Cape a  
deadfull Lyon, who with open throte set vpon him, and as-  
sayled him in such manner, as with his nayles and teeth hee  
rent

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

rent his Armour, and put him in very great danger of his life,  
so that he stroue in such sort in his sleep, as Trineus being in  
bed with him, awaked him, demanding why hee struggled  
so earnestly. Palmerin thus awaked, desired God to with-  
stand all his euills, and afterwards recounted to Trineus the  
whole effect of his Dreame, and said. It will not be much a-  
missle my Lord, that to morrow we ride Armed in the Kings  
companie, for such Illusions, albeit they commonly fall out  
b untrue, yet can Presage no good to follow. I like your coun-  
sell well (answered Trineus, and Ptolome got armed as well  
as we). In the morning they arose, and Armed themselues,  
all save they Helvets and Launces, which they Squyres  
carried, and in this sorte came to bidde the King good-mor-  
row: who maruelled much to see them so prepared, and doub-  
ting they had receyued some occasion of offence, demanded  
what moued them so to be Armed. You know my Lord (qd.  
Palmerin) that a Knight ought euermore to be ready for all  
Aduentures: and not knowing what inconuenie or danger  
may happen, before such time as we shall returne againe, we  
haue Armed our selues to prevent the worst. The King not  
discontented with this answere, mounted on Horsbacke, and  
comming to the Chase, had excellent game at Dare, Hatt,  
Bere, and Wild Buffell, wherin hee tooke such exceeding plea-  
sure, as he determined to stay there ffe or ffe dayes longer.  
But in the place where hee supposed himselfe safe, and free from  
all hazard, suddenly he was solicited with the changes of For-  
tune, for the Duone and her daughter Agriola were in mar-  
vellous danger, as you shall reade in the discourse following.

CHAP.

# THE HISTORIE

## CHAP. LI.

¶ How the Queene of England and Agriola her Daughter, were in danger to be rauished by the Giant Franarco, and of the succour they had, by Trineus, Palmerin, and Ptolome.



He King returning from the chace with his compaite, little minding any unfor-  
tunate euent, and conferring with Pal-  
merin, till they drewe neere vnto theyz  
Tents: at length they heard a great tu-  
mult, and behold a Spuyze making to-  
wards them, so fast as his Horsze could  
gallop. Palmerin doubting some un-  
happy chancie, and remembryng his dreame, said to the King;   
þeuer credit me my Lord, if this Spuyze come not to you a-  
bout some special affaeres, as well may be gathered by his spee-  
dy pace. At these words the Gentleman came to the King, re-  
porting how the Giant Franarco, Lord of the castle of Car-  
bones, since his departure came to his Lents, and vnto thence  
had violently taken the Queene and her Daughter Agriola,  
notwithstanding the resistance of many Knights, who stri-  
uing to defende her, lost theyz liues. The King with these  
words, stroken in wonderfull griefe, saide.

Ah Gentlemen, this villanous Traytor hath notoriously  
wronged vs: How is it possible to recover them againe, be-  
fore they be dishonoured? Trineus and Palmerin, moued at  
these bad newes, asked the Spuyze which way he went with  
the Queene and her Daughter? In truth my Lord (quoth he)  
I cannot tell you which way he tooke, we all were so trou-  
bled,

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

bled and misused by his Traine: except they went along the  
Forest, and so are gone to the next Village. Then Palmerin  
clasing on his Helmet, and snatching his Launce from his  
Dwarfe, galloped amayne after the Giant, not speaking a  
word to Trineus, who accompanied with Ptolome, rode a-  
pace after him, and as they passed by the Queenes Tent, they  
saw the Ladys and the Gentle-women heauily lamenting,  
especially Eusemia, the chiefe Companyon to the Princesse  
Agriola. Divers Knights beside armid themselues to pur-  
sue the Gantz, but Trineus not a little enraged, followed the  
trake of the horse, demanding of all he met, if they saw the  
Villaine that had stolne away the Ladys. As concerning  
this Gantz Franarco, you must note that he was the cruellest  
tyrant, and most notable Fellen in all the Realme, hauing  
a dayes Journey from the Forest where the King hunted,  
a Castle so well fortified, and furnished with Munition and  
all things necessarie, as in England was not the like, which  
was left to him by the death of his Father, who sorely tooke  
it from a Lord his Neighbour, and divers other places, especi-  
ally the Isle Magdalen. There succeeded hee the roiall dig-  
nitie, after the death of the elder Brother, who (as you haue  
heard before) was slaine in the Battell by Palmerin, and hee  
understanding the death of the King of the Isle Magdalen,  
was so highly displeased, that although hee had alwayes be-  
fore borne dutie and allegiance to the king, he now solemnly  
swore to renenge his Brothers death, being so feared of the  
whole Countrey, that none durst enterhaile to deale with  
him. So to revenge the slaughter of his eldest Brother, with  
divers other of his kindred and friendes, likewise slaine in  
the Battell, hee strengtheneid himselfe with thicke hardie  
knights, intending to displease the king so much as hee could.  
And hearing that he was comming to London, to feast the  
knights that were the cause of his great Victorie, but chescly  
him that slew his brother, came with his company this way,  
in hope to finde them all unprovided. And comming that  
Morning, the king was gone on Hunting, he found those he  
desired,

## THE HISTORIE

desired to wete withall, for the hatred he bare them, thinking himselfe sufficiently revenged, if hee could carry away with him the Queene and her Daughter: whiche hee accomplished to his owne desire, causing them mount vppe behinde two of his knyghts. The Gentle-men that were left to keepe the Queene compaie, very much offendeth to see such villany dffered they Ladie and Mistresse, defended her so well as they could, but all availeth not against the Giant and his power, because they were well armid, and they with the Queene were unprovided, so that a number of them were slayne, and soze wounded, and more had bene, but that hee feared the returne of the king, which made him in hast ride from thence with his spoyle, sending them somewhat before, and loytering behinde himselfe, to fight with any that shuld come to reskew them. Trineus having gotten the sight of them, came postling to the Giant, saying: Stay trayterous thiefe, for thou mayst not so carry her away that is worthy the greatest Lord in the world. With these words they camme fiercely togither, Trineus giveng the Giant a soze wound on the shouder, but the Prince received such a mighty stroke from the Giant, as he fell from his Horse with his heeles byward. Palmerin being not farr off, and doubting least the Prince had beene slaine, came in a great rage to Franarco, saying: Monstrous enemie to manhood, what maketh thee so saucie to lay violent hands on Ladys of such account? By my Sworde villaine, I shall make thee dearely to pay for thy follie. So couching they Launces they met togither, the Gyant sayling, but Palmerin gaue him a threwe wounde on his boide, and they Horses roughly sholdring one another, as their Maisters were both thrown to the ground. Franarco (being heavy and vnwealdie) had such a fall, as easily he could not recover himselfe. But Palmerin nimblly getting vppe againe, gaue the Giant such a wound on his right legge, as the flesh hung downe pittifullly to beholde. The Giant being not able to stand any longer on that Legge, set his knee to the ground, being gladd to defend the strokis of Palmerin, who reached him such a sound blow

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

blowe on the forehead, with the hilts of his Sworde, as the Giant along on his backe, when Palmerin sone setting his sote on his Breast, with his Sworde deuided his head from his shoulders. During this fight, Trineus and Ptolome, made after the Queene and her Daughter, whome the Gyants knyghtes drove cruelly before them. Now was it matter well worthie memorie, to see the braue behauiour of these two knyghtes, but chiefly of Trineus, before his sweete Mistresse, whose presence endued him with such exceeding couraue, as hee thought himselfe able to conquer the whole World, and therfore sufficient for them all, were they as many more in number. But strength doth not alwayes equall courage, and Louers think more then they are able to doe, as to Trineus perill it had now fallen out, but that a compaie of the Kings knyghtes pursued, wherewpon beganne a hole encounter between them, and Trineus coming to the knight that had Agriola behinde him, set him sone beside his Horse, with his neck broken in his fall, so that the Princesse getting forth of the thong, and seeing her beloued so valiant in perill, betweene ioy and griece, she said: Ah happie Knight, the Myrrour of such as fallow Arms, I desire thy high Fortune may proue, as thou and thy god compaie may haue victorie ouer these Traytoris. Now may I bee well assured of the Loue thou bearest mee: for which, if we may safely escape this hard brunt perswade thy selfe not to passe unrecompenced. Trineus hearing the words of Agriola, was enflamed with such a spirit of conquering desire, as breaking in among the thickest, his strokis gaue witness he fought for a wife. But the Giants knyghts were men of such proesse, as the fresh supply that came were all wel-nere slaine, and doubtlesse the rest had borne them company, but that the King and Palmerin, with fifty knyghts more, came to assill them: for Palmerin having slayne the Giant, mounted on his horse, because it was one of the godliest that euer he saw, and espying the King comming with his traine, set on with him, and found Trineus in great danger, because so many of his

## THE HISTORIE

His side were slaine, but this fresh assistance brought by the King, was the meanes that all the Gyants knyghts were slaughtered, and they kneeling downe thanking God for their victooy. The King alighting, came and embrased the Queen, saying: How happy may we thinke our selues Madam, ha-  
ving so well preuented this trecherous villanie? For never  
did I think to see you againe, but that God and these knyghts  
so highly besciended vs. The Queen and her Daughter  
were as yet so dismayed, in remembraunce of theyz former  
daunger, as beholding so many lye slaine before them, and  
joyfull beside beeing so softunately deliuered, as betweens  
these extremes, they knew not what to say, but desired spe-  
dily to set forward thence, which they presently did, the King  
commaunding his Pephew Cerides, to see Franarco and his  
men burned to Ashes, and honourable Sepulture to bee pro-  
vided for the other. When the Queen hearde that Franar-  
co was dead: Tell mee my Lord (quoth shee) who hath  
done such a gracious act to kill that monstrous villain? Cuer  
hys Madame, saide the King, that was cause of my victorie in  
Battell, the knyght heere in blacke Armour, to whome I am  
so farre indebted, as I cannot imagine any recompence suffi-  
cient for him: and this can I not speake without great mar-  
uell, seeing such rare Valour performed with so little daunger  
on his behalfe. Long may the god knyght live and prosper,  
said the Queen, that hath so defended vs, and may they all  
thre be most happy in all theyz affaires, for their knyghtly ser-  
vice to the Realme of England. While these speches endued,  
Trineus being sore wounded, was brought betwix two  
squires, and set vpon his horse, but the King, the Queen, and  
chiefly serfe Agriola was glad, when shee hearde there was no  
such danger but hee might well escape it. Wherefore mount-  
ing all on horseback, they rode to see the Gyants bodie, which  
made Agriola repute Palmerin for no lesse then his Darke  
commended him. Then the King commanede to vnaarme  
the body, and one of his knyghts shold bring away his Hel-  
met and Sheelde, which would be tokens sufficient for him.

to

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

to recover the Castle of Garbones whiche he seized on, and all  
other things belonging to the Giant, hee sent the Count of  
Bonvroy with fiftie hundred men to confiscate and returne  
to his Maesties use. The Count well knowing such mat-  
ters wuld not easily be accomplished, if they in the Castle  
should make resistance, therefore politikely hee sent the Gi-  
ants Target and Helmet before, as sent from Franarco, who  
was with the King, and they should open the gates because  
they were comming thither, for witnes whereof they shewed  
the giants signet of armes. The guard too credulous, & think-  
ing it vnpossible for any man to conquerre the giant, opened  
the gates, whereupon the Count presently entred with his  
power, putting all to the sword, not sparing any, not so much  
as the giants yonger brother, who escaping aliuie from the  
battel, was the cause why Franarco dealt thus villanously.  
Thus did the Count yeld the Castle into the Kings obey-  
lance: remaining Captaine therof vnder the Kings auth-  
oritie, the like he did in many other places, where the people  
aduertised of the Giants rebellion; and that the Castle of  
Garbones was taken: where there was none would resist the kings  
commaundement: whereof the Count was not a little glad,  
returning as soone as hee could with the glad tidings of his  
successe to the Court, certifying the King how all things  
happened.

S

CHAP.

# THE HISTORIE

## C.H.A.P. LII.

Of the conference Palmerin had with the Princesse Agriola, after he had slaine the Giant Franarco,



This time the King was come to his Pavillion, where he caused his chirurgions diligently to attend the three knights, for the curing of their wounds, who found that the prince of Allemaigne was worst of all hurt, yet the king understanding he was in no danger of life, was the better pacified, because he loued him dearely, and intended to honour him so much as lay in his power, promising not to depart thence till hee recovered his health: and because hee would prevent like mischances, he caused diligent watch to be made euerie night, as though hee hadde been in field encamped with the enemie. During the Princes sicknesse, hee was oftentimes visited by the Queene and sayre Agriola, not unthankfull of the courtesie receaved by him and his companions, and for which they requited him with manifold thankes. Trineus esteeming himselfe worthily recompenced, seeing that heauenly spectacle, whose presence healed a greater wound then any hee had received in fight, desirous the continuance of the outward hurts, for comforting of his inward oppresions. And while the queene thus conserued with Trineus, Palmerin came to the princesse Agriola, seeing the time so lawfull and commodious, that hee might thoroly acquaint her with matter long enough before premitated, but because shee was desirous to talke with him, shee first began in manner following. I know not sir knight, how the king my Father will satisfie the great

service

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

service you have done him, in so many hazards to his Realme and himselfe: but for mine owne part, I thinke my selfe so bounden, that after life, whiche hee gaue me by generation, my deuoted soule shall remaine to honour you. And if these occasions passed do give me iust cause to thinke my selfe happie, what leße account may I make of that vertuous Prince Trineus your companion, who came into this Countrey onely for my loue, as I am perswaded: yet doubtfull to be lightly carried away with report, I should accept it for more sound assurance, so please you to speake the truthe herein. Madame (quoth Palmerin) if I have done any service to the King or you, it is rewarde with much more then sufficient, seeing it pleasest you to make such account thereof, and I promise you, you haue two knights wholly at command for the loue of the thi. d. who is so confiditly wed your friend and servant, as no man in the world can bee more, & this is he that lieth wounded in his bed, the princely sonne and heire of the Empereur of Allemaigne, in which report my Dwarfe hath not deceaved you. And give my word this credit (Madame) that since the time hee first heard of your excellent beautie, being then in Fraunce, hee never had other determination, but to spend his life in your gracieus service, and making resuall of many faire Ladies, especially of Lucemania, daughter to the most christiani king of Fraunce, set downe this princely and commendable resolution, never to espouse any other but you, so it may stand with your likynge to accept him for your husband: thinke then aduisedly Madame, of the incomparable happiness exdained for you, and stand not in your owne light to lose so god fortune. In truthe my Lord quoth the princesse, I were well worthy to be reputed among the number of most hard harted and ingratefull Ladies, if I shoulde not loue the prince Trineus, were it but for the danger he remaines in for mee, and the unaigned loue whiche you say hee beares mee. And thus faire I presume my Lord on your credit, that if it were otherwaise, you would not disquise the matter to me in

## THE HISTORIE

this marer, much lesse deceiue such a Lady as I am, which (notwithstanding) would bee to ye but a slender conquest. Therefore you may assure him en my behalfe, that the loue I beare him is moze then hee thinks, and very farre excedeth his iudgement, as the profe hereof (in time) shall deliuer true testimonie. Madame, quoth Palmerin, his onely desire in this world you haue faithfully understande, in you then it censisteth to preuent the contrarie, by mercifull regards of his afflictions, and your presence will appease the anger of the Emperour your father, in that so nobly hee would enterprize (though against his will) to ayde the King your Father onely for your loue. And this will bee the meane that the conceiued pleasure of the Fathers, shall conclude in the happie coniunction of their Children. By Lord, quoth the Princesse, I will do what shall please my father and mother to command me, and no otherwise, considering the danger I may fall into by yelding my honour to any preuidicall occasion. Palmerin who had no other seare but to bee knowne what himselfe was, thus answered; I am perswaded madame, that your iudgement is so perfect, that to attaine a place of such dignitie, and a husband so roiall as the Prince Trineus, you will not stand no frowulous teernes, ney be carried away with any light or feminine feares, seeing that (setting apart these doubts) you shall worthily accomplish the thing whiche shall make you the most renowned Lady vnder the Occident. I pray you Sir Palmerin, quoth she, rescrive this talke to some other time, for the answere of such a high and weightie matter, deserueth to be exegitated with lesure, for oftentimes we see, that such actions sudainely and lightly performed, causeth more repentaunce afterward then is expected. Yet thus faire I venture, and so faithfully perswade him, that hee is the onely Prince in the world I would accept for my husband, if they were so agreed, to whome God, nature and dutie hath bevnde me; and to let him understand my willing desire towarde him, I will speake to him my selfe, as soone as the Dueene is departed.

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

parted. Not long after, the Dueene returned to the King, leauing her Daughter with two of her Ladys to comfort the prince, whereupon Palmerin taking her by the hande, brought her to the bedde side where Trineus lay, to whome she made very courteous reverence, & tremblyng with modest bashfulnesse, said. How faire ye gentle knight? trust me your hard fortune doth greatly displease mee, and if I could beare part therein, belue me I would gladly endure the paine: for it is god reason that the causer of the harine, shold haue a portion of the torment, gratifying you with a Maidens thankes, for your god assistance without any de- sert. Trineus was so rauished with her presence, and hearing her speake so friendly, in whom consylled the safetie of his life, as hee could not utter the joy hee conceiued: whiche the Princesse well noted and Palmerin likewise, who answere her in this manner. It cannot be madame but my Lord Trineus will soone amend, haing the sopaine mede- cine so neare him, that is onely able to helpe him: and with these wordes he left them both together, to acquaint each other with their secret afflictions: when the Prince giuing a greevous sigh, saide. faire madame, to accomplish what you commanded the first day I saw you, I did my deuote to execute the effect of the charge, albeit not so suffi- ciently as I could wish: yet since that time I never en- joyed one minute of rest, till this instant, when mine eyes delighted with your swete presence, gaue hope to my heart of further comfort. For this onely cause (faire mistresse) haue I forsaken my Parents and countrey, regarding no- thing more then this present happiness, whereby my woundes are cured, my spirit contented, and my heart from all daunger sufficiently recovered, so that no griefe can now molest me, when your gracieus fauour thorouly confoundeth all. And now might I imagine my misfortune be- yonde all other, were not this fearefull doubt left to crossse it, that scanning disdaine should be hid in such rare perfecti- ons, as oftentimes it commeth so to passe: therefore I be-

THE HISTORIE

zech you Madame, may it stand with your liking to resolve all doubts by your direct opinion, and herein shall I account my selfe more honoured, then were I Monarch of the whole woe. I loue having then so wounded the Prince, as for a while she was druen to silence, at length with new the passion, and carred her returne this answere. Alas my Lord, I was (ere this) so certaine of your affection to wardes me, in respect of the dangerous trouailes endured for my sake, as you neede not seeke any other proues, then what mine owne heart was, fully resolved on: and so I continue still, expecting the day to make vs both fortunate, which I wold haue you as yet discernible, lesse crooked mishap any way prevent vs. As she was proceeding in her discourse, the Duene entred the Tent againe, by which occasion Trineus could not say what he intended, wherefore taking her secrerly by the hand, wrung her fingers with such a trembling passion, as all the night following he lay meditating on his goddesse Agriola, and the comfortable answere she gaue him. If the young Prince were in such torment, his Lady beare him companie, thinking on the spacie past betwiene her and Palmerin, and this evening the Dwarfe (not compassing before to speake with Agriola) presented her with the Gulerde from the Prince, which shee kindly receiving, in recompence thereof sent him a faire Diamond, rewarding the Dwarfe liberally for his paines, who among the rest of his talk, highlie commended the vertues of the Prince, which increased her loue so confidly, as shee assured him of the Princesses loue, that death could not change her settled affection. Trineus fully reseluing heerein, gaue such chearefull phisicke to his heart, and the Chirurgions such diligence to his wundes, as within seaven or eight daies hee was able to beare armour: whereupon the King departed thence towardes London, where the strange knights were entertained with meruailous honor, the Lords, Knights, Burgesses, Officers and other Citizens, welcomming them with great pompe and royaltie,

OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

royaltie, saying, what come are the knyghts that deliuered the Duene and her Daughter, from the cruell Giant Franares, with divers other salutations, wherat Palmerin and his friendes were greatly abashed. Passing on to the Wallace, all the way they were still presented with rare weales and deuises, and the Knights lodgings were appointed in very stately Chambers in the Court, causing open Count to be kept for eight daies space, for the honour of these Knights, and entretainment of all friendy comyners, in all which time there wanted no sports and delights vs such times and occasions doone necessarily require. Now came all the Princes, Lords, and renouned Knights in England to the Court, except the Duke of Gaul, who excused himselfe by the warre in his owne Province, which yet was not the chearefull cause of his absence: but the shame hee reputed to hymselfe for his soyle in Fraunce. When hee entred the Combate for the beautie of the faire Princess Agriola.

These Knights thus worshyply intreated, they were at no time denied entrance into the King and Duesses chambers; by which meanes Trineus might when himselfe pleased, conferr with the Princess, full this instant among all other, the Prince thus beare aray his Lady and Mistresse. Non may easilie preuine sweet Madam, what secret combats I continually endure for your loue, and no helpe is expected but the onely hope of your fauour, which as you haue promised to my espaciall friend Sir Palmerin, I doubt not but you will perseuer in that gacious opinion, and what promise hee hath made of any seruice to you, thinke not but I obserue with religious care and deuoting, though not sufficient to equal your deserts yet because ingratitude shall not insult against me. So many thanks (quoth the Princess) I returne you my Lord, as god opinions can bee imagined betwiene vs both, and accounting you for my friende, which is a higher degre, I haue discharge you of my seruice, and (mine honour guarded from blame) I shall iudge my selfe so happy to yeld you

## THE HISTORIE

You are content, which I will fulfille notwithstanding any daunger towardes me. But I pray you tell me my Lord, what is the intent of your loue in this action? Madame, (quoth the Prince) Sirz Palmerin; who is now come to beare vs compaines, shall excusible enforne you, so please you to rest contented therewith. Palmerin thus entred, and imagined therin talke was not about affaires of Merchandise, wherefore he sayde to the Princesse, God spedee you Madame, pardon me, I shoulde call you Ladie, and wife to the Prince of Allenaigne, for I doubt not but you haue chosen him for your Husband in heart. Agriola blushing and smyng hereat, made no aunswere. Wherefore Palmerin went forward in this manner. In faith Madame if you haue done so, I would counseil you to accomplish it presentlie, and prouide to goe with vs to Allemaigne, where the Emperour will entertaine you with such gracious fauour, as you will not lose if you beare the minde of a Princesse: beside, you shall be the meane of everlasting peace betwene the King your Father and his Maiestie. To which wordes, Palmerin thus discreetly answered.

I promise you my Lord, there is no Prince this day living, whome I would more gladly accept for my Husband, then the Prince Trineus: notwithstanding, for me to departe without the knowledge of the King or Queene my Parents, is an acte in (mine opinion) facte dissenting from duetie and honest reporte. Therefore my Lord, leuing myne honour as you say you do, I pray you let our behaviours be with better wisedome, least we both fall into dangers not recouerable. Palmerin perceiving Agriola contrary to the most necessary occasion, used such arguments, and played so well the Dratour, that the pore Princesse had no power to resist: considering the great loue she beare the Prince Trineus, which made her yelde more easilie to his periwissions, so that therin agreed to accomplish their determination, and depart with them: he leuds the Realme of Allemaigne. Trineus joyes new exceded measure, and Palmerin (soz)

112

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

his sake,) was no leesse contented, in suspect hee shoulde the sonner see his faire Distresse Polinarda, whose very remembrance giveth him life, as the Aye doth the Camelion.

But Fortune beholding eache thing prosper as liked they fancies, would now beginne to play her Pagent, crossing them with the vnhappyest Stratageme that euer could haue befallen to such Noble Princes, as in the sequell shall bee largely discoursed. They little expecting such variable chance, are earnestly following they serious Enterprise, which was secretly to conuey Agriola with them into Allemaigne, for which purpose they made prouision both of Shipping, & shifull Pilots to conduct them, transporting all their necessaries abord, at what tyme this Aduenture following hapned in the Court of England.

### CHAP. LIII.

How in the time of this pleasant and great Assemblie, there came a Damosell to London, who desired the King to doe her Justice against a Knight of his owne Court.



Being the time that this Royall compaines continued at London, minding nothing else but pleasures, Pastimes, and Courtly recreations, there came a Damosell so faire as myght be, accompanied with two grane Auncient Knights, and a lusty Champion brauely Armed, with faire comely Squyres attending on him. The Damosell entering the Palace, came before the King, and upon her knie began

# THE HISTORIE

# OF ALMERIN D'OLIVA.

began in this manner. Dread Lord, having long time heard your god Justice towardes your Subjects, without any fauour or exception of persons : I am the more bolde, (albeit he that hath injured mee, is pretendedly reputed for a man of god quality, and holdeth place of authority in your Court) humbly to craue of your Highnesse one Request, against the most false and disloyall knight that euer was : whont when I do but once remember, more weighty and grievous oppres- sions fall vpon my soule, then this wretched body of mine is able to endure.

Damoseil, (sayde the King) I shall right gladly reliue your heauiness, if it lie in my power to do it : therefore tell me the cause of your offence : and what hee is that hath so wronged you. I knowe you, my god Lord (quoth she) that I loued a Knight so dearly, as contrary to the liking of my Parents and Friends, and too much forgetfull of mine owne selfe, I tooke him to my Husband, & in a god opinion of him, thinking hee loued me so faithfully, as his fained shewes and counterfeit behaviour gaue demonstration, but the Traytour had no other meaning then falsely to beguile and deceive me : For after I had made him Lord of mee and mine, and brought him into a Castle of mine, so strong and fayre as any in your Highnesse Dominions : the Traytour expulised mee thence violently, pretending that we were so neare allied, as he might no longer account mee for his wife. Since which time, notwithstanding al the humble intreaties I haue often made: he will neyther restore me my goods & Possessions againe, nor yet accept me as his espoused wife. Therefore I beseech you my Lord, as becoms a god and vertuous Prince, for the honour of Nobilitie, and regard of Womanhood, you will be pleased to take pittie on a pore distressed Ladie, and that in such a rightfull demand, you would doe mee Justice, which I had sooner demanded, but could not by the occasions of our troublesome Warres.

Ladie sayde the King, as yet you haue not named the man that hath offered you this surpassing injurie. My Lord quoth

quoth shee, this is the man in your Presence, named Myseres, a vyle Traytour, and publike Adulterer. And if so bee hee dare affirme that I haue spoken any vntruth, I haue here brought a Knight with mee, who by Combat shall make him confess his Falshood and Treason, so please your Maestie to satiate my Request. Myseres, (quoth the King) holde answere you this accusation and offence, wherewith this Ladie chargeth you : Myseres beeing suddenly driven into this dumpe, knewe not well what to saye: yet at length, (with humbler reverence) he thus beganne. My soueraigne Lord, if credit may be given to the first countenance of accusations, without hearing howe the Partie accused can iustifie himselfe, I doubt not but your Maestie will presently condemne mee : but when the matter is once well debated and discived, they which seemed at the first unreprouable, are found malicious and slanderous persons, and the accused, Innocent and free from blame, as here your Highnesse shall most plainly beholde.

The matter whereof this Ladie detecteth mee, is forged, and villainously invented : For to mee belonged the Castle thre quarrells for, de cended from my Predecessors, to whom I am the true, lawfull, and legitimate Inheritour. True it is, that this dissembling Woman, by sweete speeches, Feminine guiles, and secret deceyts, oftentimes practised to winne mee for her Husbande : but knowing her behaviour such as besmeared not a Woman of modesty and vertue, I would not haerte her, much less consent to match with her. And this is the onely cause of her complainte, in hope that you, (being above all other Princes, most benigne and honourable,) will constraine me to wedde her, in respect of your absolute authority, as the dutifull obedience wherin I am bounde. When the Knight which came with the Ladie, had heard Myseres blame her in this sort, he stepped before the King, with these wordes.

It is great foile (my Lord) in Myseres, to denye a matter so apparently and well knowne, although if it were put to the

Judge

## THE HISTORIE

indgement of honest persons, his common good report might cause him to be belieued : But the p<sup>r</sup>re<sup>r</sup> Lady desireth that her right and Title may be cleared by Combatt<sup>e</sup>, wherein let him confound her if he can, or else receyue reward<sup>e</sup> for his notorious offence. On her behalfe therefore, my Lorde, I saye and will maintaine, that Myseres is a moste disloyall Traytor, and his owne mouth shall confesse it, or else this Day will I take his head from his bodie. Myseres feeling himselfe somewhat touched, grewe into great choller, and albeit the shame hee did the Ladie, deliuered him culpable, and made him doubt the issue of the Combatt<sup>e</sup>, yet as it were in a maruellous rage, he answered the Knight, that hee falklye b<sup>r</sup>ayed him, and was ready to make tryall therof in single Combatt<sup>e</sup>, if it pleased the Kings Maestie to appoynt it. And I doubt not (quoth hee) to make thee paye for thy rashnesse, and force thee confess thy want of discretion, in giving credite to the trothlesse complaints of this deceiptfull Woman. Then was it ordyned, that this difference should bee decyded by Armes : Whereupon the Ladie<sup>s</sup> Knight spake thus to the King. Seeing it hath pleased your Maestie to graunt the Fielde to Myseres and me, may it please you (as it is the custome) to commaund that he deliuer Hostages : to the ende that if hee be vanquished, the Castell may bee deliuered into your hands, to<sup>r</sup> to bee surrendred in Justice where it appertaines. God reason (saide the King) and therefore Myseres, you must before you enter the Fielde, accomplish what this Knight in equitie hath demanded.

Then Myseres called one of his Brethren, whome hee requested to stand as his Hostage : and doubt not before the Sunne be sette, but I will discharge my selfe and my pledge. With which wordes hee departed the Hall, to Arme himselfe : But because the Day was to farre spent, the matter was deferred vntill the next Morning. The King and his Lorde<sup>s</sup>, seeing the Ladie<sup>s</sup> Knight in such resolute assurance, inauelued of whence, and what he was, for none there knew him but Palmerin, who neither coulde guesse assuredly who

he

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

he was, but by the golden Sunne in the Azure Sheld, which made him remember that at the Joustes in France, the perillous Combatt<sup>e</sup> without Victorie on either side, was fought betwene him and this Knight. Palmerin being glad to see the man he long looked for, and purposing now to be fully revenged on him: secretly went sorwth of the Hall, commanding one of his Squyres, to conuey his Hors<sup>e</sup> and Armour the next morning out of the Cittie, because if he vanquished Myseres, at his returne he intended to fight with him, or if Myseres had the better, yet he shold not depart thence againe with life.

Now you must understand, that this young Knight which came with the Ladie, was the Knight of the Sunne, named Frisoll, who euer since the Combatt<sup>e</sup> performed betwene Palmerin and him, remained with the Duke of Gaule, and was of him highly honoured for his worthie Chivalrie. Of whom when this distressed Ladie hearde, she made her complaint of the wrong Myseres had done her, and Frisoll pitying her case, promised to ayde her in the recovery of her right: and so came with her to the King of Englands Court, to the great grieve of the Duke of Gaule, who made Frisoll promise him to returne againe after the Combatt<sup>e</sup>: but Frisoll was much more desirous thereof then the Duke, in respect of his faire Sister, because he was most specially beloued of her.

Thus Palmerin following his enterprise, feared to be prevented, because the field was appoynted by the King, in the same place wherhee intended to mee<sup>r</sup>e with Frisoll, and beside, Palmerin and the Duke of Norgalles, were ordained as Judges of the Fielde, which hee would not willingly haue taken vpon him, doubting by that meane to be hindred of his other pretended determination. Now the time being come that the Knights shuld to the Combatt, the King and the Ladie<sup>s</sup> came to the Stafoldes, and the two Judges were placed in they<sup>r</sup> Tent, accompanied with many Princes and honourable Personages.

After that the Heraulds had commaunded the Champy<sup>ons</sup>

# THE HISTORIE

on to doe the<sup>z</sup> best deuoyze, then they clasp<sup>ed</sup> the<sup>z</sup> the<sup>z</sup> Hel-  
mets, and fetch<sup>ing</sup> the<sup>z</sup> Cariere, mette with such puissance,  
as Myseres b<sup>z</sup>ake his Lautice on Fry solls Shielde, not mor-  
ning him in his Saddle: But Fry soll driv<sup>ing</sup> his Lautice  
quite through Myseres bodie, caused the falle traytour to fall  
downe dead to the earth. Then hee alighting, and opening  
Myseres Helmet, and seeing no life in him, came to the Jus-  
ges, saying: You may now perceyue my Lords, whether he  
that offered this Ladie suc<sup>z</sup> villany, hath receyued his due de-  
sert, or no: So that now (I say) if there remaine yet any  
thing else to do for recouering of her right, I am heere ready  
to maintaine her cause. Palmerin, who was not very well  
pleased with this Victorie, answere<sup>d</sup>: Knight, you haue done  
enough at this time, pray that other affayres may prove as  
prosperous to you heereafter, and in anger went soorth of the  
Field, commanding the body of Myseres to be brought thence,  
which was afterward interred with great honour.

Fry soll having thus vanquished Myseres, the Ladie for  
whome he entred the Combate, fell on her knes before the  
King, desiring him to surrender the Castell which Myseres  
vnjustly detained from her. In sooth Ladie (quoth the King)  
it is reason you shoule haue Justice, and your owne delivered  
you: But know you his name that defended your quarrell?

My Lord (quoth he) in concealing his Name, I shoule of-  
fer him great wrong, concealing the Bountie and Powesse  
of the man, which hath not beene sparingly shewed heereto-  
fore, in presence of the Duke of Gaule, against the King of  
Norway, whose army was discomfited by the worthy valour  
and policie of this Knight, who calleth himselfe by the name  
of Fry soll, the Duke of Gaule, bringing him soorth of France  
at his last Voyage, and euer since hath so dearely loued him,  
as he were his owne naturall Brother. I promise you, La-  
die (saide the King) you made no ill choyse of your Knight,  
For I haue heretofore hearde of his Actions, and am not a  
little glad that now I know him, wishing he were one of my  
Court, because a King accompanied with such persons, m<sup>z</sup>re  
nades

# OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

needes imagine his Countrey happpie. And in respect he is  
so braue a Champyon, it is impossible but that hee shoule bee  
a wise and vertuous Knight: Wherefore I pray you cause  
him come hether to mee: which shee presently did. And ha-  
ving saluted his Maiesie with Honourable reverence, the  
King embraced him with these wordes. Worthy Sir, you  
are most heartily welcome: I could wish you were one of  
my Knights, in respect that my Court shoule be the more ho-  
noured, and I might requite your paines, better then I can  
on a sudden.

High and mightie Prince (q.d. Frisoll) in assyding this dis-  
tressed Ladie, I haue done but my dutie: but if I could any  
way doe your Highnes service, I knowe no Prince living,  
for whom I would more gladly employ my selfe. And at this  
present time urgent affayres excuse me from staying here a-  
ng langer: Neuerthelesse, I urte you my god Lord, if it  
may stand with your favorable liking, to repute me among  
the number of your Souldyours and Servants: If it must  
needes be so (saide the King) you shall doe what pleaseth you,  
yet will I reckon you amongst those to whom I owe conti-  
nuall loue and affection. And altho<sup>g</sup> the death of Myseres  
doth somewhat grieve me, because I made some estima-  
tion of him: yet for your sake shall I deliver the Ladie her  
Castell, which you haue conquered with such Knightly Ch-  
valrie. Fry sol humbly thanked his Maiesie, and departed  
with the Ladie, which way they came: But Palmerin very  
much offended at his departure, and earnestly desiring to bee  
reuenged on him, comand<sup>ed</sup> his Dwarfe to marke well  
which way they went.

The Dwarfe diligently fulfilling his Maisters charge, re-  
turned, and tolde him which way they tooke: Wherepon, he  
being desirous to folloe<sup>z</sup> without giving any knowledge  
thereof, to his Companyons, left Trineus to conferre with  
his faire Distrelle Agriola, and departed the Court so secret-  
ly, as neyther the Prince nor Ptolome suspected any thing.  
And so accompanied with the Dwarfe Vrbanillo, hee came  
to

## THE HISTORIE

to the place wher as his Squyze stayed with his Armour, where, when he was Armed, hee inquired on Horsebacke, thus speaking to his men. Returne you to the Cittie, and then expect my comming: As for the Vrbanillo, thou shalt say to the Prince Trineus, that he must pardon mee, though I did not acquaunt him with the vngent occasion of my departure: whiche I was more enforced to do then he thinks on: Neuerthelesse, pray him take no paines to enquire after me, because I doubt not to returne very shortly, althoough not so soon as hee would: yet pray him to vse so little speach therof as may bee. The like mayest thou say to Ptolome, and to them both commende mee most heartily: With this stricte charge to you both, that vppon the paine of your liues, neyther of you do follow me, nor cause any other to make speach after me.

So taking his Launce, hee galloped that way whiche the Dwarfe helved him they were gone, and then he with the Squyze returned to the Cittie, making very sorrowfull lamentation, because they thought thei Maister woulde returne no more, in that he would not be knowne whither hee went, yet woulde they not belay nothing theyr Maister had so bidden them. Trineus and Ptolome were maruellous sorrowfull, especially the Prince, who without the Dwarfes assurance of his Maisters short returne, had followed to goe seeke him: yet not throughly contented with Vrbanilloes persuasions, the King himselfe came to comfort him saying: You must thinke (god sy), that your noble friend is gone about some strange Aduenture. For you know he never enterprised any thing, but it returned him to honour. If hereso fore for the loue of his Ladie, hee shewed himselfe without his vare in Chivalry, thinke you hee will not regarde his reputation, and premitate his Actions before hee runne too farre in daunger: Content your selfe I pray you, for if his returne be not the sooner, I will cause such prouision to bee made, as he shall be found againe. The Princesse Agriola likewise intreated him not to bee disquietted at the absence

of

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

of Palmerin, for with the helpe of God and his friends, quoth she, his returne will cause as much ioy, as his departure doth greate. All this could hardly content Trineus, for hee desyred in his sleepe, that the Knight whiche slue Myseres, washe against whom Palmerin entred the combat in France at what time they could not overcome each other. And remembred what ill will Palmerin bare him, vehemently suspected that for his cause he followed him, whiche imagination somewhat comforted him, and he reputed the Knight vniwise if hee medled any more with Palmerin.

## CHAP. LIII.

How after the death of Mseres, Palmerin folowed Frysol, whom he had slaine, but that a Damosell intreated his life.



That day Palmerin trauelled, and most part of the next, yet could hee heare no tidings of the Lady and Frysol, which made him rive in great melancholy, till at length meeting with a Damosell, mounted on a godly Palasay very richly harnessed, of whome hee demanded, if shee mette not a Knight Armed, who bare in a Shielde of Azure a Golden Sunne, and with him a Ladie attended on by many Squyres. True lie Sir, quoth the Damosell, if you will grant me two requestes that I shall demande, I will bring you to hym you seeke for, before to morrow the thrid houre of the day. Palmerin who was wundershly desirous to finde out his enemie, granted to any

T

thing

## THE HISTORIE

thing shē wuld desire: on condition (quoth hē) that you shewe mee the Knight. Follow me then sayde the Damosell, for I will accomplish that I haue promised. So rede they together, and among other speches, Palmerin asked her if shē knew the Knight, and what his name was? The Damosell answered, that shē knew not the Knight, but shē was very well acquainted with the Ladie in his companie, and this night (quoth shē) they minded to lodge at a Castle of mine Auntes. In the Evening they arrived within the sight of the Castle, where they alighted from their Horses, and entred a little thicket, for feare of beeing seene, and the Damosell having a flagon of Wine, and a Pastie of redde Daere in a Maunde at her saddle bow, Palmerin and shē refreshed themselves therewithall: but all that night could not Palmerin settle himselfe to sleepe, watching the Castle Gate, least in the tyme of his sleeping his enemie shoud escape him. The next morning, so soone as the breake of day appeared, Frysol came forth of the Castle with his company, wherefore Palmerin not a little gladde, sayd to the Damosell. Now (Lady) is your prome perscrutned, for this is the Knight I seeke: if therefore you will any thing with me, I will intreate you to follow mee, for I wuld hee verie loath that hee shoud escape me.

With which wordes he mounted on horsebacke, galloping after Frysol so fast as the Horse coulde away, and overtaking him, sayde. Stay a while Sir Knight, thinke you to passe away in such sort? haue you forgot your wordes at Parris, to the Knight that guarded the Duke of Sauoyes Tent: now is the tyme I hope to correct your presumption, when thou shalt well perceue, that thou neyther deseruest to be Servant to the Princesse Polinarda, nor art worthy to talke of her honourable name. Frysol thus stayng knew by Palmerins wordes, that it was hee against whom he fought the Combate in France, whercupon hee answere

Truly

## OF PALMERIN DOLIVA.

Truely Sir Knight, I haue not as yet forgotten what I then sayd, nor is the beauty of Polinarda, or my loue to her so little, that my desire to her service shoud not bee now remembered, nor will I forbear to confesse it still, for feare of thee or any other whatsoever. And if thou hast sought mee forth in this quarrell, thou hast found mee so ready to defend it: as I wil more willingly chose to die, then deny any part of my dutie to that gracious Princesse.

Palmerin beeing so angrie, as he would not multiply any more wordes, but encountered his enemie so valiantly, as they brake their Launces, and yet could not unhorsse each other, then drawing their swords, they laide so cruelly vpon their bodies, as their shieldes being broken, their Heppets battered, their Armour defaced, and their flesh so greeuously mangled, as neither of them both could iudge who was likeliest to winne the victorie. Till at length Frysol Horse sayling vnder him, fell to the grounde, and hee so weakened with his great losse of bloud, as hee coulde not recover himselfe, before Palmerin came to him, thinking to haue parted his head from his shouolders with his sword, whch when the Ladie sawe, for whom Frysol had slaine Myseres, shē fell into most pittifull acclamations, not sparing her louely tresses of haire, but with very great impatience renting them violently, made the axre to echo her lamentable complaints. Whch the Damosell seeing that guyded Palmerin, and moued with compassion of her execding graces: fell on her knees before Palmerin, intreating him to give ouer the fight. But he, faining that he heard her not, because Frysol with ryght strugling had got on scote againe charged him with such violents strokis, as Frysol (being of invincible courage) requited him with as wroth chivalrie.

Againe the Damosell came on her knees to him, intreating him to give ouer the fight, saying. You knwo my Ladie, that before you came hither, you promised me two requests and this I make one of them, that you continue no longer

## THE HISTORIE

Combat against this Knight, and in so doing I shall accuse you of part of the promise which you made me. Palmerin chafing like a furious Lyon, answered. I pray you Dame sell aske some other thing, for in this matter, of force you must pardon me. In sooth saide the Damosell, if you denie mee my semaunde, I will complaine at the King of Englands Court, and there will I declare you perjured, for ill it beseemes such a Knight as you are, to make promise to a Lady and not obserue it. By God Lady, said Palmerin, you doe mee great wrong, in with-holding mee from reuenge on him, whom aboue all memme in the world, I hate most deadlie, Unhappie was the houre wherein I mette you: and so mounting vppon horsebacke, he galloped away in verry great anger. When the other sorowfull Lady saue that Palmerin was gone, and had left her Knight, with great ioy she embrased the Damosell that had procured it, thanking her for shelding the life of a most noble Knight, for which courtesie she remained bound to her during life.

What I haue done, (quoth the Damosell) is for the loue of you and this Knight, swearing to you by the faith of a Gentlewoman, that I haue another thing to aske of the Knight which is gone, that concerneth me verie nearelie. Notwithstanding, your teares moued mee with such compassion, that I stand in daunger to lose what I shall never recover, yet in respect the cause was so honest and vertuous, I doe not repent what I haue done: but because he remaineth indebted to mee for another request, I must needs leaue you and follow him, so mounting vpon her Palfraye, shre rede after Palmerin with all the hast shre possibly could make. And in her tourney we will leaue her, returning to Frysol, whose woundes being very dangerous, the Lady bounde them vppon her as shre could, till they came at their next Lodging, where by god Fortune was a Lady so well sene in Chirurgerie, as in shrot time shre cured his woundes whole and sounde. Frysol so

well

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

well recovered, departed thence with the Ladie, because the thirde day following they shold bee at the Castle, whither alreadie was come Hermes, one of the King of Englands Knights, being sent by his Lord the King to deliver the Ladie her right: which Hermes did according to his charge, entertained the Ladie honourably, delivered her the keyes of the Castle, and commaunded all the Habitats to reuence the Ladie, which they refused not to doe, but were glad of her comming. For ioy hereso, were very soleinne feasts prepared, and the Lady recounted to Hermes, Commissioner to the King, how Frysol fought the Combate by the way, against the Knight of the blacke armur: wherby Hermes pre-erly knew, that it was the strange Knight, who had left the Court, unknowne to his Companions, or any of his Friendes, wherof hee was not a little glad, because hee judged that these newes would be welcome to the King. Wherefore so soone as he had accomplished his charge, and leaue the Ladie quietlie in her Castle, hee departed, intending to follow Palmerin till he found him, trauyling the way was assigned him by the Ladie.

Frysol stayed there with the Ladie till hee had perfectly recovered his health, and then without any other recompence for his paines, but onely a Hooste, because his owne was slaine, and a newe Armour, his owne being spoyled, hee returned to the Duke of Gaule, who reioyced greatly to haue his companie. But when the Duke understood how discourceously he had bee vised by the blacke Knight, who was so highly favoured in the English Court, hee deuised by all the meanes possible to bee reuenged on him: so that beeing in a Castle on the Frontiers of his Duchie, yet within the King of Englands Dominion, hee understood the blacke Knight shold passe that way, because hee coulde not else returme to the Court. Now perswading him selfe for resolute reuengeance, hee pitched his Tents in a fayre Meadow neare a Bridge, and there placed twelve Knights,

# THE HISTORIE

the most hardie and valiant men in all his Dukedom, who should maintaine this order: that no Knight shold passe ouer the Bridge, vntille hee entred Combate with those twelve Knights one after another, and such as were vanquished, shold submit themselves to the Dukes mercie, either for their deliuerance, or to remaine his prisoners, and the horse of the partie foyled, shold belong to the conquerour; but if they were dismounted, the passenger shold goe on his iourney, and take their Horses with him. This aduenture thus establisched, many god Knights were ouertaken, because it was a verie harde matter to vanquish these Knights, and escape: But the Duke tooke no littel pleasure herein, who detained Frysol moze by constraint then otherwise, for his anger so vehemently increased against Palmerin, as no delight or pleasure could exiate his reuenging desires.

## CHAP. LII.

How Palmerin went with the Damosell to accomplish the promise he made her, and what besell him,



Almerin (as you haue heard) departed from the Damosell in a rage, because he could not execute what hee intendeid, wherefore hee deuised to deale some other way, and to singe forth Frysol in such conuenient place, as one of them shold die before they departed. And as he was imagining some other way to ouertake Frysol, the Damosell had now againe recouerd his company, saying. I pray you Sir Knight, conceiue no ill opinion of me, for hindring

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

ring you from killing your enemie, whom you haue left in verie great iope die, considering what bountie and courage is in him, and which your selfe perhaps will bee sorrie for. Wherefore I pray you forget this displeasure, and determine to fulfill what you haue promised, which if you will doe, you must go with me.

Believe me Damosell, saide Palmerin, you shewed but little courtesie, so often hindering me from the thing which aboue all other in this worlde most tormenteth mee. What unhappie bodie are you? but more unhappie the houre I mette with you? but seeing it is reason I shold keepe my promise, leade the way, and I will not faile to follow you. So rode they on, and for fourte daies space hee wold not speake on word to her, and faine hee wold haue left her company, but that he could not with honor forsake her. The next day, as they rode by a Rivers side, Palmerin espied a Knight standing with a Bow and arrow in his hand, which he let ffe at his Horse and killed him. Palmerin impatient by remembrance of Frysol, and angry that the Knight had thus killed his Horse, made towardes him so fast as hee coulde, but the Knight was suddenly got on the further side of the Lake, and Palmerin vp to the middle in water before he was ware of it, and now he could neither see the Knight that ffeu'd his Horse, nor the Damosell that came in his company. Palmerin being in great perplexite, when he saw nothing but water round about him, and seeing hee was vpon a Bridge, behelde a marauillous deepe stremme running vnder it, and at the end thereof a godly Castle. Walking along the Bridge toward the Castle, amazed at this contrary aduenture, he espied a knight on the battlements of the Castle, who saide. Stay a while Sir Knight, one shall come presently and open the Gate.

Palmerin knew not what to say, but determined to defende himselfe if any came to assaulte him, so the Castle Gate being opened, he entred with his sword drawne, yet was there no man that displeased him, but every one made

## THE HISTORIE

him humble reverence, with verie god wordes and gentle countenance, declaring by their behauour, that hee was more then welcome thither. Thus walking on to the inner Court, there came towarde him a Ladie, accompanied with many Damsels, and Knights, also shewing therewarde gestures, and the Ladie taking Palmerin by the hand, sayd.

Ah, gentle Knight, right welcome are you to this place, and heauen bee prayed for the god it doth mee, to see you here, that is able to accomplish the thing, which no other as yet could bee able to finish: enter hardy in god assurance, for you will wee make all the honour that we are able. Palmerin believynge the Ladie, was brought into a maruailous godly Chamber, where certayne Squires holpe to vnarme him, bringynge him a gorgeus Mantle to wrappe about him. This done, he was conducted into a large Hall, where the table was couerted, the Ladie entertaining him so nobly, as in the King of Englands Court hee could not be better. The feast ended, and the Tables withdrawne, the Ladie began to deuise with Palmerin, saying, Long time (my Lord) haue we desired your comming, as the man in whom our only helpe consisteth: for by your valour we are periwaded to be deliuered from the misery wherin I and mine haue too long time bene detayned.

I beseech you Madame, quoth Palmerin, to tell me your assayres, as also what the Knight meane to kill my Herte, and why you entertaine mee with so great kindeste. If you will promise me, said the Ladie, to accomplish a needfull occasion, and which I thinke is destinied to you: I will resolue you, otherwile, I shall but loose my labour. If it be a matter reasonable (quoth Palmerin) and that a knight may compas, spare not to tell mee, for I will do my indeauour therein. Gramercies gentle Knight sayd the Ladie, the circumstance of the occasion followeth in this sort. This Castle (my Lord) sometime belonged to my noble Father, a knight so hardie and valiant as any in these parts, in whose yonger years loue

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

Loue so ouer-ruled him, as hee affected a Ladie of no lesse qualite and condition then himselfe, by whome he had a Daugther: at whose by:th hie Lady and wife deceased. My Father being yet in the flower of his youth, matched the second time with a Ladie of a very Honourable and ancient descent, by whome hee had mee the first Childe. My Sister at fourteene yeres of age, my Father oftentimes would haue richly Marryed her to her great advancement, whereto she being unwilling, by my Fathers consent, shee remained with her Mothers Sister, whose skill was very great in all Sciences, by Whose counsell my Sister caused a godly Wallace to be edified, and a strong Tower in an Isle on the other side of this Castle, where afterward they made their continual abiding.

During this time my god Father louing me dearely, so as he matched mee with a wealthy and noble Knight, excelling in all perfections, but chiefly in Chualtrie, by whome I had a Daughter a yere after our Espousal: but the more my griefe, my god Husband and Father both dyed, within shott space after my Chilbes by:th. Now my Daughter beeing come to the yeres of Matryage, her Beautie made her desired of many noble Lords: but because I still reputed her too young, I denied all her Sutors, which afterward turned to my very great detriment. For my Sisters Auntie had a Sonne, the most mis-shapen, deformed, and horrore conditioned Knight, as all the Country could not helme such another, yet became hee so amorous of my faire Daugther, as hee requested his Mother to demand her of mee for his wife: but when I hearde thereof, you may well periwade your selfe that never Woman disliked any thing more, and yet to this time dw as much as I then did: So that I made her answere, how that I would rather desire my Daughters death, then so to dishonor her, because hee was altogether unworthy of such speciall fortune. Notwithstanding this sharpe repulse, hee continued his Amorous desires to my Daughter, so that hee earnestly periwaded his Mother to permitte him to take her away from mee perforce: to which sute the vndiscreet Mother con-

## THE HISTORIE

consented, either moued with pittie, or overcome by the importunate soliciting of her, so that one day (vnder colour of a friend meeting me to be merry) he robbed me of my daughter. This wicked traitor had long before that time intended this treachery, compacting the matter secretly with villaines and thenes, by whose assistance he carried away my Daughter, shutting her vp in a strong Tower, whereof I told you. And because he feared that I would gather some strength to reskew her, considering how well I was beloued of my neighbours, he prevented me by a strange enchantment, environing the Castle and the Tower with such a maruaulous water, as no Knight should enter vpon them without their consent.

Now that themselves might come forth and return again at their pleasure, they deuised a little Boate, which is guarded by two fierce Lyons, and a puissant knight that had charge of them, so that none comes to them but whome they list. Since this vnhappy time did I never see my Daughter, whom this damnable villaine (which most of all greeves mee) immediatly violated and rauished at his pleasure, swearing howe never to take her as his wife, but to vse her as his Concubine: and besides all this, the false Traytore in despight of mee, and to reuenge the wordes I gaue him, doth monstrously abuse her, and most (vnumanly) whippeth her daily with Roddes, whish my Sister hath often intreated to be spared, but he by no meanes will be perswaded. Thus seeing my selfe out of all hope to recover her againe, haue euersince continued in earnest Invocation to Heauen, that some notable vengeance might punish this Villain: and such fauour haue I found in my devout Imprecations, as first of all, his owne Mother was chastized with a cruell disease called Saint Anthonyes fyre in one of her Legges, which so so grieuously torments her, as no remedie can be found to alswage the veration. Her Sonne vnderstanding heereof, would haue staine my Sister, accusing her to procure his mothers infirmitie by her Learned knowledge: wherupon

me

## OFF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

my Sister fearing her life, and watching tyme conuenient for her purpose, made an escape from the Villain hither to me, being sorry that her Aunt shold thus Inuoluntly deale with me, and promised to warke the meane that I shold recover my Daughter. Thevs god wordes not a little pleasing mee, I would needes know how I shold come by my Daughter againe, whose misfortunes had beene so yikelome to mee, whereto she thus answered.

It is so god Syster, that I cannot now reuise the forreble Enchauntments I haue already made for your Daughter, (though gladly I would) if it laye in my power, wherefore you must attende the comming of a Knight, who exceedeth all other in Valour, Vertue, and Prouoste: for he shall passe the Water, kill the Knight, enter the Tower, and deliuer my Piece your Daughter againe into your custodie. As concerning the Knight: god Syster, that shall so valiantly passe the Water without feare, and fully accomplish my forreble Enchauntment: For him will I leade with you all excellent god Sword, a very sumptuous Armour, with divers other gifts to beseeue on him, because my selfe shall not live to see him, which came to passe, for very shortly after my Syster dyed. I don't knowe you Syr Knight, what is preordained for you, therfore take some pittie on mee a poore delolate distressed Mother, and boldly Aduenture your selfe in this Honourable cause, as bounden hereunto by Vertue and needfull occasion.

Belue me Madame (saide Palmerin) your discourse hath bene straunge, and god reason moueth you to request vengeance, because your wrongs are the greatest that euer I hearde of, whish may in some sorte perswade you, that this Offender cannot long escape, without shame answerable to his cursed Villany, for Heauen will not suffer it, by assistance whereof I hope to reuenge your Daughters Rape. And trust me deare Ladie, I am sorry I came not in your Sisters life time, because shre could haue resolved mee in a doubtfull matter: Yet neuerthelesse, I will do so much for you, as if

The

## THE HISTORIE

thee were living. But I much maruell what is become of the Knight that lewe my Horse, and the Damosell that conduced mee hither. As for the Damosell (quoth the Ladie) thee shall come anone to attend vpon you: but the Knight was onely a matter of Enchauntment, devised by my Sister, to discouer the man that shoulde finish this Aduenture. And the Damosell whereof you speake hath brought hither many Knights to this Lake, but when they Horses were slaine, none of them durst bee so hardie as once to enter the Water, but onely you, being Predestinated to this Aduenture. In this and such like talkie they spent the day till supper time, and afterwardes was Palmerin conducted to his Chamber, and being layde in Bedde hee could take no rest: First, for griefe that hee had not slayne Fry soll, and then againe, by the strange tale the Ladie tolde him: Wherefore rising the sooner in the Morning, hee went with the Lady to heare diuine Service in her Chappell, where hee desired of God that he might preuaile against these Coniurations, and vanquish the Knight that hadde so much abased his Order.

Returning from the Chappell, the Ladie among other talkie thus saide: I see thy Knight that your Armour is broken and much defaced, that one may judge you haue not kepe it vole in your Armoire, wherfore I shinke you met not with your friend, when you were enforced to so dangerous tryall: But as I understand by the Damosell that was your guyde hither, you returned him sound payement for his paines. To supply your want, I will bestowe an Armour on you, which my Sister long since provided for you, and with carefull regard kept close in her Chest: therefore let mee intreate you not to refuse it, in respect it was not provided but for speciall purpose: beeing needfull for the present occasion you must now Enterprize. Palmerin would not refuse her courteous offer, wherfore opening the Chest, there lay the Armour, couered with white Taffata, whereon was written in Letters of Gold this Inscription: These Armes were made for the good Kyn: Palmerin d'Oliua, sonne to the most royal King

that

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

that at this Day liueth in all Greece. That worthie present greatly delighthd Palmerin, because heerein his desire was somewhat satisfied; which was to knowe the estate of his Father: Wherefore in midst of this pleasing humour hee saide, to his Ladie, I perceyue sayre Madame, that your Sister knewe more of my Destinie then any other: For seeing he could so truely describe my name, I neede make no great doubt of her further Judgement. So taking away the silke, behelde there a more sumptuous Armour, then that which halting Vulcan made for Achilles, at the earnest intreatie of Beaufiull Thetis, being most curiously chased ouer with flowers of Golde, and the Shielde of Steele, all engrauen with rare Deuises, such as well might beseme the greatest Prince in the World. Palmerin presently put off his owne Armour, and inuested himselfe with the Ladys gift, which so well agreed with him in every poynt, as the like could hardly be framed for his bodie.

When hee was thus Armed, he desired the Ladie to shew him the way, that might conduct him to the place where hee shoulde discharge his promise, for that hee would delay no further time in a matter of such weight. The Lady comanded thre of her Squyres to conduct him, who ledde him along a narrow Path-way, whch brought him to the Enchaunted Water, so deepe and daungerous, and there they shewed him the Boate to passe ouer in, which was fastened with a great Chayne to a Tre, wherevpon Palmerin sought the meanes to vndo it: But so soone as he layde hand on the chayne, to plucke it towardes him, there rushd presently forth of the Enchaunted Water two mightie Lyons, who violently assaltes Palmerin in such forcible maner, as they got him downe on the ground vnder them, yet he recovered himselfe quickly, and valiantly encountered those hydeous Monsters, who had such a Diuellish Charme on them, as that no Sword could any way hurte or wound them. Palmerin perceyuing that all his valour was in vayne, called to Heauen for help, in this great necessitie, and commanding his abilitie to the Highest

p. 20

## THE HISTORIE

Proteation, and his heart to the gracious regarde of his My-  
louise : He gaue one of the Lyons such a cruell stroke be-  
twyxe the Eyes, as hee tumbled headlong into the Water,  
and w<sup>r</sup> is afterwardes seene no more, and so<sup>r</sup> hee after him hee  
sent his other fellowe for compaine : But hadde not his Ar-  
mour bene of extraordinarie Vertue, doubtlesse this shoulde  
have bene his last Aventure.

Not a little toyfull of this happy Victorie, hee entred the  
Boate, and with one of the Dares he beganne to Rowe, but  
nowe w<sup>r</sup> is he surprized with a wonderfull daunger, for the  
Water arose in huge Willowes, beating and tossing the  
Boate so fearfully, as he had very much ado to saue and keep  
the bottome from turning upside downe. In this perplexi-  
tie, wh<sup>ch</sup> hee could not devise how to mitigate, a matter of  
greater misfortune yet beset him, for suddenly a maruellous  
great, huge, and oughe Monster stakke out of the Water,  
which laboured by al the meanes he could to overwhelme the  
Boate. So that now was hee constrainyd to forgoe his  
Dare, and drake his weapon to resist this Monster, which  
terrified him so cruelly on the one side, and the Waters so  
dangerously on the other, as he was not in thelike hazard,  
when he fought with the S<sup>r</sup> expert on the Mountaine Arti-  
faria.

To comfort him in this contagious extremitie, hee  
implored his Divine assistance, whose onely prouidence  
must now defende him, else had the raging and disempe-  
red Water, or the rauenous Monster that gaped for his  
life, devoured him. But he that in greatest perillies, was  
ever of vndauanted spirite, made such hardy shiste to rowe  
with his S<sup>r</sup>woode, as in despight of the Monster, and the  
hurling waves of the Water, hee landed on the other side:  
when immediatly all the conuiration ceasid, so that ney-  
ther Water, Monster, Boate, or any thing else might then  
be discerned. I leue you to imagine, whether Palmerin  
were gladde or no, that he had so happily escaped this dan-  
ger: for toye whereat he fell vpon his knes, and with hea-  
ued

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

ued hands and eyes to Heauen, gaue thankes vnto the High-  
est, for his deliuerance. His prayer being ended, he went to  
the Castle, where he heard a most grievous and dolefull com-  
plainte of a Ladie, saying:

Unhappy be the houre of my Spatuitie; Alas, is it pos-  
sible that in all the whole Worlde, any Ladie may compare  
with my miseries? Palmerin attentively marking these  
speches, knewe well it was the Imprisoned Ladie: where-  
fore moued with compassion, hee called with a lowde for one  
to come open the Gate, and so long hee called, that at last the  
Knight hearde him, who looking forth at a windewe of the  
Fosteresse, saide: In an euill houre (Knight) commest thou  
hither, and I much maruell what foolish presumption hath  
gude<sup>r</sup> thee to this place, seeing thou canst no way escape my  
hands: but in my courtesie it remaines, eyther to spare thee,  
or putt<sup>r</sup> thee to a mis<sup>r</sup> cruel Death, although my Enchaun-  
tement hath hitherto suffered thy Passage: Thou art mar-  
uellous hardy (quoth Palmerin) there at the Windewe, but if  
thy courage bee such, as to deale with mee hand to hand, I  
shall make thee understande, that thy losse wordes cannot  
shoo<sup>r</sup> thee from my Sworde: So I will pull downe that  
scourake, and reward thy inexorable Tyrannie, to that god  
Ladie I hearde complaine, whome like a Villaine thou tor-  
kest from her Mother. Come downe I pray thee (if thou be  
not afraide) and thou shalt see what entertainment I giue to  
such as thou art.

Are you S<sup>r</sup> (quoth the Knight) such a corrector and re-  
former of Vices? Darest thou but tarry til I come downe,  
I shall teache<sup>r</sup> thee the way to be better aduised. So Arming  
himselfe presently, hee mounted on Horsbacke, and came  
forth at the Castle Gate: Whereupon Palmerin thus spake  
to him. There is ouer great odde, S<sup>r</sup> Knight, you to be on  
Horsebacke, and I on foot, you shall shewe small knyghpde  
In offering me such wrong: I pray thee (of courtesie to alight)  
otherwise I shall bewe such a curtyng on your Warreare,  
as your Servaunt afterwardes shall take but small paynes  
with

## THE HISTORIE

with him. The Knight of the Castell made as though hee  
hearde him not, and ranne fiercely with his Launce against  
Palmerin, who escaped his Enemie, with his Sworde gaue  
his Ho:se such a stroke on the legge, as hee past by him, that  
the Bone being cut in twaine, hee fell to the ground, hauing  
one of the Knights legges so fast vnder him, as hee was not  
able to recouer himselfe. Palmerin willing to helpe him vp  
againe, gaue him halfe a douzaine such raps about the Pate,  
as he lay quiet enough, without any moaning: Whereupon  
he unclaspeth his Helmet, when the Knight hauing some aere,  
bezant to grapple wth him, and drawing his Pocket-dag-  
ger, gaue Palmerin a shewnd wound therewith in the right  
Thigh, in recompence whereof, at one stroke hee tooke his  
head from off his shoulders. The Squyres and Seruants  
that belonged to the Castell, who came forth to see the issue  
of the fight, ranne apace backe to the Castle againe, to shut  
the Gates for theyr owne safetie: But Palmerin (albeit hee  
was hurt, preuented them, laying about him so roughly on  
every side, as hee swore, that if they wold not bring him to  
the Impisoned Ladie, they shold all presently dye the death.  
Many of them with feare, tumbled headlong into the Ditch,  
others on their Knees asked for mercie, promising to do what  
ever he commaunded them: whereupon hee said to him that  
had the Keyes. Arise quickly Villaine, and conduct me to the  
Prison, or I shall paye thee for thy laziness. The pore fel-  
low almost frighted out of his wittes, brought him directly to  
the Tower where the Ladie was, whome they found naked  
from the middle vpwards, and so grieuously beaten, as all her  
Bodie was goreblood, which the Knight had done that mor-  
ning, for a Dreame he had the night before, howe her Mo-  
ther wold sende a Knight thao shold take her thence per-  
force, and murther him, in which opinion he came to the La-  
die, saying. I perceyue that thy Mother and Friends labour  
to get thee from me, and practise my destruction by all the best  
meanes they may: but now for theyr sakes thou shalt dñe-  
ly aby the dealeing. And with these wordes the Villaine

to

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

so cruelly whipped her, as shē was ready to giue vpp the  
ghoste, and so left her in hope shē would haue dyed. Pal-  
merin finding the Ladie in this lamentable plignt, sayde.  
Arise god Ladie and leue your sorowfull acclamationes,  
for the villaine that thus misused you, hath had such ab-  
solution for his delets, as he hath left his hease in signe  
of his penaunce: and if you will depart with me towardes  
your Mother, I will shew you the Traytour wherē hee  
lies now quiet enough. Ah my Lord, ( quoth the La-  
dye) is the Traytorous Scotor deade, that so monstroslye  
wonged me? He is Ladie, sayde Palmerin, you neede  
feare him no more. Then Heaven be prayed ( quoth she )  
for this happy daye, and among all Knights be you the  
most renowned, for euer, with which wordes shē arose,  
and wrapping a furred Mantle about her, without any  
other garments on her body, shē went with Palmerin,  
and passing by the place where Scotor laye slaine, lifting  
her eyes, and hands to Heaven, shē sayde. O my God, how  
is thy name to be prayed, so iustly punishing the trecherie  
and disloyaltye of this villayne: Ah Traytor, how worthily  
hast thou receyued this death, which is not rygorous, as the  
mercilesse tyranny hath bene to me.

Heere you must note, that soone as the Knight was  
deade, all the enchantments about the Castle were pre-  
sently finished, the great Lake beeing consumed after  
Palmerins passage, so that the Ladies Mother aduer-  
tised thereof, came to meete Palmerin: embrasing her daugh-  
ter with such exceeding ioye, as they could not speake to  
each other theyr teares so hindered them, at length the  
Mother kneeled before Palmerin with these wordes. Ah  
worthy Knight, how happy haue you this day made  
mee: all my former greeves ( by your meanes ) beeing now  
converted into singular contentation. As shē would haue  
proceeded in her gratulations, shē perceived the bloude to  
trickle downne Palmerins Armour: which shē sorowing  
to beholde, sayde. Methinkes thy Knight you are very

to

so

## THE HISTORIE

sore wounded, I beseech you grant me so much honour, as to repose you selfe a while within my Castle, where I doubt not to vise such diligent care, as you shall be whole and sound in very short time. Palmerin not minding to refuse her offer, returned with the Lady, and being unarmed, was brought to his Chamber, where the Lady dressed his wounds, and he was so well entertained as heart could devise. Then went the Ladies Squires and Servants to Scotoris Castle, from whence bringing all things that were of any value, they buried the Traitors body, and putting his head on the poynt of a Lance, they placed it on the top of the Tower for a perpetuall memory. The next day came people from all parts of the Island, to see the Knight that ended the enchauntments, and among other, the Damosell that conducted him thither was one, who on her knee thus spake to him. Now am I satisfied Sir Knight, and you discharged of the promise you made me, which was onely for the deliuerance of this Lady, whom you haue valiantly conquered from the tyrant that tormentted her. I beseech him, who euermore hath regard of the poore assittid, that his pleasure may be to send you like, or a better aduenture, whereby you may accomplish all your haute enteynizes. So will he I doubt not, said Palmerin, and that was one from which you did wade me: but I shall never be merry till I find him againe, though then at your intrech he escaped my hands so well. And Fortune spedde the matter so happily, quoth the Damosell, as Peace and Friendship may be vnted betwene you: for if either of you miscarry, it were great pitte, considering the great valour wherewith you are both nobly furnished. Let come what will sayd Palmerin, never shal other agreement be betwene us. With these words the Damosell held her peace, for she perceiued by his answere, that he was not halfe pleased with the other Knight.

CHAP.

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

### CHAP. LVI.

How Palmerin traualing through a great Forrest, espyed a Dwarfe enter into a Cave, whom hee followed, and found there a knight, with whom he had much conference.



Long continued Palmerin in the castle with the Ladie, till his woundes being healed, and he able to beare Armour, hee sayd to the Lady, Madame, by the helpe of God, and your diligent endeauour, I find my selfe in god constitution of body wherefore with your fauourable licence, I meane to morrow to depart hence, because occasions of great importance so commandeth me: yet this assurance will I leave with you, that in any place where I shal come hereafter, your wonderfull courtesie hath gained such power over me, as at all times I remaine to doe you any pleasure.

The Lady right glad of Palmerins noble offer, and her Daughter thankefull for her benefit received, returned him many thankfull gratulations: but seeing they could no longer detaine him, for his spaches were such as he would needs be gone, she said:

Gentle Knight, seeing it likes you no longer to sojourne here, but that you think it expedient to depart, I would gladly present you with a simple gift, not as recompence of your painefull trauailes, but onely that hereafter you might remember from whence it came.

## THE HISTORIE

Then tooke shee out of a Coffer two rich and precious Ringes, and presenting him one of them, she sayde. You shall giue this Ring to her whome aboue all other you most esteine, the King containing this speciall vertue, that the longer shee weares it, the more shē shall loue you, and day y shall her loue so vehemently encrease, as all aduersities and troubles shē shall beare with patience, that by meanes of your loue maie any way enbaunger her.

This other Ring is of a contrary vertue, which you must giue to the Ladie your deere frende beloued, and to him may you safelie say, that any occasion whosomeuer, cannot plucke it from this Ladie's finger: for this is the nature thereof, that the Ladie which weares it, shall not bee dispraised, and neither intreaties, gifthes, or whatsoever besides, cannot compell her, to doe any thing contrary to her liking. If it come so to passe that shē were beloued by any other, then him shē now affec-  
teth, shē shall beeable by vertue of this Ring, to quench all such libidinous desire in her sollicitour, and cause him never afterwarde to mooue her with any dishonest request. As for these stones of so rare and excellent qualite, you must note that they were precisely chosen for you by my Sister, and placed as you see them, by her superciall knowledge in the Magicall Sciences, that in time to come they shall doe such seruice, as no Jewels (of what value soever they were) might bee able to doe the like.

Besides these, shē gaue him diuers other Jewells to carry to his Lady, for which hee humbly thanked her, and taking his leaue of her and her Daughter, who shedde many teares for his departure, hee mounted upon Horsebacke, and traualing thorow a great Forrest, hee espyed a Dwarfe, whom hee iudging for to bee his Servaunt Urbanillo, because hee was of his stature, and very much resembled him, he called aloude, Hyeare a thou tall fellow,

haw

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

how camest thou in this place, so unsrequted and unha-  
bited: The Dwarfe being in a great feare, ranne so fast as  
he could into a great Cave betwene to Bushes, which made  
Palmerin alight and follow him, and very farre went he in  
to the Cave not seeing any body, till at length he cam in  
to a little Rōome, as it had bene cut out of a Quarrie, which  
had light into it by a little chinke cut thorow a Rocke: and  
here hee found a young Knight layde uppon a bedde, at  
whose feete lay the Dwarfe, all quaking and trembling  
vith his late feare, whom Palmerin now saw that hee  
was not Urbanillo, wherefore hee saluted the Knight,  
ayng:

I must intreate you Sir Knight to pardon me, because  
I entered so boldly, neither knocking first, or calling for  
any of your Servaunts: Albeit I desired to speake with this  
little man, but nothing could induce him to tarry my com-  
ming, for he fled from me as I had bene a Diuell. Where-  
upon perswading my selfe, to finde some other body here  
more courteous, I followed him at thearde heales, with  
no other intent, but onely to know how I might possible  
get forth of this desolate Forrest, wherein by misaduenture  
I haue lost my way, for I would not willingly stray too  
farre, least I should bee forced to remaine here as an holy  
Hermite, considering my profession is cleane contrary. To  
preuent such chance, I thinke it was Gods will I should  
follow your Servaunt, let me therefore intreate you, to  
know what you are, and wherefore you liue here so solita-  
ry, shunning as it seemeth the company of men: protest-  
ing to you, that if I may in ought assit you, whereby to draw  
you from this obscure life, I will with all my heart accom-  
plish it, though it were matter that should concerne my  
life.

The Knight rayng vppe himselfe, and sighing so  
bitterly as life and soule would haue parted in sunter,  
answering. Alas noble Knight, seeke not to understand the

## THE HISTORIE

the depth of my sorrow, in respect the remedy is all together impossible: yet in that your demand proceedeth from such a gentle Sprite, as pitteth the miseries of despised creatures, I will acquaint you with some part of mine estate.

Here w<sup>t</sup>hen gentle Knight, that I am the most forlorn Varnas, whose unfortunate life exceedeth all mens whatsoeuer, for this world affordeth me nothing but mishappe, disgrace, contempt, and all tormenting grieves, as for delight and pleasure, they are lothsome to me, my Moneths, Weeks, Dates, Hours and Minutes, being continually accompanied with all execrable passions. My greatest ease consisteth in dolorous Lamentations, remembrance of passed misfortunes, sad Regrets, and insupportable Melancholy. In briefe, I am onely he, whose companions are, a troubled spirit, thoughts confounded with scultrate hope, having utterly lost the light of those gladsome Sunnes, whereof the one shined in my face, the other in my heart, that now nothing is left for me but a life despised, yet welcome to me that on so disdained.

These wordes were uttered with so many sighes, such floods of teares, and halling his flesh with such impatience, as would haue relented even a heart of Adamant, which moued Palmerin by gentle persuasions, to request of him the cause of his disquiet: and so long hee continued his importunate intreaties, that the Knight at length thus aunswered. Gentle Syz, so well contenteth me the sorowes which I suffer, that in hope of any remedie, I would not bewray them: but seeing Fortune hath thus conducted you hither, in respect of your gracious and affable nature, as also that you shall not repute me undiscerte and misgoverned, I will satisfie you in the cause of my sadnessse.

True it is, Syz Knight, that I haue hitherto, and ever shall loue a Ladie, Daughter to a Knight my neighbour,

## OF PALMER IN DOLIVA.

hour, she being (in my iudgement) one of the fairest Ladies in the whole world. And now perceiving by her behaviour that she loued me as well, or rather more, which indeed she did not: for her I accomplished all things that a Knight coms for his Ladie, adventuring mine honour, and my life in all daungers for her sake, yea, nothing might be refused for the divine Mistresse of my thoughts. Perceiving my selfe to be so equally loued, and my passions to grow beyond my abilitie, finding occasion to acquaint her with the secrets of my heart, I desired her to pittie my oppressions, which if shee refused to doe, shes would lose her louer, and his life withall. For I was so solemnely bound to her service, as shee could not commaund any thing so hard and dangerous, but by her fauourable regarde would bee most easie to mee. Thys wordes could drawe no pittie from her, but displeased and in great anger shee answered. That I might not be reckoned among those Knights, who deserued the loue of a Ladie of her calling, and thenceforth I should not be so hardie, as to speake to her, or come in her presence. Goe quoth she, and follow her loue that gaue thee thy Faulcon, wherein thou takest such pleasure, and never maile thou turn againe to me.

With these wordes shee frowng from me to a tun-dowle, where I was wont alwayes to stande and talke with her, beguiling the time in no lesse contentation, then those happy soules in the Elysian Fieldes, such was the rare beautie, god grace, and singular courtesie of my (sometime) beloved Ladie Valerica. I cannot denie, but that a Ladie bestowed the Faulcon on me, but in any such respect as my Ladie imagined, God knowes is most untrue, nor could death compell me so much to abuse my chosen Mistresse.

Seeing my Ladie then so rigorous, and her answers so severe, yet assured of mine owne iuincencie and loyalty: I was surprised with such surpassing heauinessse, as

## THE HISTORIE

every houre expected when my feble spirit would forsake his long despised habitation. By Lady being thus resolute in her owne opinion, and disdaining all meanes I shewed to perswade her, despairing likewise of any after hope: I determined with my selfe, to abandon all company, as unworthy of their societie, and then bethake my selfe to this brutish kinde of life, where I might without any impeach, breath forth my continuall complaints.

In this resolution I came to this place, without the knowledge of my Lorde or any other, this Dwarfe onely excepted, who euermore hath bene my most truffie Servant, and fetcheth my necessaries at a village neare adioyning, and by his honest persuasions, hath many times withheld me from committing violence on my selfe. Thus haue you heard in brefe the cause of my sorrow, the depth whereof cannot be considered or valued, but by such as haue in like manner tried and suffered, the disdaine and ingratitude of unconstant Ladies.

Palmerin hauing heard the fortunes of the Knight, repeated to him the graces and faours of his Lady Polnarda, what honour she did him in her Fathers Court, and how hee was in daunger to receive the like rewarde, as the Knight did of his Valerica: and fearing indeade that his mishappe would sorte to that issue, hee fell downe at the fete of this pwoe resuled Louer. The Knight perceiving, that the repetition of his misfortune was cause of his alteration, breathing forth a vehement sigh, hee said:

Alas wretched Caitiffe that I am, hath my dettiny made mee so unhappie, that enduring an extremitie worse then death, I cannot die, and yet hee that did but haere my misery hath lost his life: I will not live any longer to prejudice any other man, but will now make way to the ende of mine owne troubles. So then he drew forth Palmerins Sworde, and offered for to thrust it into his

## OFFALMERIN D'OLIVA.

his body: but Palmerin receyued to his former estate, started sudainely uppe, and catching him fast in his Armes, layde.

How now my Friende? Will you be so inconsiderate, that for such a little temporall paine which your body endureth, for to condenme your soule to everlasting perdition? And though your Passions touch you so severely, as that you will not afford any pittie to your selfe: let me now intreate you to forbearre this bad humour. For not without great reason haue I sustained this sudden motion, remeining the vnspeakable comfort I received by one, who by false suggestions, or slanderous reports (which woundeth more deepe then the fatal weapon) may in like sorte be chaunged into such conceypte, as her Judgement may exceed a Hell of torment.

Yet can I not denye (your Ladie hauing with such open shame refused you) but you haue great occasion to grieue thereat, yet not to stretch the extremity so farre as to dispair, or woake inurie to your calling to memory howe light the opinion of a Woman is, how suddenly she will alter, and how prompt she is to Jealousie, especially when shee loueth effectually. And if heretofore shee loued you ferenly, it is impossible but she should feele some part of your anguish, and more violently (I thinke then your selfe can. Trust then in him that hath all hearts at commaund, repose your selfe constantly on his god Providence, for he will not leau you strate of your honourable intent, standing with Justice, and perfect integritie.

As Palmerin continued these comfortable persuasions the Dwarfe couered the Table, and then sette before them such a small proportion of Pittance, as he had prouided, and when they had well refreshed themselves, Palmerin tooke his leue of the Knight, promising him (if hee coulde by any god meanes) to giue some easel to his oppresions. Varnan returned him many thankes, commaunding his Dwarfe to conduct him into the High-Waye, beeing not a little sorrowfull

## THE HISTORIE

now full to leave his compaie, who then had so well aduised and comforted him. Palmerin beeing come into his ready way, sent backe the Dwarke, and rode on till he was got out of the Forrest, intending to finde out the Castle where Valerica remained, because hee would somewhat sollicite the cause of the poore solitary Varnan. So ryding along in this determination, he spyyed a Knight and two Squires before him, the Knight thus speaking to one of his Squyres. I knowe not whether it bee time as yet to enter the Garden: or if Madame Valerica be as yet come thither? Goe see if that shee be there, and make thy return quickly to me againe. Palmerin hearing the name of Valerica, knewe well that it was shee whome the solitary Knight lined in such pensu- nesse: Wherefore being moued with with pitty of his mis- eys, he sayde to himselfe: Hae here the faire treacheryes of a frothlesse Woman, so vnhonourably to forsake the man that loueth her so dorely, and now to preserue the villany of this intercepting Laytour? But I shall teache him ere I goe, what a penality belongs to the penenting of a loyall knight, and comming to the Knight, hee sayde thus. Art thou a man Villaine? that would forst all the Loue of the best Knights in England? Now by my Sworde, thou shalt dorely pay for thy disloyaltie. With these wordes, hee lent him such a sound stroake on the head, as hee cleft it therewith to the very teeth.

The two Squyres seeing they Maister slaine, beganne to haste away: but Palmerin caught him that was sent to the Garden, to whome he sayde. Come on Syrha, if thou louest thy life, bring me where the Lady is: If thou doest not, thou shalt never followe thy trade any longer. The Squire by no meanes durst do otherwise: So he brought him to the Wicket, where Valerica was wont to receive in her Louer, and knocking with his finger, as his Maister was accu- stomed: Valerica opening the doore, and thinking it had bene her Friende, cast her armes about Palmerins Necke, who brought her in his armes forth of the Garden, commaun- ding

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

ding the Squire presently to followe him. Valerica much abashed heereat, sayde. How now swete Friende? whether will you carry mee? Knowe you not, if my Father heards hereof, that neyther of vs durst approache before him?

Tush Madame (saide Palmerin, these are but words, there is no remedie, but you must goe with me. So that neyther with teares nor Requests would hee bee intreated, but presently mounted on Horse-backe, causing the Squire to helpe the Lady vp before him, because hee would be sure shee should not make an escape from him, and ryding away towards the Forrest, because the darke night drewe on, hee left the roade way, seeking some fitte place where they might conueniently repose themselves for that night. At length he found out a little Thicket, where they alighted, and hee turning forth his Horse to Pasture, tooke off his Helmet, and came to the Lady, desiring her to be contented with such harde Lodging for that night: But when shee beheld that it was not her friend, wringing her hands shee thus exlayned, Alasse, unhappy wretch that I am: How treacherously am I thus deceived: What misshape may be comparable to me, having lost my deere Friende, and abyding at his pleasure that hath cruelly murthered him? Ah harde Fortune, why art thou so inconstant, to exchange my former pleasures into this grieuous Stratageme.

Palmerin hearing her so impatent, sayde: You must thinke Lady, that what hath happened, is by Divine permis- sion, who hath thus appoynted this contrarie, to puni- sh your losenesse, and your exceeding disloyaltie towarde him, who loues you deere then his owne soule: and for your loue leades a most austere life, in the very desolate and uncomfor- table place of this Worlde. And seeing he hath thus long endured such hardenesse for your sake, it is god reason that you should in some sorte participate with his miserie. Feare not therefore, for I haue spoken nothing of him, but what I haue seene: and that by great chaunce haue I thus brought you away from your Fathers house, meaning by Gods god fauour

(this

## THE HISTORIE

(this humor forgotten) to cause you match with him, whose true loue aboue all other hath deserved you. Ah misery incomparable, said the Lady, I see now it is in vaine to shunne what the deuiles haue appointed, how falls my fortune from ill to worse: Must I now goe with that coward Varnan, whom hitherto I haue continually despised? I had rather die a most shamefull death.

I know not Lady what you thinke, said Palmerin, but in my opinion, Varnan is much better then you esteem him, and a better knight then he, that could defend his Dame with no wiser policie: woxthily may you call him coward, and loue the other that liues to do you service. So long they stood on these teatures, vntill a knight passed by them, to whom Valerica cried, Helpe gentle knight, for God sake pittie mee, and deliver mee from this traytor, who falsely hath beguiled mee, and violently brought me hither against my will. What art thou said the knight, that thus dishonorest this Dame? I shall teach thee better knowledge of thine order before wee part. Palmerin quickly bridling of his Horse, & clasping on his helmet, saies to the knight. What art thou that wouldest take her from me, whom I conquered euen now by my sword? follow thy way, or I shall shew thee what discipline I use to knoles, that will meddle with matters aboue their capacitie. Doest thou so obstinately stand in thy treachery? saide the knight, Marke what will be the end of thy presumption.

CHAP.

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

### CHAP. LVII.

¶ How Palmerin haung thus brought away Valerica, conducted her to the Caue, to her beloued Varnan, and there confirmed the agreement of theyr Loue.



¶ So so we passe any further, you shall understande that the Knight thus contending with Palmerin, was Hermes, one whom the King sent after the Dame with Fryfoll, to make deliverance of the Caue, as you haue hearde before; he being Palmerins Friend, yet neither knowing other. For Hermes tooke such regard of the Dames complaint, as hee marked not Palmerin before he put on his Helmet. Palmerin seeing that Hermes woulde needes trye his Fortune, encountrid him with such a rough stroke, as downe he fell to the ground, Hermes thinking his head was shiuers in a hundred pieces: So Palmerin called Hermes Squyre, commanding him to helpe vp the Dame, or else hee woulde send him after his Maister. The Squyre alighted and holpe vppe the Dame, rewarding her with an infinite number of curses, because his Maister had spedde so ill by her meanes.

Trust me Dame, (quoth Palmerin) though you thinke my labour but ill bestowed, yet such is the regarde of the solitary Varnan, as to finish that Hell of tormentes which hee suffers, I must needes holde better opinion of my paines. With these and many such like speches he beguiled the time, till they came neare to Varnans Caue, who to take the Ayre, was there walking vnder the Trees: but when hee sawe Palmerin returned, and a Dame with him, yea, perceiving wel

he

## THE HISTORIE

(this humor forgotten) to cause you match with him, (whose true loue aboue all other hath deserved you. Ah misery incomparable, said the Lady, I see now it is in vaine to shunne what the destrieas haue appointed, how falls my fortune from ill to worse? Must I now goe with that coward Varnan, whom hitherto I haue continually despised? I had rather die a most shamefull death.

I know not Lady what you thinke, said Palmerin, but in my opinion, Varnan is much better then you esteem him, and a better knight then he, that could defend his Pate with no wiser policie: worthily may you call him coward, and loue the other that liues to do you seruice. So long they stood on these tearmes, vntill a knight passed by them, to whom Valerica cried. Helpe gentle knight, for God sake pittie mee, and deliuer mee from this traytor, who falsely hath beguiled me, and violently brought me hither against my will. What art thou said the knight, that thus dishonestlyst this Lady? I shall teach thee better knowledge of thine order before wee part. Palmerin quickly bridling of his Hoise, & clasping on his helmet, said to the knight. What art thou that wouldest take her from me, whom I conquered even now by my Sworde? follow thy way, or I shall shew thee what discipline I use to foiles, that will meddle with matters aboue their capacitie. Doest thou so obstinately stand in thy treachery? said the knight: Marke what will be the end of thy presumption.

CHAP.

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

### CHAP. LVII.

¶ How Palmerin haung thus brought away Valerica, conducted her to the Caue, to her beloued Varnan, and there confirmed the agreement of theyr Loue.



Boore we passe any further, you shall understande that the knight thus contending with Palmerin, was Hermes, one whom the King sent after the Lady with Fryfoll, to make deliuerance of the Castle, as you haue hearde before: hee being Palmerins friend, yet neither knowing other. For Hermes tooke such regard of the Ladys complaint, as hee marked not Palmerin before he put on his Helmet. Palmerin seeing that Hermes woulde needes trye his Fortune, encountered him with such a rough stroke, as downe he fell to the ground, Hermes thinking his head was shuered in a hundred pieces: So Palmerin called Hermes Squyre, commaunding him to helpe vp the Ladie, or else hee woulde send him after his Maister. The Squyre alighted and holpe vppe the Ladie, rewarding her with an infinite number of curses, because his Maister had spedde so ill by her meanes.

Trust me Lady, (quoth Palmerin) though you thinke my labour but yll bestowed, yet such is the regarde of the solitary Varnan, as to finish that Hell of torment whiche hee suffers, I must nades holde better opinion of my paines. With these and many such like speches he beguiled the time, till they came neare to Varnans Caue, whiche to take the Ayre, was there walking vnder the Trees: but when hee sawe Palmerin returned, and a Lady with him, yea, perceiving wel that it was faire Valerica, they were no sooner alighted, but he

## THE HISTORIE

he caught her in his armes, saying; Is it possible swete Fortune, that after so long mishap, and when all hope was utterly gone, thou canst asconde me this gracieous fauours? Ah happy Eyes, that haue polized forth such showers of teares, what felicity may compare with yours, contemplating now the rare beauty of your Hiltresse? Nay it be, that after so many insupporable tormentes, the meane thereof shold returne such pleasure, comfort, and sollace? Depart then teares, pack hence lamentations, griefe, tormentes, and all melancholy conceits, get you elsewhere, & in the most Barbarous countreyes of the world make your abiding, for she commands you hence, in whom consists my special contentment. Oh fortunate Knight, how may I recompence this inexplicable kindness, surmounting all other that euer was heard of? Impossible is it for me to requite this fauour, though all my Possessions, life, bodie, and spirite, were bound to your service. But Heauen will suplye my want, and continue you in as great happiness, as your noble Bountie hath brought me consort.

Forbeare these speches (said Palmerin) albeit I had done a thousand times as much, yet shold I but accomplish what one Christian owes to another. I pray you therefore let vs goe into your Cauue, least we be espyed, and so prevented, beside, I am so ouer-watched, as I cannot stand on my feete, through the very want of sleepe. Valerica seeing her selfe in such an unseught place, and in his custodie shée most detested, her angry frowne could not suffer her to speake one word; but when she hadde awhile rested her selfe, on a seate of fragrant Herbes, and Flowers, which Varnan diligently prepared, Palmerin saide: Beholde Madame Valerica, see in what place, in what solitarie, austere, and sharpe kinde of life, your Varnan liues by your commandement, now leing time and Fortune is so fauourable, let not your rigour and disdaine deafe theyz mutabilitie. Consider a little, what grieves he hath endured in this comfortlesse place, which verily haue bin so great, as all the pleasures in the world, can not recompence the very least of them. I beseeche you then, if heretofore you haue

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

haue boozed him hardliking, let it now he forgotten, and if in adulterie hee hath any way offenden you, let his long tormentes and surpassing loyaltie serue now for satisfaction, and take him to your Husbande, as the most perfect and faithfull Louer in England. You likewise S<sup>r</sup> Varnan, without remembrance of your passed miseries, or her too rigorous resualls heretofore, take her as your Lady and wife, and in all honor unite your selfe to her by present speches: for seeing I haue brought her hither, it wil remaine a continual reproch to me, if you would not accept her as your Spouse and wife. Ah my Lord (q.d. Varnan) with right good will shal I accomplish your command, so may it stand with my Ladies liking, for heerein consists the whole sume of my desires. Ah miserable beyond all other (saide Valerica to Palmerin) must I by a varlet be subiected to so vile an extremitie, and constrained to take him for my Husband whome I cannot affer, hee being the most false and cowardly Knight that euer I knewe? Must I against my Fathers will, and by my Traytors procurement, that hath so much abused me, as no vertuous Knight would so haue wronged a Lady, be thus compelled to my Marriage? heauen cannot like heereof, and rather will I die, then do the thing shal returne me such reproch. Then shriked she so pitifully as though she had bene quite distraught of her sences: whiche Varnan beholding, beganne thus to complaine. Ah gentle Knight, what griefe is it to heare her in these tormentes, whom I loue much better then mine owne life: and for whom I rather desire to die, then not to enjoy her with her owne liking. I cannot leue seeing her in these afflictions, and therefore conney her againe to her fathers house, and no sooner shall she be departed hence, but life will forsake this forlorn Cackasse, then shall my death assuage how faithfully I loued. Palmerin seeing the obstinacie of Valerica, sayd. By God Lady, I thinke in all the world is not a more cruell and disloyall woman then you are, perswade your selfe, that if I take the paine to carry you againe to your fathers Castle, I shall do your exande there

## THE HISTORIE

Chers in such sort, as all your life time repentance will hardly excuse you. And to speake the truth, Varnan doth much more then you deserve, if you well remember your selfe, and for you are so stubbornne, I shall giue you the desert (offering to draw his **Sword**) that such ingratefull and trecherous women worthily merit. Valerica alayde when she saw him in such choler, and doubting hee would discouer her incontinent loue palt, thraw her selfe at his fete, desiring him to appease his anger, and she would obey what ere hee commaunded. For (quoth she) seeing my fortune hath brought me into his company, who so his vnfeigned loue to me, hath so long suffred wonderfull calamities: well might I be esteemed of brutifh nature, if I did not acknowledge it, therefore I will be his wife, and giue him my faith here in your presence. Palmerin well pleased with this aunswere, tooke her vp by the hand, and taking Varnan by the other, espoused them there together by soleinne promises, and afterward laide him downe to rest himselfe a while. Then Varnan taking Valerica in his armes, with swete kisses and amorous speeches, expellid all former heauiness, esteeming himselfe the happiest Knight in the whols world, hauing now at length obtained the fauour of his Miftresse, giuing her to understand, how acceptable the gift of pittie was, coming from so rare a creature to her languishing beloued. Palmerin seeing them so well agayde, would now depart and leave them to their fortune: but by earnest importunitie of these louers, he stayed there longer then he intended. Now was the loue betwene these twaine, far greater then they had bene, so that after they had stayed three or fourre dayes in the Caue, with such entertainment as the Dwarfe could make them, they departed to one of Varnans Castles, and there obtained peace with the said Parentes of Valerica, continuing long time together in comfort of their loue, and ending their liues in loyalty thereof.

CHAP.

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

### CHAP. LVIII.

How Palmerin, after he departed from Varnan and Valerica, met with two Ladies in chase, one of them giving him a Faulcon. And what happened to him against the Duke of Gaul his twelue Knights, out of whose hands he deliuered Hermes.



When Palmerin sayd Varnan and Valerica so well contented, after many offers of their seruice, and kinde adieues deliuered on al sides, he left them in their Caule, and set forward on his journey, ledging that night in an auncient knyghtes castle, where hee understood, how the brethren of the slaine Knight, besieged Valericas father in his Castle: Wherefore he turned an other course, and leauing the broad way that guided to London, he met two ladies accompanied with thre squires, who had cast off a faulcon and a Martyn to sie, the sight whereof so highly contented him, as he would needes tarry to see the end thereof, which made one of the Ladies thus speake to him. I see sir knight you haue no hast on your iournie, because you stay to behold our pastime, wherefore if you will go with vs to a watter hereby, you shall there see a braue sight indeede, such leoyalty the game is there so plentifull, & my faulcon so god as she will never faille. Palmerin who aboue all pastimes loued Hawking, rode with the Ladies to the Marshes by their Castle, where they had such excellent sport at Heron, Duck & Mallard: as the day beguiling them, Palmerin was forced to stay with them that night. When they were come to the castle, Palmerin

## THE HISTORIE

merin manned the Ladys Faulcon so well, as though all his life time he had practised to be a Faulconer. The Lady seeing him so braue a Gentleman, so courteous, affable, and comely in behauour, and that hee tendered her Hawke so gently: was immediatly surprised with his Lue, so that she desired to knowe of whence he was, whom she could so gladly affoord to chose for her Beloued, and having long earnestly beheld him, she said. Hyz Knight, that I might entertaine you as your estate beseemeth, I pray you tell me your name, and whither you trauell. Lady (qd. Palmerin) I am a mere straunger, who by Fortune on the Sea was brought to this Countrey, and because the King had warre against the Empour of Allemaigne, I remained a while heere as a Souldeour, attending a prosperous wunde, to transporthe me home againe into my Native Countrey. The Lady hearing this, and judging him one of the Famous Knights, that came to the Court, loued him more earnestly then she did before, providing such surpassing delights and delicates for him, as shee wished that Night had bene a yere in length. The Tables withdrawne, and many pleasant speeches past betwene Palmerin and the Ladys Daughter, shee conducted him to his Chamber, wishing (if her Honour myght so auechthe it) that Palmerin never myght haue any other Bedfellow. But leauing him to his god rest, shee departed to her Chamber, where small stoe of sleepe suffised her that night. In the morning, Palmerin called for his Horsse to be gone: the Lady very sorrowfull to see him to forgoe his company, but seeing shee had no meane to holde him, she said. Seeing your departure Hyz may not be denied, I would present you with the Faulcon, which yester day did so specially content you, which if you so please to accept for my sake, I shall not be vnminefull of the honour you haue done me, cheifly, that you leuchof to staye here this night, being as welcom hicher as the King himselfe.

Seeing it is your pleasure Madame (said Palmerin, to beseeche your Faulcon on mee, I accept it as the onely thing you could giue me, and by the faith of a Knight I promise you,

that

## OF PALMERIN DOL IV A.

that I will keepe it for your sake, and neuer part therewith, if by force or villany it be not taken ston me. The Lady so joyfull hereof as myght be devised, caused the Faulcon to be brought to him.

Here must you note, that this is the selfe same Lady, which sent the Faulcon to Varnan, and loued him so dearely as after she understood hee had forsooke the Countrey, shee gave her selfe altogether to this recreation. Her Father perceiving she was affected, suffered her to take her pleasure, sending her evermore the best Hawkes that could be gotten. But it came so to passe, that two Faulcons so friendly giuen, and in the like sort taken, proved very unfortunate to both the Knights, causyng them to curse the houre, that euer they accepted the Ladys libertatie, came neare her Castle, or saw her Hawkes, as you haue already heard by solitary Varnan, and hereafter shall perceiue in Palmerins fortune, he being departed from the Lady, rode two dayes together without any aduenture, till at length he came to the Tent, where the Duke of Gaules Knights guarded the passage, which scant pleased Palmerin, because he imagined if he fought with them, he shold be deceived in his intent, and not see Trineus soone as he would, whom he left at the Court expecting his comming, wherefore he would haue turned another way, but one of the Knights called to him. Returne coward returne, thou shalt not escape without trall of thy manhood, for we must make profe whether there be any in thee.

Palmerin not knowing where to set his Hawke, and ver loth to loose her, was not desirous to Joust: but seeing that with honour he could not refuse it, answered. It is small courtesie Sir Knight to challenge the man that hath no will to your spoile: but if there be no remedie, your will be fulfilled, albeit I hope you will first repent. I see thou canst prate well, quoth the Knight, and beleue me thou wert wise if thou couldst so escape: but seeing thou art so long before thou art redie, Ile bring thee to such a place where hawkes shall not hinder thee, and in one yere thou shalt spare

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

the weareing of bootes and spurres in such a comfortable place, as the sunne nor day light shall offend thine eyes. I hope I haue learned, said Palmerin, to keepe my selfe from such places: but I would faine knwo the gentle Chamber Page, that is so saillfull in waiting with his Pantofles, as he can teach knights errant how to weare them. The knight being angry, called forthe the rest of his companions, among whome he espied Hermes prisoner, his Helmet lyng by him, and his armes pinnend: therefore to revenge his wronge, he called his Squire, saying; I pray thē my friend looke to my Haule a while, for I am come to defende thy Haule's honour, and calling to the Dukes knight, saying; Come sir let vs dispatch quickly, for I haue earnest busynes in another place: the knight laughing at him, answered. Why holu now Captaine? thinke you to passe hence so easilie? There are sufficient to stay yaux hasty iourney, elemen more must talke with you, the woxē of them able to abate your pride, for your horse lackes a stalle, and we will prouide him one. So couching theyr Launces, they met together with such force, as the Dukes knight was threwe from his horse, his shoulde being broken with the weight of his fall: Palmerin arresting the knigheles horse for his owne, gaue him to Hermes squire in keeping, saying; Because the knight is not willing to get on horse-backe againe, helde this for me, and I may ly at ease to see the fortune of his fellowes. Then came another knight from the tent, whom Palmerin welcomed in so scendly manner, as hee lay not able to stirre hand or foote: with this one Launce he unhoofed fente more, and braks it so valiantly on the seauenly knight, as while he liued he meant to ioust no more. With a fresh Launce he dismounted all the rest, none of them being willing to deal with him any further: wherefore Palmerin came to Hermes, saying. What do you sir Knight? Why take you not the best Horse among all the dozen? That shall I Sir, seeing you commaund me, albeit not long since you serue me as these knights are: yet God be thanked.

that

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

that by your meanes I am deluerned from imprisonment, wherein these knights intenden to keepe me, because I unhoofed founre of them, and at the fist encounter my horse was killed, which was the caule of my soyle and taking. The knights (quoth Palmerin) haue now leasure to rett them, for they were troubled before with watching for passengers: I doubt not now but we may quately passe the bridge, for I see none of them offer to hinder us. Hermes mounting on horse-backe, commaunded his quire to take a fresh one for him likewise, and so they rode on together retoycing at this god fortune. They had not ridden the space of a mile, but Hermes demanded Palmerins name, which when hee knew, in great retoycing ha sayde: Ah worthy knight, now is my travell ended in search of you: trust me, I would refuse the best citie in Engeland, in respect of the great friendship I haue found at your hands, as also for the comfort your presence will bring to our dread Lord, and your noble companions, who long time haue expecyd your desired returne. As they rode on in these speeches, they came to a fayre fountaine, where Palmerin wold alight to refresh himselfe, and to bind vp such small wounds, as hee had taken in towting against the knights of Gaulc.

CHAP.

X. 3

## CHAP. LXI.

¶ How Frysol was deliuere out of Palmerins handes, by the meanes of Colmilio his Squire.



¶ The same day that Palmerin iouised with the knyghts of Gaule, the duke himselfe was gone on hunting, by meanes whereof, hee lost the sight of the pastime, which afterward he repented, because he had with him the most part of his knyghts, so that no one was left in his Castle but Frysol, that might be counted of any value, who beholding so many knyghts forayd by one, maruailed not a little what hee myght bee, and after long consideration of his haughtie exploits, hee said to himselfe, I cannot thinke this knyght to bee the man, against whom I combattid sometime in Fraunce, yet know I no man living but hee, that could perfore such rare chivaltrie. Now, because Palmerin had changed his armes, he verily imagined that it was not hee, yet was he desirous to know, but doubtfull to follow him by reason of his former experiance: againe, if hee shold suffer him to passe without some triall, he iudged it would returne to his great dishonour, wherefore hee resolved to aduenture his fortune. And in this determination hee came to the dukes sister, who loued him intirely, as you heare before: sh: beginning with him in this manner. I cannot suffisiently maruell sir Frysol, how you haue suffered in your owne victorie, my brotheris knyghts to be so shamefully conqueyed by one pasenger: I desire you swete friend, if ever you haue launce for a Ladys loue, that for my sake you

will

will deale with that proude knyght, and make him know that you can abate his courage, were his head framed of the hardest hammered brasse. If you fulfull my request, you shall do an acceptable dace to my brother, and to me such seruice, as I shall hereafter require to your owne content. Dame (quoth Frysol) I did intende to fight with him, but seeing it pleasech you so graciouly to comand me, no danger can withhold me, because the world can witness, what great availe so honorabile a Ladys fauor is, to the knyght that liues to renoune her name. So departing from his lady he presently armid himselfe, and incunting on a lustie Courser, followed the way that Palmerin was gone: the knyghts not a little glad therof, well hoping that he wold reuenge their dishonour. Frysol continued his trauaille so long, til at length he came to the fountaine where Palmerin refreshed himselfe, who had no sooner espied him, but surprised with great ioy, sayd to Hermes: I am sure this knyght comes hither to seeke me, wherefore I intreat you by the reuerend loue you beare to your best beloued, not aby way to hinder that fight betweene vs, til the end deliver victorie to one side or other: for he thinking to reuenge the reproch of his fellow, hath followed me to perfore what they were not able. Then Palmerin sodainly clasping on his helmet, mounted on horsebacke, and taking aduantage of the plaine field, because it was most conuenient for the combat, which Frysol perceiving, scornefully sayd: I thinke Sir knyght, you are some kinde of prophet, because you deuine so well the cause of my comming: unhappy wies it for you to preuaile in such sort against the duke of Gaules knyghts, which you must now pay for with to late reuenance. If I did them any harme, sayd Palmerin, it was their owne seeking, and by your arrogant speches it may be presumed, you are one of the same company: but the loue of the Dukes sister, canot shalde you from your deserued recompence. At these worts, Frysol well perceived, that this was the knyght hee so much doubted: Neverthe-

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

lesse his courage was so god, as remembryng the promise he made to his Lady, gaue spures to his Horse, and they encouered with such brayne chualry, as the shiners of their Launtes flew vp into the aire, and then they assaulted each other so roughly with their swordes, as well they myght bee esteemed right valiant Champions. No meetyng was intended on either side, for Frysol was determined to die or conquer, and Palmerin held the same resolution, so that the ground was coloured with their bloud, their armour and sheldes battered in pieces, and no hope left on either side of life. But as alwaies some mischance or other followes a noble mind, so fell it out with Frysol, for in their close buckling together, Palmerin had got surchold on his sheld, which Frysol striving soribly to recover, the buckles brake in sunder, and with the sodaine breach thereof he fell downe backward, when Palmerin leaping from his horse, said. And let me never hereafter bee called Palmerin, if now I do not reuenge my selfe sufficently. Which words when Frysol's squire heard, he came hastily and fell at his frete, laying. Noble knight, I beseech you for the honour you beare to arms, to pause a while, & tel me if you be Palmerin D'Oliva, for if you be, I am your brother, whiche haue suffered great paine and trauaile to finde you out. Palmerin presently knew Colmelio, the sonne of Gerrard his so-ter father, whose sight was so roysfull to him, as casting away his sword, he ran and embrased him about the necke, laying: My dere friend Colmelio, the most welcome man in the world to me. How happy may I account my selfe quoth Colmelio, to finde you when all hope was past: haung trauailed so many countreyes, and all in vaine: if then you loue me as you make protestation, let me intreate one fauour at your hand, that you forget your anger towards my master Frysol, and giue ouer your fight, for longtyme haue I served hym as my Lord, and well hath he deserued much better service then mine. Colmelio, sayde Palmerin, the thing thou demandest is meuuallous great, ne-

## THE HISTORIE

uerthelesse such is my comfort hauing mette with the, as I graunt thy request, and happily haue nowe escaped with life, considering what occasions haue past vs heretofore. So taking Colmelio by the hand, he said to Frysol, Sir Knight, at your Squires intreaty, I suffer you quietly to departe, and mette with mee againe at any time you thinke god: but you shall goe leake another Squyre, for Colmelio at this time shall goe with me. Frysol being wounded in many places, and very sainte with losse of his bloud, might easly be induced to this agreement of peace: But comuning to Colmelio, he saide: Will thou for sake thy Maister, and goe with his enemie: Trust me Sir (quoth Colmelio) you must needs pardon me, if in this matter I chance to offend you: for to sake him I forsooke my Fathers house, and haue continued a very laboursome search. If thou wilt needes goe (said Frysol) and that my intreaties may not dismake the, I will pray for the successe of thy desires, and thy Advancement to honour, and whyle I live I will make account of the as my Friende and Brother. So returning as he came, he beganne in this manner, to exclaime against Fortune. Oh cruell and inconstant Lady: sufficed it not the to dishonour mee before mine enemie, but thou must nowe robb me of my Squyre I loued so dearely: but so hast thou dealt with them of highest Calling, for infinit Kings and Potentates hast thou deceived, and before their thieffes enemys) dishonoured: such hath bene thy treachery to mee now at this instant, that I may iustly complaine of the while I live. As he continued these complaints, he mette divers armed knyghts that came to assit him, and the Duke himselfe in compaニー among them: who demauned of Frysol, whither his enemy were slaine, or sent away vanquished: Vanquished (saide Frysol) thinke you so god a knyght may bess easly vanquished? Then he discoursed his whole successe: whiche the Duke hearing, exclaymed, on his hunting, that he was not in preisence when Palmerin passed: wherefore he wold needes followe him, but onely that Frysol intreated him to the contrary, because the fight

## THE HISTORIE

appoched so neare, as it was impossible for him to ouertake Palmerin. The Duke in a maruellous rage, for that his enterprise fell out no better, returned with Fry soll, and an heure within night they came to his Castle, where he called for his best Chyurgions, charging them to give diligent attendance on Fry soll. When the Dukes Syster heard the misfortune of her Friende, she came hastily to him in his Chamber, and after many sweete kisses, saide: I beseeche you my Lord for-  
get my folly, for I was the cause of your mischaunce.

Madame (saide Fry soll) where no offence is committed, what needs any remission? If my Fortune haue bene ill, it is not for mee to complaine on you, for your Request tended to myne owne honour: but I must be content with my happe, though it hath sorted to so bad effect, and this doth yet comfort me, that I receyued my soyle by the onely Knight in the Worlde. And if the Heauenis please to lengthen my dayes, I shalbe desirous to do him seruice, for there is no man living to whom I could better afford it. Now neede I not mislike, hauing tryed him so often) if hee be worthy the loue of diuine Polinarda, for hee (beyond all others) doth best deserue it.

Why, how now? (quoth the Lady) are you so vnwise, to honour him so much, that hath so injured you? and which is most childish, to desire his seruice? Goe then and seeke him whom thou so louest, for by my mine honour, I more despise thee now then any man in the Worlde, thou making such reputation of him, whom thou oughtest to pursue with mortall hatred. Fry soll smiling thereat, said: Madam I must needs say so, seeing no ill words can amend mischaunce: So without any answer, shee stong forth of his Chamber. The next day, the Duke cauled all his Knights, commaunding them to restraine the passage no longer at the Bridge, intending to go to the Court, so soone as Frisoll had recovered his health.

CHAP.

## THE HISTORIE

### CHAP. LX.

¶ How Palmerin, Hermes, and Colmelio, returned to London, and the good Enterayntment the King of England made them.



After that Fry soll was returned from the Combat, Palmerin after many and sundry embracings of Colmelio, went with him to the Fountaine, where he left Hermes, all thre together, making no small ioye, Colmelio for his happie finding of Palmerin, and hee for the loue of his supposed Brother, and Hermes, for the comforthe he shold bring the King his Maister, being able now to acquainte his Hignesse with Palmerins Name, which hee was loathe that any in the English Courte shold knowe, wherefore he saide: Nowe can you not (my Lorde) heare after hide your Name, though you haue bene daintie of it all this while. It is true Syr (quoth Palmerin) albeite I little thought to bee discovered so soone: but seeing it is so come to passe, my hope is in the Higness, who will defende mee in all mine attempts. Now tell me Colmelio, what newes in Greece? Truly my Lorde (quoth hee) the discourse will be long and tedious: therfore if you please to mount on Horsebacke, it will serue well to shorthen the thought of our Journey. So as they roade towardes London, hee beganne to discouer, in how many places hee had made search and sought him in Greece, and how at length hee hearde of him at Macedon, by report of his conquest of the Serpent, at the midnayntaine fortynere, whiche was the meanes that had restored the King of Macedon to his former health. And afterwardes, how

## THE HISTORIE

holde hee left Grece trauelling into Allemaigne, and from thence into England, at what time the Emperours power was discomfited: and hearing great Fame of Fryssoll his late Daunger, hee spent some time in his seruice, not doubting but by his meanes to finde the man hee looked for. Palmerin was somewhat moued, hearing Colmelio so commend Erisol, wherefore he demanded of him, if hee knew any thing of that Knights lignage. *No my Lord (quoth he) but I can assure yee, that hee is one of the most gentlest Knights in the world, and hee concealeth his parentage very secretly, which makes me iudge hee is descended of roiall byzth.* After Colmelio had ended his discourse, hee repeated to him some parte of his Fortunes, in the ende perswading him that hee would remunerate his paines in seeking him, and in tyme manifest the loue hee bare him. *By this time they were come to the City of London, Hermes riding before to the Palace, where hee aduertised the King, howe Palmerin was returned to the Cittie, which hee so highly contented the King, as often times he embrased Hermes, for bringing the man hee long desired to see: but Trineus and Ptolome exceeded him in joye, and presently both mounted on Horse-backe, to goe meete with theyz friend, when so many Embracings, Courtesies, and kinde Gratulations had passed between them, as is usuall at the meeting of long absent Louers: At my good Lord and friend (quoth Trineus) how long hath hard Fortune kept you from mee: and why did you departe, not vouchsafing a Farewell? What earnest occasion might cause such an unkinde departure? Trust mee, I persuaded my selfe in respect of the long continuance of our Amitie, that death could not procure such a seuerre Enterpise. My deere Lord (quoth Palmerin) it fauorably you haue some cause to complaine of mee: but when you understand how matters haue happened, you will not condemne me altogether. For at the tyme of my departure, I thought verily to returne the next day following: but such impotunate affayres continually fell out, as that I could not returne vntill this very instant. Ptolome saide as much*

## THE HISTORIE

much as Trineus did, notwithstanding, this fortunate meeting forbad all further accusations, and they became as god friendes as ever they were. So rode they to the Palace, where the king attending theyz comming, perceiued at length they were entred the Hall, when Palmerin falling on his knee, kissed his highnesse hand, who very honourably embracing him, saide, *Where hath my noble friend bene so long? What crooked fortune hath caused your so long absence? you departed from vs in blacke Armour, I pray you tell vs, where did you conquerre these sumptuous Armes? by the loue you haue to chualtie and to me: sacrifice me in my demand.* Palmerin seeing the king comured him so straightly, reported the truth of all his aduentures, how he had that armour of the Ladie Whose daughter hee delivred, and left his owne there broken in peeces. The king embrasing him againe, saide: *I cannot be perswaded, but all especiall aduentures, high god fortunes, and chearefull honours in the world, are onely reserved for you, and among all the rest, most marauilous is this of the Castle in the enchaunted Lake, which many knights haue heretofore attempted, but returned with the losse of theyz Horses, Armour, and with grete dishonour. Thysse Welcome are you for these happye tydings, as also for your gentle courtesie to Frisoll, who is a Knight of most honourable reputation. But in regard of your wearisome trauells, it is very requisite that you now shold goe to rest your selfe: therefore lette some bodie helpe to disarme you, and betake your selfe (on Gods Name) to your Chamber, Palmerin reputed the Kings Counsell most expedient, and therefore did accordingly as he comraunded him: So having reposed himselfe a while, hee came to see holde the Ducene and her Daughter fared, who would not suffer him to depart thence, before he had likewise acquainted her with all his Fortunes: especially the whole circumstance of all his Trauells at the Castle of the Lake. But night being come, and euery one betaking themselves to rest, Palmerin demanded of the Dame holde he followe*

## THE HISTORIE

ed his desires, and what he had concluded as concerning his loue: Ah deare friend, said Trineus, why aske you mes that question: do you not thinke that haing so lost you, I like-  
wise was disappointed of any meane to helpe mee? know  
then, that at this instant I am in the middest of all my mis-  
fortunes, for so badly hath it happened, that I am now fur-  
ther ston Agriola then ever I was, and I shall tell you how:  
Not many days since, as I was familiarly devising with my  
Ladie, the Duke of Gaules daughter chanced to heare such  
amorous speeches as passed between the Princesse and me:  
wherby she gatherd, that Agriola made som estimatiō of me  
whereupon she laboured to cause my Mistresse in shorū time  
mislike what I had so long travellē to perswade her with  
as thus.

That ill besemed a Princesse of her account, of so graci-  
ous discent, and daughter to such a mighty King, to conserue  
with strangers, or vouchsafe a listening to any thing they  
sayd: for they were none such as she reputed them, but after  
they had brought a Ladies honour into daunger, they then  
were satisfied, as they vSED it for a custome among  
their companions. And so well could she, feede the Prin-  
cessē humour, with these subuning and spightfull de-  
tractions, which seemed vnto her as swete and friendly per-  
suasions, that in steade of the little loue I lately conques-  
red, I finde nothing but strokines and disdaune, that she will  
scant afford me a looke. Which discourtesie hath well neare  
driven me to dispaire, in regard of her slender opinion of  
mee, as being so hindered onely through your absence. Often  
I dertermindd with Ptolome, to leaue the Courte and fol-  
low you in trauaile: but the King by no meanes would  
permit mee, sending many of his owne Knightes, because I  
should not goe: yet was I resolued, that had you not come,  
no displeasure whatsoeuer should haue held mee here: but  
to finde you I intended, or loose my life. This falleth out verie  
hard, quoth Palmerin, for by these meanes we shall stay  
here God knoweth how long: beside, Hermes knoweth my

name,

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

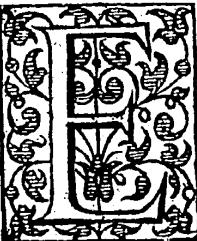
name, which makes me doubt least we shall be revealed the  
Emperour likewise may be offendēd at our long tarriance.  
In regard of all this, god Prince, I thinke it best, that we  
send your Squire and Vrbanillo my Dwarfe, to aduertise  
his Maestie of our affaires, and how by reason of the tem-  
pest, we were cast quite out of ourcōs so farre, as we could not  
by any meanes assit his Armie, not doubting but to see his  
Vighnesse in very shorū time. In the meane while, we may  
practise meanes to win the Princesse fauour againe, and  
so in god time depart hence, with the honourable prize that  
we came for. Trineus was newly reviued with these spe-  
ches, wherefore he desired, that betimes in the morning he  
would dispatch their Servants towards Allemaign. Which,  
Palmerin failed not to do, in respect of a dreame he had the  
night before, for he imagined that he saw his Ladie Polynar-  
da in maruaillous heauinesse, and that she sayd to him, Alas  
my Lord, what shall become of me? For I am narrowly  
sought to be separated from you. This fearefull vision so dis-  
couraged him, as he sent thence his Dwarfe, to shew her  
what trouble he had with his dreame, and how constant he  
remained in his loue to her.

CHAP.

# THE HISTORIE

## CHAP. LXI

How Palmerin promised the Princesse Agriola, to conuay her out of England, with his friendes, which hee performed to the speciall content of the prince Trineus.



Early on the next morning, Palmerin arose, and wrote a letter to his Lady Polinarda wherein hee secretly put a ring, which shee gaue him when hee departed from her, straightly commanding Vrbanillo that hee should diligently attende on the Princesse till hee came, which should bee with all the spedde he could possible. Ptolome likewise wrote to his Ladie Brionella, and these Letters dispatched, the Messengers immediatly sette forward on their iourney. From this time Colmelio was Palmerins Squire, which pleased him very well, because hee knew that Palmerin was nobly borne, so that by his meanes in time hee shold rise to preferment. This day the king would ride abroade a Hunting, which gaue Palmerin occasion to see the faulcon flie, beeing reputed by the king and all his traime, to be the best that euer fley. In this time of recreation, Hermes reported to the King, that the knight so long absent was named Palmerin, and the same knight that wonne so much honour in Fraunce, which so wellcontented the king, as he more and more desired his companie: summoning all his Barons and Lordes to his Court, where he made such feastes, triumphs, and other sportes, for the honour of the noble Palmerin and his

com-

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

companions as the like had not beene of long time before.

At right, when the Markers, Mummeries and Morriscoes were in presence, that Palmerin espyed conuenient time to talke with the Princesse, he tooke her aside to a Window, and thus began. Madam, before I begin what I haue to acquaint you withall, I must give you this ring, as I was commaunded by the Lady of the Castle in the Lake: the singular vertues thereof are such, as I intreat you to keepe it continually on your finger: which Agriola receiving, with a curteous reverence, faithfully promised to accomplish his request: then Palmerin, with earnest affection on his Friends behalfe, thus continued his discourse. I cannot but maruell, sayre Princesse, you beeing a Ladie of so speciall qualitie, renoumed among the most vertuous creatures in the world, for your rare integrity and profounde judgement, that you will be governed by the vnadvised perswassions of other: which I would not believe, had not the Prince Trineus certaintly assured mee, how since my departure, in steap of fauourable countenance, and the intrestance beseeing so great a Lorde, he can haue nothing but scowlnes, disdaine, and coyse regarde, which is as easie for him to indure, as a thousand deaths one after another. Assure your selfe so faire beguiled, as your councellors dissuade you from your chieffest god, desirous to withhold you from the height of honour, whereof you cannot sayle beeing matched in Marryage with the most vertuous and worthie Prince Trineus. Make you no small account, that hee being one of the most noble States on the Earth, hath left his Parents, his Friendes, and Countrey, hath pass so many solitarie, strange, and vncouth Regions, hath aduentured the iniurie of the Seas, beaten with so many bitter blastes, and rasing billowes, every minute in danger of Shipwrecke, and all for your Loue: Thinke you that hee being Banne to the Emperour of Allemaigne, attending every day the rule and gouernement of the Empire, that he came hither to you in hope of your rich dowerie: So truf mee, Madame, and I thinke your owne Conscience doth so resolve you, that never home

## THE HISTORIE

hee could haue found other, endued with larger possessions then this Realme affords you. But hearing the fame of your manifold vertues, rare life, choyse beautie, and al other god gifts, hee was willing without regard of his owne estate, to thrust himselfe in daunger, yea, to forget himselfe for your loue, which hitherto hee hath with religious seruice intreated, and except you intertaine him with more gracious fauour, hee is in danger of life. Which if it shold happen by your occasion, for euer you shall bee uested of monstrous ingratitude, and Christendome shold sustaine a losse vnirecoverable. How far such a thought ought to be from you, I leave to your owne construction. If hitherto you haue knowne mee, a knight readie to support the causes of Ladies far beneath your heighth, thinke you I haue not greater reason to honour you? yea not to moue you with any request, but what may every way aduance your credite. And though my Lord Trineus were not of the blood imperiall, yet might his gentle heart, vnfeigned loue, and surpassing humanitie, cause you to make choyse of him, aboue all other whatsoeuer they be. But seeing it so falleth out, that you will not regard good counsell, following rather the perswasion of meane capacities, whose iudgements may not reach to so high occasions, continue in your obſſuacie, and marke the end of ſuch indiſcret censures. I ſee that our company is yokesome to you, therefore (ſooner then you imagine) we will remoue that occaſion. I know well enough, that you intend to match with the duke of Gaule, who is but your fathers ſubiect: ſo refuſing the degree of an Emprefſe, you ſhall tarry in England, and bee a Duchelle. Thinke you, that if my Lord matched not with you, the greatest Princesſe in Europe, would not triumph in his loue? Yes certainly Madam, when you may at leſure ſit downe and recount your losſe, which you ſuſtained by flatterers and paresites. Thinke what will be the danger after our departure, the Emperor his father, not minding to poſket the losſe of his late armie, will ſend ſuch a puissant strength

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

strength into England, as the King your father, nor the duke your husband that muſt be, will ſcarce excuse the whole ruine of this countrey. The means to prevent this mishap, and allſure your continuall tranquilitie, is in entertaining the counſell I haue giuen you: where otherwife your ſelfe conceite, makes way to manifold misfortunes and dangers. Thus concluding his ſpeeches, in great beauinesſe he turned from her, whereat the Princesſe inwardly greeued, for the King which he had giuen her was of ſuch vertue, that after ſhe had put it on her finger, ſhe was wonderfully affected toward Trineus, as ſhe could not thinke on any other: wherefore in this ſudden change, and trembling with the doubtfull conceit of her owne ſpirit, ſhe called Palmerin to her, thus anſwering. Alas my Lord, and ſneily comfort in these heavy paſſions, what ſearc hath these hard and vigorous ſpeeches brought me into? It is very true that following the counſell of young Ladies like my ſelfe, haue bene peruaded to cast off the Princesſe loue, accouning him but a ſimple knight errant: but now being assured of his nobilitie, loyalty, and great gentlenesse, and that he would not request (as I hope) any thing contrary to vertue and honour, I believe what you haue ſaid, and ſubmit my ſelfe to your diſcretion, as willing to obey any thing you ſhall command me. Yet this I muſt requeſt, that aboue all things mine honour may be defended, for rather would I ſuffer mine owne losſe for euer, then this famous realme or my father ſhould be any way endangered. Believe me Lady, quoth Palmerin, if thus you continue, you may well venture to gaue this generall benefit, for henceforth there will none be ſo hardy, as to moleſt your father with warre, hauing matched his daughter with the great Emperours ſonne of Allemaigne. To conſirme this pro-mife, you ſhall giue me this ſweete hand which I kille, as the hand of the ſoueraigntie Lady and Emprefſe of high Allemaigne, that you will not ſhrinke hereafter from this hono-rable determination; but for your owne regard, you muſt

## THE HISTORIE

conceale this Contract from your most truffie friendes, and dispose in such sorte of your selfe: for I hope to compasse the meanes and opportunitie, that you shall leaue England, and goe to the noble regions of your most worthy Lord and Husband. What I have promised (sayde Agriola,) I will perforne, and with what spedee you shall thinke convenient: albeit I repose such trust in you, that hauing bene so fortunate hitherto in your Enterpises, you will be most carefull in accomplishing these daungerous intentions. Thus beforz they departed, the mariage of Trineus and Agriola was concluded, and because they would not as then be suspected, they kept into the Daunce, nert the young Prince, shewing very amiable and pleasant gestures: which Trineus (in his often turning) diligently noted: imagining that Palmerin had not so long conferred with his Ladie, but that some assured resolution was determined, yet hee dissembled his inward ioyes so curaningly as he could. Eache eye was fixed on these two braue Knights, the Ladies and Gentle-women persuading themselves, that they never behelde more Noble personages: deserving like estimation for theyr speciall Chivaltie, as also for theyr Bountie and Courly Civilitie.

Thus passed the Feast in all kunde of pleasures, and these two Knights withdrawing themselves into theyr Chamber, Palmerin discoursed to Trineus his talkie with Agriola, and how he had with such cunning pursued the matter, that in the ende he had obtained what hee deiraunded, reporting the sequelle of the gentle conclusion he made with the Princesse.

Those ioyfull newes draine the Prince into such a quandarie, as hee could not expresse his secrete content, wherefore Palmerin awaking him out of his musing, sayde: As I am true Knight, I never thought that a man of your estate could be of so slender courage. What countenance wouldest you vs in a matter of sorow, when such dainty tydings make you so effeminate? Be of god chare Man: Agriola is your ewne, and none but Trineus must be her onely Lord and Husband. I must confess my Lordz, (sayde Trineus,) that my beha-  
uitor

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

uor, but little besemes my calling: but that cause therof is, that I know no desert in my selfe that may be esteemed worthy the least fauor of my Lady. Beside, these newes brought me such speciall contentment, as I am no longer mine owne, but in her onely I liue, and she holdes the ballance of my daunger or felicity, in that I was boorne to be her servant. But now I desire you my Lord, seeing the occasion offereth it selfe, wehinder it not by any negligence: for if now we loose the fauour of the time, we never (I feare) shall recover the like, therefore let vs so soone as we can, prouide all things ready for our departure. Refer that to me, quoth Palmerin, be you as ready as I shall make prouision. The next day hee went to the maister of a shipp, to know when time would serue for their secret departure, who answered him, that the time was then very conuenient, the winde seruing prosperously, and the Sea calme and nauigable, and hee woulde furnish him with all necessaries for his passage. Quoth Palmerin, see that your men and all things be in readines, that we may launch away vpon halfe an houres warning. So departed the maister about his busines, and Palmerin to the prince Trineus, whom he informed with those glad tydings, now nothing remaining but to know the princesse pleasure, she being likewise as ready to depart as the most forward. But (quoth Palmerin) how shall we safely get you forth of the Court? I will, sayd the Princesse, this night feigne my selfe sicke, and for my greater quiet, cause my Ladys to absent my Chamber, and so secretly will I escape disguised to shs backe gate of the Pallace, which is not far from my lodgings, wherto I may passe vnseene of any, and from thence goe with you safely to the Hauen. This practise was faithfully concluded betwene them, and Agriola withdrew her selfe closely to her chamber, where at night she began her counterfeit sicknesse, commanding her Ladys to leaue her alone, because she woulde see if shre could sleepe a little. Her Ladys little thinking of her secret deceipt, went to their

## THE HISTORIE

owne lodgings very pensiue and sorowfull, which Agriola, perceiving, couered her selfe with her night mantle, and came to the place where the Knights laid her comming, Palmerin taking her vnder his arme, conuayed her in that maner to the princes chamber, where they altogether laide downe the order for their embarking, Trineus extolling his happy fortune, seeing his Lady so ready to accomplish his desire. They arming themselues, and taking with them the princesse costly iewels, wherof she had plentifully stroyed her selfe, they came to the hauen, where they found the shipp and mariners ready, and getting all abord, the wind seruynge for their auiale, they set saile, and before day they got safte enough from London.

## CHAP. LXII.

How the king of England and the Queene were aduertised, how their daughter Agriola was conuayed away, and of their sorrow for her departure



We Duke of Gaules daughter, who continually was bedfellow to the Princesse, absynting her selfe very long from bed, fearing to disquiet her Ladie, being sicke as she supposed: but comming at length to see how shee fared, finding the bedde emptie, and Agriola gone, shee presently made a great out-crie, wherat the other Ladies came, and altogether amazed at this sudden aduenture, went to the Queenes Chamber, where they reported how the Princesse was gone, but how, or whan, they knew not. The Queene at these tydings suddenly arose, and comming to her

daughters

## OF PALMERINDOLIVA.

daughters Chamber found it too true, which made her fall into such pitifull acclamations, safte surpassing thole of Maguelona, when she lost her friend Peter of Prouince in the wood.

In these lamentings shee returned to the king, whose heauines exceeded iudgment, for the losse of his daughter, and then came diuere lordes and gentlemen, who declared that the strange Knights were likewise departed. Which raised such a rumour through all the Cittie, that they had stolen away the Princesse. The King understanding the generall sorrow for his daughters absence, said. In sooth my friends, if these Knights haue done such service for mee, they haue sufficiently recompenced themselves, in doing me the greatest dishonour they could devise: yet will I not condemne them so much as my daughter, for that I am perswaded shee procured this mischaunce. But now I well perceiue what credit a man may repose in his enemy: for Palmerin euermore serued the Emperour of Allemaigne, then hardly could hee be true to mee. Yet is it in vaine for me to blame him, or his companions, if they tooke the aduaantage of their alone intents. But now there is no remedy, my daughter is in the company of most chosen knights: if she haue done well, or ill, hereafter her deserts will answer her misdeemeanour. Thus the King would not suffer any pursue after them, though the Queene and her Ladies earnestly intreated hym: hee answering that no such mone shold be made, for a childe so vngratefull and disobedient, but having committed an action so vile and enforme, she shold no more account of her as her childe. And well may we (quoth hee) so refuse her, in that shee would leaue her parents, and depart with strangers: happie might we haue accounted our selues, if we had lost her in her infancie. The Queene seeing her lord so impatient, appeased his displeasure so well as shee could, because shee would not moue him too much. Within few dayes after the Duke of Gaule arrived at the Court, who most of all

## THE HISTORIE

grieved at these unhappy tidings, wherefore hee perswaded the king to proclaim open warre against the Emperour of Allemaigne, assuring him, that the knight which most commonly accompanied Palmerin, was Trineus the Emperors sonne. When the king heard the Dukes speches, forgetting his anger, he rejoiced, esteeming himselfe happy, and his daughter wife, in matching her selfe with such a husband: and if she had made her choyse among all the Princes of the world, shee could not haue sorted out one comparable in honor. In brefe answered the duke, that for a daughter so lost, hee would not sake the death of his louers and subiects: but being one of Fortunes changes, he could not withstand it, and thus the king wisely and patiently endured his griefe.

## CHAP. LXII.

How Urbanillo and the Prince Trineus Esquire, arrived at the Emperours Court, and what great ioy their coming procured.



In this place our history taketh this occasion, how the King of Fraunce daily expecting newes from Palmerin, as concerning his intent of marriage, betwene his daughter and the Prince Trineus: but seeing hee heard no tidings at all, hee determined to send his ambassadores to the Emperoz, electing for chere in this embassage the Count of Arminganc, to whome hee gaue full power and authority to conclude the marriage betwene Trineus and his daughter Lucemania, as also of the

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

Princesse Polynard with his sonne and heire. The king dispatching all things for his Ambassage, sent many barons and knights of name to accompany the Count, to countenance the matter with moxeroyaltie and magnificence, and in this manner they came to Gaunt, where the Emperour being aduertised of their arruall, made no great account thereof, such was his griefe for his sonnes absence and Palmerins, of whom he could not haue any tidings, as also for the soyle his Armie sustained in England. But while the messenger from the Ambassadours of Fraunce stayed with the Emperour, Urbanillo and the Princes Squire entered the hall, whose presence highly contented the Emperour, as embracing them very louingly, he demanded for Palmerin and his sonne Trineus, when they delivering their letters, and the Emperour perswaded thereby of their spedie returne, was greatly contented, saying to the Ambassadours messenger, My friend, seeing I haue heard such long looked for tidings of my sonne, you may returne to the Counte your Maister, desiring him to come when hee thinks conuenient, and he shall be heartily welcome to me: with this answere the messenger departed. Then the Emperoz taking Urbanillo by the hand, said: Tell me now I pray thee, how fares thy Maister? Where is he? is my sonne with him? My gracious Lord, quoth the Dwarfe, where your noble sonne abideth, there is my Maister, both of them in god disposition, and highly honoured. And hereof I can assure your Maiestie, that you haue a sonne, who god reason ought to bee numbered among the best knights living, for such honourable experiance hath hee made of his worthinesse, that perpetuall memoire will record his deedes of chivalrie: what else remaineth you shall know at their comming, which will be sone so as they can possibly. I ever perswaded my selfe, said the Emperour, that in the company of so god a knight as Palmerin, my sonne could not but purchase credit and honour: therefore seeing they haue such prospetitie of health, I care the lesse for their stay, but welcome are

## THE HISTORIE

are they whensoeuer they come. By this time Polynarda heard of the Dwarves arrial, which greatly pleasing her she sayde to Brionella; I pray the sweete friend go spedily and seeke the Dwarfe, that wee may knowe what is become of our Lords and my brother Trineus. Brionella, who longed to heare of her loue Sir Ptolome, whom well she knew to be one of the company, with all spedie accomplished the Princesse commandement, and found the ioyfull messenger with the Emperour, who tooke great delight in the Dwarves reports: but his Maestie perceiving with what cherefull countenance shee came to bring Vrbanillo to her Ladie the Princesse, bad him go with her, hoping by his meanes his Daughters extreme sadnesse would be comforted. Brionella being forth of the Emperours presence, embrased him many times to know his tydings, when the Dwarfe not ignorant of the Ladies passions, deliuered Ptolomes letter to cheare her: but when the Princesse saw Vrbanillo comming, with the teares in her eyes shee ranne apace to mete him, and calling her armes about his necke, embrased him very often, saying: Tell me Vrbanillo, tell me, how fares my brother and thy Maister Palmerin? Madame, quoth the Dwarfe, so well as your owne heart can wish, and will ere long bee here with you. Then deliuered he the letter from Trineus, which certified her of his shott returne, and that he would bring with him the thing shee most esteemed. But the wag knowing shee expected other matters, and that her brothers medice was not sufficient for her cure, hee gaue her his maisters letter, when shee hastily breaking open the zeale, found the ring which her loyall friend had sent her, and after shee had welcomed it with many devout kisses, shee put it on her finger, with these words. I charge thee keepe this token safely, in witnessse of the Knights gentlenesse that sent it, whom my heart hath made speciall choyse of aboue all other. Then reading the letter, and discreetly considering (not without great effuse of teares) the sweet words, hum-

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

ble supplications, entira excuses, and extreame passions, that her friend continually suffered for her loue, deliuering many bitter sighes, she said: Ah my true and loyall friend, I belieue well, and take in god part your cause of absence, being assured, that if possibly you could returne sooner, nothing should stay you from the place, where the onely remedie of your dolorous greeves abideth. But seeing for my loue you may not forsake my Brother, I pray you for your continual safetie, and speedy conduction to your longing desires, that mine eyes ouerwatched with tedious expectation, and my heart neare tyred with bothelese wishings, may by your presence be thorooughly conforsted. Afterward Vrbanillo brasely reported to her the noble actions of his Lord and Maister, the loue of Trineus to the Princesse Agriola, describing her beautie and rare perfections, whereupon Polinarda thus answered:

Believe me Vrbanillo, if the Princesse be so faire as thou sailest shee is, her great vertues and firme loyaltie likewise comparable, envy and falsereport shall not impeach her, to be reckoned among the most happy Ladies of the world; and her desires will be as honorably effected, as with vertuous thoughts shee first began them. The like (I doubt not) will happen to thy maister, for fortune hath evermore so specially fauoured him, as now it were against reason shee should alter her countenance. So departed the Dwarfe from the Princesse, returning to the Emperour, who by no meanes could get any other tidings of his son then what you haue heard, which made him doubt the dwarfe iuggled with him. The next day the Emperour sent his chieffest Lords and Barons, to conduct the French Ambassadores to Court, which was sumptuously hanged with Tapistry, especially the great hall, which was adorneed with costly cloth of gold and rich Purple, as it had beeene the Palace of Salomon. The Ambassadores entertained with maruelous roialtie, and haueing deliuered the summe of their Ambassage, the Emperour answered, that hee wold conserue thereon with his Councell,

## THE HISTORIE

Councell, in me any while they might returne to their losings. After they were departed the Hall, the Emperour demanded of the Prince, Electors, and the rest of his nobilitie, if these marriages of his sonne and daughter, with the heire and Princesse of Fraunce, might not bee graunted, as well for the utiltie and honour of the Empire, as for the generall benefit of Christendome, commaunding them to speake their iudgements without feare. The Lords altogether aunswered, that the motion was so god and the ali-  
iance so honourable, as it was no way to be disliked. I will then (quoth he) talke with the Empresse, that she may vnderstand her daughters opinion, & then my Lords of Fraunce shall be answered. So leauing them he went unto the Empresse chamber, to whom hee reported his agreement with his Councell, which pleased her likewise marauilous well: but when she had a little considered on the matter, she aunswered, that but little could be said before Trineus returned home againe. You reason well, quoth the Emperour, but in meane time I pray you sound your daughters iudgement that we may returne our brother of Fraunce some certaine aunswer. Which she promised to doe, and so departing from her Lord, she went to her daughers chamber, where hauing commaundered her Ladies aside, she thus began. Faire daughter, it is the Emperours pleasure and mine, that you marie with the eldest sonne and heire of Fraunce, and your brother Trineus with his sister, for he is one of the most renowned Kings in Europe, and his son recounted amoung the best Knights of the world: for which god fortune you may thanke the heauens, that so great a Prince offers his Sonne to be your husband. Advise your selfe of your aunsver, for by your opinion must the Ambassadours be dispatche hence, whocame to the Court for nothing else but to conclude these honourable marriages. Polinarda hearing the words of her mother, was surprised with such sodaine heauines, as she could not tell what to aunsver: but fearing the Empresse should perceiue that her loue was alreadie determined

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

termined, with a sadde countenance thus replied.

Madam, you know what promise I made my brother, the day when he departed from the Court, in the presence of you, and all the nobilitie, that I would not Harry before his returne: and me thinks I were greatly to be blamed, and well worthy grieuous reprehension, if I shuld so falsifie my word, which I cannot do, without impeaching of myne Honour. And herein shall I follow the laudable vertue of the Emperour my Father, who evermore esteemed his Promise above all earthly possessions. Beside, I can assure you that my brother will never marie with the Princesse Lucemanit: For her Loues one many degrees beyonde her, and (may I speake it without offence) one of the most beautifull Ladys that euer Nature framed. Thay Madame, my Father and you haue excuses sufficient and availeable, wherewith to aunsver the King of Fraunce. It may bee (quoth the Empresse) that your Brother loues else where: but I can tell ye, that neither he nor you shall do any thing, contrarie to the Emperours commandement. Polinarda seeing her Mother persist in her opinion, bitte in her sorowes with many secrete sighes: yet knew she so well how to dissemble her passions, as the Empresse could not discerne her private meaning. So returned she to the Emperour, aduertising him of her Daughters aunsver: wherat he was so offended, as in great anger he came himselfe to his Daughter, saying: Why, how now Daughter: Are you so holde to disobey my commandement? Do dare you repugne against my will? All is to no end that you haue doubled with your Mother: For (will ye or no) it shall be as I haue appoynted. I knowe right well dread Lord and Father, (qd. he) that I ought no way to deny your god pleasure: But yet rather will I dye a thousand deaths, then consent to matche with the Sonne of Fraunce, considering what promise I haue made unto my deere Brother: and if I shold but once so farre dishonour my selfe, as not to regard what I haue promised, I should thinke my selfe unworshie hereafter to be called your Daughter. Thus stood she resolute in

## THE HISTORIE

In her answers, and therewith shedde such a boundance of teares, as the Emperour was constrainned to tell the Ambassadours, that the marriages could not bee concluded till the returne of Trineus, notwithstanding hee granted all the articles of their embassage. The princesse quallifing her greene as well as shee could, sent for the Dwarfe, and taking him by the hand, sayde. Alas my friende, I am now in the greatest perplexity in the world, neverthelesse, one thing comforts me: that thou beholdest the true loue and loyalty I beare thy maister, which never shall be broken, what euer become of me. And would to God hee were now here, then would I speake it openly without feare of any, that I am his, and he myne. Madame, quoth the Dwarfe, if you continue faithfull to my maister, perswade your selfe of his assurance, for he building on your constancie, takes such continuall pleasure in remembryng you, that it is the onely meane that preserues his life: and you may bee bold to credit me, that if your brothers loue did not with holde him, hee would haue bin here long ere this, but he will comescome inough (I hope) to end this doubt. As for me, I am of the opinion that heauen will not suffer so god a knight to die, but first will permit him to see his mistres. Die? quoth the princesse, soner let all the knights in the world ende thei<sup>r</sup> dayes, and the eldest Sonne of France likewise, though he loue mee so dearely, so might I bee rid of these importunate Ambassadours. The Emperour seeing hee could get no other answere of his daughter, concluded with the French ambassadours, that so soone as his son was returned, hee should be aduertized, and so soone that time they might depart: but the empresse and hee first bestowed on them many rich presents, and so in short time they arrived againe in Fraunce, where great ioy was made in hope of these marriages, albeit they little thought the Prince Trineus would tarrie so long. Above all other, the French prince was most ioyfull, hearing the Countie of Armignac report the wonderfull beauty of Polinarda: but

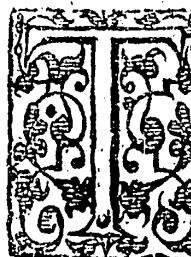
hee

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

the god Lady was of an other minde, for shee had rather betake her selfe to a Cloyster, then to breake her faith to Palmerin, whom shee loued so constantly. Thus leauis we her conferring with Urbanillo, returning to Palmerin, and the Prince Trineus.

## CHAP. LXIII.

¶ How Palmerin beeing thus on the Sea, caused Trineus there to marrie the Princesse Agriola.



His Noble company beeing thus on the Sea, hauing Uclinde at will, sayled with such expedition, as in soure daies they had gotten farre enough from England, and the Prince seeing the Princesse Agriola very pensive and sadde, comforting her with many sweete welcomes and kisises, and taking her by the hand, thus spake.

O Soueraigne Creatour, hows shall I render sufficient thankes and praise to thee, in graunting me the onely thing I desired? Ah sweet Madame, and my onely deare Distress Agriola, how much is your Servant indebted to you? Hath any knight more cause to honour and extoll his Lady then hee? Believe me sayre Princesse, such are the rare effects of your gracious Nature, and I so ioyfull of my happy Fortune, as neyther Friend or Father shall fetch you againe from me. If my life might endure the length of ten mens, and every day I should accomplish wonders in your god Service, yet could I not remunerate the least parte of your Princelie deserts. But if your Loue be such to mee, as I am right well assured

it.

## THE HISTORIE

It is, let me intreat you to forbear this heauinesse, and banish from your thoughts your melancholy humours: for seeing you so sadde and penisue, I suffer a torment worser then death at false. For let me perceue ( how little soever it bee) that my presence may bee to your liking, and our present Enterpise somewhat more pleasing: I flye to the Heauenis with conceit of happines, and value my Fortune aboue the reach of humane capacity. In sted of teares, let vs vs quainte tearms, and for the jumps, pleasant imaginacions: persuadie your selfe Madame, you are now in his custodie that honours you for your vertues, reverence h you for your diuine perfections, extolleth you for incomparable merites, and loueth for you, with his very bittermost endeuors. Thinke not Madame, though you haue left your Parents, the fault is not pardona-ble: For the new alliance wherein you haue combined your selfe, shall one day glad you with your speciall content: that what you do imagine now a dangerous offence, will bee imputed an act of prouident and Princely discretion. Then shall you finde it true, what Palmerin hath spoken, and his promi-ses of preferement, and Imperiall dignitie, shall be both right-ly and sufficiently performed. Let these persuasions, if not my intreaties, excell these Passions, and procure better con-fort. Madame (quoth Palmerin) though you haue left your Native Countrey, consider the occasion, the loue of a mighty Prince, and the Heauenly appoyntment, that your noble ver-tues should be coupled together, hath brought you from Eng-land, to sit on the Imperiall seate in Allemaigne.

How carefull haue we haue bene of your honour, your selfe can witnesse, no motion beeing offered to prejudice your ly-king. That you are contracted before the onely Immortall witnesse, you will not denie: Therefore to prevent all ensu-ing daungers, the actuall Ceremonie shall be here celebrated, and the Royaltie thereof duly Solemnized, when wee shall come into Allemaigne. So if Hymen claimes his due, you may graunt it without any reproache, and Iuno will as well smile at her sacred Offering here, as if it were in Bolwer, or

Pall,

## THE HISTORIE

hall. The credite of Princes, are charie, and angrie Parents, may hinder, what heauen doth further: but the deede done, it cannot be recalled, nor can ycu be viuoxed but only by death, and pittie were it, loue so well begun, but should continue, therefore (so please you) let it be performed. The Princes both agreed, they were married requiting their chal leue, with a sympathie of vertuous desires: but this time of de-light and pleasure had small continuance, for Fortune enemy to prosperitie, accompanied with her eldest sonne Mischance converted their joyes into sorrow, teares, and pains unspeasable, as you shall reade hereafter.

These Louers thus rising merrily on the streame, sud-denly the See began to swell, the winde changed roughly, the Skies were troubled, and such a dangerous tempest beat vpon their shipp, as the Pilot, Master, and Mariners knew not what to say, and fwe dayes together they were in this perplexitie, sometime forward, then againe backward, that no hope of life was expected, but every one prepared them-selves for death, the implacable messenger of God, for they could desire no other remedie. A grio Walton accustomed to these dangers, was maruellously discomfited: but Trineus per-suaded her with many examples, in that such stratagemes were vsual on the See, albeit, she to end the feare she saw before her eyes, would often times haue cast her selfe into the raging waters. At length the tempest over-passted, they descryed an Island, whereto with the helpe of their Dares they coasted, shrouding themselves vnder the sides of an high mountaine: and although the place seemed casuall, yet there they determined to cast Anker, vntill the Seas were more calme and quiet. Being thus vnder the Lee, and defended from the winde with the huge Rocke, Palmerin came vpon the hatches, to see what iudgement he could make of the I-slan, and so delectable the country seemed vnto him, as he was desirous to goe on shore, taking his Faulcon on his fist that was giuen him in England, so with no other defence but his Sword, he went to view the soyle, not suffering any body

2

to

## THE HISTORIE

to beare him company. Trineus and Agriola perswaded him to the contrary, but all would not serue: for the situation of the Countrey pleased him so well, as he walked on in great contentation, not minding to returme againe to the shyp, till toward the euening.

## CHAP. LXIII.

How Trineus, Agriola, Ptolome and all their Marriners, were taken by the Turks, after that Palmerin was gone to view the Island.



He Historie reporteth, that while Palmerin was thus absent, there arrived four or five Turkish Galles, who likewise glad to shun the tempestuous weather, cast Anker neare to Trineus shyp, and seeing no body on the decke of this strange vessel, because (leaving no harm) they were all at rest: they enuironed it about, and having boorded it, the Captaine of the Turks called to them, saying: What are ye asleepe within, that ye let vs boord ye without any resistance? by the reuerence of our gods we shall alw. lieye, but little to your easle. So came the Souldours on boord after their Captaine, who put the Pilote, the Master, and many of the Marineris to the Sword, sparing none but such as they pleased to ransome. Then searching the Cabins, they found Trineus, Agriola, and Ptolome, whom they tooke prisoners, by reason they were banished, as also somewhat sickly after their rough passage. The rousing Captaine or Pyrate, named Olimael, noting

the

## THE HISTORIE

the singular beauty of Agriola, commaunded her to be carryed on boord his Galley. When the Princesse sawe her selfe so hardly handled, and that her Lord was prisoner with these villainous Moores, so that perforce they must abandon one another: she brake noorth into pittifull acclama- tions, and looking on her husband, thus spake. Ah my Lord, how hard and strange is this fortune: haue we escaped a tem- pest so daungerous, now to fall into this mercilesse extremi- tie? Oh that you and Syyz Ptolome had bene Armed, that these Moores might haue bought our lives with the Sword: But despightfull chaunce hath so thwarter vs, as no meane is left to prevent our perill. Ah Palmerin, how greevous is thine absence, and how displesant will our mishap be to thée: how much would thy valour now availe vs, being vt- terly destitute of any succour or refuge? I know our mis- hap will so offend thée, as I feare thou wyl do some outrage on thy selfe. With these wordes she fell downe among them in a dead traunce, the sight whereof so enraged Trineus and Ptolome, as snatching weapons out of the Moores hands, they laide about them so lustily, that in short time they had slayne halfe a score of them. But vnable were they to con- tend against so many, wherfore being taken againe, they were bound so cruelly with Cordis and Chaines, as rent their tender and delicate flesh in many places: and being so conuayed into another Galley, their Squires likewise pri- soners with them, the Moores tooke what they pleased out of the shyp, and when they had done, set it on fire. Then presently they wryed Anchor, and launching away, made haste, least any reskew should follow them, so that quick- ly they lost the sight of the Island, and Olimael com- ming to see Agriola, assayed by any meaues to asswage her heauiness, embrasing her in his armes, and promising her great riches if shee wold be pacified. But all his speeches were in vaine, for shee seeing the Moore imbrace her, with angry stomache like a Lyon enraged, caught him by the haire and the throat, saying: Thou villaine Dogge, thinkest

## THE HISTORIE

thou I take any delight in thy company? How darest thou traitorly theſe lay hande on me? And ſo roughly did ſhe ſtrugge with Olimael, as if his men had not affiſed him, ſhee had ſtrangled him: notwithſtanding hee tooke all pati-ently, perſwading himſelfe, that by gentle ſpeeches, ſmooth flattering, and large promiſes, hee ſhould in time win her to his pleasure. So came he forth of the cabin, with his throat and face brauely painted with Agriolaes nayles, washing a-way the blodd, whch made comely circles about his phis-ſomie: then caſted hee the Captaunes and cheife of his compa-nye, willing them to ſhare the bootie among them, and hee would haue nothing but the Princesſe for his parte, for hee was ſo inueigled with the beautie of his paſtoner, as he had no delight but onely in beholding her. In this manner then he beſtowed his paſtoners, Trineus hee gaue to one of his Cowring, and Ptolome to a Knight that ſerued the Soldaie of Babilon, the Squires and the pelfe hee gaue among the common ſouldiours. But when the Prince ſaw hee muſt neade leaue his Lady, and each man would carry his paſtoner whether him pleased: his geefe for his wife, and ſo-roule for his friendes, I leaue to your iudgement, as not a-ble to be exprefſed. Yet ſome hope of comfort hee reposed in Palmerin, that by his meanes (being eſcaped theyz hands) he ſhould get againe Agriola, elſe was there way leſte to helpe him. Ptolome who dearely loued the Prince, be-fore they parted, thus began. Why how now my Lord? where is your workeſt prudence and diſcretion? Where is that conſtant magnanimitie, which in ſo many fortunes heretofore you uſed? What is it loſt, or haue you forgot it? What meane ye? Will ye be ſubiect to paſſions, as a weake effeſtinate person? You that are ſprung from the moſt au-ſtient noble and generous race of Chriftendome, eſteemed for a moſt courageous and vertuous Knight, will you bee diuen into theſe ſad and deſolate opinions? What then would a Turke, Moore or barbarous Myrmidon do in like afflictions? When he that hath auuurance of his God, & knows that

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

that all perſecutions, fortunes and miſhaps, are proues of his fideltie, and the meanes to attaine eternall quiet, ſhewes theſe vndutifull behauors, as though he had loſt all meanes of hope and conforde. If the body be affliſed, let the ſpirite be animated, and armed with patience, againſt all infirmi-ties of the flesh. Leaue theſe ſoft countenances for Women, and if you will not perſwade your ſelfe, that theſe troubles happen for the encreaſing of our ioy, it may bee the meane that God will forſake vs. Then neyther feare or diſpayre I pray you, for hee that ſuffered vs to fall into theſe Moore's handes, both can and will deliver vs againe. As for your Lady Agriola, doubt not of her uncoquerable loyaltie, for ſhee hath in her cuſtody a iewell of ſuch vertue, as no one can diſhonour her againſt her owne lyking. Comfort her ſelfe then in the power of the highest, and repoſe your ſelfe on the conſtanſie of your Lady, with this certaine perſuasion, that this croſſe and aduersitie hath fallen vpon vs, for our grea-ter god and aduauncement hereaſter. Then came Olimael, and interrupted theyz talk, commaunding nine or ten of his people, to conuay Trineus into another Galley, and Ptolome into that where his Maſter was, that ſo they might depart, to recouer the reſt of theyz Galleys, which were ſcattered from them by reaſon of the tempeſt. And ſo they departed one from another, the Galley wherein Trineus was diſcrying a godly ſhip of Chriftians, whereof they beeing glad, ſette ſayle with the winde towardes the Chriftians, who rode awaie ſo fast as they could, and had eſcaped, but that they met full with certaine Pyrates of Natolia, who ioyning with the Galleys, in the ende bor-ded her, and parted the ſpoyle among them: the winde ſu-ddenly beganne to chaunge, ſo that they were conuictiōn to ſlye for ſuccour to an Iſlaude in the Kingdome of Pafia, whch they reached in god time, glad to ſhade their ſoule from daunger: Theſe Pyrates thus came to Iſlaude, went all on ſhore to refresh themſelues: but ſo ſooner then ſooner ſette ſtepe on land, ſuch enchauntmente of the ſea

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

pearced through the whole Isle, as they presently knewe not one another. But to acquaint you with the manner of these Enchauntments, you must note, that the Isle where they landed was called Malfada, which name was gien it by the Lady therof, which was called likewise Malfada, the moſte ſubtil Magitian of her time: ſo that we may ſay of her, as the Poets feigned of the auncient Circes. And albeit ſhe was iſſued of Christian Parents, yet haſing ſuch familiarity with the Diuell and his maligne ſpirites ſhe would not acquainte her ſelfe with any goodneſſe towards Christians, but daylie practiſed theyr haſine and deſtruction. And for this intent, ſhe had of a long time before Enchaunted this Iſland with ſuch Charmes, that what ſhipping ſoever arrived there, could nouer depart thence againe, much leſſe ſuch as once entred within the Iſland. They being thus ſtayed, Malfada would come her ſelfe, and thofe ſuch as thēe liked, therof the tranſformed into Harts, Wolues, Dogges, Beares, and all manner of Beasts. Such likewife as ſhe tooke with her into her exerciſe, when he hadde abuſed them to content her owne pleaſure, ſhee would caſt them forth, tranſforming them as he did the other: In brieſe, ſhee was moſe then a Diuell, this Iſland was a very diſguifed hell. This wicked woman knowing that moſe unforuinate people were landed at the Hauen, caſled her ſeruaunts, and came to ſee them: but ſhe made no great account of them, wherefore ſhee comauaunded her truſtyeſſe ſeruaunts to take away all the riches forth of the ſhippe, conneſting it by her Enchauntment, that it ſeemed like a botomeleſſe gulf. Afterwards at her pleaſure, ſhe tranſformed them that came into it: among whom Trineus was changed into the ſhape of a very ſayre Dogge: noſt that hee wſt ſo, for that iſ a thing againſt nature, and which God no way will permit that Man shall take any brutiſh ſhape, or a brute Beſt alluine any humane forme. For the Magitian all diſpoſitions thus holde theyr arte, that the Enchaunted euen themſelues Beſtes, and of that was this diſfigured Maſtue: notwithstanding, theſe diſtrefſed Captiues had natu-

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

naturall reaſon and humane power, but the benefit of ſpech was taken from them. And thus was Trineus tranſformed, which he ſeemed not to miſlike, for not remebering himſelfe, he forgot all his heauie paſſions, maruelling only at his ſudden mutation. And here will we leauie him in his ſtrange deſorme, to reþort what beſel to the Princesſe Agriola, after that dolorous ſeparation betwene her Lord and her.

**T**Hus Gentlemen haue we left the Prince Trineus tranſformed into the ſhape of a Dogge, in the Iſle of Malfada, by the Enchauntrefſe: the English Princesſe Agriola, in the cuſtody of the Turkish Pirate Olimael: Ptolome and Colmelio carried into Aethiopia, and Palmerin rauing in the Iſlände with his Hauke for his delight. Right ſtrange will be the meeting of all theſe friendes againe, after the hazards of many perillous fortunes. For Agriola thus ſeparated from the Prince her husband, is maried to the great Emperor of Turkie: how wonderfully the ring which Palmerin gaue her, preſerues her chaſtitie, will bee worth the hearing. How Palmerin counterfeiting himſelfe dumbe, doth many rare exploits in the Iſle of Calphe, will be as acceptable. How Palmerin gaineſ his Polinarda, Trineus his chaſt wife Agriola, Ptolome his Brionella, and all Honors meeting together in the Emperours Court of Allemaigne, will be ſo ſtrange as the like was neuer heard: and all this perfromes the ſecond part, which ſhall be published ſo ſoone as it can be printed.

FINIS.

A. Mundy

Honos alit Artes,

THE  
SECOND PART  
OF THE HONOURABLE  
HISTORIE, OF PALMERIN  
D'OLIVA.

Continuing his rare fortunes, Knightly deeds of  
Chiualrie, happie successe in loue: and how  
he was crowned Emperour of  
Constantinople.

Herein is likewise concluded the variable troubles  
of the Prince Trineus, and faire Agriola the  
Kings daughter of England: with their  
fortunate Marriage.

Translated by A. M. one of the Messengers of  
her Maiesties Chamber.

*Præter aut ab sine.*



LONDON,  
Printed by T. C. and B. A. for Richard Higgenbotham and  
are to be sold at his shop, at the signe of the Car-  
dinalshat without Newgate, 1616.

# TO THE RIGHT

HONOURABLE AND HIS

VERY GOOD LORD EDWARD

DE VERE, EARLE OXEN-

ford, Viscount Bulbecke, Lord San-

ford of Badelesmere, and Lord

high Chamberlaine of

England.

A. M. wifheth the full ifue of his  
noble desires.



Romise is debt, my good Lord, as  
the Prouerb auoucheth, & debt must  
needes bee paide, as reason requi-  
reth: the one not arguing so much  
liberalitie in speech, as the other  
doth vertue in accomplishing. Whē  
I presented your honour the first  
part of this Historie, I promised to haften the other  
to the selfe same Patrone: whereto I haue bene vehe-  
mently induced, by the gracious and affable receite of  
the former, and therefore (kissing your hand) I offer  
the conclusion of worthy Palmerin. Nor hath it beene  
so tedious and troublesome to mee in the translation,

The Epistle Dedicatore.

as I hope you will conceiue delight thereby in the reading: howsoever it prooue, I neede not despaire, ha-  
ving a Judge so honourable, who measureth good will  
farre beyond abilitie.

your Honours in all  
humilitie. A.M.

TO THE FRIEND-  
LY READERS.



Hough long, yet at length Palmerin is  
finished, and having endured so many  
bitter brunts in search of aduentures:  
after all, now remaineth either to bee  
commendēd or condamned by your cen-  
sure. Condemne him you cannot with  
reason, considering all his actions haue  
beene so honourable: as too malicious were the man would  
deale so hardly with him that hath giuen no occasion of of-  
fence. Commend him then you must, in respect of his mani-  
fold vertues, thrust all together in the face of Fortune, one-  
ly for your delight and recreation.

As concerning his sonnes Palmendos and Primaleon,  
the one is kept under his Mothers wing the Queene of  
Tharsus, and the other sporting in the Court at Constan-  
tinople: not daring to set foote in the stirroppe after  
Knightly exercises, till they heare how their father speeds.  
If he haue that fauor his deeds deserued, then on gues their  
Armour, and in the chiefeſt places of Christendome will  
they ſhow themſelues, with repetition to the world of wond-  
erfull aduentures.

But while they expect good newes or bad, Paladine  
A 4 sonne

To the Reader.

Sonne to the king Mylanor of England, is postinge to you: what he and the noble Prince Manteleo of Millaine doe, in knightly affaires of most noble Chiualrie, the Historie shall deliuer: which is already on the presse in good forwardnesse. From my house at Cripple-gate this riualk of March. 1588.

Yours to his vttermost  
Anthony Monday.

THE SECOND  
PART OF THE AVN-  
TIENT AND HONOVRA-  
ble Historie of Palmerin D'Oliva.

Continuing his rare Fortunes, Knightly deedes of Chiual-  
rie, happy successe in Loue, and how he was crow-  
ned Emperour of Constantinople. Herein  
is likewise concluded the variable trou-  
bles of Trineus, and faire Agriola  
of England, with their for-  
tunate Marriage. &c.

CHAP. I.

¶ Howe Olimael presented the Princesse Agriola  
to the great Turke, who immedietly became a-  
morous of her: and what rewardes and prefer-  
ment the Pyrate receyued for his gyft.



Yet I am sure you cannot chuse but  
call to your memorie in the first parte,  
howe the Pyrate Omalie did diuid his  
Prisoners, reseruing for himselfe none  
but the King of Englands Daughter,  
hoping in time to purchase her libertie.  
And being alone with her in the fairest  
Cabin in the Galley, he deuised by all  
the best meanes hee coulde to comfort her: But yet all  
his

## THE HISTORIE

his labours were lost, and bestowed in vaine, for he would not receyue any kinde of susse iounce, desiring every houre to dye, hauing so lost her Lorde Trineus. Hee seeing that sayre spaches, offers, gifts, & other enticements proper to perswasion, could not compasse y thng he desired, he grew into Choller, intending to gaine his pleasure perforce, so that after many threatnings, with rough violence he would medes raush her. Agriola seeing that her feble strength could not long withstand this cursed Turk, albeit she straue and rested so well as she could: therfore with deuout pray-er shre called on God, desiring him to take pittie on her, and not to suffer that villainous Kuffian to dishonour her.

Her Prayer being ended, Olimael begaine in such sort to tremble, as he staggered backwards four or five times, and so exceedingly was he surpized with feare: as hee was constrained to leaue her, and withdraw himselfe into another place. The Princesse, though she were amazed at this sudden chaunge, and noting with what terror the Captain departed: yet was shre greatly comforted by her happy deliuerance, imputing the whole work therof to the Almigh- tie prouidence, and the vertue of the King that Palmerin gaue her: wherefore with a thankfull heart, and elevated eyes to Heauen, she said: Oh celestiall Father, how great and infinite is thy Goodnesse: how happy is the Creature whom thou regardest with the eye of pittie: assuredly I now perceiue, that such as in extremitie haue recourse to thee, shal no way perish. Then taking the vertuous King, and kissing it many times, saide:

Thiuallable Jewell, givien mee by the best Knight in the world, how carefull wil I keepe the: how true is that saying: That great persons, giue great presents; Hence forth shalt thou be kept (for the loue of him that gaue the, and for thy singular Vertue) in the place where I usually stoe things of greatest price. So taking a little Chayne of Golde, which serued her as a Bracelet, she fastened this worthy Jewell thereto, and put it about her Neck, so that

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

the sumptuous Stone laye glistering betwene her Milke-white Breasts, a prospect so rare and delicate, and of no lesse power to drawe the beholders eyes then the Adamant, the Amber, or the Iteate can by their Vertue: Beside so wonderfull repleate with sweete regard, as I dare affirme that the moche cruell Tyrant in Turkie, would stand amazed at those two daintie Mountaines, more mortified and humbled then the Aged Hermites of Thebaida. Olimael yet quaking at this sudden alteration, durst presume no more to offer her villainie; but by rich gyfts and presents sought to persuade her: All which availe not, for as hee got but little profit by his violence, so loue he much leste by his treacherous offencings. So sayled they eyght dayes to-gether, Olimael not able to compasse Agriolas loue, nor hearing any tyding of the Vessells that were lost, neyther of his Cozin who had Trineus captiue, whch grieved him as nothing coulde doe more, in that hee was so vnprouided, as wel he could not present himselfe before his Lord, to whom he had promised to bring stoe of Christian Prisoners, and nowe in his bothele loue so lost his time, as eyther the Tempest or shipwacke, had spoyle him of his owne compaie. In this doubtfull opinion, he debated with himselfe, that the great Turke did earnestly affect sayre Ladys: so by the meane of his beautfull Prisoner, he imagined to be entertained with god countenance, and his losse would be past ouer with forgetfulness: Wherefore he comandred theyr Pplot to make toward the Port of Ottobant, where as then the great Emperour of Turkie sojourned, and therer they came in shott time after. Notwithstanding, as a Servaunt well instructed, notwithstanding to abuse the familiaritie of his Lord, hee sent one of his knyghtes to excuse his cause, and to report, that by casuall mischaunce hee had lost his men and Galleys: but if his Maiestie pleased to forget his misfortune, and receyue him into his accustomed fauour, he would bring him one of the fairest Ladies in Christendome, and descended of most Royall Parentage. The

Em-

## THE HISTORIE

Emperour being Lasciuious, and more addicted to vnicall desires then any in his Domination, hearing this Message, was surprised with the onely report of her Beauty, as immedately he became passionate for her Loue: sending the Pyrate word that hee could not bring a more desired present, and therfore remitted all his offences, promising him greater fauour then euer he had. And because no contrary occasion may hinder his comming (quoth the Emperour) thou shalt carry him this Letter, sealed with mine own signet, that hee may no way doubt of his assurance. The knyght taking the Letter, and kissing the Emperours feet, according to the custome, returned to his Maister, deliuering him the answer he had received. Olimael ioyfull thereof, caused Agriola to clothe her selfe in her most sumptuous Garments, and so with all his men set forward towards the Court. Now although the Princesse was all blubbered with teares, and halfe dead, to see her selfe in the power of these Strangers, professed and sworne Enemies to her Faith and religion: yet could not the rare perfections of her Beautie be shadowed, but the glimse thereof set every Eye to wonder. And as she looked about her, to see if any of her company were landed with her, she espied Ptolome, whom they minded secretly to conuey from her: but she beholding him so sadde and sorrowfull, stopt towards him, saying: Ah my daire Friende Ptolome; what dreadfull chaunce hath Fortune thowne vpon vs: but well may I content my selfe, for this is a iust scourge for mine offence, and vndutifull obedience to the King my Father. Ah my Lord and louall Husband Trineus, neuer shall I see theare againe, for God doth know whether these villains haue sent theare. Ah noble Palmerin, who was wont heretofore to comfort mee, too much hast thou sayled vs, all thy former promises are now altered: for in stead of Imperiall soueraignty, pleasure & honouer, I am requited with pouerty, griefe, shame, & mockery. Ah Death, swete death, too long desired death: why commest thou not to ende all these miseries? But God wil not

per-

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

permit theare, because by my formenys and afflictions, I may feele the weighty burthen of my offences, and large bountie of his mercies.

Ptolome seeing her in this mournfull iteration, saide. It is no tyme now (Madame) thus to disquiet and offend your selfe: but rather (as wise and well governed) to beare these aduersities, even with as great content as your former prosperities, taking in god part whatsoeuer shall happen, for I am in god hope, and my minde perswades me, that theare shall be deliuered by noble Palmerin, who I am well assured endureth greater griefe in his libertie, hauing lost vs, then we can do, in this our unpisdoment. Olimael exceeding angrie to see Agriola weape, violently puld Ptolome from her, chareing his men, not to suffer him once to come within her sight, which he suffered patiently, because he saw it was in vaine to buke against the pricke. When they came to the Pallace, and admitted to the Emperours presence, Olimael kneeling downe before him, and kissing his sole, presented Agriola to his Maiesie: who seeing her of such a rare and wonderfull Beautie, saide to Olimael.

This Present (my friende) is of such surpassing value, as thou couldst neuer honour mee with the like: Good reason is it therfore, that a gyft so precious, shoule be rewarded with like recompence, and so perswade thy selfe I will, that thou shalt say the Emperour is bountifull. As for the Ladie thou hast givien me, I perceue is so faire and gracieus, as I intend neuer to haue any other wife: and that I may espouse her with the greater magnificence, I will staye till the hallowed day of my Coronation, when all my Princes, Barons, and Knights, will be heere assembled, and then in their presence shall our Matrimony be solemnized. Now had the Emperour a woman captiue, named Hyppolita, who was a marchants Daughter of Scicilie, and better skild in all Languages then any Ladie in the Courte, for which hee made speciall account of her, reposing great confidence in her, and acquainting her with his chieffest secrets: wherefore hee sent for her before

Agriola,

## THE HISTORIE

Agriola, and saide: Hyppolita, I give you this Ladie in keeping, commaunding you to intreare her as our owne person, and that all meanes may be practised, to cause her to forsake this sadde Melancholie. In conference you may shew her what Honour and happynesse shee shall receyue by falling into our hands, and what incomparable Fortune it is to her, whome we shall please to accept for our wife. All which Hyppolita (with great humilitie) promised to accomlisch, and so conduced her into a most Princely Chamber, the stowre couered all ouer with cloth of Tissue, and hung about with most sumptuous Tapistrie and cloth of Golde, as hardly might the richnesse thereof be valued. There, Hyppolita caused the Princesse to sitte downe in a Chayre of estate, which was purposely provided for her, demanding her Spaine, and of what countrey she was.

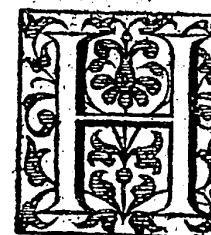
The Princesse answered, that shee was of England, but further of her state she would not bewray. Hyppolita speaking perfectly the English tongue, tooke great delight daily to commune with her, and because Agriola shoulde the better like of her conuersation, shee tolde her that she was likewise a Christian, but that by constrainte she followed the Law of Mahomet, and his Alchoran. In further speches, shee acquainted her with the estate of the Sultanes, in the Court of the great Emperour of Asia: which communication serued well to weare away the time, albeit the Princesse tooke small pleasure therein, Olimac in consideration of his Noble present, was created high Admirall of the Mediterranean Sea, and furnished with greater Noyces of Foysses and Galleyes, then he had before.

## CHAP.

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

### CHAP. II.

¶ How the great Turke summoned all the Kings and Princes his subiects, because hee minded to holde open Court: and how hee marryed with the Princesse Agriola his Prisoner.



Yppolita being daily conuersant with the Princesse Agriola, because she had so god knowledge in her Language, at length the Emperour himself came to her Chamber, and to the ende hee might the better behold the Princesse, he sate him downe in a Chayre opposite to her, and there hee sate a long tyme, not able to content his Eyes with looking on her, and beholding her excellent Beauty: for speake to her he could not, because she understood not the Turkish language. Wherefore he commanded Hyppolita to request her name, and what her Parents were: whiche to satisfie his Mairrie, she did: Agriola thus answering her. In vaine Ladie seeke you to knowe of mee, the thing which death can not forze mee bewray: Let it suffice you that I am a pore Gentle-woman, the moste unforrtunate that ever lived: with whiche words she wept very grieuously. The Emperour moued with pittie, departed to his Chamber, so surprised and inflamed with her Loue, as he could take no rest one minute of the night: considering with himselfe, that seeing shee esteemed so little of the richnesse he saw in his Pallace, and refused the offers made her by Hyppolita, that doubtlesse she was extract of some Noble Lineage. The next morning he called his seure Secretaries, commaunding them to write to all the Princes of his Empire, that

## THE HISTORIE

that they shold not fail to honour the day of his creation with their presence, and to bring with them their Queens and Daughters, and this they shold do on paine of his displeasure: all which was performed with present expedition. In the meane time, he caused divers sumptuous ornaments to be prepared, with all manner of precious Jewels to be denuded, and these he daily sent to Agriola, but all these presents, promises, and magnificent entertainment, could no way move her, not so much as to graunt him a gracious countenaunce. He likewise sent for the best Ladies to his Court, that they shold keepe the Princess company: but he would be conuersant with none but Hippolita, of whom shd had so prettily learned the Arabian tongue, as many times shd could indifferently answere the Emperour. But when he held her continually penance, and that by no meane shd he be comforsted: he doubted least his presence did offend her, and therefore he forbore so often to visite her. For so dearly he loued her, as for the halfe of his Empire, he would giue her no occasion of discontent, hoping in time ( which is the Lord and conquerour of all things ) to alter that humour, and pursue her loue, which he desired with earnest affection. But now at this day, where may we find a Lady so vertuous & wel governed, eing capture as Agriola was, & could not be won by such a mighty Emperour, considering her youth and beauty, & the wonderfull riches incessantly offered her. Yet the highest Lord so protected her, that the moxe liberal the Turke was in honours and persuasions, the moxe loyall confirmed her loue to Trineus, whose perfect image was engraued in her hart. And dot fearing tormentes or death, she boldly answered the Emperour, that he traualled in vaine, for shd not loue him, in that shd was married to an Husband, more noble every way then he, and none but him shd loue while she liued: yet made he no great account of her words, considering what frailtie commonly is in women. The day being come of this great preparatiō

and

## THE HISTORIE

and al the Princes present to understand their soveraignes will: he being placed in his imperiall scaue, said, That he intended to take to wife one of the most beautefull queenes in the world, and for that cause he sent for them, to understand hem they liked thereof. Their answere was, that they liked well thereof, and would graunt her as well as seemed them. Then sent he for Agriola, and before them all, saide unto her, that it was his pleasure to accept her for his wife, and therefore she shold prepare her self on the morrow to be married. The Princess abashed at these speeches, fell downe before him in a dead traunce, wherupon, by the Queens and Ladies present, she was conueyed into her Chamber, where being againe reviued, she began most pittifull and dolorous lamentations: so when all the company had left her, that she was alone with Hippolita, falling downe on her knies at her beds feete, shd thus beganne.

*O* my God and benigne Father, pittie the poore distresfed creature, and forget the offences I haue heretofore committed: for what is a sinner, valesse thou in mercie suffer her to come before thee: Wilt thou then vouchsafe ( O wonderfull workeman of the whole world ) one eye of pittie vpon thy humble forsaken servant: and suffer her not to fall into subiection, to the bolwed enemie of the holie word, armynge me so stronglie in this temptation, that I no way injurie my Lord and Huswande Trineus, but rather graunt this desolate spirit, may leaue this body and the world together. Ah my honourable Lord Trineus, where art thou now: that thou art not heere to defende the shaine and wrong this Tyrant offers thee: what, art thou dead: or hast thou forgotten me: No, no, so well am I assured of thy fidelite, as no torment can diuert thee from me. Yet if I knew direlie that thou art not living, the lese woulde be my feare to follow thee: for then the greatest pleasure this Pagan could do me, were to make mee happy onely by death. But for the matter is uncertaine, and that I live

15

## THE HISTORIE

If I hope nre to see this: I will patiently endure all afflictions whatsoever, for swet reward as is thy loue. These sorrowes of the Princesse so grieved Hippolita, as she could hardly iudge who was most passionate, yet at length she thus spake to Agriola, I beseech you god Ladie to leauie these greeuous lamentations, and regard the high estate, honor and dignitie, that you shall haue in marrying with my Lord. Neuer perswade me (quoth the Princesse) to manifest disloyaltie: for such preservents, if they be not gotten iustly and by vertue, they ought not to bee coueted, but to be shunned as diuillish Serpents. Thus spent they the whole night, & in the morning came the Dueres and Ladies newly come to the Court, to bid the sorrowfull Bride god morrow in her Chamber, attyzing her in wonderfull gorgious vesture, after their Country maner, farre beyond the royaltie of Helena, after her arriuall at Troy. Betwene fourre kinges shee was brought into the great Hall, and from thence conducted to the Temple, where they were espoused by the Most. To record here the royall solemnitie in the Temple, the Maestie and unspeakable dignitie at the Wallace, the excellent Coedies, rare triumphes, Gasques, Homeries, Moriscoes, & such like courtly pleasures, would be a matter too prolixions: for they are not to our purpose. Let it then suffice ye, that after they were magnificently intreated at Dinnet and Supper, the dancinge began, & God knewes how the Turkes, Moores, Arabes & Medes, sette forth themselves in their deuises and sportes before their Ladies, much like the Satyres and hauened Faunes, giving new invasions on the Pinches of Diana. But all these meruailes, ioyes, and follies, could not chaunge the Princesse countenance, for she continuing in her pensiuenes, these sportes were worse to her then the tezzments of death: aboue all, fearing the losse of her challice, which was a Jewell never to be recouered. The pastimes ended, by the Dueres and Ladies she was conductred to the nuptiall bedde, so braue and stately, as the Prince

Aencas

## OF PALMER IN DOLIVA.

Aencas when he came to Diana ne Dido of Carthage, and there was the vnsfortunate Wride committed to her care. None after came the hastie Bridegrome, calling for Dories that he might behold the Goddesse hee honoured, and as he was preparing himselfe to bed, he was troubled with such feares, passions and apoplecie, as now he seemed more like a ghost then a man. Perforce hee was constrained to forsake the Chamber, when the extremitie of the afflitione what asswaging, and his former loue passiones freshlie assailing him, comming to the Princesse againe, heauily he thus spake.

Ah Agriola, Ladie and sole Mistresse of my heart, I thinke thou art some Goddesse, or (at least) exceeding al humantie: so strange is this aduenture, as never any man (I thinke) heard of the like. Alas, cannot thy anger be appeased: nor thou induced to leue him, who for thy sake endures most horriblie tormentes? I pray thee be not the cause of my death: or if thou needes will, suffer me first to enioy the frutes of my desires. Know my Lord answered Agriola, that with my wil you never shall enioy it, & if perforce you seeke to dishonour me, assure your selfe I am resolued, rather to suffer endlesse miseries, then to violate my faith to my loyall Husband: for such is my trust in God, that hee will not forget such as call on him. But in respect thou hast not bene cruell to me, nor hast exercized mee with any tyrannie, I shall suffer the to ly upon the bed by me, as my Brother might do, and sometime (though it be more then modestie) embrase thee in mine armes: but if further thou presumest, thou maist not be permitted, but shalt loe that fauour, thy selfe, and me together. Madame, quoth he, in graunting me that courtesie, you sauie my life, for I haue many Concubines to qualifie those passions, and neuer will I attempt your dishonour while I live, if I but offe the motion, refuse me for ever. I shall therefore account of you as my Sister, and death shall not make me do contrarie to your appointment. The yong Princesse glad of his

W. 2

solemnis

# THE HISTORIE

solemne ydome, gaue him a kisse or twaine, and suffered him to embrase her : but other kindnes could he never obtaine; contenting himselfe with this, because he loued her so speciallie. At fiftene daies end, the feastes being ended, the Princes tolde their leaue of the great Sylvane, who with manie rich presents sent them home into their Countries. Thus remained Agriola with the great Turke, and the Knight to whome Olimael, had gauen Proloome and Colmelio, sailed with his prisoners into Aethiopia: and thenceforward used them not as slaves, but as Gentlemen of god qualitie, especially Proloome, whom hee reputed a hardie Knight, and a man borne to great enterprises.

## CHAP. LXII.

How Palmerin after his recreation, returned to the sea side, and seeing the Shippe and his company gone, made great lamentation, and what after followed.



Esore in this Historie you haue heard, how Palmerin walking on shore with his Faulcon on his fist, desired to see the pleasantnes of the Isle, and finding so many delights to withhold him, returned not toward the Ship till it was neere night: but when he came thither againe, and could not see the Ship now any one to question withall, he was greatly amazed, running heere and there, yet al to no purpose. Sometime he imagined that Trineus had betrayed him, because he had acquainted him with his loue towards his Sister: and then againe resolved himselfe on the contrary. All about he looked

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

ke for his compaines, not knowing what to think: whether they were carryed away by Pirats, or taken Prisoners by the Inhabitants of the Island. In the end, having compassed in his minde all imaginacions he coulde, and seeing that by his reward of pleasure he had lost his friendes: he entred into many sorrowfull lamentacions, farre exceeding Cadmus when he lost his Souldiours by the horrible Serpent, cursing and exlayning on himselfe, as he had bene guiltye of the death of his Father. Alas (quoth he) why did I not remember these wretched misfortunes by poore Varnan? whose sorowes was likewise procured by a Hawke, in an haplesseshoure by this wicked Wyrd givene me. Ah trecherous and deceiving strumpet, I thinke thou art some incorporete Fiende sent from Hell to iniure the most constant Lovers: and therefore gentle Dwle, or rather enchanted diuell, thou shalt never hereafter displease any other, so taking her by the necke, he pulled her in peaces, and said.

Ah sweete Ladie Polynarda, how contrary is Fortune: and how unhappily our desires preuent: well am I assured, if Trineus come to the Court without me, it will endanger your life, and the onely thing that shaldes mee to death, is comfortable hope to see you once again. Therfore divine Mistresse, I call for your succour, that by your gracious assistance, I may endure these vehement occasions. Ah gentle Princesse Agriola, how haue I deceiuied you: but in requitall of your wrong, no rest nor ease shall posse my soule, till I haue brought Trineus and you to as great ioy, as by my meanes you haue received discomfor. In these complaints he laye him downe under a Tre, and so wasted the time till morning came, when seeing no creature to speake withall, nor any meane for him to passe the Sea: he determined to trawaile through the Island till he might meete some bodie to conserue with. Thus having no defence, but his Sward vnder his arme, hee walked a long, and at length he met a Mare with four Spanielles,

## THE HISTORIE

and a Darlin on his fist: whom hee humbly saluting, demanded the name of the Countrey, and if there were any shippynge neere for his passage. The Moore perceiving by his language, that he was a Christian, in great anger answered, But thou come so farre to seeke thine owne mistayner: by Mahomet I shall welcome thee hither with a vengeance. So laying hand on his Hemistry, Palmerin perceiving by his gesture (though he vnderstood not his talke) that he wished him no god: wherefore drawing his sword, he gaue the Moore such a stroke on the head, as he cleaved it to his very teeth, and said. By God villaine, thou shalt not take me psoner, or send me into the Sea to seeke my ransome, and so may all discourteous varlets be serued, as resemble thee in condicions. Thus leauing the Moore dead, he tooke an other way, least if he shold bee followed, hee might fall into daunger: but seeing he was unarmed, and could not speake the Arabian tongue, hee imagined that at length he must needes be taken. Whereupon he returned backe to the Moore, and taking his garments, left his swerd there, and thence for ward determined to counterfeit himselfe dumbe: by which subtilitie hee thought to escape vñknowne, and prevent his imprisonment, till he founde meanes to returne towards Allemaigne againe. The day stealing on apace, and dache night approching, he came to a faire Fountaine, of the clearest water (in his opinion) that euer he saw, where he laying him downe to rest, consumed the night so quietly as he could. On the morrow he began to remembere his misertes, his daungers past, and such as were imminent, the conceit wherof made him very melancholly: so after he had eaten a little breade, which hee found in the Moores budget, according to the manner of Diogenes, he laid him dwlire againe and slept.

CHAP.

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

### CHAP. VII.

How Palmerin counterfeiting himselfe dumbe in the Isle of Calpha, was found by certaine Turkes, as he lay a sleepe by the Fountaine: and how he was receiued into the seruice of Alchidiana, Daughter to the Soldane of Babilon.



Now that you may the more easily vnderstand, in that which followeth, the full intent of our discourse, you must call to memorie, how Gamezio, who was slaine before Constantinople by the Prince Florendos, as you haue heard in the first part of this Historie: was Son to y Soldane of Babylon named Mysos, & Brother to Maulicus, who at his death was a very yong Prince. Mysos vnderstanding by his Subiectes y Gamezio, the hope of his declining age, was gone by the summons of Atropos, to the habitation of his Gods, could not afterward enjoy any health of body, or quiet in mind, and therefore ere ayere was fully expired, he went to seeke his Sonne among his equalles in the fieldes of Elysium. Before he tooke this tourney, wherein no creature returneth againe, hee charged his succyding Sonne Maulicus, to revenge his Brothers death: being perswaded, that himselfe shold not be discharged of his infortunate reuerance, in the other world, if he fayled to accomplish his latest commandement. Maulicus, not to hinder his departure promised he would, yet could he not fullfill it, beeing troubled in his own Kingdoms, more then 20. yeres after.

154.

But

## THE HISTORIE

But after he had reduced the rebellious Provinces into obedience, he married with the King of Armenias Daughter, by whom he had the Princess Alchidiana, one of the most beautifull and gracious Ladies in her time: who being come to age of experience, was so loued of her Father, as he would never suffer her out of his sight, so that he made denyall to all such as requested her in marriage. Alchidiana, when she understood her owne singularity, desired the company of the most beautifull Ladies in Asia, because she held this opinion, that when y fayrest were present, beauty would then be most splendant. For this cause shee sent to Prince Guilharan, Sonne to Polidia her mothers Sister, that hee shold bring his Sister Ardemia to the Court, who was counted the Paragon through all the Monarchy of Babylon.

She being come to the Cittie of Calpha from whence the name of the Island was derived, her Cozin Alchidiana deuised all the meanes she could to entertaine her withall, and among other Courtly recreations, they daily vsed hawking and hunting. It so came to passe, that these Princesses and Gallants of the Soldans Court, now ryding to theyr pleasure, the Knights delighting the Ladys in holding the braue boltages of their Horses, and their swiftnes in course like the wings of Pegalus: after choysse of many places for game, they came by the fountaine where Palmerin lay a sleepe so soundly, as he neither heard theyr horns nor hallowing. Which when one of the Mores perceived, intending to make all the other laugh, hee allighted from his Horse, and comming to him that meant no body harme, sayd. By Jupiter this sleepy fellow is drunke, but I will awake him, that hee may judge the prize of our course: with whiche wordes he gaue Palmerin such a blowe in the eare, as made him turne his heade on the other side. Palmerin suddenly starting vp, and seeing him stand scowring that thus had stroken him, he drew his sworde, and therewith sealed the More a quittance for his life, whereat

the

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

the other Ambushed, came to revenge theyr companyons death: but Palmerin casting his Mantle about his arme, layd about him so lustily, as he sent fire more after their fellow, and any one that came neare him, he layde at his forte, eyther maimed or slaine outright. Alchidiana maruellung at this stratageme, as also to heare the outragious noyse of the Mores, came riding towars them, demanding what hee might be, that made such hauek in her presence: The Knights gaue place to the Princess, so that shee came neare to Palmerin, who enraged like a salvage Boare in the wood, made a bloody massacre amon the Mores, & whē she beheld his braue and comely featured bodie and hardy courage, shee perswaded herselfe that he was descended of high and noble birth, and if shee sought not means to cease this turmoyle, it wold procede to a greater daunger: therfore (moued with pittie) she comandred her people on paine of theyr lives, to holde themselves quiet while she demanded the cause of this tumult.

Palmerin well pleased that the Princess so succoured him, imagined by her exceeding Beauty, and sumptuous ornaments, that shee was theyr Soueraigne, wherefore casting himselfe at her feare, offered her his Sworde: whiche courtesie not a little contenting her, saide: I know not my friend, whither thou be Knight or Squire, but whatsoeuer thou art, Sir (of thine owne god wil) thou hast thus yellded to me, I will defend thee against all other. Wherefore tel me what hee was, that against my will did first attayle thee: Palmerin with reverent obeisance, made signes of his thankfulness, and with such god countenaunce dissembled to be dumbe, as one would haue iudged hee had never spoken. This poore man (quoth Alchidiana) the Gods offered great wrong, in deprywing him of speech: for this I wil say, (hadst thou utterance) thou wert one of the brauest accoplished men of this world, both in swete complexion, courtesie and hardinesse. Notwithstanding, thou must needs be high in theyr grace, being able to encounter with so many, and

## THE HISTORIE

and defend thy selfe so worthily as thou hast done. Then was she certified by an arcient Knight, that one of the Squires of her Chamber smote him, as hee lay a sleepe, which he reuenged in such sort as she had seene. Trust me (quoth she) the dumbe man did as well besemmed him, wherefore in respect of his civilitie, and that he can so well correct the overboldnesse of foles: I will entertaine him as one of our Court, forbidding any to wrong him, as they tender my fauour and their owne liues. So commanding buriall for the dead, & prouision for the wounded, she went to her Pavillion, which was not farre off, willing Palmerin (by signes) to goe with her, deliuering him his Sword againe, and saying he would be her servant. Humble graces did Palmerin requite her withall, and in signe of his obeystance offered to kisse her feete, but she would not permit him, and taking him vp by the hand, sayd: Looke that hereafter thou go not from me, whereto by signes he consented, knowing that by her meanes he shold be safely protected. While these courtesies on either side endured, the Princesse Ardemia & the other Ladies entred the Pavillion: but Palmerin earnestly beholding Ardemia, was amazed at her wonderfull beautie, imagining that shée much resembled his Ladie Polynarda, so that breathing forth a vehement sigh, he could hardly with-hold himselfe from speaking. The tables being couered for their hunting banquet, very choycedolicates were seruied in on great plakes of Geld, garnished with very pretious and costly stonnes, which caused Palmerin to maruaile not a little, whē the Princesse seeing so sad, said: How ould my frends? dost thou not thinke thy selfe safe in my presence? Believe me on my word, if any one displease shée, he shall presently die the death. So causing him to sit by her at the table, intreated him so well, as he had beene one of the chiefeſt Barons in her Father's Court. The Tables withdrawne, the Hunters had startēd the Hare: which was so narrowly purſued by the Hounds, as to ſave her ſelfe, the ranne into the

Prin-

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

Princesse Pavillion, but the Greyhounds was so ſpedy of pace, as he caught her in the presence of Alchidiana, who with her owne handes tooke her from the dogge, and gaue her in keeping to one of her Pages. By this time it drewe towards night, wherfore each one mounting on their Palſtaues, ſet forward to the Cittie: the two Princesſes having no other talke all the way, but of the ſingulare behauour of the dumbe Knight. They riding faire and easily, becauſe Palmerin trauelled by them on foote, Ardemia beholding his goodly Sword, demanded of him if hee were a Knight, whch he by signes made known vnto her, wherof Alchidiana very ioyfull, ſaid, that ſhee would preſent him to the Soldan her Father, and for this cauſe, the more ſhe beheld him, the greater pleaſure ſhe conceiuēd in him. Being now come to the Gates of Calpha, there stood many Knights ready with lighted Torches to conduct the Ladies and their traine to the Pallace, which was ſo rare and ſumptuously edefied, as Palmerin was amazēd to ſee ſuch roialtie.

All the way Alchidiana had the dumbe Knight by her ſide, giving him her hand to allight fro her Palſtay, whch he did with exceeding reuerence, and nothing diſcontented with his office: but many Knights and Princes ſtare preſent, murmurred thereat, thinking him not worthy to come ſo neare her, nor migh he be ſo ſuffered, but that the Princeſſe ſomewhat enamoured of him, would ſuffer none to contrarie her pleaſure: had leaned on his arme al the while he went by the ſtaies of the Pallace, to get the good even to the Soldane, who ſtated his daughters returne in the great Hall. Still leaned ſhe on Palmerin, till ſhee came to her Father, who ſat in a maſtineant Chate of estate, hauing the reuelance of the ſtūment over his head, (after the Turkish maner) ſe garnished with Rubyes and Diamonds, which with the lights of the Torches ſhined moſt gloriously: whereat Palmerin wondered, conuicting the Princeſſe with ſo braue geſture, as many reputed him

some

## THE HISTORIE

some noble personage, and others (enviuously) thought the worst of him.

The Soldane, who loued his Daughter as you haue heard before, arose from his Chayre to welcome her home, demanding what spoyle she had on Hunting, and if she had brought any Venison home with her? Certes my Lord, (quoth she) we haue better fortune then you thinke on: but before I declare the manner therof to you, will it please you to give me what I haue sounde this day? The Soldane, not able to denye his Daughter any thing, liberally graunted her request. A thousand thankes, god Father (quoth she) this dumbe Knight hath your Maiestie gauen me, who (in his owne Defence) hath this day slaine certaine of your Knights, and hereof you may assure your selfe, that hee is one of the most hardyest Gentlemen that euer came into these partes. Seeing it is your request Daughter (quoth he) I could be well contented to graunt it, but how shall I answere the Friendes of the murthered, to whome I haue alreadie promised, that for his offence he shall be delivered to the Lyons? So, which of these gaunts ought best to be kept, yours, being my Daughter, wherein pasture ruleth, or theys beeing my Subjects, which the Lawe commandeth? I may not be iudge herein, saide the Princesse: Notwithstanding, me thinks (vnder your Hignes correction) that you haue bene but hardly counselleld, to give a sentence so cruell, hauing not yet hearde or seene the partie. And albeit hee were guiltie of blame, as hee is not, but before his condemnation, hee ought to be hearde how hee could cleare himselfe, but if hee must dye, I hauing assured him life, and taken him into my defense, the disgrace is so great to mee, as mine Honour must remaine for ever condemned. And you my Lord and Father, whose Authoritie may discharge me of this reproche, if you refuse now to assist me, the grieve hereof will be my death. These words shee spake with such affection, and so heauilie weeping, as would haue moued a Lyons heart to pitte her: wherfore Maulicus touched with naturall

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIV A.

naturall remorse, sayd. You shall perceiue Daughter what I haue denised, to the end my word may not be impeached: He shall be put into the Lyons Denne, and suddenly taken out againe, by this meanes I shall keepe my promise to his accusers, and satisfie your earnest desire. And the better to content you herein, his enemies shall be perswaded that he escaped the Lyons with life, and then will I give him safety thow' all my dominions. The Princesse fearing the blood thristie desire of the Lyons, could not so content herselfe, which Palmerin perciuing, that the Father and Daughter thus consented for him: sell downe on his knee before the Soldane, making signes that he should accomplish his promise, for he feared not the daunger of his life. Maulicus maruailing hereat, perswaded his Daughter that beeing so hardie, he might escape: therfore to content herselfe, for thinges should bee handled in such sort, as the Knight should no way be endaugered. These wordes somewhat contented the Princesse, caused Palmerin to be conducted to his Chamber, charging him that was appoynted to attend on him, to see that he were very honorably vsed, and in the morning to bring him againe before her Father. The Soldane and his knyghtes spent all that evening, in divers iudgments on the dumbe Knight, each one being glad of the Soldanes sentence: but Alchidiana was so penitue (considering the dangerous hazard hee shold passe) as she stong to her Chamber, refusing all susteinaunce, and spending the time in dolozous complaints, desiring rather her owne death, then the dumbe Knight shold be any way harmed.

CHAP.

# THE HISTO RIE

## CHAP. V.

How Palmerin was put into the Denne among the Lyons and Leopards, and hauing killed three of them, escaped valiantly.



Almerin being brought to his Chamber, which was one of the most sumptuous in all the Pallace, according as the Princesse had appointed: he made signe to the Gentleman that attended on him, to withdraw himselfe, for hee was accusstid to be alone in his Chamber, which he immediatly did, being loth to offend him. Palmerin being alone by himselfe, gaue thanks to the God of heaven, who in midst of his misfortunes, caused such a gracious Ladie to favour him so kindly, as defended his life when he was in daunger, and by whose meanes he conceiued god hope to escape his enemies handes, and to returne safely towards Allemaigne. His meditations ended, he betooke himselfe to rest, and in the morning, Linus the Gentleman that had him in charge, came and presented him before the Soldane, who commaunded him to be carayed presently to the Lyons. Alchidiana understanding that the dumbe Knight was with her Father, sent him a rich Mantle of Scarlet, desiring him to ware it for her sake: which hee putting about him went franchly with his keeper to y Lyons Denne, where y doore being opened, he boldly entred, desiring God to assit him in this perrill. Palmerin being in y Denne, because none of the Lyons should get forth to hurt any other, how ever

God

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

God disposed of hym: made fast the doore after hym, and with his sword drawne, and his Mantle wraped about his arme, went to see how the Beastes would deale with hym. The Lions comming about hym, smelling on his clothes would not touch hym: but (as it were knowing the blood roiall) lay downe at his feete and licked hym, and afterward went to their places againe. But there were among them three Leopards, that furiously came and assayled hym, the foremost wherof he paunched with his Sword, that he was able to doe no more harme. The other two, although they had borne his Mantle, and put hym in very great daunger, as they that looked in at the windows and creuses perceived: yet to their no little admiration, in the end he slew them both, and so went forth of the Den again, to whom Linus came and louingly taking hym by the hand, brought hym to the Soldane, to whom hee discoursed his fight with the Leopards, and how gentle the Lyons had beene to hym.

The Soldane greatly astonished hereat, made more estimation of hym then he did before, and because the Lions refused to touch him, reputed hym of roiall parentage. Whereupon he sent for his Daughter, praying her to intreat hym not as a Knight, but as a noble and vertuous Prince, considering his behaviour so well deserued. The Princesse entertained hym very graciously, and hearing the successe of his happy fortune, spake thus in the hearing of them all. Because every one shall know, Sir Knight, how much I honour your god gifts, I will cause my Father so well to loue you, as hee shall repente himselfe a thousand times of the daunger he put you to: and so very louingly embracing him, desired pardon on her owne behalfe, because she saffered hym to be shryke to the Lions. Palmerin in signe of attonement, that he was nothing displeased, kissed her hand, and sitting downe in a Thaire by her, beheld Ardemia, who resembled his Chicheuse so equall in beauty, and could not hold his eyse from her, so that hee conceiueth much pleasure

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

pleasure in his regard, as he judged it sustenance enough to maintaine life. But she that was ignorant of the cause, presumed that he loued her, wherfore thence forward, she began so amorous to affect him, as she enjoyed no rest but in his presence. Thus were these two Ladies Alchidiana and Ardemia touched with one disease, and that so sharply to the quick, that the least torment they endured (seeing he could neitherspeake nor understand their language) was worse to them then death. And so it fell out, that each of them thinking herselfe best beloued, concealed her thoughts from the other, and would in no case be reputed amorous, least so her desires shold be discovered. Alchidiana for arguments of her loue, gaue him Horses, Squires, Servaunts & Pages, so that the greatest Prince in the Court was no better equipped then he: & in this fortune such was his minde, that for all the honor and fauour y Soldane and his Daughter bare him, he did not outreach himselfe in behaviour, but was so benigene and full of courtesie, that each one loued & desired to be familiar with him. And if any enterprise of Jeulkes or Tourneyes were in hand, Palmerin was y formost in the field, and caried the prize away from all what soeuer, which incited Maulicus to loue him in such sort, that he entertained him into such special credite, as he wold never resolve on any matter of importance, without his shew of god lyking. And albeit the Princes of the Court shewed him god countenance, yet Enuy (that neuer can rest in aribiticus harts) caused them in the ende to raise slander against him: whch Palmerin perceiued, but being vnable to remedie, awaytēd convenient time for his departure, notwithstanding the earnest affection Alchidiana bare him. He knew likewise so well to disquise his matters, that so often as the Princesse would hold him in talise, hee will feigned not to understand her: which made her iealous towards Ardemia her Czin, wh by Alchidianaes injuries, and Palmerins refusall of her loue, lost her life, as you shall read in the Chapters following.

CHAP.

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

### CHAP. LXII.

How the Prince Maurice sent his Ambassadours to the Soldane, to desire safe conduct for his comming to the Court: to try if he could find any knight there, able to deliuere him of an extreme trouble, that hee endured by enchantment.



Wring the time that Palmerin was thus esteemed and beloued, in the court of the great Monarch of Assiria, vp on a Sunday after dinner, as the Soldane was in the great hall conserning with his Daughter, and many other great princes and Lords present: there entred a More knight arme, dexept his Helmet, Gauntlets, which were carryed after him by two Squires, and making his solemne reuerence, humbled himselfe at Maulicus feete, saying: Most high and redoubted Monarch, my squaligne Lord Maurice, sworne Prince to Palmeria, kisseth your highnesse hand, sending to require your gracious safe conduct, that himselfe may come to your Court, to trie among all your Knights, if there be any one so loyall and valiant, as can deliuere him from a torment he endures, the most cruell and strange that euer was heard of, and happened to him in this sort.

The King Palmeria, great Gouvernour of the Mores, and Father to my Lord, being vnable (through extreme age) to wels the government of his Realme, gaue the ad- ministration thereof, and made his Lieutenant generall

C

my

## THE HISTORIE

my Lorde Maurice, a Knight so hardie and puissant as any of his time, and so renowned for his bountie, sagacitie, and  
brave lineaments of bodie: as there is none of the Kings  
of Iudea, Egyp, & Chyopia, and neighbor Countreys round  
about, but gladly desire his Alliance and friendship. So  
that many haue sent their Embassadours vnto him, present-  
ing their Daughters and Kingdomes to him, the greater  
part whereof he hath hitherto refused, excusing himselfe by  
his Fathers age and his owne youth. But as often times  
it happeneth, Fortune enemy to all god endeours, not suf-  
ferring him to remaine in quiet, permitted that the Quene  
of Tharsus, the fayrest in all the Orientall partes, a young  
Widdow and rich, as is very well knowne: after shee had  
sent him many presents of incomparable value, intreated  
him to come and see her, shadowing in this message, the  
great desire she had to match with him. The Prince bee-  
ing benigne and courteous, would not deny her, but in short  
time after conuayed to her. The Quene entertaining him  
with great royaltie, and seeing in him farre more gracious  
and beautifull gifts, then before shee heard reported: was so  
surprised with Loue, as in steede of looking to be loued, her-  
selfe was constrained to demand, knowing so well to de-  
clare her desirous and affectionate passions, as the Prince  
in loued with amorous pittie, graunted what she requested,  
without any further condition or promise, presuming on  
himselfe, in respect of her great and favourable entertain-  
ment, that he would not leauue her for any other. But here-  
in was she deceived, for the yong Prince having staid with  
her tenne or twelue dayes, desired leauue to depart, saying:  
that he had received Letters from his Father, which com-  
maunded his speedie returne home againe, promising her,  
(if so his Father consented) to take her in Marryage, and  
that with such expedition as might be. The Quene some-  
what contented with this answere, thinking he would per-  
forme what he promised, let him departe. He being come  
home into his owne Countrey, forgot his Loue to his new  
Friend,

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

Friende, and by his Fathers commandement, marayed  
with a young Princesse, Daughter to the King Lycomedes. The Quene hearing these newes, was almost dead  
with very conceite of griefe, and conceiued such hatred a-  
gainst the Lord Maurice, as she determined to be reuenged  
on him, whatsoeuer came after. And the better to compasse  
her intent, she sent to search out one of her Knights, a lea-  
ned Magician, promising him, if hee would helpe her to be  
reuenged on him that so deceipted her, she would make him  
one of the chiefeſt of her Realme. The Magician who e-  
uermoze was desirous to please her, promised her to worke  
such a deuile, that Maurice should endure such cruell tor-  
ments, as herſelfe should be constrainyd to pittie him. And  
to accomplish this practise, hee only desired the King her Fa-  
thers Crowne, which was one of the richest in the whole  
World: which Crowne hee Coniured in ſuch ſort, as the  
Diuell himſelfe coulde not imagine the like, and comming  
therewith to the Quene, ſaide:

Madame, you must ſende this Crowne to the Prince  
of Pemiria, deſiring him for your ſake he will weare it on  
his head, in the chiefeſt affayres of his estate, which he im-  
mediately will accomplish: but this I dare assure you,  
that hereby he ſhall ſuffer ſo many vexations, as he would  
endure a thouſand deaths if hee could poſſible, to be deliue-  
red from this torment, which he ſhall never be, till the moſt  
loyall louer in the world take it from his head. The Quene  
ſo toyfull hereof as could be, ſent the Crown to the Prince,  
who received it thankfully, and beholding it ſo ſumptuous,  
ſuddenly put it vpon his head: But preſently ſleue out of  
his head ſuch a flame of fire, as it had beeene the blaze that  
commeth from a diſcharged Cannon. Then called hee for  
ayde and ſuccour, making the greateſt Lamentations that  
ever were heard: but all was to no ende, for no Knight or  
Lady there coulde do him any good: and ſo all the whole day  
hee remained in this cruell martyrdome, burning aliue, yet  
not perishing, reſemblimg the Salamander in the extreme  
fire.

## THE HISTORIE

site. When his people saw that they could procure him no ease, they sent two of the greatest Lords of the Realme to the Queen, who humbly intreated her to pity the Prince: and to recompence the faulte he had committed, hee should take her to his wife, and endewed her with those honourable possessions belonging to him. The Queen entreated them very noblie, and after shee had understood theye message, answered:

My Lordes, the marriage betwene your Meister and me is intollerable, and no way can hee now Contract himselfe againe: For I remembryng his disloyaltie, and he the tormentes he suffers by my meanes, it were impossible that we should louingly liue together, therfore in this matter you shall excuse me. And let him know, that seeing hee was so presumptuous, contrary to his faith and promise, to refuse me for his wife, I know so muche disdaine and contynue him, as my heart by no meanes can bee induced to loue him. And no other remedie, there for his tormentes, but that hee seeke throughe Asia, Europe, and Africa, a Louer so perfect, who by his loyalty may ease the paines he suffers, for his treachery and treason. With this shott answer depart my Countrey: for your Maister is so vnworthie of fauour, as for his sake, I hate his people.

The Embassadours maruellung at this fatall desteny, returned to theye Lord, to whō they reported the Queens answere, and what remained to ease his affliction, which more and more encreased his griece: wherfore seeing what he was enioyned to do: The next day he left the Court, entending not to stay a day in any place, till hee should finde a Knight so vertuous & loyall. Thus hath he trauelled Aethyria, India, Tattaria, and the greater part of your Domini-  
ons, but as yet he hath found none to remedie his misfor-  
tune: but if any other disloyall Knight in triall touche the  
Crown, his veratios are far moze greater then before. For  
this cause most mighty Lord, having heard the great fame  
of valiant Knights in your Court, especially of a straunger  
Knight

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

Knight being dumbe, who came hither but of very late  
time: hee desires your Maiestie, his assurance granted, to  
suffer him to trie his fortune here, if in your presence he may  
 finde any helpe, or else to seeke further in other Princes  
Courts. These are the principall points of my charge, may  
it please your highnesse to consider of mine answere, whom I  
shall returne and certifie my Maister; that you may like-  
wise see an aduenture most maruellous.

## CHAP. VII.

How the Prince Maurice came to the Court of the Sol-  
dan of Babylon, where he was deliuered of his bur-  
ning crowne, that tormented him, by the loyaltie of  
Palmerin.



Aulicus, wondring at this strange discourse, thus answered the More. You may (my friend) returne to your Mai-  
ster when you please, and say from vs,  
that he shall be welcom to our Court,  
with as safe assurance as our owne per-  
son: as well for his valour and bountie  
which I haue heard greatly esteemed, as for that we are de-  
sirous, to see so strange an aduenture ended in our presence.  
And we cannot sufficiently maraile, how he could be so  
forgetfull of himselfe, that after his faith broken, he could  
extinguish her remembrance that loued him so unseigned-  
ly: but herein may we behold the soueraigntie of confidens  
loners. Go then and certifie him of our pleasure, and that

## THE HISTORIE

We pray our gods his coming may be in such an houre, as he may depart to his content; yet am I greatly afraid that he shall not finde any knight in our Court, but that either so fainted or failed toward his Ladie. The Prince kissing the Soldane hand, and humbly taking his leaue, returned to his Lord, leaving the Soldane and his Knights admiring this rare accident, so that he exorted every one, to adventure his fortune at this Crowne, to give the greater assurance to their Ladies, of their loyall fidelite: but many of them were herein deceived, for in stead of praysle & glory, they received shame & reproch, as you shall see hereafter.

The Prince aduertised of the Soldane's answer, in hope of god successe, set forward on his iourney, and the next day following he came to Calpha, where Maulicus caused him to be honourably lodged in the Cittie, because that day he would not come to the pallace. On the morrow after that Lethe a knyfe to the Soldane, her Daughter Alchidiana, the faire Ardemia, with many other Ladies and Princes were come into the hall, to see the tryall of this noueltie: Prince Maurice understanding how the Soldane with all his Courtly assistants staid his comming, went to the Pallace, accompanied with an hundred Knights, all clad in mourning blacke, in signe of their continual sorrow for their Prince's misfortune. There was he very royally entertained, the Soldane causing him to sit by him, in a sumptuous Chaire of estate, of purpose provided, and after many welcomes and kinde gratulations, the Soldane demaunded how he felt himselfe, and whether he sustained any ease of his torment. Ah my Lord, quoth the Prince, I cannot expresse to your Maiestie the pain which I siele, being a thousand times worse to me then death, & every houre enforcing me to despaire, but I must endure it with what patience I can, till incomparable loyaltie discharge me of this burden. With these words he lamented exceedingly, so that each one was moved to pittie him, for such a burning flame conuinued in the Crowne, and so furious heate

pp-

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

procided from his mouth, as sette the Hall in meruaylous hotnes, yet consumed he nothing at all, but in every part was so formall as any other man. Beloued Cozin, said the Soldane, for my selfe, I will not enterprize to meddle with your Crowne, for I do not imagine my selfe so fauoured of loue, as I can finishe that wherein so many haue sayled, nor would I willingly seeke mine owne dishonour, being farre vnable to profit you: as for my knyghtes, let them make proue of their loyaltie and spare not, and see whiche of them can winne the honour of this aduenture. Thereupon Guilharan, Brother to sayre Ardemia first entred, and coming to the enchaunted Prince, sayd. Trust me my Lord, since I began my profession in loue, I never committed any preuidice to my Lady, therfore will I try to ende this enchauntment.

Then earnestly beholding Alchidiana, for whose loue only he came to the Court, he approched to the enchaunted Prince, and puld so hard as he could at the Crowne, but he crying aloude, sayd, For Gods sake Sir Knight strive no longer, for if by disloyalty I could be cured, I see you are able to give me remedy. Alas, in all my life I never felt like Payne, by any Knight that tryed his fortune, great neede haue you to do seuerre penance, if you will bee fauoured by loue any more, towards whom you haue so heynously offended, for my infirmitie may not be holpen, but by loyalty, firmnes, faithfull pursuit, constaunce, and such other honourde vertues esteemed in loue, wherof you haue not the least particular. Thus retyred this new louer, more ashamed then a Virgin to bee scene lightly disposed, and so sette downe among the other Knights, whose fortune proved as effectuall as the first, to theyr owne disgrace, and great torment of the languishing Prince. The Kings and auncient Princes, seeing the yong Knights could do no good, put themselues in deuoure, each one conceiuing so well of himselfe, as if theyr fortune serued to ende the aduenture, theyr yeares should carry the honour,

C 4

and

## THE HISTORIE

and they be venclyned for euer by their Ladies: but their vaine conceit and desire to accomplish an impossibilitie, much abusid them, so that they shamefully remained frustrate in their intents, and the paines of the enchanted Prince greatly augmented, who thusspake to them. Truly my Lords, it is the custom of your auncient and audacious opinions, to extoll your loues and valour: but for any thing I see, your olde yeres haue much lesse merited amorous mercy, then the indiscreet and vunconstant dealing of these yong Princes. Then seeing that no other offered to proue his vertue, deliuering many greeuous sighes, he said: Unhappy wretch that I am, how much more had it bene to my ease and benefite, if the Duene of Tharsus (whom I so heynously offended) would haue contented her selfe in her reuenge, as cause me to be paccemeale torn in sinder, then thus haue deliuered me into this insupportable vexation, the ende whereof will never be accomplished, seeing that this honourable Court of my Lord the Souldane, I find no one can give me comfort.

Palmerin hearing the Lamentation of this amorous Martyr, fell into a profound imagination, and after he had long regarded Ardemia, who so lively resembled his Mistresse Polynarda, said within himselfe: Ah sweet Madame and onely Mistresse, vouchsafe at this instant to assist me, for by your succour I shall now make proue of my faithfull and inuicible leyltie: whiche never in ought offended you, if not at Durace in affecting Laurana, whom I simply thought to be the Lady, who was so often promised in my visions. But seeing my thoughts never so fode to effect, as also that I was deceived in your name: that ought not be imputed to me for any trespass, and therfore diuine Goddesse be fauorable to me. Then supprised with suddaine ey, he beganne againe earnestly to behold the Princesse Ardemia: who imagining herselfe clyely beloued of him, cast forth a bitter sigh, and turning to Alchiana, sayd: Ah Madame and my deere Cozin, what great fault hath this

cuell

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

cruel Duene committed, appointing her Magique in such sort, as loyall and faithfull Ladies may not bee suffered herein, for deliuerance of this yong and beautifull Prince: doubtlesse he shold sooner receive helpe by them then by Knights, for much more loyally do they loue then men, and are in their affections firme and constant. Alchiana, who felte hirselfe touched with this intricate fury, wherof the faire Ardemia complained: suddainly conjectured, whereto her sighes and faultring spaches tended, which rayled private conceit, and such a behement attaint of iealousie, as she would not answer any word, but feigning to smell some discontented sauor, turned her face the contrary way. Palmerin looking round about him, and seeing none would meddle with the aduenture: fell one his kné before the Souldane, cravinge leauue by signes to try his fortune, which he granted, and in a laughter, said: Goe thy waies dumbe Knight, and in such an houre maist thou touch the crowne, that all the honour may fall to thy share. Then Palmerin hauing his eye fised on her, who in beauty did paragon his onely Mistresse, exalting his minde with an intire sigh, secretly sayd:

Ah mirrour of excellency, although my body bee farre distant from you: yet am I in spirit day and night in your presence, being so confidently assured of your loue, that is no iote inferior to mine, whiche very thought makes me thinkie you present before me. Wherfore cheare Mistresse and Gouernesse of my life, you shall now receive the honouer, that by the vertue of your faithfull seruant you ought to haue: for I hold my selfe towards you, so innocent and pure, as needes must answerable successe repay so god desiruing. Then laid he hand on the burning Crowne, whiche he toke from his head so easily, as though no enchantment at all had held it: and then ceassed the behement heate in Maurice, and from his mouth came odiferous and sweete sauours, as every one present delighted to feele thame. The Prince so ioyfull as could bee for his deliuerance, as may

well

## THE HISTORIE

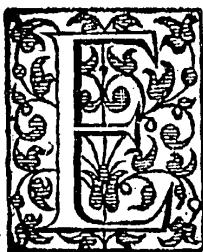
well be conjectured, prostrated himselfe at Palmerius feete, and with unspeakable ioye, thus saide: Most noble and fortunate knight, how much am I bound and indebted to thee: right happy was the houre of thy Birth, but much more happy my Journey to see thee: let my word suffice, I so farre deliver my selfe yours, as my selfe, my subiects, my possessions, or whatsoeuer els is mine, I freely offer to your disposition. Palmerin, who ever bare the mind of a valiant knight, was displeased that so great a Prince should honour him with such reverence, wherfore with great humilitie he tooke him vp in his arms, causing him to sit downe where before he did: But the Soldane and all his Lords greatly amazed, not so much at his courtesie, as his gracious Fortune, did him all the honour could be devised: but hee bashfull of this ouergreat kinnesse, kneeled downe before Maulicus, shewing by signes that himselfe was altogether unworthy of such honor, but his Maiestie, to whome that rich Crowne worthily appertained, which hee presenting the Soldan kneeled downe to kisse his feet, but Maulicus would not suffer him, taking him vp by the had, said: Sir knight, we hartily thank you for the great pleasure you haue done vs, promising you by the faith of a Prince, that this crown shalbe kept in our Treasurie, in witnes that we had in our Court, the most loyall and honourable among all Knights. In recompence whereof, wee give you this Cittie, with all th' appurtenances thereto belonging, and to morrow will we put you in possession therof. Oh that it pleased the immortal powres, and their great prophet Mahomet, to deliver you speech, whereof you are destitute: For I sweare by their high and immortall Name, we would make you the greatest in all our Kingdoms. Palmerin with humble gesture returned his thankfulness, signifying that he would haue neither Citties nor Castles, but that it suffised him to be one of his Knights; notwithstanding, the Prince by impotunate meanes gaue him rich gifts, & so his sake stayed there more then two moneths.

CHAP.

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

### CHAP. VIII.

¶ How the Princesse Ardemia, enduring extreme passions and torments in Loue, made offer of her affections to Palmerin, which he refused: wherewith the Princesse (through extreme conceyce of griefe and despight) suddenly dyed.



Asly may be conjectured, the great pleasure of the two fayre Ladys Alchidiana and Ardemia, beholding the onely man whome they both loued as their lues, aspyring to obtaine the honour of the Enchaunted Crowne: For each of them severally perswaded herselfe, that hee had thus aduentured in honour of her Loue. And as they returned from the great Hall to theyr private Chatibers, Alchidiana came and tooke Palmerin by the hand, and walking onwards with him, thus spake:

Oh gentle Knight, how are you to be regarded aboue all other: I know not why the Gods should deprive you of spoche, except that in all things, this onely excepted, you shold be perfectly resembled to them. Oh how happy is shee that might but aduenture to make you her Seruaunte doubtlesse, if in her appere so singular perfections, as apparantly shewe themselues in you: Well might it be reputed a rare coniunction, when the Celestiall dispositions gouerning theyr humaine affections, hath united you in so amiable alliance.

The Gentleman that attended on the Princesse, greatly murmured at this private familiaritie: but she was so immoderate in her affections, as Virginall modestie was

now

## THE HISTORIE

ndw forgotten, and carelesse of regarde, openly shewed her desires. Thus were these two Ladys now, much more amorous of the dumbe Knight then before: So that they were not well, but eyther in his companie, or thinking on him. Alchidiana remaining iealous of her Cozin, seemed not to loue her as she was wont, but deuised all the meane she could, that shee might be sent to her Fathers Court againe: yet shee that little made account thereto, sought opportunity to bewray her Loue to Palmerin, and by happe seeing Alchidiana in the Gallery, conferring with two of her Ladys, shee entred alone into her Cozins chamber, where sitting downe on the Bedde, shee compassed manie imaginacions, how shee might discouer to the dumbe knight, the secrete fire that was kindled in her West. So long she stayed there, till Palmerin came, because about that time he was wont to visite the Princesse Alchidiana. Ardeinia so glad hereof as could be possible, suddenly started vp, and saluting him with moze then common Reuerence, taking him by the hand, and causynge him to sit downe by her vpon the Bedde. Then enflamed with wonderfull passions, passing Paliphac's desire to the brutifull Bull, when she met him in the Wood made by Dedalus, shee beheld him with such a piercing countenaunce, as the least glimse whereof, was able to confound the reason of the most constant person, as the aspect of the Sunne in the signe of Leo, both the eyes of the beholders, & of force to warme the coldest complexion, although it were an Einuche himselfe in her presence. Then delivering thre or fourre bitter sighes, fetcht from the very bottome of her heart, as cruell as the stiuing pangs of death: she tooke a rich Diamond from her finger, and put it on Palmerins, with these words:

Oh sweete friende, and onely conforter of my soule, let me intreate you to weare this as an argument of my loue, hereby to knowe, how well you esteeme of mee, assuring you, that I am so devoted yours: as if you vouchsafe toaigne me the fauour & honour by iourneyng to the Court

85

## OF PALMER N. D'OLIVA.

of my Father with mee, I never will haue any other Husbande but you, and there shall such account be made of you, as well belenes a Knight so noble and vertuous.

Ah diuine defence of my life, and more worthy to be beloued then Loue himselfe, misdeeme not of these speeches so aduenturously vttered, by a young Ladie, and unmaried: for the seruent Loue I beare you is such, as I am constrained (forgetting the decent regard of a bashfull Virgin, who naturally is shamefasse) to esteeme of you honestly, and as is conuenable to mine estate. Then seeing the Gods, the place, the occasion, & the time permits mee to bewray, that whiche I dare not otherwise manifest: Haue then sayre Knight some pittie on me, & let me enjoy assurance of that grace, for which I live in ceaselesse torment. With which words she embrased him, & sealed so many sweete kisses on his hand, as apparantly dediphered her earnest affection.

Polinarda amazed at this strange accident, because shee was a Pagan, and contrary to him in Faith, that making no answere, but following the example of chaste Joseph, who refused Zephirah Wife to Putiphar, great Prouesse to the King of Egyot; started from her suddenly, and being moued with displeasure, departed the Chamber, thinking in hyselue, that such occasions more ouer rule the hearts of men, then all other matters that might bee deuided, and only the practises of hellish Pluto. Then calling to his Ladie for assistance, said to himselfe. Ah sweet Distresse, succour nowe your Servaunt, for I rather desire a thousand deaths, then to violate the chaste honour of my Loue, or to givie that fauour to this Ladie which is onyl yours. Alchidiana, by chance seeing Palmerin when he entred her chamber, & perceiving him to depart againe: imagined pretely the truthe of the cause: wherfore entring the Guarderoobe, which was adioyning to her Chamber, she closely stood and hearde all that had passed, and at his comming forth stayed him in this manner.

Not without great cause (good Knight) didst thou take  
the

## THE HISTORIE

the fatall Crowne from the head of Meurice, for in their more firmesse and continencie, then is in the disloyall Ardemias vnchaste desires and villainy: but in an vnfit time did she tip open her vnmaidienlike affections, for I will publish her shame to every one, and cause her to be lesse esteemed then a knowne offender.

Palmerin fearing that in her Cholre she would do no lesse then she saide, fell on his knee before her, intreating her by signes to forbear, or otherwise it woulde be his death. Shee seeing him so faire and gracious, and thus to humble himselfe at her feete, qualifed her displeasure, promising to keepe it in secrete. So Palmerin withsweare himselfe to his Chamber, leauing the two Ladyes now together: but Ardemia agrieved at the dumbe Knights refusall, woulde not reueale her wrong to Alchidiana, (who so soone as Palmerin was out of hearing) thus beganne. Why: shamelesse Ardemia, thinkest thou thy Beauty of such value, that the Knight, to whom my Father and I gaue done so great honours, woulde leauue vs, and depart with thē: trust mee thou art farre from thine account: For if thou vauntest to do him such honour in thy Fathers Court, as his Nobility deserueth, it consisteth in my power to exalt him more in one houre, then thou canst do in a thousand yeres, mighst thou live so long. I did never thinke that such audacious and incontinent tempting a man could euer enter thy heart: but if such be thy disposition, thou oughtest rather to contain thy selfe within thy Fathers Court, where thou mayest haue leasure to follow thy base affection, with some Varlets or Youthes attending on thy Father, then to offer such a motion here in my Chamber. Hence, hence, forth of my presence: For I will not keepe companie with such an intemperate Woman. What regard hadst thou of thy great linage, or the place from whence thou art deicended? Yea, what comfort wil it be to me when I shal heare, that a Ladie issued of the blood royall, should be more shamelesse and impudent then a Scummet, a villaine, or an highway beg-

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

begger? Many other such like hard speeches vsed Alchidiana, all which greeued her not so much, as to be despised of him, whom she reputed as passionate for her loue, as shee was for his.

These high words of the Princesse, caused the Ladies attending on Ardemia to enter the Chamber, which made her then breake off, because she woulde not haue every one know the matter: and they seeing their Mistresse so sad and disconsolte, brought her to her swine Chamber, where on her bedde she sorrowed so impatiently, as each one feared she woulde inurie her selfe, and faine shee woulde, but that their presence hindered her, therefore shee deferred it till better opportunitie. And because we had spent the most part of her younger yeeres, in reading the workes of Poets, as well Greekes as Arabians, shee remembred the mournfull Tragedie of Biblis: which cauled her to staine a Dystie, that she had translated from the Greeke poesie of Sapho, into her bulgar speech, and turning towarde her Ladies and Gentlewoman, she began in this maner.

### The lamentable Dittie of Ardemia, dying for loue.

*Use not (faire virginis) at Ardemia,  
Although her end be hard and dolorous:  
For death is pleasant as mine elders say,  
To any Ladie sometime amorous.*

*For as the Swan in colde Meander glyde,  
By mournfull notes foretelles her speedy death:  
So my complaint doth bid me to prouide,  
For sweetest loue makes hast to stop my breath.*

## THE HISTORIE

The yll that endlesse and uncessantly  
Torments my heart, is faire and choisest beauty:  
And this unhappy awkward destiny,  
Falls to my lot through spotlesse loyalty.

For fond conceit that ouer-rulde my witte,  
More wretched then faire Biblis maketh me:  
And he I loue more stony hard is knis,  
Then Caunus, who could ken no courtesie.

Yet Biblis oftentimes could ease her heart,  
By sweete devising with her louely frend:  
But he I honour, recks not of my smart,  
Nor will vouchsafe one gracious looke to lend.

And as her sorrowes chiefly did arise,  
Because the secrets of her loue were knowne:  
So I reueald, each one will me despise,  
which death can scint ere it to farre be blowne.

Vnhappy wretch, that could not this foresee,  
And be more charie of so choysse a thing:  
But all too late I misb the remedie,  
Therefore my folly doth due guerdon bring.

If loue that is esteemed a power divine,  
Vnto his Servants give a sharpe reward:  
what merit may vile hatred then resigne,  
Vnto his vassiles that his Iames regard?

Off

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

Ofte haue I heard mine ancient elders say,  
That such as loue not, are unworthy life:  
Yet doth my loue imagine my decay,  
And throwes my hope into whole worlds of strife.

And yet the paines I wish for my mischance,  
May not be valued with my present woe:  
For to compare them is meere dalliance,  
And neither sense or reason should I shew.

Life is to me lothsome and burdenous,  
All pleasure seemes to me tormenting hell:  
Ah poore refusid, and abused thus,  
Must thou needs die for louing all too well?

O sacred Venus, patronesse of loue,  
In this distresse wilt thou not pittie me?  
And thy faire Sonne that thus his shaft did proue,  
Will he for sake me in this jeopardy?

If you for sake me in this iust request,  
And will not fauour what you did procure:  
G:ue leaue to him that bringeth all to the rest,  
And he will ease the torments I endure.

You fatall Sisters that haue spunne my thred,  
And now thinke good it shoulde be cut in twaine:  
Fulfill the taske as you are destined,  
And let my heart abide no longer paine.

D

Come

## THE HISTO RIE

Come sweetest Death, expected too too long,  
Ende all the euills unhappy Loue begun:  
If thou delay, I challenge thee of wrang,  
Hast then good Death, that Loue and Life were done.

Her complainte thus finished, shee commaunded her Ladys to departe the Chamber, and beeing alone by her selfe, shee againe beganne to consider, the rigorous refusall of Palmerin, the conceite whereof grieued her so extreame-ly, as also the reproachfull wordes of her Cozin: that making a conscience of her sorrowes, and raging with extremitie of this despight, brake the bernes of her heart in sunder, and the Arties of her body, as the blood illied forth at many places abundantly, and therewithall in shorte time, she was strangled.

The next morning, her chieffest Lady that attened on her, and loued her exceedingly, came to the Beddes side, to see how shee fared: but finding her dead, and so besmeared with her owne blood, gaue such a loude shrieke, as Alchidiana and her Damozels affrighted at the noyse, ranne in all haste into the Chamber. The Princesse knowing the cause of this mischance, was maruellous sorry wfull, assuring her selfe, that those wordes she spake in her anger, occasioned this bludie stratageme. And the rumor of this mishap was so swone spread through the Pallace, as all the Ladys, Damozels, knyghts, squires, and others, gaue to behold the hard fortun of Ardemia. That Lamentation was made on all sides, is not to be exprest, especially the Ladys attened on Ardemia, and her Brother Guilhar-  
tan, who brought her with him thither: but her Countesse not able to endure the burthen of her heauiness, without feare or dreade of any, thus openly complained. Ah swete Princesse Ardemia, the flower of Beauty, how dñe hast thou boght this precious gift: for I know assuredly, that for this

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

this cause onely thy death happened: vnhappy was the howre when thou didst leaue thy Fathers Court, to accom-  
pany the Princesse Alchidiana. After her moanes, & the funerall pompe accomplished, the Souldane erected her a most beautefull Tombe, with a sumptuous Coronet on the toppe thereof, being vpheld by two inestimable pillars of engrauen and gilded Alabaster, the like whereof were ne-  
uer seene, since the first King of Grecce. Yet was hee ig-  
norant in the case of her death, and Palmerin not imagi-  
ning whence this inconuenience did arise, was so sorrow-  
full for the death of the Princesse: as day and night hee  
mourned for her, and at length remembred her wordes to  
him, and doubting his vnkindnesse to bee the cause of her  
death, saide within himselfe.

Alas sayre Princesse, must I (at the first motion) diue  
thee to despayre: had I dissembled a little, or temporized  
the matter, thou hadst not fallen into this extremity, but  
my onely wilfull indiscretion, is cause of thy losse. O fe-  
male sexe, how are you subject to casuall pallenies? Yet  
neede I not wonder at this present mishap, or from the  
beginning of the World, the Woman hath bene so sudden  
and voluntary to the effect of her desires, were they good or  
evill, but especially in the action of loue, as neyther feare,  
hony, shaine, tormentes, nor neyther death could diuert her from  
her vndiscreete fantasies. Here of beare record Hypermnestra,  
Myrrha, Deganira, Scylla, Phedra, Thisbie, Oenone  
Phyllis, Salmacis, Hero and Dydo, whose deathes were  
procured onely by louish loue. O divine wisedome, that  
hast suffered me to fall into this lucklesse accident, protect  
mee from any further disadvantage, seeing thou hast ta-  
ken her hence, who gaue some ease to mine affections, in  
that so lively shee resembled my sweete Mistresse, whom I  
desire to serue with continuall loyalty. I now perswade  
my selfe, that this loue was not accompanied with vertue,  
and that for my good it hath so chanced: forget mee not  
then, but so enable me, as in such bad occasions, I swarue

# THE HISTORIE

not from my dutie. And such is my confidence in thy promises, as no temptation shall preuaile against me: but this captiuitie once discharged, I hope to direct my course pleasing in thy sight, and to perfore such gracious seruice, as thy name shall be exalted and glorified for ever. So long continued he in this silent contemplation, as Alchidiana perceived him, which greatly displeased her: but fearing any way to offend Palmerin, she durst not say what shee thought, living in hope, that her Coxin being dead, she shuld now compasse the effect of her desires. Ardemia entered in her honourable Tombe, Guilharan her Brother with his traine, and the Ladies that attended on his Sister, returned into Armenia, where great sorrow was made for the death of the Princesse, and the reuowne of her beantie, blazed the report of her death through euery region.

## CHAP. VII.

How Amarano of Nigrea, eldest Sonne to the King of Phrygia, vnderstanding the death of the faire Princesse Ardemia, who was newly promised him in mariage, made many greeuous lamentations for her losse. And how Alchidiana discouered her amorous affectiōns to Palmerin.



○ farre was spread the report of the strange death of the Princesse Ardemia, as at length it came to the hearing of Amarano, eldest sonne to the King of Phrygia, the most valiant & redoubted knight of that countrey: as well for his great provves & deeds of arm, which he before that time accomplished in Asia, as for his affable nature

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

nature, vertue & courtesie. This yong Prince, being in the King his Fathers Court, hearing commended beyond all other Ladies of the East, the faire Ardemia daughter to the King of Armenia: at the very sound of the Trumpe of this blazing Goddess, and setting the news down for true, from her affecting speech, she became so amorous of her, as he had no content but in thinking on her. Hereupon, he sent his Ambassadours to her father, to request her in mariage, whereto right willingly he condicendered, and now at the instant, when he intended to goe visite her, newes came to the court of her admirable death, which for a while was concealed from him, because each one doubted the conceit thereof would cause his death. For they knowing the loue he bare her to be so vehement, as he vnderstanding her straunge kinde of death, they thought it impossible, but it would arise to very scandalous inconuenience, yet in the ende hee heard thereof: but to set dolwe heere the griefe, teares, and complaint of this yong Prince, is morethen I am able, let it therefore suffice you, that his sorrowes were such, as euery houre his death was likewise expected. It was likewise told him, how through the enuie of Alchidiana, she dyed, and that (for certaintie) she was one of the cheefest causers thereof: which moued him then into such an alteration, as he swore by the great Prophet Mahomet, to reuenge her iniury, so that the Soldane should for euer remember the daunger in suffering so great a treason. In conclusion, he intended to take with him, two hundred chosen knyghts, all clad in mourning for the greefe of their Maitre, and fourre of his brethren, knyghts of great hardinesse, and so well they iournyed, as they came within twentle miles of the Soldane Court. But that we may not too farre swarve from our intent, Alchidiana, ioyfull (as you haue heard) for the departure of Guilharan and his company: from thenceforwads sought all the meanees she could, to conserue with Palmerin alone at her pleasure. And labouring thus in her tormenting passions, as it is co-

## THE HISTORIE

men to all Louers, such account shee made of her Beauty and Riches, as shee imagined that Palmerin would not disher: but rather would repute himselfe happy, to haue that at his pleasure, whereof so many Kings and great Lordes had bene denyed. And in this opinion, the next time that Palmerin came to her Chamber, she beganne with him in this manner.

Reb Syr Knight, what thinke you of the death of Ardemia, who falsely woulde haue seduced you to goe with her hence? Did she not committ great treason against mee if she had preuailed? but right well is she rewarded, and as I desired. I thinke then no more of her presumptuous folly, or the ridiculous concepte of her vaine Loue, which she had made her pretence, to cause you to forsake my Fathers Court: where you haue receyued so many speciall honours, chieflie of his Daughter, who loues you dearly, and intende to make you Lorde of all her Pessessions. Believe me Syr Knight, if hitherto I deferred to acquaint you herewith, it was in respect I doubted her: But now shee being gone, esteime henceforth of me as your soun, and to beginne this our Alliance I honour you with all that is mine, and my selfe to be dispesed at your pleasure. For my hart, which is onely subiect to you, applies it selfe to your liking, and can wish nothing but what you will commaund.

How long haue I desired this happy day? How often haue I cenerned and despised my selfe, in not datering to breake the seale of my affections, which now I haue aduentured to your knowledge? As for that which now troubleth mee is only the want of your speche, which the Gods haue deprived you of, being envious of your manifolde perfections. Alas my Lord, why did they not endue thy with that benefite? that in declaring my desires, thy aunsweres might returne reciprocall pleasures?

Some in their loue delight themselves with embracing, kissing, and such ceremoniall behaviour: as for mee, amorous, private, and familiarre conference, I repute a chiese

con-

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

content. Yet hath Loue one shart in his Diuine moze pleasing then all these, being the onely argument of each others resolution: in respect whereof I commit my Honour into your protection, prizing, esteeming, and chusing you aboue all men in the world beside. Palmerin exceedingly abashed at this answere, and haunting recourse to his only comforter, lifting his eyes to Heauen, thus priuately Invocated. O ye God, deliuere me from this enemie, and suffer me not to fall in consent to this temptation: for I thinke her a Diuell incarnate, and sent to deceiue me. Impossible is it that a malden, by nature modest & bashfull, would let slip such effrontery and audacious words! The conceite heereof so vexed and offendeth him, as the Prince feareth he woulde haue died: not with conceit that like hap might come to Alchidiana, as did to Ardemia, but because he shoulde so wickedly sin against his owne soule, and fallisfe his Loue to his sweetest Mistresse. Yet knowing that this sadnesse woulde not sacrifice the Prince, he faigned to swoone, his colour changing in such sort, as one woulde haue iudged him past recovery. Alchidiana was so grieved hereat, as she could not imagine what to say: but seeing that Palmerin seemed now not to understand her, and before had by signes still reuealed his meaning, saide: By our great God it may well be said, that this man is a huge lumpe of flesh, which the diuell hath enchaunted to torment me withall, or else some other shaddow and resemblance: For hee refuseth what all men desire, yea, and often dispayre, because they cannot attaine it. But fearing least her ende woulde imitate her Coxines, or that the dumbe Knight shoulde dye in her presence, shee durst presume no further: but threw her selfe downe vpon a Pallet, not able to speake, her stomacke was so enraged. Whiche Palmerin sone perceiving, arose out of his feigned Traunce, and giuing a great sighe, departed the Chamber, and went to his owne. The Prince seeing him gone, began to weape and lament very grieuously, and in midde of her

## THE HISTORIE

her melancholly, fell into these speches. Yeu Gods, how can you suffer one so contrary to nature, as is this dumbe Knight, to live among men? Can you behold that he whom I deliuored from death, brought into the grace of my Father, and to whom I haue done more honour then had hee bene mine owne brother: will not regard me? but against reason, disdaineth, refuseth, maketh no reckoning of my doleous, and setteth at nought my earnest intreaties? Ah budecrete and carelesse Circle, thy folly at this time too much ouer-ruled thee, that knowing thine owne estate and high lineage, wouldest submit thy selfe to loue one unknowone to thee, and of whom thou canst haue no answer, more then of a sencelesse stocke or stone. If I can now learne to hate thee, it will be some comfort to me: but the more he injuryeth me, the more am I deuoted to his loue. Then again she contraryed her self in this sort. Yet seeing it is so ingrateful wretch as thou art, I wil cause thee (ere it be long) to repent thy villany. In this anger she continued all the day, not comming forth of her chamber, intending thenceforward utterly to despise him: but the first time she saw him againe, she reputed him so louely, faire, and gracious, that (to die) she could not wish him any harme, but loued him much better then before. Yet to couer her owne inconstancie, she sent him no more presents, nor did him such honour as she was accustomed, which Palmerin well percevtes, but he could dissemble it in such sort, as the princesse hardly might decipher him. For he liued in hope of the Soldans promise, which he had made to his deceased Father, to send his Brethren to Constantinople, in whose company he might traiale thither, and so escape the Turks and Moorthi<sup>sh</sup> In-  
fidels.

CHAP.

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

### CHAP. X.

How Amarano Prince of Nigrea, came to the Soldans Court, to accuse Alchidiana, as causer of the death of the sayre Princesse Ardemia her Cozin.



Item the tyme that the Princesse Alchidiana dissembled not to loue Palmerin, the Prince Amarano of Nigrea came within a daies journey of the Isle of Calpha, where hee remained to rech himselfe a little. In meane tyme he sent an Embassage to Maulicus, craving assurance for his comming to his Court, to accuse one that was neare about him. The Ambassadours arrived, and their message vnderstood, the Soldane answered, that hee shoulde haue what securitie hee woulde demande: for to the Prince Amarano, quoth he, nor y meaneest of his people, shall any thing be misdone, nor to him or the that shall defende the cause of the accused. And greatly amazed was the Soldane at these typpings, considering the distaunce between Calpha and Phrygia: wherefore he supposed, that some body had injured the Prince since his actuall. Notwithstanding (quoth he to the Ambassadours) that your Lord may stand in no doubt of treason, you shal haue our louing Letters to him: and let presently be proclaimed through the City by sound of Trumpet, the safe conduct of the Prince and his traine. The Ambassadours returned with their Letters to the Prince, who ioyfull of these newes came to the Cittie: but before he woulde approuch the Court, he went to the Combe of the

## THE HISTORIE

the Princesse Ardemia, and if hee made such lamentations, when he but heard of her death, what iudgment may be sette downe of his mothes, being now at the Sepulcher of his best beloued. Ah inconstant Fortune, quoth he, why wouldest thou not permit mee to see her living? Ah Ardemia, accomplished with admirable beautie, great was her sinne, who enuying thy perfections, procured thy cruell death: yet this is my cōfōrt, that I shall find time enough to reuenge thy undeserved mishap, and he that dare gaine-saie me, with her the authoř of thy tragedie, shall receiuē such condigne punishment, as shall remaine for euer in me-mory.

These complaints deliuered with exceeding sorrowe, his Brethren perswaded him, that such behauour beseemed not so great a Prince: therefore he shoulde refer those offices to effeminate persons, who make a God of their si-lent passions, as for him, he would thinke on nothing, but his mortall manner of reuenge. Amarano ashamed of his owne folly, mounted on Horsebacke, and came to the Palace, where he and his Brethren entred armed, and the Prince being a man of godly personage, had so stearne and fierce a countenaunce, as hee was generally reputed a hardie Knight and his Bretheren very little inferiour to him. He being come into the presence of Maulicus, saluted him with great reverence, and not killing his hande as o-thers were accustomed, because he was not his subiecte, neyther came for peace, but matter of fight and death: after long pause, in that the remembraunce of his grieve some-  
ner.

Hightie Lord, and redoubted Monarch of Asia, being assured of the equall iustice, whiche you afford to al persons without exception: I doubt not but you will punish the partie abyding in your Court, bee his or her calling never so great who by disloyall treason hath too much dishonored me. For which cause, reposing my hope in your noble ver-

tue,

## OF PALMER N DOLIVA.

tue, I haue left my Countrey, and aduentured into your presence, to accuse your Daughtere Alchidiana, whom (so please you) to call before this assembly, I will charge: that she by false and spightfull hatred, as a most cruell and dis-loyall Ladie, trayterously murdered her Cozin the Prin-cess Ardemia. And because this villainie hath hetherto bene concealed very secret, in respect it could not easily be verified: I am haere readie to proue in open fielde, against any of your Knights that dare maintaine her cause, howe the treason before rehearsed, was committed by her, in re-venge whereof, she ought to be rewarded with sharpe and shamefull death.

The Souldane inuayling at this accusation, says. By the reuence of all our Gods, Prince Amarano, I cannot be perswaded, that it coulde at any time enter my daugh-ters thought, to perpetrate an offence so abominable: but because reason commaundeth that I do iustice, I will send for her, promising you, that if she be found culpable in your accusation, she shall haue such punishment, as your selfe shall rest contented therewith. Then he commaunded two Kings to goe fetch the Princesse, who being come, satte down by her Father, her accuser not deigning to salute her or once to moue from the place where he satte. This day had Maulicus, for the better defence of his person, caused fiftie hundred armed Knights to attend on him, the greater part whereof (seeing the pride of the Prince of Nigra) would furiously haue runne upon him, saying, that hee should repent his folly: but the Souldane offendred thereat, caused a Heralde presently to proclaimme, that on payne of death, no one should harme or offendre the Prince, nor any in his company, and whosoeuer did other wise, should pre-sently die for breaking his commaundement, thus sca-ning his speeches to the Prince, said. Amarano, nowe maist thou behold my Daughter before thee; disburden the greene of thy minde to her, and iustice shall be done thee to thine owne desire. Imagine, quoth the Prince, that such as know-

## THE HISTORIE

know you Madame Alchidiana, will not a little mer-  
naile, seeing you accomplished with such gracious beautie,  
that you should so farre forget your selfe, as to commit trea-  
son. But because a matter so unlikely, demaundeth as  
hard a pouse, I will auerre with mine owne personne in  
Combat, against any one that dare support your quarrell:  
that you are guiltie in the accusation already alleadged,  
and principall cause of the death, of the Armenian Prince  
esse your Cousin. To reueng which famous wrong, I haue  
forlaken my Countrey, traueilng night and day, and haue  
presented my accusation before your Father, with this co-  
dition: that if your Knight shall be vanquished, you are to  
be punished as a cause so such weighty requireth. If it bee  
my fortune to be soyled, and your Champion victor, I shall  
yelde my selfe as conquered, and demaunde no better re-  
compence, for it cannot greeue me to remaine with her bo-  
dy, whose very remembrance keepeh me aliue: this said,  
he went and satte downe againe. The Soldane, who was  
a man of great wisedome, and well considering the mat-  
ter, seeing the accuser persist so confidently in his wordes,  
knew not what to answere. Yet as a vertuous Prince, he  
spake to his Daughter in this manner. Alchidiana, you  
haue heard the speeches of the Prince, aduise your selfe well  
of your answer: for which of you both shall be found attai-  
ned in the crime, be it Lele Maiestatis or other kind of trea-  
son, shall be punished according as the cause requireth.

## OF PALMERN D'OLIVA.

### CHAP. XI.

How Palmerin seeing that none of the Soldans Knights  
would aduenture for Alchidiana against Amarano, en-  
terprised himselfe in her cause in Combat. And how  
the Queene of Tharsus sent him a sumptuous Hel-  
met.



Alchidiana hauing heard y accusation of  
Amarano, and that hee had spoken so  
flaundrely of her in y presence of the  
Soldan: incensed with maruaillous an-  
ger & disdain, returned him this answer.  
Amarano, the most rash & vadi discreet  
Knight that euer I saw, I wonder how  
the folly could make thee so audacious,  
to come and accuse me of treason ( against all trueth ) be-  
fore my Father and his nobilitie. But thy speeches well  
noted and considered, shew nothing but carelesse youth,  
arrogancie, and to baine glorioous conceit: cheefely in this,  
that thou Armed cap a pe, and accompanied with so ma-  
ny well appointed Knights, comonest in this sorte to  
moleste a poore Mayde, who never to thee or thine committed  
any offence, but all seruiciable honour, especially to her,  
on whose behalfe thou offereſt the Combat. As for the ba-  
bour thou reputest in thy selfe, that moitie which this flan-  
der dooth encourage thee withall, couloping thy hardinelle  
and resolution of hart: thou oughtest rather oppose against  
a Knight able to answere thee, then a seelie Virgin, whd  
hath no weapon but her Honour wherewith to defend her  
selfe. I confesse I am a Ladie, but not trayterous or false,  
as

## THE HISTORIE

as thou anouchest, yet of so noble courage, as were I of thy sexe, thou never shouldest depart this Hall, before I had that conspiring head from thy shoulders, to witnesse thy falsehood and malenolent spirit. Notwithstanding, as I am, so please my Lord and Father, with a Witchin cudgell I shall let thee know, that thou doest in thy speeches, and against thyne own conscience chargest me, with the murder of my Coxin. Examins thy thoughts, what likely reason might induce mee to such an offence? If shee was fayre, thanks to our Gods, mine own talent is so good, as I need not envy her beauty. If she made account of her rich dowe-rie, I being sole heire to the Signiories of the Soldane, might judge my selfe farre beyond her, being desired in marriage by many Kings and Princes, whereof I am wel assured shee never had the like. I know not then what cause should any way induce mee to request her death: but what need I make such protestations to thee? seeing that by some one of my Fathers Knights thy pride will be abated, and I revenged of the injury thou hast done me. Amaro-  
rano not answering her a word, spake to the Soldane in this sort.

It is not decent my Lord, that a Prince or Knight of quality, should stay on the wordes of a Woman so little considerate, who more by anger then vertue, thinks to reprove and annihilate a true accusation. Wherefore, according to the agreement before determined, call for y Knight that dare undertake the quarrell of your daugheer, to whom I will manifest in plau Combat, that what I haue said is truth: and if he be vanquished, your daughter Alchidiana and hee shall bee burned together, as the greatness of the offence well deserueth: contrariwise, if Fortune deny mee successe, I will request no other justice, then what shal please you to appoint for me. Maulicus seeing that well he could not denie the Prince, though to his griefe, pronounced the sentence, that his Daughter that day shoulde present a Knight, to sustaine her cause, according to his condi-

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

tions alleadget. This hard prescription, made never a Janighting willing to aduenture the Combate, so much they feared Amarano, for the great report they heard of his prouesse, but stood all silent, as though themselves were condemned to death. Alchidiana seeing the courage fayle of so many Knights, whom shee esteemed for men of great account, knew not to whom shee shoulde haue recourse, & therefore overcome with exceeding sorrow, but that her Ladies assisted her, had twice or thrice swouned, before her father. Palmerin beholding her, and knowing that his refusall, was greater cause of Ardemias death, then the iniuriovs wordes of Alchidiana: pitying her estate, & having before his eyes the loue shee bare him, the great honours was done him for her sake, and the pusillanimity of the Soldane's Knights, was so moued, as forgetting all daunger, and his dissembled dumbnes, which hitherto hee had so cunningly obserued, as though hee had bene born in that Country, he thys began in the Arabian tongue. Ah cowardly caitifes, vnwoorthy henceforth the name of Knights, how can your hearts endure, that a proud and presumptuous Prince shall come into your presence, false-ly to accuse your Lady and Mistresse, and not one of you daring to defend her right? By the celestiall powers, well may you bee accounted heartlese men, and (insuffling this wrong) to be depryued of all noble titles, and to bee sold in the market as slaves and villaines: thinke you the Prince Amarano is come hither for any other intent, then to make tryall of his great hardines? Can you bee destitute of reason, & so easily abused, as to thinke that the Princesse Alchidiana whom nature hath so worthily enriched with beauty, and with whom no other may make comparison, could bee prouoked to murder Ardemia, for this only occasion, because she was fayre? And you Lord Amarano, for a matter so slender, haue you enterprised to blame a Lady so vertuous, as is the Princesse Alchidiana? I accept the Combat on her behalfe, vouching, that shamefullie and

with

## THE HISTORIE

without reason you haue accused her, behold me ready likewise, to maintaine in open fielde, t hat falsely and maliciously thou liest in thy throte; in witness whereof, there is my Gage, and I beseech your highnesse afforde vs presently Judges, that may discerne the issue of our Combat. I take thy offer, quoth the Prince, and before the Sun set will give thee the payment that belongs to such a stollick companion.

Who can now imagine the ioy of Maulicus and his Daughter, seeing him whom they reputed dumbe by nature, thus to recover his speech? assuredly they were all so amazed, that they thought Mahomet, had come from the clowdes to perorme this miracle. The Soldane thus surprised with unspeakable comfort, forgetting the malice of his person, caught Palmerin in his armes, saying: Ah god knight, how may this be? dreame I? or doth but my fancie delude me with your speech? O Mahomet, for ever be thou prayed for this great grace. By the highest God, I am more joyful of this god fortune, then had I gained the fairest Island in the Mediterranean Sea. Now will I dismay no longer of my Daughters fortune, seeing that you take her quartell in hand, and for her sake will combat with Amarano: with all my heart I graunt you the field, and thinke that my Daughter will not denie it. But tell me noble friende, how haue you so happily recovered your speech? Palmerin abashed that he had so forgotten himselfe, knew not what excuse to make, neuerthelesse, seeing now there was no remedy, and that the stone thronne could not be recalled: imagined some likely similitude of his suddaine speech, saying. I promise you my Lord, that the certitude of your Daughters innocency, and the great griefe I conceiued, seeing your Knightes so towardly and faint in courage, moued me into such choller, as the Catarre, which of long time hath hindered my speech, dissolved it selfe, and hath giuen my tongue liberty to reueale, what I was enforced to bewraye before by

sigres,

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

sigres. And this is not a thing altogether strange: For I haue heretofore read in Histories, that a Knight called Egle Samien, dumbe from his byrth: when one of his companions would usurpe the honour of a victory, which iustly appertained to him: was so enraged and incensed with displeasure, as that very passion, with the helpe of the Gods, restored his speche. And thus hath it happened to me, for which I honor theyz names with immortall thankes, not so much for my speaking, as that I may now declare my earnest affection to do you service, and sayre Alchydiana your Daughter, to whom I am so greatly indebted, for the manifold honours she hath done me without deserte, as I shal never be able to make recompence. Ah my noble friend quoth the Soldane, this libetall offer, for the defence of my Daughters honor, contente me in such sort, as both she and I remayne to requite your paynes. Amarano amazed at the braue disposition of Palmerin, but especially at the great honour Maulicus did him, knew not well what to think: and did not the feare of reprouach ouer-rule him, I thinke he would haue deferred the Combate till another yeare. Notwithstanding to couer his new opinion, he besought him of a prettie subtiltie, and saide: I beseech your Daughte to tell mee, of whence this Dumbe Knight is, to whome our Gods (by myracle) hath restoed such brauing language: It is necessarie that I knowe what hee is, and whence hee is descended, because the Fight being enterprised for two such Princesses, as sometimes was the faire Ardemia, and your Daughter present: if hee be not the Sonne of a King as I am, he may not be permitted the Field with me. Amarano (answere the Soldan, I know not what hee is, for till this time hee hath continued dumbe in our Courte, to him therfore you shall staine your demand: For this opinion I holde of him, that he will answer you nothing but truth. But if you goe about so craftily to excuse your selfe, eache one may iudge that in you, which but ill beseemes the minde of a Noble man, that is, to be double in your speche. And

E

(whiche)

## THE HISTORIE

(which is more) hee beeing a Knight as god as your selfe, you may not refuse him, because you demanded the Combat against any Knight in my Court, and in your challenge made no exception. Perswade your selfe then (quoth the Prince) that if hee be not the Sonne of a King, hee shall not enter the Field against me: therefore if hee be none such, hee hath not to meddle with Armes in this cause, and so the Fight on his behalfe is finished. If thou make such doubt, saide the Soldane of him, aske him the question thy selfe: I hope he is able to resolve thee, in the e. ubtil l cauls and so phisicall questions.

During this contention, there entred the Hall a sayre young Damosell, bearing betwene her hand a godly Helmet, the richest and most beautifull that ever was scene, and falling on her knees before the Soldane, with such gracious salutation as stode with her duetie: she demanded which was Amarano of Nigrea, who of envie had accused his Daughter, and which likewise was the dumbe Knight, who enterprised her Desence. Maulicus without any other inquisition, shewed them both to her: wherevpon the Damosel arose, and comming to the Prince, thus beganne.

Amarano of Nigrea, the Queene of Tharsus, my Ladie and Mistresse beeing certaine that this day thou be in this place, sent me hither to advise thee, that the dumbe Knight is of higher kinage then thou art: and such a one hee is, as the greatest Lord or Prince may not compare with him in Bountie. And if thou wilt know the certaintie of his descent, more then any other as yet dooth: she adviseth thee (for thy profit) to desist from the Combatte whereto thou hast challenged him, in defence of thy false accusation against Alchidiana. And further she also dooth admonish thee, that if thou doest not as she commandeth, the Knight late dumb, surpassing all other in Knightly Chualtrye, shall overcome thee, and thou shalt not be able to stand against him. Damosell (quoth the Prince,) you may answer your Mistresse, that overlate she sent mee her counsell, and I am not accu-

stomed

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

stomed to give credite to such Sorcerers: Besides, I will not lose mine Honour, at the simple wordes of a Woman I know not. And if doth not a little content me, that that this Knight is such a one as hee should be: wherefore being so sure of his Bountie, I am the more desirous to Combat with him, to make experiance of his renowne: yet this I still maintaine, that what I haue spoken is true, and thereon we will presently enter the Field, so please the Soldan to give consent. Maulicus seeing that the day was to faire spent, adiournde it till the day following: Wherefore the Prince withdrew himselfe to his Lodging, reposing great confidence in his owne strength, and after his departure, the Soldane taking Palmerin by the hand, sayd. I knowe not my Lorde how I may acknowledge the honour you do my Daughter, whome I esteem as mine owne selfe: But if the Gods asconde me life, I will deuise some such recompence, as I hope shall returne your owne content. Then the Damosell sent from the Queene of Tharsus, appraaching to Palmerin, presented him the Helmet, saying, A noble and vertuous Knight, the Queen saluteth you with this token of her god will, in remembraunce of your speciall Loyaltie, wherby you deliuered the Prince Maurice: for which she so much remaineth yours, as you shall command her any seruice hence forward, albeit she could haue wished him longer torment, that proued so unfaithfull to her. She likewise desirch you, to weare this Helmet in Fight with Amarano, so it will greatly auayle you, and more then any other: For such is her Hope, that after you know this present Service, you will not denie her one request, whiche one day shee intendeth to craue of you. Palmerin taking the Helmet, answered:

Sayre Wyrgit, most humbly thanke the Queen on my behalfe, and tell her that wheresoeuer I am, shee shall finde mee ready to fulfill any thing she will commaunde. The Damosell departed, and made such spedee, as in short time she came to the Queen her Mistresse, whom she acquainted

## THE HISTORIE

With her whole message: whereof shee was very joyfull, especially of Palmerins great courtesie, whome shee began to affect very greatly.

### CHAP. XII.

¶ Howe Palmerin entred the Combattre with the Prince Amarano of Nigrea, whome hee slew, and of the great Honours which the Soldan and his Daughter did him.



¶ He Princesse Alchydiana hearing of those reportes, which the Mture of Tharsus Damosell made relation of before the Soldan her Father, being likewise meruellous glad, that Palmerin was descended of such Noble parentage, and so much renowned in the Region farre thence distant: beganne to loue him more extreameley then ever shee did before, and resolued with her selfe, that seeing for her sake he vndertooke the Combat, he bare her more secrete affeccion then he durst belyay: and in this opinion she practised how to conserue with him againe, whiche this day shee could not compasse, because hee was continually with the Soldan. But when Palmerin tooke his leaue for that night, the Princesse had a little leysure to thank him for his honorable kindeste, and how glad shee was that the Gods had restored his sprach againe. Sone after shee sent him a most sumptuous golden Armour, desiring him (for her sake) to weare it in the Combattre, which Palmerin thankfully accepting, assured the Messenger, that hee would sufficiently reuenge his Ladys inurie. In meane time, the Soldan comandement his Knight Marshall, to see the Fielde prepared

in

### OF PALMERIN DOLIVA.

in readinesse, and the Heaffoldes for the Ladys prouided, and to haue two thousand Armed men in place, for defence of his owne person. All which the next morning was duly executed, the Soldan appointing two Kings, and Amarano his two Brethren Judges of the Field, who going to their Tent, and all the Nobilitie to their appointed places, expected now the issue of the Fight. The Ladys came to their standing: among whom Alchydiana helmed like faire Vesper, among the other stars, and sone after came the two Combattants, so brauely and richly appointed, as nothing wanted that could be imagined: especially Palmerin, before whome a King bare his Helmet, and the high Admiral of Assiria his Sworde, and so brauely did hee mannage his Horse, with such lightly behaviour, and gallant countenance, that each one iudged hee had learned his knowledge before he came chither into Turkie, and caused Maulicus to perswade himselfe, that the victorie was destenyed to him. In the ende, that they might the sooner begin the Combat, the Judges tooke their seates, commanding silence through the Fielde, whiche was pestered with wonderfull resorte of people: and then the Heraldes fulfilling theye charge, gaue libertie to the Champions to do theye deuoyze. Palmerin clasping his Helmet, gaue the Spurres to his Horse, and encountered Amarano with such surie, as they were bothe dismounted headlong to the ground: But Palmerin alshamed to bee so soyled before the Soldan, recovered himselfe quickly, and aduancing his Shielde, gaue Amarano such a sound stroke on his head with his Sworde, as made him stagger in great amazement. Notwithstanding his courage and agility was such, as well declared, he had followed thole affaires: So that the fight was so fierce and cruell between them, as in many yeres before the Assirians sawe not the like: for Amarano was the most hardy Knight in all those partes, yet Palmerin assaulted him with so many sharpe charges, as hee made him forget his cunning points of Defence, and with head and shoulders to awarde his

E 3

Strokes,

## THE HISTORIE

Strokes. Which when the Princes two Brethren beheld, they were maruellously abashed, for they imagined that through the East partes, no knight might bee found so equall him: wherefore one of them sayde; I thought my brother would haue dispatched this companion at the first encounter, but seeing he hath held out so long, no doubt hee is more expert in Armes, then we at first made account of him.

The two Kings were somewhat incued with these wordes, willing him to be silent, untill such time as the end was determined. Amarano hearing what his Brother had spoken, offended with himselfe because hee could not overcome Palmerin, beganne to encourage himselfe, and albeit he was sore wounded in many places on his body, yet he followed his intent so nobly, as taking his sword in both his hands, hee stroke Palmerin so violently on the helmet, as made him set one of his knees to the ground to sauue himselfe. But he perceiving that if he had many such blowes, it would letur e his disaduantage, intended to play double or quitte, and remembryng the honour of his Mistresse Polinarda, hee came with such valour on Amarano, as cleaving his sholdre in two pieces, cut away a great part of his arme. The Prince seeing himselfe so maymed, beganne to fainte, hardly enduring to defende his enemies strokes, which Palmerin perceiued, chased him about which way he listed, first here, then there, where best y Prince had hope of safety: but all these delayes little awayled him, for Palmerin left not until he got him down, whē Amarano thinking to helpe himselfe, drew a little pocket Dagger, and therewithal thrust Palmerin under the shott ribbes, which wound so moued him, as renting his Helmet from his head, immediately smote it from his shouulders. Palmerin being then so glad, and well disposed, as though hee had but newly entred the field, tooke the head of his enimie by the haire, and presented it to the Princesse Alchidiana, saying, Madame, I now thinke my selfe acquited of the

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

promise, which I made to my gracious Lord your Father, for heere is that Syring-head that first accused you: be-thinke your selfe therefore, if there bee any other thing else to be done for you, because I remaine here ready to accom-plysh it.

The Princesse exceeding ioyfull for this worthy victory, answered. Truly my Lorde, you haue done so much for me, that although my Father, my selfe, and all my Friends should bequeath our lues to your seruice: yet could we not recompence the very least of your Noble courtesies, chiefly, even this one, surpassing all the other, and beyond our abilityes to remunerate. Yet let me intreate you to carrie the Draytors head to the Judges, that they may Censure my Innocencie in this slander, and whether the Accuser hath not receyued condigne punishment. Which hee did, and threwe the head before the Princes Brethren, whose griefe exceeded measure for their Brothers ill Fortune, and taking vp the Head, with the Body likewise, they caused it to be sorrowfully conuoyed forth of the field. Immediately was Palmerins Horse brought him, wheron he mounted, was conducted with great Pompe, by the two Kings that were the Judges, and other mighty Princes, as well Califfes, Agaz, as Taborians, to the gate of the Pallace, where the Souldane (to do him the greater Honour) attended in personne his comuning, the like he never did before to any King or Prince, how mighty soever he was, and therfore his Subjects maruelled not a little hereat. Palmerin wold haue done him reverencie on his knie, but he wold not suffer him, so taking him in his armes, he thus said: For ever (Gentle Knight) by the honor of thy victorie against our enimie, and the false accuser of our Daughter, for which, I account my selfe so bound to thee, that all the Dignities and riches I am able to giue thee, may not counteruail thy unspeakable deserts: therefore I will remaine so much at thy disposition, as I and mine shall be at thy commaund. So taking him by the hand, he conducted him to his Chamber,

## THE HISTO RIE

where himselfe holpe to haue him, commaunding his Chyurgians to be so carefull of hym, as of his owne person: Thus leauing him to haue his wounds dressed, he returned to the great Hall, where hee found his Nobilitie attending his coming, to whome hee saide: What thinke you my Lords of cyntaife, if our Champion had bene foyled? I had bene the most fortoyn and abiect Lord in all Alsyria, to haue bene enfoled to drowne on mine owne Daughter. But thankes to our Gods, they deliuered me from that danger: therfore maruell now, if (beyond my custome) I welcommed him with reverence and honour: For one that renowneth himselfe by Clerue and Prowesse through the whole worlde, ought to be entertained, rather then such as liue in vaine Boxepe and glorie, whispeiring deceiptfull Tales into Ladys eares. Neyther can you (in my Judgement) honour him sufficently, because my Daughter and me he hath shelded from death, expulid our ignominious lawnder, and slaine our false accusing enemie, to make vs live in perpetuall fauour and memoire. The most parte of them well noting his wordes, and conseruad with the remembraunce of theyr shame, when they durst not enterprise the Combat for theyr Ladie: knew not what to answer, but fearing to growe in further offence, sought how to chaunge his minde to some other talke.

Alchidiana beeing all this while in her Chamber, prepared herselfe to goe visite Palmerin, not knowing how to shape her course, for fresh helvraying of her secrete afflictions: but the Goddess Juno, when shee stode before Syr Paris, for sentence of her Beautie, was not more sumptuously adorid then the Princesse. Now beginnes shee to dispute in her thoughts, the honorable graces of Palmerin, his Nobility so farte cowned, his knighthly prowesse and Magnamitie, whereof herselfe had so god experiance, as shee resolued never to haue any other Husband. Then deuauunds shee of her Ladies, how shee might recompence her Knight: if her Head-lyre stod orderly: if her locks of hayre were

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

were tressed as they ought, and if her garments were braue enough. For conclusion, the louely Mayden knew not how to dispose of herselfe, to gaine his loue she so earnestly longed for.

In this equipage she goes to see her Friende, and in his Chamber she findes her Mother, who hindered her languishing Daughter, from discouering her sicknes to him, that onely had the power to helpe her: wherefore living in hepe of some better oportunitie, for this time she smothered her grieses so well as she coulde, finding other talke with her Ladies, leasch her Mother shoud suspecther.

## CHAP. XIII.

How the Brethren of Amarano, would haue buried his body in the Tombe with Ardemia, which Alchidiana would not suffer: but constrainyd them to carry him home againe into his Countrey.



Marano thus slayne, his Brethren (according to his charge giuen them, before he entred y Combate) toke his boode, and with great mourning they brought it to the Princesse Ardemia's Tombe, thinking to burie him there with her: but Alchidiana aduertised heereof, came presently and intreated her father, that he would sende a Herald to the Brethren of the vanquished Prince, to charge them not to leaue the body of Amarano in his Dominions, for if they did, he would cause it to be burned as a Traytor deserved. Moreouer, that they themselves shold depart within fourre and twenty houres,

# THE HISTORIE

on paine of the daunger shold ensue by their default. For god Father (quoth she) if you shold permit their boldnes, it will be great blaine and dishonour to you: in that it is commonly knowne, with what great pride and arrogancie he came to your Court, thinking to injur your god report, and either to hуть mee from your presence for ever, or else with open scandale to ende my life. The Soldane well regarding her wordes, willingly graunted her request, whereupon the Princes Brethren were certified of the Soldans pleasure, by a Trumpet: whereat they meruailed not a little, but seeing they could no way remedy it, they said. Herald, it is reason that your Lord shold be obeited within his ownterritories, neuerthelesse, you may say very great, and against all equitie, which he hereafter haply may repent. So opening the Tombe againe, they tooke forth therz Brothers body, and the Princesse Ardemias likewise, conueyng them into a Litter of Cypres, to keepe them from corrupting, and thus returned with them to Phrygia, where the Princes death was greatly lamented: but chesely by the aged King his Father, who seeing his Sonne dead before him, after many dolorous passions, thus complained. Ah Fortune, how cruell doest thou shew thy selfe to the mightie, as well as the meanest: Ah my Sonne Amarano, so deere hast thou bought thy loue to Ardemia. Wretched and despised olde man, howe unforunat art thou among all other: for when thou perswadedst thy selfe, to haue toy and comfort by thy Sonnes, thou findest the cheife cause of sorrowe and discontent. O death, thou sufferest me too impotunate. Yet if the Soldane had graunted the buriall, where thou diddest desire it before thy death, the leſſe had bene my greefe. But sone shall I cause him repente his hard dealing, and revenge thy death with sufficient requitall. The ſecond Brether to Ardemia, named Gramiel, ſteing his father in ſuch extreame heauines, allayed by all meanes hee coulde to comfort him:

Promising

# OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

promising in the presence of all his Knights, with all poſſible ſpeed to reuenge his Brothers death, and ſo did all the ſix Brethren ſolemnelie holt together. At which ſpeeches diſcomelwhat conſol the aged King, who comandaunded the bodies of the two louers to be taken from his presence and ſo a perpetuall memory of his Sonnes death: he cauſed a ſumptuous monument to bee made of marble & porphyre, whereon was engrauen the cauſe of their unhappy death. All this while, Gramiel, who undertooke his Brothers reuenge, gaue charge to the people round about him, as also to the Kings and Princes of Suria, who were then enemies to the Soldan, to prepare themſelues in readines, ſo that within a monethes ſpace, he had assembled a power of ſix thouſand hardy ſoldiers, himſelue being appointed leader and Generall ouer them. In this ſort they beſtoke themſelues to the field, hoping to ruinate the Soldanes Country with fire and ſword: but they were better entayned then they expected, as hereafter ſhalbe largely diſcourſed.

## CHAP. III.

How Alchidiana ouercome by velenemy of her loue, offered her ſelue to Palmerin as his wife: and of the anſwre he made her,



Remembering what hath past in the Chapters before, wee may not forget how by the message the Queene of Tharsus ſent to the Soldans Court, Alchidiana, who began as it were to deſpite Palmerin, was conſtrayned to renue her Loue, thus conſerring with her ſelue, that if ſo great

## THE HISTORIE

great a person as the Queene of Tharsus, commended, esteemed and honoured him, hauing never seene him, the better meane had she, being daily in his company, to practise the furtheraunce of her earnest desires. She therefore continually awayted oportunitie, to discouer the fire newly raked from the embers, and which day and night consumed her with languishing: but so wel it came to passe, that not many daies after the Combat with Amarano, he came to visite her in her Chamber, right ioyfull of the talke hee had with the Soldane, as concerning y<sup>e</sup> p[ro]mission of his strength, to goe ruinate y<sup>e</sup> Cittie of Cōstantinople, which gaue her hope of his retурne to Allemaigne. Alchidiana, hauing courteously saluted him, and shewing better countenaunce then before she did, caused him to sitt downe by her, and sone after began in this sort.

I desire you Sir Knight, by the reverence you beare our Gods, and the faith you owe to her, for whose loue you tooke the enchaunted Crokne from the Prince, Maurice: to tel me your name, what your Parents be, and of whence you are. For I sweare to you by the honour of a Princesse, that the guerdon you shall receive in so doing, is my hart, hauing once conquered those desires that long haue tormented me: intending to make you Lord of my selfe, and all the possessions of the Soldane my Father, without any sinister meaning you may beleue me. Consider therefore good Knight, that without feare or dissimulation, I have tolde you what nerest concerneth mee, if then you desire not my present death, make aunswere as honorable duetie requieth, ballancing in your owne thoughts, how vehemently the impressions of loue haue touched me in respect that now I haue thyse for your sake, exceded the limits of mine own regard, whō bashfulnes should protect from such boldnes. And if patiently I endured your sharpe repulse, when last I bewrayed the estate of my loue: thinke it was caused through mine owne god conceit, that being denied the libertie of spech, you did not perceiue the extremitie

of

## OF PALMER N D'OLIVA.

of my passions. But seeing our Gods haue bene so famoures, as to restore the thing was easie taken from you, and likewise hath brought you into her company, who loues you deerer then her owne life: shew not your selfe so hard of nature, to syre the houre that Loue and Fortune present you withall. Therefor my onely beloued Lord, in recompence of your sharpe Combat with proud Amarano: receive me as your Wife, whom you haue worthily deserued.

Palmerin seeing himselfe assayled by so faire an enemy, who coulde sooner bring in subiection an other Hercules, then ever did Iole, and as easily give use to a statue of Hable, as Venus sometime did, at the request of Pigmation the Caruar: was in maruulous affliction, hauing before him, on the one side, feare to offend God, on the other, the loyaltie he ought his Mistresse, and then the immediate death of Alchidiana, if he denied her. In the ende remembred what the Soldane had spoken, concerning his voyage to Constantinople: he deuided by this meane to make her such answere, as she shold rest contented, and neither God nor his Mistresse be offended, he thus began. Vertuous and most excellent Princess, thus I am assuredly perswaded, that there is not any Monarch or Prince so noble in all Asia, but might reckon himselfe among the happiest, in respect of your perfections and vnuialuable riches: to espouse you as his Wife. By faire greater reason, I that am pore, a Knight errant, vnknowne, and whose life you hauesaued: may saie, and name my selfe aboue all other in fortune. But knowing my selfe so simple, and of so slender deseruing towardes you: I esteme it impossible for the Gods and nature likewise, to lift me to so wonderfull degree of happiness. Wherefore, seeing the cause such, and greater then I can desire or imagine, likewise that it is conformatable to your commandement: doubtlesse I were vnworthy any fauour of Fortune, and to be esteemed among the most ingratefull Knights in the world, if in any thing I shold

## THE HISTORIE

Should disobey your reason. My reason is, that you (being reckoned as chiese among the moste perfect and accom-  
plished Ladys) daigne so much to abase your selfe as to make  
me Lorde of your Loue, which hath bene desired by so ma-  
ny worthy personages.

For those causes, moste gracious Mistresse, I am bound  
to Loue you aboue all other Ladys living, which hecsworthy  
I hope to do, & loyallie to serue you with my bitemost en-  
deours. And as I ought (Sweete Madam) to Loue none  
but you: so is my dutie to hold your regard in chieflie com-  
mendation: theresore will I with such secrecie, as so hono-  
rable a Conquest will permit, conceale this extraordinarie  
grace. And had I not this morning made promise to your  
Father, to accompany his power to Constantinople, there  
to reuenge the death of your deceased Uncle Gamezio:  
sone shuld our loue soft to wished, and I gather that Sweete  
flower, which aboue all other would Beauty my Garland.  
Notwithstanding, my hope is such, that in this voyage I  
shall do such service to the Holdane your Father, as at my  
returne hee will recompence me to your content, and god  
liking of his Princes and Subiects: which may no way  
nowe be inoued, least his minde otherwaies busied, should  
conceiue displeasure against mee, and so all our Fortune for-  
ever squandered. In this respect (Sweete Madame) if euer  
hereafter I shall do you service, let mee intreate you to pa-  
tience till my returne: resoluyng our selfe in meane while,  
that I am more yours then mine owne, and dedicate my  
life to your moste gracious seruice. As concerning the rest  
of your demand, my Name is Palmerin d'Oliua, and what  
my Parents are, the Dueene of Tharsus within these thre  
dayes will tell me more, then hitherto I could understand  
by any, when you shall haue more knowledge of my estate  
and Countrey also: but so far as I yet can gather by mine  
owne understanding, my discent is from Persia.

This excuse hee made, because Alchydiana should not  
suspect him to bee a Christian, and with this answere she  
was

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

was so joyfull and contented, as nothing was able to in-  
spyre more cheerefull life into her languishing soule, which  
Palmerin perceiving, and the better to continue her in this  
opinion, very often he kissed her hand, in signe of his affec-  
tionate obediace: And so in this manner he departed to  
his owne Chamber, leauing the Princesse triumphing of  
her conquest.

Hee was no sooner come into his Chamber, but sollici-  
ted with the remembraunce of his Lady Polynarda, hee  
imagined how she blamed him with mournfull complaints  
for his late promises: which thought so dimerly afflicted  
him, as he spent all the rest of the day in teares, and as she  
had bene in presence, most humbly requesting her to pardon  
what had past him, in respect hee did it not willingly, nev-  
erthe gaue any consent with his healt thereto, but dissem-  
bled the matter, least the Princesse by his deniall should fall  
into dispayre: and rather then he would violate his solemnne  
Loue to his gracious Goddesse, hee would adventure on  
infinite dangers. Yet did this feigned answer to Alchy-  
diana greatly auiale him, and caused him to be more hono-  
red then euer hee was before, as also to be continu-  
ally accompanied with her presence, whose  
only delight was in daylie be-  
holding him.

CHAP.

# THE HISTORIE

## CHAP. XV.

How the Soldane haüing determined to send his Army to Constantinople, would elect Palmerin his Lieutenant Generall: which he refused, intreating him to give the charge to the olde King of Balisarca.



Now was the Soldane continually mindfull of the promise he made to his deceased Father Misos, to reuenge the death of his Brother Gamezio: wherefore seeing all his dominions in peace, and that he had with him the valiant Palmerin, he concluded to leuy a migh-  
tie Arme, to finish y which duty daily  
called for. And having prouided a huge number of Galions,  
Foyts, Gallyes, and other vessels, he sent abroade to ad-  
uertise all the Kinges, Princes, Baliffes and Esbouaines  
his subiects, of his will and pleasure, who likewise gath-  
ering their forces together, were numbered to be aboue an  
hundred and fiftie thousand fighting men. At this while the  
Soldane so fauoured Palmerin, as he had bestowed on him  
divers Dukedomes, which he made but slender account of,  
because he continually expected time to see his Polynarda.  
Alchidiana likewise, building on his passed promises, daily  
presented him with many rich gyfts, and practised all the  
deuises shēe coulde to please his fancie: for so deuoutly did  
the Princesse loue him, as shēe rather desired her owne  
death, then to give him the least occasion of disliking. And  
Palmerin by sayre and affecting speches, perswaded such  
settled opinions in her: as shēe helde his promises with  
greater

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

greater pertinacie, then euer did any Logitian maintaine  
his Aristocracie. By this time were the men of Armes come  
from all places, whilfore the Soldane calling for Palmerin,  
beganne with him in this manner. Sir Palmerin, con-  
sidering how much I am indebted to you, my affections are  
so resolutely perswaded, that I esteem of you as you were  
my Sonne, and much more then I am able to utter: not so  
much for seruices you haue done me from time to time, as  
for the incomparabile deedes of Armes and Chivalrie, which  
makes you honoured through the whole world. Having  
now determined to send me forces to Constantinople, my  
only hope I repose in you, and well it liketh me that you  
bear the office of my Lieutenant Generall, and principal  
gouvernour of the Kinges and Princes in this expedition.  
Therefore my noble and approued god Friend, using your  
wonted magnanimitie and discretion, my people shal think  
well of my appointment, referring the honor of their vic-  
torie, to the generall hauecke and confusione of their ene-  
mies.

Nowe I perceiue ( my gracious Lord ) answered Palmerin,  
that by your manifold fauours and courtesies, you  
woulde deprivie me of acknowledging mine owne dutie:  
notwithstanding, in respect it is your pleasure, I would ad-  
uenture the bitterest of my life for you, which I cannot  
with greater honour doe, then in your noble seruice. Yet,  
may it bee spoken within compasse of your highnesse con-  
troll, me thinkes you shoulde rather give this charge to the  
King of Balisarca, a man wise, experienced, and farre more  
skilfull in Armes then I am. Beside, your people haüing a  
man of their owne nation for their heade, will obey him  
more willingly, and serue with much more chearefull cou-  
rage: then under him whos they know not, but onely by  
your princely and liberall borne, which hath beeue such,  
that from the meanest state, where Fortune helde mee as  
altogether despised, your Maestrie hath lifted mee to the  
highest earthly honour. This spake I, dread Lord, as

# THE HISTO RIE

not gainsaying your commandement, but for this consideracion, that taking this honourable charge, the Souldiers may mutinie against me, and so your service be altogether disappointed.

And thinke you (quoth the Soldane) that my people will be more obedient to the King of Balisarca, then to you? *Pe a donblessé n. y. Lord,* said Palmerin, that is my opinion. Know then, quoth the Soldane, that for the councell you haue given me, my loue is nothing diminished towards you: for I see by this noble regard, how deseruedly you gaine the fauour of Kings and great personages, it shal be therefore as you haue appointed. This councell gaue Palmerin, not for any good he wished to Maulicus, or the King of Balisarca, but (desiring nothing moxe, then the ruine and generall destruction of these heathen hounds, swoyne enemies to Christ and his Servants) to rid himselfe of that charge, which would bring him so great and shamefull report, to fight against his Lord and Master. Therefore pre-meditating on al these inconueniences, he but expected the meane to get footing in Christendome againe. Maulicus thus contented with his answere, the King of Balisarca was appointed General of the Army, yet he gaue commandement, that Palmerin shold be couerenced among them, as the second person to himselfe, and on paine of death, none to offend him. As all this strength was ready to take shippynge, newes came to the Court of Gramiel, and his Brethren, what slaughter and spoile they made through all Assicia: whereat the Soldan being greatly offended, came to Palmerin, and said. *By Sonne,* what thinke you of our enemies? What shall I doe to these followers of their Brother in pride? I pray you counsell mee in this necessitie. Palmerin perceiving his desire preuented, was overcome with maruellous passions: yet to hide this discontent fro the Soldane, he thus answered. Seeing it hath so fallen out my Lord, that without any summons our enemies

# OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

shies haue presumed vpon vs: I thinke it most expedient, that your Arme prouided in so god readines, beginne first with these arrogant intruders, for I doubt not, their attempt beeing so trecherous, and the courage of our men so resolute, but they shal deereley haue their presumptuous aduenture. A matter soone begunne, will bee as soone ended, and our shippynge readie, we may afterward sette forward to Constantinople: for this will be a god whetting of our stomacks, to deale with our enemies of greater multitude. This councell was accepted, wherefore it was immediately proclaimed through the field, that every man shold be readie to depart within thre daies.

## CHAP. XVI.

How the Prince Olorico, Sonne to the King of Arabia, came and offered his seruice to the Soldane, bringing with him ffe hundred Armed Knights, and of his entertainment.



Item what before the Soldane's Arme was readie to depart, the Prince Olorico, eldest Sonne to the King of Arabia came to the Court, and with him ffe hundred Knights, so hardy, braue and comelie personages, as both for the Courte and the warre, better might not bee imagined. This yong Prince, reputed among the most valiant of his time, hearing reporte of the rare beautie of Alchidiana, under tuler of offering the Soldane his assistance: determined to behau himselfe so brauely in his Court, that by his liberalitie and honourable actions, he would obtainey Prince

## THE HISTO RIE

cess to his vellife, wherefore being come to the Court; and having done his obeisance to the Soldane, he began in this manner.

Right mightie Lord of all Assiria and Palestine, having of long time hearde your great forwardnesse to the encreasing of our faith, cheefely of the last honorable counseil you helde, to reuenge the death of your famous deceased Brother Gamezio, whom our Gods now entertaine at their celestiall banquets: I take my selfe to traualle, with aduised resolution to doo you such seruice, as might stande with my abilitie, and your pleasure to commaund. And soz I now behold, that my attuall is in a time so fortunate, I celebraz their names with innum' tall thankes, assuring your Maestrie so farre to stretch my endeouours, as the Son that is bounde by duetie to his Father. The Soldane who had heard great report of his bountie and valour, his Father likewise being one of his Friendes and confederates, after he had made him very gracious welcome, thanked him for y succour he brought him, and henceforth he would not esteeme of him as a straunger, but as his Sonne and most especiall Friende. All this while Palmerin noted the behaviour of the yong Prince, and iudging by his complection, that he was of better nature then the other Assirians began to affect him: so that after the Soldane had giuen them all the good night, Palmerin accompaniied the Prince to his Chamber, where they coulde devise no other conference, but of this new and warlike enterprise, which made Olorico deuaunde of Palmerin, if he shoulde goe in those affaires. That will I verily (quoth he) if sicknes or prison do not withhold me. Let me intreate you then, sayde the Prince, to doo me somuch honour, as to accept me for your companion. Thereto Palmerin right sone condiscended, and then began such a league of amity betwene them, that it endured to the death, as you shall reade hereafter. But because it was now late, they tooke their leaue of each other till the next morning, when Maulicus woulde haue

Olorio

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

Olorico dñe at his Table with Palmerin, where wanted no provision that seemed so great a person, being now set forth in most rich and honourable pompe. The Tables being withdrawen, the Prince began the daunce, thinking to see sayre Alchidiana, but he was deceyued, for she kept her Chamber in her amorous opinions, and would not be seene till the appointed day, wher the Arme shold make shew in open field.

This daie the Soldane went to order the battell, and to appoint the winges and squadrons, which made Alchidiana likewise take delight to walke abroad with Palmerin, who was now in maruaillous sumptuous Armor, beaing a Heald of Simople, with a bar of Gold figured there in, signifying his inward ioy, that in so short time he shold get from these barbarous and unchristian helhoundes. Besoore them went two yong Lords bearheaded, and behind, a great number of Ladies and Knights, so rich in apparel as could be devised. Being thus brought to their Palstaires, Palmerin beganne to carrie and brave with his Horse besoore the Princesse, who tooke no little delight in her supposed louer, and ryding along with him, fell into many discourses, nothing tending to Religion as I gesse, but such deuoute seruices as loue teacheth his Schollers. In the midis of their communication, came the Prince Olorico, so altered with his affection to the Princesse, that they which haue felt like assaults, might easly iudge the cause of his passions. Having made two or three humbler reverences to her, he offered to kisse her hand: which she would not permit him, excusing the matter so modestly, and wishing his welfare as her owne, that he imagined himselfe greatly favoured.

Palmerin regarding the afflictions of this newe comelover, and that he might giue him the better meane, to devise with her so privatly as he desired, turned his Horze to the other side of the Princesse, thus speaking to her. What thinke you (Madame) of the gentle succour, which my

F 3

Lord

## THE HISTORIE

Lord Olorico hath brought your Father: belike mee, the courtesie is so surpassing great, as your selfe ought especially to thanke him, if it were but for his goodnes, in qualifying y haughty courage of Amarano's Brethren. Doubtless (quoth she) his companie is to be esteemed, and among tenne thousand Knights, hardly may bee founde so brane men as is in his troupe: in recompence whereof, I will not deny the Prince any thing, that hee with honour will request of me. Olorico perceiving this suddaine invention of Palmerin, returned him many thankes, and after the accustomed dissimulations used in such causes, albeit Loue had for a while deprived him of speech: earnestly beholding the rare beautie of the Princesse, he thus began. Madame, although I should do to my Lord your Father, all the seruices that a Knight is able to yeld his gracious patrone, yet the very least of these fauours, which it hath pleased your excellencie to bestowe on mee, may bee reckoned so much more then deserved recompence. Wherefore being perswaded that my seruice is placed in your good concerte, I shall not henceforth feare to put my life in hazard, so much I desire to see these present promises accomplished: whether of you Sir Palmerin, being esteemed among the most famous persons living, shall beare mee witnes, when time graunteth convenient opportunitie. I haue promised nothing, said the Princesse, but what I will right gladly accomplish: requiring nothing but your god opinion, which so many choyse Ladies haue heretofore desired. And I demand no better paie (quoth the Prince) then her gracious fauour whom I desire to please. Thus beguiled they the time, till the Armie marched forward in araye, which they faire and softly followed, till tenne Pages belonging to the Princesse, leading tenne godly Couriers most richly caparisoned, came before them. An other Page brought a iemely Launce, the bandole whereof was the Princesse collours, and a Golden Sheld, wherein was portrayed the heade of Amarano, helde vpp by the haire by a Knights hands,

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

hands, signifying the victory of Palmerin against him: the Sheld being bordered round about with Peaches, Ruybes, Emeralds, Crisolites, and other precious stones of inestimable value, then beganne the Princesse thus to Palmerin.

My noble friende, in this warre I desire you to bee my Knight, and for my sake to beare this Launce & Sheld, that the proude Brethren may see the shame of Amarano. And such is my hope, that as you serued the eldest, so will you deale with the other, while one of the remaines aliue. These Horses likewise for the warre, I bestow upon you, they being accounted the very best in Turkie, and these will serue you well when you are in field: our Gods bearing me witnes (faire friende) that did not my estate hinder me, and the regard of mine honour withhold me, with right god will would I beare you company, to see your noble and knighthly daies of armes. And this I dare boldly saye, that Hippocrate never followed her Husband Methridates with greater affection, were he on sea, or on lande, on horsebacke or on foote: then I coulde do the noble Palmerin d'Oliua. Notwithstanding, though my body may not be there, yet shall my spirite be continually present, to comfort my languishing life, which will be but a shadowe of death to me till your returne. But because I see many eyes are fired on us, all the Kinges likewise taking their leue of my Father: I will leave you to the protection of our Gods, who send you happily and right sone againe. These words were coupled with such sighes and teares, as she had fallen from her Horse, but that one of her Ladies of Honor stayed her.

Palmerin after he had with great kindnes thanked her, kissed her hande, saying. Perswade your selfe sweete Madame, your Sheld shall be showne in such place, where his Brethren that detracte your honor, shall easly see it, although but little to their aduaantage. Thus tooke they

## THE HISTORIE

leue of each other, and Olorico likewise had the Princesse farewell: then doing their duety to the Soldane, followed the Armie, leauing him and Alchidiana sorrowfull for their departure.

## CHAP. XVII.

How the Prince Olorico beeing with Palmerin in his Tent, demaunded of him if hee loued the Princesse Alchidiana, and of the answere he made him,



These two young Princes, Palmerin and Olorico conferred still as they rode, with what great grieue & sorrow Alchidiana parted from them & falling from one imagination to another, they concluded to lode together in one Tent. And because Palmerin was the better and more richly prouided of all things necessary for the field, Olorico was the more glad of his company: so the day being spent, and the Tents pitched in a goodly plaine, Palmerin invited the Prince of Arabia to sup with him, for the Soldane had appointed him such honourable provision, as better he could not for his owne son. The tables withdrawne, and spending the time a while at Chesse play, they went to bedde, where Olorico not able to sleepe, began in this manner, to his friendly companion.

Most fortunate Palmerin, how much more could I wish to resemble you, then the greatest King or Lorde in the world, to bee likewise beloued of her, who in beautie, good grace, and sweet speech, hath not her like. And because

my

## OF PALMERIN DOL IV A.

my good friende and brother, I haue noted the speciall loue of the Princesse Alchidiana towards you, let mee intreare you to tell me, who she is you aboue all other loue, and intend to make your espoused wife: vowing to you, on the word of a Prince, whosoever shee bee, to conceale it with secretes, and to disswade my selfe from my loue newly begunne, for your sake, albeit I dyed therefore. For your noble minde and braue gentility, hath gained such loue raignty ouer me, as all other pleasures whatsoever I despise, onely to haue your company and fauour. Thus qualifying the passions, which day and night doe secretly torment mee, I will set downe such ordre as my Father shall not neede to send his Ambassadours, nor employ any of my Friendes to demaund her for mee: albeit for this onelie cause, I left my Country in such sort as you haue seene. Palmerin hearing the wordes of the young Prince, & perceiving him wounded with her loue, whom he desired to be furthest from, smiling, said: My Lord Olorico, I sweare to you by the honor of my knighthood, I never thought of the loue which you demand, nor haue I any desire to follow that humour. But true it is, that I wuld do so much for her, as a Knight may for his Lady, for she well deserues, her fauour and gentle behauiour worthie farre better ability: wherefore my deare friend, if you will believe mee, giue not ouer your intent, but practise to gayne her to your wife: and I promise you that I will so incue the matter to the Soldane and her, as happilie may effecte the end of your desires. Yet let me intreare you to continue so full a friend to her, as her high calling well deserueth: otherwise I had rather die the death, then once to speake word on your behalfe. These newes so cheared the Prince as embracing him many times, and returning him manifold thanks, he said. Assuredly, my noble friend, I am greatly beholding to my father, who gaue me my present being: but much more I owe to you, because my estate had now ended, but that your gracious speeches called me againe to life,

## THE HISTORIE

life. My second selfe, having thus lost my liberty, I despaire of attaining what you haue promised, and endure a death more then mortall: but that you breath hope of successe into mee, assuring mee of immediate felicitie & joyfull dayes hereafter, which no Father, but so god a friend was able to do. After other such like speches, the Prince slept, but Palmerin touched in another sorte, was sollicited with the remembrance of his lost Friends: and percyuing his companion slept soundly, he began thus to deliuer his sorrowes. Ah unfortunat and wretched Palmerin, how can thy mind so long beare this yoke of servitude, only standing in feare of death? Hast thou so forgot those two perfect louers, Tri-neus and Agriola, with thy truefriend Prolome, not knowing whether they be aliue or dead? What? Willst thou not searche for them? The Emperour of Allemaigne, hath not he god cause to complaine of thee: yea, and to blame thee, if his Sonne be not returned: Darest thou present thy selfe before him? Ah touch of loyalty, faire Agriola, how iustly mayst thou call me thine enemy, inuenter a dirst motion of thy misfortunes? Oh wretched and miserable that I am for leauing thee so discourteously, I well deserve a million of tormentes, farre worse then those exercised by the cruell Dyonise on the Scicilians. Nor could they be sufficient to expiate my hainous guilt, in the forgetting thee faire Princesse, I live in daily delights among these Moores and Tatars. But were I such as I ought to be, mindfull of a fault so foully committed: I should not live one houre in rest or quiet, til I had found my dearest Friends again. Ah disloyal Craytour, how canst thou thus waste thy time here sothfully, knowing the great and continual trauells, thy Ladie and Mistresse endurath for thee? But I vow to God, this warre finished, I will not abide in the Soldans Court ten dayes, but intende to sette forwards to see the Jewell of my Welfare. And were it not to my perpetual discredite, as also that I should be iudged a faynting coward, I would beginne my Journey presently.

Thus

## OF PALMERIN DOLVA.

Thus all the Night continued Palmerin such like complaints, considering his Friends misfortune and his owne, with such depe impressions, as thence forward helued in maruellous melancholy, and would not delight himselfe, as before he was accustomed.

## CHAP. XVIII.

¶ Of the Combate betweene Palmerin, and two of Amaranoes Brethren, whom he valiantly ouercame and killed.



Following the true discourse of our History of the King of Balisarca, who beeing Lieutenant Generall of all the whole Army, caused the next morning to bee proclaimed by sounde of Trumpet, that every man should attende on his Ensigne: and not to goe robbing and Forraging the Villages along the Countrey, on paine of death to be inflicted upon the offender. So marching on in god Aray, in shorte time after they Encamped themselves before a Cittie, where the enemies kept themselves in Garrison: and planting themselves there for theyr aduantage; the next Morning they determined to give the Assaile. All the Night long they were ordering the manner of theyr Batterie, the Pyoners digging and making Trenches, and such Defences as are requisite in warlike occasions.

Every thing in due and perfect order, at Sunne-rising they beganne to assayle the Cittie rounde about: following theyr intent with such courage and Alacritie, as with Scaling-ladders, & other Engins, in lesse then two houres they

## THE HISTORIE

They golfe upon the Malles, and (in despight of theire en-  
nies) entred the City, murdering and expulsing the Phry-  
gians, and shareing the spople among themselues. All other  
Cityes, Townes, and Villages, that were taken by the  
Enemy, within five dayes after were recouered, they not  
daring to withstand the Soldans power, Gramiel, Ama-  
ranos eldest Brother amazd heareat, having undertaken  
to be revenged of his Brothers death, with his Forces, be-  
toke himselfe to open Field, determining to give the Alsy-  
rians Battell, and that way to make tryall of their fortune:  
in which resolution they came within halfe a dayes Jour-  
ney of theire Ennemys.

The King of Balisarca aduertised hereof, dislodg'd im-  
mediately, taking aduantage of a little Mountain, which  
was in the open sight of the Enemy. And Palmerin, whos  
desire nothing more then fight, that he might accomplish  
his promise to the Prince of Alchidiana: when he received  
of her his rich Shielde and Lamente, perswaded the Gene-  
rall, that he should the next morning summon the Brethe-  
ren of Amarano, that within fourre and twentie houres,  
they should depart the Soldans confines, or else endure the  
danger of the Swerde. The King of Balisarca aduising  
hereon in counsell, founde it very necessary and expedient:  
Wherfore calling his Sonne, Syr Palmerin, and the Prince  
Olorico, he committed the icharge thereof to theire present  
dispatch. They being come to the Army of Gramiel, were  
immediately conducted to the Princes Tent, who was then  
deliberating with his Brethren, and other Captains of the  
Armie. So soone as he understood the attiall of these Em-  
bassadours, hee caused them to come before him, and theire  
message being deliuared: the Phrygian Princes, who were  
of maruellous haughtie disposition, aunswere, that they  
would not obey any such commandement. Moreouer, they  
intended to chase thence the Soldans Lieutenant, even to  
the very Gates of his owne Cittie: For that (contrary to  
all Equitie) hee withstode the Buryall of theire Brothers

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

hodie in his Kingdome. Gueresin, Sonne to the King of  
Balisarca, could not suffer such injury to his Lord in his pre-  
sence: Wherefore he said, that the Soldan had done them  
no wrong, but received their Brother and his Traine with  
greater honour then they deserved, and that none of them  
should haue the like againe. So went he forth of the Pas-  
sion, Gramiell and two of his Brethren following him,  
whereof the one has bene in Alcisia, with his Brother A-  
marano: who being Palmerin, that all this while kept  
himselfe without the Tent, and marking well his Shielde,  
wherein mockage was paynted his Brothers head: he  
knew him immediasly, and in great rage pulling himselfe  
by the haire, saide:

Villayne that I am, howe can I suffer in my presence  
the Traytour that murthered my Brother? Bold and pre-  
sumptuous Captife, howe durst thou aduenture before me,  
thus to deride me with thy villanie? Trust me (saide Pal-  
merin) I dare come before thee, with better assurance of my  
selfe, then thy false Brother when he entred Combat with  
mee. Wherefore, if thou wilt proue such a Gallant, as thou  
wouldest haue mee iudge thas to bee, by these Bravadoes,  
and likewise hast any stonacke to revenge thy Brothers  
shame: Arme thy selfe, and another of thy Brethren with  
thee, and come to me in place conuenient, where I my selfe  
will iustifie to you both, that Amarano was lawthly slain,  
and as such a false accusing Traytour well deserues. I de-  
sire nothing more (saide Orinello) for so was he called that  
gave these hote speches, but my Brother shall not deale  
with thee, till I haue tryed my fortune alone: and if I faile  
of my purpose, then shall he afterwards Combat with thee,  
this prouised, that thou allure me from anye in thy compa-  
nie, but thine owne person. That will I upon my Knighth-  
ood (saide Palmerin) thou performing as much on thy bes-  
halfe: yet I thinke before the sport be done, that thou wilt  
wylle the fellow with thee. Thus Palmerin, Olorico, and  
Gueresin, withdrew themselves, Orinello and his brother

## THE HISTORIE

presently going to arme them, and accompanied with many Knights, came into the field, Palmerin likewise as ready as the formost, came in with a god traine of Souldiers hee had brought with him, least any treason shold bee wrought against him. Olorico shewed himselfe greatly discontented, because he might not accompanie his friend in the Combat: but Palmerin perswaded him, that more needfull occasions were reserved for him, which should retorne him greater hono: and whom he should courst in better sorte, then euer he did the Ladies of Arabia, Gramiel being very richly arm'd, would needes come see his Brethrens Combat, which had god hope would sorte to their honour: but Palmerin seeing Orinello readie to the carrire, encountr'd his enemy with such puissance, as his Launce passing through his body, caused him falle dead from his horse, without removing either hand or foote.

Having performed his course, hee returned to take his launce out of his enemies body, striking him with the great Truncheon ende on the stomacke, to see if any life was left in him: but seeing his soule was departed to Lucifers Palace, hee couched his stasse to receiuue the other Brother, who met him with such strength, as he was well neare dismounted, yet in the ende he was sent after his Brother, though many hardie strokes first passed betweene them. Hereupon was such a sudden trie on all sides, some with ioy, and other with sorrow, as made the ayre resound their voices. And I thinke that the Greces when they received their libertie by Quintus Flaminius, made not the like clamour: when (as Valerius rehearseth) the Wyds fell from the ayre with the furie of their cries. In the meane while, the King of Balisarc, having heard hereof, came into the field, accompanied with many Lords, and conducted Palmerin with great honour and triumph backe to his Tent: especially the Prince Olorico, who exceeding ioyfull for the good fortune of his companion, embracing him, said. Ah gentle Palmerin, how brauely haue you accomplished your promise

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

promise to the Princesse: the like successe Heauen graunt you in labouring my cause. Believe me god Prince (quoth Palmerin,) so well will I employe my selfe in this action, as I hope you shall haue cause to thanke me. Now to retorne to Gramiel, hee caused his Brothers bodyes to be conveyed thence, and embalmed them in two Chests of Leade, referring they: Funeral till his retorne: and with the teares in his eyes, he thus began to excite his people:

Not knowing how (my louing Friends and Countrymen,) to animate your mindes sufficiently, with remembrance of the tyrannie exercised by the Souldan, on the body of my late Brother and your Prince: unhappy occasion presents you with a fresh memorie of reuenge, seeing these two young Princes, the beloued Sonnes of your King, so shainefully slayne in your presence. For this cause, deere Friendes, that each of you may take a new couragious spirite, to morrow to encounter these effeminate Asyrians; let vs all be resolute togither, and cause them to understand, that you, who haue led your liues in the Deserts of Afric, much better know how to manage Armes, then such Toyters or in they: Mistresses Chambers, who can do nothing but before they: Ladys.

Hereupon two hundreth Knights aduaunced themselves before him, swearing, and vndertaking to bring Palmerins bodie to him the Daye following: and therfore all that night they prepared themselves, Strengthening they: Shieldes and Armours, and all other things necessary for the fight, thinking the next morning by Sunne rising to bid them battle, these knights inwaitting to Ambush themselves as you shall heare. Palmerin beeing brought thus honorably to his Tent, called for the Chyurrgions to visit his wounds, which they founde so easie to be cured, as they assured him of spedie recoverie. He then summoning the whole Conuell togeather, aduised them, that in his opinion he thought it expedient to dislodze that place about mid-night, with bag and baggage, and so to coast the Mountain,

# THE HISTORIE

seigning a fearefull departure. For (quoth he) the enemy ad-  
vertised of our certeine, will imagine that weare dispaire of our  
successe, by reason of the death of the two slaine Princes.

Thus our dissembled fight, will cause them disperder to  
pursue vs, whiche we will suffer, till espyning our aduantage;  
whene returning valiauntyly vpon them, I dare gage my  
life weare shall eyther kill them downe right before vs, or at  
least drise them to a most shamefull foyle. This deuise was  
generally allowed so god, and at the houre appointed was  
executed. By great chaunce this morning was Gramiell  
come among his men very early: and understanding how  
the Soldans Powet was departed with such silence, pre-  
sently cryed Alarum, charging all his men to follow them,  
for hee doubted they wold enter a Cittie neare at hande,  
which was so strongly fortifid, as they shold never entice  
them forth to skirmish, therfore he desired to preuent them  
of that helpe.

Upon the Horsemen galloped after them amaine,  
cryng vpon them (my friends) vpon them, the day is ours.  
Palmerin, the Prince Olorico, the King of Balisarca, Gue-  
rcin his Sonne, with a thousand men at Armes, seeing  
how they were disordered: returned vpon them and mads  
such a slaughter among the Phrygians, as that the fielde  
was couered all euer with theyr bodyes. When Gra-  
miell, seeing that of the firste vallie not one came backe a-  
gaine, set forward with his Battell, wherein he had a thou-  
sand horsemens, and furiously running on the Soldans pow-  
er: by misfortune he mette with the Prince Olorico, to  
whome hee gaue such a cruel stroke on the head, as had al-  
most let him beside his saddle. Olorico highly discontented  
hereat, turned valiantly towarde his enemy, and betwene  
them continued a very dangerous fight: but in the ende,  
Gramiells Helmet being cut off from his head, he began to  
despayre, when Olorico following his intent, nobly at one  
blowe smote his head from his shouders. This mishappe  
was seene by one of his younger Brethren, who running  
fiercely

# OF PALMRIN D'OLIVA.

fiercely with his Launce against Olorico, was suddenly  
prevented by Palmerin, in that hee stroke him beside his  
Horse, where he was troden to death with the trampling  
of the horses.

Then came forth the two hundred sworne Knights  
from their ambush, who had undertaken Palmerins death,  
and him they hemd in so subtilly, as he was brought into  
very great daunger. Which the Prince of Arabia behol-  
ding, made way through the thickest to assit his Friend,  
after whom followed Gurelin with an hundred Knights:  
without which supply, both Palmerin and Olorico had bin  
slaine, for their Horses were killed vnder them, and they  
enforced to fight on foote. But when they beheld this for-  
tunate succour, their courage nobly increased, and then be-  
gan the sharpest encounter, for the wings on either side  
approched, the Archers and Crossebowes likewise, sending  
their arrowes as thicke as haile among them, so that the  
battaille endured till darke night. Then the Brethren soun-  
ded the retraine, for which the King of Balisarca was not  
sory, having so ouertrauelled himselfe that day, as he could  
no longer sit on horsebacke: notwithstanding, before he  
would enter his Tent, he saw the field assured, the watch  
placed, and all the Souldours planted in god order.

How the Brethren of Graniell, with all their traine, took themselves to flight, and how Palmerin suddenly pursued them with his power, and tooke them prysners.



Immediately after that these two Phrygian Princes had thus sounded the retraite, and considered how they had lost nine of their brethren, three in single fight with Palmerin, and the other in the battell, the greatest part of their power likewise, almost utterly dismaird to know the certaintie of their strength, they commanded a devision to be made of the whole and wounded, and seeing how small their number was, they conculded not to stay in any place, til they came to the Realme of Palmeria, wheres Maurice was king, and their kinsman, from whom Palmerin tooke the enchanted Crowne, where they thought to supply their want, with men active and able to Armes.

The next day, the King of Balisarca raunged a thousand men in order, to give a fresh assault on the enemy: but he was suddenly aduertised by his espials, how the Phrygians were fledde. He not a little glas of these newes, sent word to Palmerin thereof, who though he was sore wounded, armed himselfe, commanding his Captaines to provide six thousand men presently, to goe see the certaintie of these tynges. With this strenght hee tooyned the Kings power, and so went to the enemies Campe, where they found

found no resistance, nor any but such as lay grievouslie wounded, of whom he required which way the cowards were fled: which the poore Souldours reporting to him, he boyled to follow till he ouertooke them. This resolutiōn agreed vpon, betwene the King of Balisarca and him, with tenne thousand Light-Horsemen, hee determined to pursue them: and the King to stay there with all the rest of the Arme, to recover the Cittyes and Tolones againe to the Souldane, which before had bene taken by the Enemie, and to be in readinesse with assistance, if he shold happen to stand in any neede.

While Palmerin made election of his company, a Horsman was dispatched with these newes to the Souldan, how the enemies had bene foyled, and of theyr flight. The Messenger being come before Maulicus, & the Letter opened, and read, how valiantly Palmerin dealt with his enemis: before all his fabilitie, the Souldan sayde: By all the Drailes of Delphos, I may well perswade my self, that wheresoeuer Palmerin is for vs, wee are assured of the Victorie,

The Princesse having hearde these newes, sent for the Messenger, and after shee understood by him, how Palmerin bare her Shielde in the face of her Enemys, and hadde slaine in Combat two of Amaranoes Brethren: she was maruellous ioyful, and so well rewarded the Messenger for his paynes, as soz euer hee might extoll the beaultie of the Princesse.

The Messenger dispatched againe with the Souldanes Letters, brought spredie armes to the King of Balisarca and Palmerin, of theyr Vacket: wherein the Souldan heartlie thanked them, desiring them to follow their Fortune.

Palmerin understanding the will of the Souldane and Alchidiana, and howe they desired him to pursue the Brethren of Graniell: determined to set forwards the nexte morning, aduertising the Prince Olorico thereof, that hee might put himselfe in a readinesse. But notwithstanding their diligence, theyr Enemies golte before them into Palmeria,

## THE HISTORIE

meria, where they rested themselves, in hope to be assisted by their Cozen Maurice. And whē he was giuen to understand how the dumbe Knight named Palmerin followed them, wherfore he commandēd them to depart his realme, for he would not ayd them against his dearest friend. This repulſe dycue them into great despayre, yet seeing they could not helpe it, they were constrainyd to make a vertue of necessity, and so secretly as they could deuise, by little and little stole toward their owne country. Maurice hearing how Palmerin was come into his Realme, rode thre or fourre dayes iourney to meet him, & entertyning him with exceeding honoꝝ, offered himiſelſe, his people, and ſubſtance to his ſervice. Palmerin very thankefull for the Princes kindneſſe, would haue nothing but certaine hoſtes of him, because diuers of his own had miſcaried. By this time were the Brethren entered the Confines, which belonged to the Admirall of Tharsus, where they had done very much harme, by exactions and great miſuſing of the people. This Admirall was a very gentle Knight, and named Alfarano, which ſeing what iuiry they did him, and understanding that they had beēn conqueſted, and now fled without any place of assurance: leuied an hoaſt of hardy Souldiours, wherewith he intended to keepe a ſtraight, through which they miſt of neceſſitie paſſe, being ſo narrow as they coulde paſſe two together, and no way elſe coulde they ecape him, except they would climbe the tops of the Mountains.

In ſtis place lay the Admirall ambuſhed, with ſo many men as hee thought conuenient, and within thre dayes after Palmerin with his power came to affiſt them. The Phrygians haing heard heereof, were greatly amazēd at this vnepected aduenture, and had no other helpe but to climbe the mountaine, where in holes & Caues they were glad to hide themſelues, and there they continued ſiue or ſix daies in ſafety, albeit they were ready to dye for want of ſuſtenance. Palmerin forſeeing the incommodeſtie of the place,

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

place, and that they could not escape him, nor needed hee any further to follow them: cauſed the mountaine to be enuironed on all ſides, thinking the ende heereof would bee ſuch, as iudeed it afterward prooued to bee. For the poore viſtrelled men, haing neyther foode or other prouision, came foorth of their Caues, and assembled together on the ſide of the Mountaine, where entering into conuerſe of their estate, ſome gaue counſell to go fight it out, but other (better aduised) would not conſent thereto: ſo better is it (quoth they) to yelde our ſelues to the mercy of our ene‐ mies, then to aduenture our fortune, where no hope of ſuc‐ ceſſe is to be expeſted.

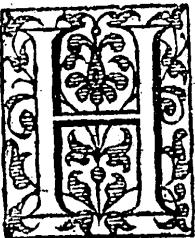
Herevpon they concludēd, and the two Brethren of Gramiell, were the firſt that unarmēd themſelues, & com‐ ming in this manner to Palmerins Tent, thus they began. Noble Knight Palmerin, more fortunate then any man in the world, we, Brethren to the renoumed Prince Amara‐ no, whom thou with thine owne hand haſt ſlaine, and thre other of our Brethren likewiſe, whereof the noble Orinello, deſerueth ſpeech, all ſonneſ to a King, and themſelues heretofore worthie accoſtliſhed Princes, though noſte foyley and conuicted with the dead: we (noble Lord) more certaine of thy clemencie and courteſie, then any ſuccellue ende of a Wattell ſo vneaſonable and deſperate, come to yelde our bodyes and goods to thy diſpoſing: deſiring thē to pittie our estate, and regarde the workeſ of Fortune, vnto whom thou art ſubiect as well as we. Beides, that the more ſhall greater persons be prayſed for honoꝝable fauour then by vſing rigour and and unnatural cruelty, which ma‐ keth them every where hated and deſpised. Then Palm‐ erin ſaw them ſo humble, conſidering his owne estate, and how time might ſrown on him, returnd them this anſwer. Now (my Lords) haue you done wiſely to lay by Armes, and ſubmit your ſelues, for otherwiſe your deſtruction was at hand. Notwithſtanding, in reſpect you haue thus yeldeo your ſelues to me: I entertaing you into my ſafe deſence,

## THE HISTORIE

assuring you Peace with the Soldane, so that you swere your faithfull Loue, and doo hym homage. So gaue he them in keeping to one of his knyghts, whom he specially trusted, and retuning to Alfarano, in recompence of his wrongs, and losses, sustainted by the Phrygians, gaue hym all theyr spoyle, and the Raunsome of all the knyghts taken Pynoneers. The Admirall humbly kissing his hand, desired hym to repose hymselfe in one of his Citties, which was withinne five or sixe miles of the place: which gentle offer Palmerin would not refuse, because he was soze ouer-wearied with trauell: Wherefore by the Admiralls appointment, the Pallace was well prouided, both for Palmerin, and his god Friend the Prince Olorico.

## CHAP. XX.

¶ Howe the Queene of Tharsus came to see Palmerin, in the Cittie belonging to Alfarano her Admirall, where by the meanes of an Enchanted Drinke, shee accomplished her pleasure with him.



Ere our history willeth vs to remembur, how that in our former Discourse was mentioned, that the Queene of Tharsus sent a molle rich Helmet to Palmerin, and at the Damoselles returne, was made acquainted with his singular composed feature, rare courtesie, and knyghtly Chivalry: the report whereof inforsed her amorously to affect hym, and that in such vehement manner, as she determined her owen death, unlesse she might enjoy his louely companie. Which the better to compasse, shee discouered her de-

ires

## OF PALMRIN D'OLIVA.

sires to a cunning Magitian, he by whose meanes shee sent the Helmet to Palmerin: who gaue her such an Enchanted polovre, as Palmerin, drincking it in wine or otherwise, shoulde soone after become so forgetfull of himselfe, as the Queene might accomplish whatsoeuer she desired. He likewise did reveale to her, the sevall Loues of Palmerin and Olorico, which Tale made her more earnest in following her intent. And vnderstanding his attiuall in the Realme of Palmeria, concluded in person to goe see hym: furnishing herselfe with all things necessary, both rich Tapestrie, and great stoe of Golde and Silver plate, habillements, precious stones, rings, and vnuaualuable Jewelles. With these she adorned her knyghts, Ladies, and Gentlewomen to the vternost, and when she had finished her traine to her owen liking: shee sette forward with such expedition, as within thre dayes she arrived at the Cittie where he was, but first she aduertized her Admirall of her comming, that he shoulde imagine nothing by her sudden presence. The Admirall so ioyfull hereof as could be devised, in that by this meanes he shoulde the more honorably entertaine his Guests, acquainted Palmerin and Olorico therewith, who likewise were exceeding glad of the newes, especially Palmerin, desirous to know by her his Off-spring.

Therefore in most magnificente order with theyr Men at Armes, and the Admirall Alfarano, they rode to meete the Queene for her greater honoure: who by the speciall intelligence was giuen her, knew Palmerin among them all, in that he marched sozemost with the Prince Olorico, and the Admirall of Tharsus. Shee regarding in him farre more singularities, then sparing report had acquainted her withall: After that Palmerin had saluted her with very great reverence, as he was not to learne Courly courtesie, the Queene requited hym with a sweete kisse, and thus beganne, Sir knyght, the sayest beyond all other that euer I sawe, well worthy are you to be esteemed among the most happy, being able to winne the Loue of Ladies that never sawe you.

## THE HISTORIE

you. Adise your selfe well of this great fauour, and what a precious Jewell you receyue of them; in requital of your seruice, or acceptaunce of any Amourous contentment. Then wonder not (Gentle Knight) if to see you, I haue left my Countrey: for beside your great valor, bountie, and loyalty, which never can be sufficiently commended: your beautie, affabilitie, and most rare perfections, deserue not onely the Loue of the greatest Ladie and Princeesse, but their continual seruice likewise, if they but consider theyz owne dutties. If then your vertues and gifts of nature are of such value and merite, what may she imagine of her selfe, who is your only Ladie and Distresse, and aboue all other is honored with your fauoritisme, as well records the memory of the burning Crobome? Palmerin hearing himselfe so commended by such an excellent Dueyne, blushed with bashfulnes, and humbly shamed this answere. Madame, so faire bnable am I, to deserue the Loue and good will you bear me, as never will Fortune fauour me sufficiently, to recompence the least parte of this Princeely kindnesse. Yet hereof (faire Dueyne) you may assure your selfe, that you haue a Knight so forward in your seruice, as nothing shall withhold him from executing your commandement, though the penaltie of my life were enioyned thereon.

Trust me (quoth the Dueyne) your behaviour promiseth no lesse then you speake of, and if I haue taken any paine for you, I thinke my selfe in wthoroughly satisfied: let it suffice you then, that I account my Fortune not the least, having gained such place in your god opinion. These and such like speeches passed betweene them, till they came to Alfaranos Vallace, where they spent the rest of the Day in diversity of pleasures: the Dueyne intreating Palmerin and Olorico the next day to dine with her in her lodging, where he intended honourably to Feast them. The nexte day at ten of the clocke, these two young Princes came to see her, finding her in a goodly Hall, which was richly hanged with Cloth of Gold, and therein stood a faire Cupbord, garnished with

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

With the most costly plate that euer was seen: for the basest piece was cleane Golde, embelished with precious stones, beside divers other inestimable strange Cups and Glasses of Agatha. What theyz seruice at Dinner was, I leauue to the iudgement of Ladys desirous of fauour. Yet this I dare well say, that the vybraries were so rare and exquisite, and abounding in such plentie, as though she had them daily at commaund. The Tables withbraulone, the Dueyne tooke eache of the Princes by the hand, and sitting downe betweene them, with a swete singling countenance she beganne thus:

I pray you (gentle Knights) to tell mee, which of you is most affected to the seruice of Loue, and followes it with greatest endeour? gladly would I be resolued by you, albeit I knoewe the certaintie as well as your selues?

Madame (quoth Palmerin) if you haue such knowledge of our affections, well may our answere be excused. Very true (saide the Dueyne) especially you, of whose Loyalty the Prince Maurice is so notable a witnesse. Notwithstanding, which of you doth most mistrust the attainment of her grace, to whom he is most devoted in Loue, let him not grieue ouer the pursuit of his desire: but rather let me intreat you continue your Loue with much more seruience, as to thole renowned Ladies, who by theyz vertues and graces, doe worthily challenge you from all other: for I dare assure you such a successiue ende of your Loue, as with speciall intent you shall finishe your affectionate desires: If they were ioyfull of this assurance, it is no question to be demanded, chieflie Olorico, who till then dispaire: but now so happily resolved, gaue place to Palmerin, who was desirous to conferre more privately with the Dueyne: therefore in meane time hee deuided with another Ladie, and Palmerin seeing the occasion so fitte, began his tale in this manner. I can not forget (faire Dueyne) when you sent your Lady to me at the Sowans Court: that after her message delivered, she said to mee, that you were aquainted with further secrets,

con-

## THE HISTORIE

concerning my estate. For this cause I intreate your highnesse, if you doe not imagine me too importunate: that it might please you to acquaint me with my Father and Mother, for that aboue all other things I most desire. The Queene amazed at this demand, thus answered. Know (gentle knight) that what the Ladie in this matter said to you, as also what my selfe even now promised you: commeth not from me, for one of my Knights acquainted mee therewith, he being the most studfull in the Magicall sciences, that is in all Turkie. As now hee is returned into his owne Countrie, and no other answer could I get of him: but that you are the Sonne of the most loyall, redoubted and valiant Prince in the world, whom before you haue any further knowledge of, you shall deliver from death, and that very shortly. Beside, you loue a Lady, who in all perfections of nature, fortune or spirit, hath not her equal.

In sooth (quoth Palmerin) I shal account my selfe right happis, to deliver my Father from such danger, and heauen I beleech that it may so be. On these teatimes came Alfarano, and the dauncing began, which constrained them to breake of talke, and step into the daunce, in which delight they spent the time till Supper was summoned, till which aduertisement, they were so well, as was Ogyer the Dane in Faria. For never was Dy do such an affectionate audience of Aeneas, recounting the ruine of the Troyans, then was the Queene of Tharsus to Palmerin: towards whom her heart was so enthrallled, and with secret fire so wasted and consumed, as doth the tare before the fire. Beeing set at the Banquet, Palmerin and Olorico on the one side, and the Queene and Alfarano on the other, the Tasters attending on them were two Ladies, who had in charge to giue the one, the sleeping and dangerous drinke, and to the other, the amorous and delicate, yet in effect to pouoke forgetfulness: so wel did the Ladies discharge their office, and the Princes tooke this mired drinke so substantielly, as they could hardly forbear sleeping at the Table; where-

## OF PALMERIN DOLIVA.

wherefore every one arising, the Queene gaue the goodnight to Alfarano, who presently went to his lodging. The were these two sleepie Princes condcted to their Chamber, where being in bed, they slept soundly, and the Queene comming to them, accompanied with those truthe Ladies that waited at Supper: tooke the Prince Olorico, conuaying him to another bedde, for he was so charmed as he could not awake.

Afterward the Ladies departed, and the Queene went to bende to Palmerin, whom she abused at her owne pleasure. A matter not to be esteemed fabulos, in that other haue been brought into the like case, as well may witnesse Brangiana, who endured these sweet skirmishes, because she would not manifest the history of Yseul her Mistresse, and Tristam. The queene hauing satisfied her unchast desire, caused Olorico to be brought into his place againe, & then returned to her owne Chamber. But now this enchantment loosing his operation, a fonsie appeared to Palmerin, resembling his Ladie Polynard, who said. Ah Palmerin, disloyall Shreytour and Adulterer, how much are they deceiued, that reput thee a loyall and faithfull Louer? Ah wretch, vnlworthy of so good a name, hauing so iniuriously forgotten mee. Doest thou not consider thy great offence, committed against the God of Heauen: medling with a Woman more brute then brutishnes it selfe, and thy disloyall treason against my selfe? Be assured, that if thou presently forfaine not her company: I will never forget thy fault, but chastrise thee continuallie as a dissembling reprobate. So the departed, Palmerin intreating her to pardon this iniurie, which she would not heare, but sloung away in great anger: and he awaking, brake forth into these speches.

Ah unhappie wretch that I am, thus to loose the gracious fauour of my Mistresse. These words awaked the Prince Olorico, who embrasing him in his arms, demanded the cause of his sorrow: but Palmerin was so surprised with

# THE HISTORIE

with griesse, as hee would make no answare, but fell from the Bedde in a swoone. Olorico fearing he was dead, cried out for helpe, whereat the Duene arose, and casting her right Mantle about her, came to knowe the occasion of this clamour: and finding Palmerin byreathlesse, she called for so many present remedies, as extinguished the passionate fitte. Palmerin seeing the Duene so neare him, clothed himselfe immediately, and departed the Chamber, commanding all his people to prouide themselves, sh: he would departe thence within an houres space. Neither coulde the earnest intreatyes of the Duene, nor courteous persuasions of Alfarano, cause him to stay till Dinner time: but his Carryages being sent before, and his Men attending him, he came to take his leaue of the Duene, who very sorrowfull for this strange accident, said to him at his departure:

Noble Syr Palmerin, my heart attainted with such extrem griefe, as the sight of you doth somewhat remedy, expected further hope of ease by your presence: but seeing your departure may not bee with stode, I pray you vouchsafe to weare this Ring for my sake, and keepe it safely, till my messenger bring you an other like unto it. Madrine (quoth Palmerin) beeinge unable to remunerate the great honours you haue done mee, I will not denye your small request: that I may the better fulfill the bond of Allegiance, where in I stand bound to you while I live. Goe then in the safe protection of the Gods (quoth she) for thou hast left me such a recompence, as all my life time will be ioyfull to mee.

Palmerin not understanding her dark speeches, departed, putting the Ring on his finger, being the most rich and curious piece of worke that euer was seene: For in it was a godly great Rubie cut in faces, so lively as could be dentled, which shone so brightly, as in the night time it sparkled great light. The Duene likewise, after shre had gauen great Riches to the Admirall, returned into her Countrey, leading thenceforwards a very Chaste and Continent life, onely for his sake, by whome in (short time) shre found her selfe

# OF PALMERIN D'OL IVA.

words this day vised in my presence to Alchidiana, I remaine vowed to your seruice: for in truth you know not the good you did me, supporting my imperfection of speech when I was before my Mistres. Yet know I not whence such imbecilitie shoulde proceed, if not by being taunched with regard of her celestiall countenance, my ouer laboured spirit forsooke me, and beeinge too much tormented in this languishing bodie: abandoned all the parts sensatiue, placing it selfe onely in mine eyes, which never could imagine themselves satisfied, contemplating beautie of so rare and especiall estimation. And were it not my hope onlie consisteth in you, comparing my small desert, and the excellencie of my Ladie: long ere this had my soule forsooke her infortunat habitation, which so vndiscreetly fell into these oppressing passions. And this I earnestly intreate you to let her vnderstand: in that I feare least the impute happy alteration, to want of wisedome and civilitie. Deuile me, quoth Palmerin, I promise you my bitterest abilitie, and so much will I doe, as one friend may for another, to discharge my selfe of the promise which heretofore I made yee.

And let me intreate you on mine owne behalfe, to remoue that opinion of speciall loue, which you repouze the Princesse beare me, being not such as you doe imagine: for (noble Prince, and my deare friend) you need not despaire of the benefit wherof I haue so sollemnely assured you. After many other speeches, they slept till the next morning, when cloching themselves in their richest garments, then went and gaue the good morrow to the Holdane, who very honourably thanked them: and Palmerin espying convenient occasion, thus began.

My Lord, you haue sufficient experiance, that by the bountie and great fauour of the Gods, you haue obtained victory against your enemies, to the no little content of your subiects: all which being so happilie finished, base were the thought, to feare the perfection of higher enterprises.

There-

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

such and so many haue beeene his rare Employes, as no one that I knowe may be equalled with him. And all this hee admitteth to your fauour, wherein hee earnestly desircth to continue, so please you to accept him for your Knight: deliuering this assurance before hand, that hereafter hee will aduenture his Life in your cause, wheresoeuer it shall like you to commaund him. For this cause (Madame) you may not refuse him, beeing the man that among all the Assirians, doth best deserue to be your Servant. Alchydiana, who well understood to what ende his speches tended, and the occasion why Palmerin thus spake, aduised herself well, and returned this answere.

So helpe me oure Gods, I knowe well that the Prince Olorico is so puissant and renowned as any man of whom I yet heard: notwithstanding, I hope the Seldan my father will not be ingratefull in the knowledge thereof, and that suffitiently, I dare awarrant yee. But I desire you, faire Syz, to tell me how the Quene of Tharsus intreated you, and what is your opinion of her? In good sooth Madame (answered Palmerin) shee is one of the moste honest and vertuous Ladys that euer I came in companie with, all, & to whom I greatly desire to do any service. You haue god reason (qd. the Princesse) in that shee came so farre to see you, & discouer her loue: which others could as well accomplitsh, as god, or rather in Honour beyond her, if they might hope of any ease in theyr passionate desires. Palmerin feigning not to understand her meaning, entred into other kind of talke, untill Supper time, which finished, eache one returned to their Chamber, when the Prince seeing himselfe alone with his Friende, thus sayde. Ah my deare Friende Palmerin, howe worthily may you be sayde to bee without compare, in all perfections that a Knight ought to haue, Loue ouely excepted: yet herein (if I be not deceived) you do for me against all reason, for a thousand times are you more beloued, then your selfe can loue any. Notwithstanding, for this defauile, if so it may bee named, and for the

words

## THE HISTORIE

their spedye comming. The Soldane was not a little toyfull of these tydings, as also of the fortunate victory against his Enemies, wherefore he left the Cittie of Calpha, and determined to meete them at a Castell of Pleasure, which he had lately Coefted, chiefly because hee wold see the good order of his Armie, which was nowe conuerted in better equipage, then before was wont to be seene in Asyria.

The King of Balisarca caused the Captives to be ledde before, who (by his commandment) when they came in the Soloans presence: threw theyr Armour to the ground, and thre times fell on theyr knees killing the Earth, prostrating themselves before him with great reverence. All these ceremonies finished, Palmerin, the Prince Olorico, with the other Gouvernours of the field, came and kissing his Vighneste hand, hee entertained them very graciously: and after hee had embraced Palmerin, he wold nedes ride betweene him and the King of Balisarca. In this order rode they on to the Wallace Gate, where his Ladie Lethea and Alchydiana her Daughter, tricke vp in vesture of surpassing value, attended their comming: and after the accustomed reverences on all sides, entred the great Hall, where the Princesse taking Palmerin by the hand, before her Father and all his Barons, thus spake.

Sy, Palmerin, so well is your prowesse and haughtie deedes of Armes knowne to every one, as my praise can not extoll them to advantage: Notwithstanding, I dare say before my Father, and all his Lodes here present, that he is so much indebted to you, as he can never retorne sufficient recompence. These words uttered with such affecti- were eare noted by every one, especially the Prince Olorico, when Palmerin made this answere to the Princesse: Madame, here may you behold the Prince of Arabia, one of the best Knights that euer I knew, and who hath done done service to your Father and you in this Warre, then any other beside: For with his owne hand he slew Gramell, who was chiefe leader of the Paragians Ar. mle. Beside,

see b

## THE HISTORIE

selfe conceived with child. And at the time appointed by nature, she was deliuere of a goodlie Sonne, resembling his father in braue constitution: whom the Mother caused to be named Palmerendos, as well in memorie of his father Palmerin, as also of his Graundisire Florendos, from them deriving his name, as being the onely flower of chivalrie. And as Palmerin was vertuous, so did his Sonne follow him in allbountie, prudence, magnanimitie, loyaltie, liberalitie, courtesie and humanitie: in bries, he had all the noble vertues that a child might receive from his father, as you may at large perceue in his Historie. But because his deeds as yet serue not to our purpose: we will leauue him growing vnder his mothers charge, and returne to them whom lately we left.

## CHAP. XXI.

How Palmerin, to colour his intended and desirous voy-  
age into Christendome, perswaded the Soldane to  
send his Armie to Constantinople, and what followed  
thereon.



Reately desirous was Palmerin to re-  
turne towards the Soldane, and  
therefore would not make his way  
by Palmeria, but tournied thither-  
ward, where the King of Balisarca  
stated his comming: who came to  
meete him with all the Lords and cap-  
taines of his army. Thus having brought the countrey in  
quiet obaysance to the Soldane, with their prisoners they  
returned towards his Majestie, sending word before of their

## OFF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

Therefore my Lorde, I thinke it expedient, so it may stand with your godliking, considering your pruision for the Sea, is in such readinesse, your people likewise acquainted with your intent, before we medled with the Bretheren of Amarano, came daily in troupes to offer their service: that now you send your Army to Constantinople, for your armes were once heard, right sone will wee Embarkie our selues, and set forwards on our Voyage. For the rest, I pray you deliuer these Prisoners, to be vsed as your slaves: but as for the Princes, I thinke (having seene the Fortune of their Bretheren, and theyr owne badde successe in Armes) that they will serue you with continuall Loyaltie. My Sonne, (quoth the Soldane) let all be done as you haue appointed, for such is my confidence in you, that this your intent can not but sorte to a god ende: wherefore my Gallyes and all things ready furnished, depart when you please, hauing first sent your Souldours aboyd.

The Prince Olorico beeing present, offered againe to go in this Voyage, with like number of men, as he brought against the Bretheren of Amarano: For whiche the Soldane greatly thanked him, promising him such satisfaction at his returne, as would agree with his owne content. Alchidiana taking in ill parte, the wordes of Palmerin on the Prince Oloricos behalfe: sent for him to come speake with her, whiche he did, and finding her very sad and melancholique, hee demanded if any one had done her displeasure, and what the cause might be of her pensiuenesse: Ah my deare friend (quod shee) how can I but be agrieved, seeing no one Lady in the world, hath so many contrary Fortunes as my selfe: Alas, my heart hath chosen you for my onely Lorde and Friende, thinking to finde place worthy my loue, and that your Loue would answer me with the like; but in ought I can perceue, I am too much beguiled, for you, my other as ingratefull, or carelesse, vse affecting sympathes to me, importing no other ende, but that in leauing you, I shold take the Prince Olorico for my Husband. Do you imagin

## THE HISTORIE

me so mutable and inconstant, that I will o'er can loue any other but you : or that my affection entirely settled so high, can b' yoke such a downfall, as to like the man so much in-ferior to you ? And (which most of all offendeth mee) not contented to mocke mee, in disdaining my knelwe Lue ; discreetously would perswade mee to choose an other. Let all our Gods be iudge, if I haue not iust cause to complaine of you, albeit I haue greater reason to hate and despise my owne selfe : For in that I haue more then deserved your loue, yet (as too much vnwise) I cannot consider, that in the heart of an ingratefull person, Loue hath no place of certaine abyding. But seeing our Gods haue in such sorte subiected me, as against my will, I am constrained to loue mine enemy, in baine were it soz me to resist against them, that they beholding the empott'd Lue of the one, may in the ende punish the ingratitude of the other. Thus thinking to continue longer speach, so many violent sighes inter-cepted her, as shee was not able to prester one word more, whereby Palmerin enfored, this answered. I beseeche you Madame, cresse me not with these nadeste words, for al-though the Prince is so worthy to be belued, as any man that euer I sawe : yet were I very much improuded of witte, and a meere stranger to god consideration, if I woulde refuse that speciall felicitie, then which I can desire no greater.

I knowe (Sweete Ladie) that you loue mee intirely, perswade your selfe then, that my Loyaltie is no lesse, noz can Death cause mee gainsay the promises I haue made you: and were it not to the great disadvantage of mine Ho-nour, to for-sake this honourable Warre your Father hath intended, which might procure eache one to misconceive of mee : assure your selfe, that I woulde for-sake both Digni-ties Arms, and all, to do the seruice you iorowthly deserue, all which at my returne, feare not, shall bee effected. So wel could Palmerin dissemble the matter, as the Princesse was somewhat better pacified, & taking his leaue of her, re-turnd

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

turned to the Soldane: Before whome hee caused to bee brought, the Princes and Lords that were pynsoners, and at his request Maulicus gave them theyz libertie, with this charge notwithstanding, that they shoulde serue him in this warre. Whiche that they might the better accouplish, hee commanded them Horse, Armour, and all other things ne-cessarie, makin g'all possible spedee could be devised, that his Armie might sette forward to Sea.

## CHAP. XXII.

¶ How Palmerin sayling with the Soldans armie, was brought by Tempest into the Sea of Allemaigne, where he tooke landing with the prince Olorico.



Wchly Palmerin consented soz to En-  
barke the Armie, desiring the Prince  
Olorico to accompany him to the Ha-  
uen, to the end they might make choyse  
of the best Wessells for themselves: and  
furuying them all, they found a goodly  
Carrickke, newe and very well appoynted, wherin many Prisoners lay chay-  
ned, who formerly had bin taken by the Soldans Galleys,  
and other Rovers of the Mores, of whome Palmerin de-  
maunded what people they were: they answered that they  
were Christians, and had of a long tyme liued there in that  
thralldome, Palmerin not a little glad of these newes, as-  
ked of what Countrey they were, wherupon ons of them  
that could well speake the Arabian tongue, thus answered:

We are all borne in Allemaigne, to whome Fortune  
hath exceeded in crueltie. These wordes were maruellous  
welcome to Palmerin, and for which inwardly he thanked

## THE HISTORIE

his God: but the better to dissemble his ioy, he thus spake: This Countrey shoulde seeme to bee vny farre from hence, because I never hearde thereof before. So finding this tressell fitt for his purpose, hee appoynted it for himselfe, and the Prince Olorico, discharging all others that were therin, two Knights onely excepted, to whose charge hee committed the Christians: causing his Horses, Tents, and all other necessaries, to be carried abord, as well the Prince Oloricoes, as his owne, accomplishing every thing in such order, as within thre dayes after the soldiours were ready to depart. And now the day is come to launche away, when the Soldan and other Taborlanes, accompanied the King of Balisarca to the Haven: But the faire Ailchydiana would not besyne, by reason of her great griele and sorrow for her friends departure: For when shee came to take her leaue of Palmerin in his Chamber, shee fell (in a manner dead) at his feete, sone after shee deliuered these lamenting speches:

This is no common farewell my beloued Lorde, which you now take of me, but say it is my very last Adieu: for my heart perswades mee, that I shall never see you more, because the extremities of my sorowes are such, as well I know I cannot long endure. Adieu then sweet friend, who in steede of ioy and confort, leauest mee in dispayre, which never can haue ende, but by immediate death.

God Madame say not so (quod Palmerin) for I hope right soone to see you againe. So leauing her, Olorico and hee went towards the Haven, the Prince being so passionate to leauue her sight, by whose swete looks his life was maintained: as had not his friendly companion conforted him, unable was he to depart the pallace. But being now come to the Port, and seeing the winde and Sea serviceable, loth to trifle the time with any longer staye, they came to take theyz leaue of the Soldane, who tooke great care for theyz contentment, and many times embracing Palmerin, commanding to him the disposition of all his affaires, said: My

noble

## OF A PLMER IN DOLIVA.

noble Sonne and friend, I bow to you in presence of our Gods, that if you retorne hither againe with victory, with such honours I will endow you, as shal be sufficient for the whole worlde to talke on. Palmerin humblie kissing his hande, went aborde, the Mariners hoyssing saile, launched forth into the Sea: with such a braue noyse of Drummes, Trumpets, Clarions, Cornets, Fifes, & other instruments, as though Heaven and earth would haue encoutered together. Palmerin thus sloting on the go, wearemet of Neptune, imagined how with safetie he might for sake his compaine, wherfore he commaunded to vnbind all the Christians. For (quoth he to Olorico) seeing they are Mariners, and well skilde in the arte of Navigation they may stande vs in god steede, if tune so require, or any sudaine tempest shoulde assaile vs: but the better to beguile his owne people, he caused them to sweare their faithfull service to him.

The night being come, and hee seeing that every one slept soundly: called two of the Christians, and in the Allemaigne tongue thus began, My Friends, give thankes to God for your fortune, in that you Christians haue founde one of your faith and religion, who hath god hope shorly to deliuer you from these heathen helhoundes: therefore set seare a part, and regard well your Quadrant, if you can compasse any meane to gette the coast of Allemaigne. The Christians more glad then can be expressed, answered, that they would accomplish his comandaument, and therfore he shoulde repose his trust in them. About midaight, as God woulde, began a great tempest and blustering of winde, so that in despight of the Pilots and Mariners, the Fleete was seuered in many parts: but the Christians perceiving that this wind serued well for their availe, knew so well how to order their course, that in short time they got saf enough from their company, and thus continued the wind for tenne or twelue daies, for which Palmerin devoutly thanked God.

## THE HISTORIE

So happily strayed Palmerin with his Allemaignes, that one of them at length tolde hym, they were neere the straights of Gibraltere: for whiche Palmerin not a little ioyfull said, how that they might passe Spayne, without any there, and so the sooner reache Allemaigne. But when they began to coast the straigthe, the Turkish Mariners were amazed, saying that the Christians knewe not their course, being more then eyght hundred thousand leagues fowrth of theyz compasse.

Palmerin fearing to be discovered before hee came to his intent, answered in choller, that the Christians knew their course much better then they did, and they to paze no moze on paine of theyz lives: which threatening, presently drove them all to silence. Afterwardes they sayled with so god winde, as they tooke Landynge at a Porre in Allemaigne, which at this day is called Tollco: when the Christians said to Palmerin, how that was the place where they were borne, where (if so hee pleased) they desired theyz libertie. Palmerin assuring them of theyz request, answered that he himselfe wold land there, and therfore went first on shore, seigning to seeke fresh water, and all things accomplished to his owne desire: he caused his Horse to be brought fowrth, and Oloricoes likewise, who was impotunate to bears hym companie. No sooner was Palmerin on shore, but he kneeled downe, givynge thankes to God for his safe deliuerance. The Merchaunts and Mariners of the Cittie, seeing them whome they thought lost in the Sea, moze then tenne yeeres before, were greatly abashed, welcommynge them home, with exceeding ioye: but they answered, that they ought rather to thanke the Knight in greene Armour, for he deliuered vs from the Mores and Infidels, without request of any causemente.

Olorico amazed at these signes of ioy, as also when hee sawe Palmerin pray, knew not well what to thinke: which Palmerin presently perceyuing, and to resolute hym of all doubts whatsoever, sayd. No longer neade I now my god

Loode

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

Lord and Friende, to hide the affaires and secrets of my hart from you: know therefore, that I am a Christian, and a Gentleman of the Emperours Court of Allemaigne. But that which most of all greeueth me, is that I am constrainyd to forsake your company, and returne againe to my Lord, for too much shold I offend my God, to goe with you in the Holdans service. Wherefore my loving Friend, let me intreate you to holde me excused, swearing to you by the faith of a Knight, that whether else it shall like you to goe, I will accomplish your munde in any thing. I intreate you likewise, to entertaine al my Squires and Gentlemen into your service, and among them to share all my treasure in the Shippe, because I will haue nothing with me but my Horse and Armour. And notwithstanding all this, feare not to present your selfe before the Holdans and Alchidiana: for to them will I write such matter of you as they shall accept you in my place, and with as great honoz as euer they did me. If heauen so fauour mee, as I may come to the knowledge of my Father, I will certifie you with the truth of all. As for my counterfeiting to be dumbe, was onely but to awaite opportunitie, when with safetie I might escape from thence.

If Olorico at the first was amazed, what may be iudged of hym now: notwithstanding, he loued Palmerin so perfectly, as he returned hym this answer. Although syr Palmerin, we are of contrary faith and opinion, yet hath your noblenes and humanitie gained such privalidge ouer mee, that as you haue long time lived a Christian among the Turks, so for your sake will I live a Turke among the Christians, dissembling in like sort as you did, and never shall any occasion force mee to forsake you, till you haue found your Father, and knowe if he be descended of the Holdans blood. No honor will it be for me now, to returne againe to the Asseia Princes, and as for my people, I force not though they goe backe againe with my treasure: for on my knighthode, I will be no richer then you, nor will

## THE HISTORIE

to seuey any thing with me, then what belongs to a knyght errant, which is Horsse and Armour. For the rest, let for tyme do the wortl he can, I hope for all this one day to be King of Arabia. Then noble fryste, be not offendyd, for I will beare you company: if death or strong unprisevement do not withhold me. Palmerin embrasing hym, sayd.

Ah worthy Prince, so noble is your mind, and replete with fidelite, as perswade your selfe to find me your loyall Brother, and fellow in Armes, neuer to forslake you while I can lift my Sword, so please you to abide with mee. So calling the chaylest of them in the shipp, they saide as much to them as you haue heard, commaunding them not to syg from Arabia, before they heard some other tidings. As for their strange conceit at these newes, I bequeath to your judgments, yet durst they not gainsayre their Maisters; but launching into the depe, sayled back againe into their own Countrey.

Palmerin and Olorico for this night lodged in the Cittie, to refrely themselves, and the next morning, after they had taken leaue of the Merchantys, they deliuered, they set forward on their journey. Continuing their traualle thre daies together, at length they mette a knyght, who seeing them Armed after the Turkish manner, sayd. Gentlemen, God saue ye, if I shold not see me ircullesome to you, because I judge you to be Stranglers: I would gladly know if you could tell me any sydinges of two knyghts, which long since left this Countrey. How were they named (qd. Palmerin.) Sirsaide the knyght, one of them is Trineus, Sonne to our dreas Lord the Emperour, and the other, the most valiant Palmerind'Oliva. Two yeres & more since, they left the Court, without any newes what became of them: sauing that we haerde they were a while with the King of England, and thence they conuayed his Daughter, the Emperour continuing so sorrowful for their losse, as every houre his death is expected. May it be (qd. Palmerin) that

## OF PALMRIN D'OLIVA.

that all this while Trinens is not returned? What daunger will Noble Allemaigne sustaine, by losing their young Prince? ouercome with exceeding griefe and sorow, by report of these unhappy tidings, to hymselfe hee beganne in this manner.

What shall I do? Dare I bee so presumptuous, as to present my selfe before my Mistresse? What sufficient excuse can I make for the losse of her Brother? Doubtlesse, if it wase such a hell to mee, to finde the meane for my departure, from that long Captiuitie in the Soldans Courte, much more wil it be to mee now in search of the Prince, for without him I dare not approuach the Emperours presence.

Whyle he thus secretly discoursed with hymselfe, hee became so exceeding passionate, as Olorico thought he had lost his sensess: which was the cause, that without any further enquierie the Allemaigne knyghtes departed from them, when Olorico, amazed at this suddaine alteration, saide: How now Syg Palmerin? what hath moued you to this heauiness? I beseeche you conceale not the cause from me: for if it bee by any offence, that the knyght offered which spake to you, soone shall I deliuer him his penance. Therefor tell mee I pray you, for undoubtedly I will not suffer you to rest, vntill you haue acquainted mee with the trueth. Palmerin knowing how dierely the Prince loued him, and that onely for his sake he had left Countrey, Parents, and friendes: reposing on his loyaltie, imparted his loue to him, as also the losse of Trineus and the Princesse Agriola. Olorico then laboured to perswade him, advising him to compasse some secrete syech with his Ladie, of whome hee might learne how to recover her lost Brother, and the faire Agriola of England againe. Palmerin following his counsell, pacified hymselfe, and hee kept hymselfe so closely as he could, from being knowne to anie.

CHAP.

# THE HISTORIE

## CHAP. XXIII.

How Palmerin, by the means of Vrbanillo his Dwarff, spake with his Lady Polynarda, with whom he stayed five dayes, to recompence some parte of his long absence, and to the great contentment of them both.



With expedition in theyr Journey made these Noble Compaysons, and most worthy Knights, that at length they arryued neare a strong Castell, which was about fourre myles distante from Gaunt, where the Emperour as then was disposed to Hunting, for the delight of the Ladys: but chiefly to expell his owne melancholie and sadnessse, for the losse of his beloued Sonne, as also to recreate the Princesse Polynarda: who vnder pretence of shadowing the cause, by her Brothers absence, lamented continually for her Noble Frende Palmerin, of whom shes could understand no certayne tydings, albeit she trauelled her very vttermost endeuors, which forced her to so many extreame imaginacions, as that the very least was worse then death it selfe.

The Emperours Crayne lodgynge eache way about the Castell, hindered our two Knights from any god Hostage, so that they were constrained to Lodge in a homely simple house: where they demaunded of a Courtyer which laye there, what tyme the Emperour woulde depart thence: who aunswere that his Highnesse was minded that day to retorne to Gaunt, to confesse with the Princes Electours of speciall affayres concerning the Empire. Palmerin ioyfull hereof, caused his Hysse to be bydeled, & accompayned with Olo-

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

Olorico, went and Ambushed themselves in a little Thicket neare the High-Way, where the Emperour must needs passe, to the ende hee might beholde his Ladie Polynarda, Palmerin attending her comynge who was the only suppreste of his life: his heart leapt with conceyte of his Joye to come, yet trembled likewise, because he durst not present himselfe before the Imperiall Maestie, without the Noble Trineus.

Sone after, by the Guard of Archers that came for molt, he well perceyued the Emperour was at hand: When remembryng the honors and fauours he had receiued in his Court, the teares trickled downe his Cheeke, chiefly for want of his Highnes Sonne, which was so especially committed to his trust. Then followed the Empresse, and with her the sayre Princesse Polynarda, cloathed all in blacke, witnessynge by her outward habit, the secret sorowes of her heart. Her thoughts still hammering on her priuate gries, yet assailed with a sudden motion, she gaue such a sighe as Palmerin easly hearde it: which troublid him in such sorte, as without the assistance of Olorico, he had fallen downe from off his Hysse. Polinarda beholding his sudden alteration, without any regard of her Mother, called Vrbanillo the Dwarffe to her: who since his comynge from England never boudged from her, and to him shee saide. Haile thou heretofore (Vrbanillo) seyn thole two Knights, who shaddow themselves in the Wood side, while we passe by? No trust me Madame (quoth the Dwarffe) I never saue them so fast as thou canst, and demaund of them from me, of whence they are: and if they can tell any tydings of thy Maister, and my Brother Trineus. The Dwarffe, who was more then a Doctor in such affayres, discerning that his Hysse would stale, suffered the Crayne to passe by, and then rode towards the Knights, who were deuising on the Princesse beauty. Palmerin wel knowing Vrbanillo, and seeing him come in such hast, was not a little glad, thinking now

## THE HISTORIE

now he shoulde heare some newes of his Mistris, wherefore he said to Olorico. I pray you let vs goe mete with this Warreman, for I thinke his returne is onely to vs.

Soone was the Dwartfe come to them, and having humbly saluted them, saide. I beseeche you faire Knights to tell me whether you belong to the Emperour, or are strangers: for the Ladie whom I serue, is very desirous to knew: and that for matter's merely concerning her, wheteofit you can any wy trulye resolute her, your rewarde shall aunswere your owne contentment. What Vrbanillo? (qd. Palmerin) listing vp his Beuer: Didst thou not know thy Maister? Oh Heauen (quoth the Dwartfe) praiseth be thy Maister for euer, for this Auenture. And moued with extreame ioy, he fell at his Maisters feate, saying: Ah my Lord, what comforthe wil this bee to the Princesse Polynarda, when shee shall understand of your Presence? and not without iust cause: for by this meane is she deliuered from the greatest tormentis in the world. And that nothing may want to furnish this long expected ioy, tell me if the knight in your companie, be the Prince Trineus, or no? It is not hee (qd. Palmerin, for it is more then a yere since, that of him, and the faire English Agriola (after that I unfortunately lost them) hearde any certaine report. For this cause Vrbanillo, it behoues thee to be faithfull and secrete, not discouering my being heere to any but my Ladie: of whome thou must leare, by what meanes I may best come to see her? The Dwartfe taking his leave of his Maister, turned his hysle to be gone: but comming backe suddenly againe, saide. Is this Syr Ptolome that is with you? Madame Brionella wil not be a little glad to heare of him likewise. Noz is it he (qd. Palmerin) I lost him in company with therest. God will ressore them one day again (said the Dwartfe) so giuing the spurs to his horse, he galloped till he came to the Princesse, who seeing him returned in such hast, knew not well what to thinke: yet fearing to be discouered by a knight y accompanied her, determined not to request his tidings, vntill he

came

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

came home into her chambres. But never was poore leuer in greater agony, when he expected her friend in some privat place, then was the faire Prince at this present: wherefore, so soone as he came to her chamber, he called for the Dwartfe, who being come, he said; I pray thee Vrbanillo, by the reverend duty thou owest mee, whence are the two Knights, & what answer did they make thee? They are such swet Madam, quoth the Dwartfe, as when all the men in the world could tel no tidings of, my selfe by happy fortune haue found: for by them I bring you the key of paradise, if your self wil but find the meane to enter. Tush, I pray thee, quoth the Prince, iest not with me in this sort, for new is no time of sport or meriment: tel me who they are I desire thee. Know then faire Madam, quoth he, that one of them is my M. Palmerin, who thus concealeth him, because he hath not brought the Prince your brother with him, and he (humbly kissing your hand) commands him to your gracieus favo're, desiring you to send him answer, how he may secretly speake with you, because he would not be knowne to the Emperour, or any other of the court. How welcom these long expected newes were to the Prince, I leave to the opinion of long absent sciends. Theauens, quoth he, doth Palmerin live, and is so neare at hand: now hath my heart his only desired comfort: and such is my hope, that seeing hee is come, my brother (by his meanes) shall not long hence, to such god torturis are al his actions destined. Presently he ran to tel Brionella these newes, who likewise was exceeding ioyful, because she imagined Palmerins companion to be her Ptolome. Whereupon they concluded together, that Palmerin shold the night following come to the Garden, where first his swet Amours were sollicited, and by a ladder of rodes he shold ascend their chamber. This resolution set downe, the Dwartfe departed to execute his charge, when Polynarda thus began to Brionella. Ah my deare friend, how impossible is it for me to hide the ioy my hart conceiueith, that was so late in such surpassing heauynesse:

What

## THE HISTORIE

What will my Ladys now thinke, when they beholde  
their Mistresse so pleasaunt? Let them speake what please  
them (quoth Brionella) Should you render them account of  
your behauour: yet this I thinke, that your discretion is  
so god, when you haue seene the onely confort for your  
cares: that you can so well dissemble your thoughts, as the  
most warie Eye shall hardly discerne you. Well haue you  
saide (quoth the Princesse) if loue could bee gouerned by  
wisedome: but the pleasure which the wisedome receyued  
by his rules, hath in the end discouered their vanity and fol-  
lie. Such were the speches betwene these two Ladys,  
attending all the night in god devotion, when eache one  
thought to see her Lord and best beloued, that their long sor-  
rowes might somewhat be quallified.

The Dwarfe being gone on his Message, as you haue  
heard, the Knights reposed themselves on the grene grasse  
till Sunne setting; that they might more couerly enter  
the Cittie: and the tyme being come that they would sette  
forwards, Palmerin saide to Olorico. My Lorde, we will  
take this by-way, which leadeth to the Cittie, for I intend  
before I departe, to haire some newes from my deere Mi-  
stresse. Goe which waſ you please (quoth the Prince) yet  
mift I needes maruell at you, that you would bee so long  
absent from such an excellent Princesse; Thust me Alchi-  
diana is faire, yet may not she be equalled with your Lady.  
The grieses I haue endured (said Palmerin) by my long ab-  
sence, are not to bee spoken of: yet could no way compasse  
my returne sooner. By this tyme they were come to the  
Cittie, and to a lodging appointed them by Vrbanillo, who  
being now come to his Maister, deliuered the Message hee  
was comauaunded. Palmerin vnderstanding his Mistresse  
pleasure, presently vnauained himselfe, and wrapped a Scar-  
f about him, taking his trusty Swerde under his  
Armie, he intreated Olorico to stay there till he returned,  
or heade further tydiugs from him, leauing Vrbanillo in  
his compaines, with charge to vse him as his owne person.

He

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

He being come to the walles of louely Paradise, found  
the Ladder ready prepared for him, wherby he made a spee-  
die passage: and finding Brionella, there stayng his com-  
ing, embracing her swaſtely, sayde, Thrust me Ladie, the  
want of Syr Ptolome your friend, doth not a little grieve  
me: but by the grace of God, ere it be long I hope to bring  
him with me. Ah my Lord (quoth he) right happy is your  
god comming hither: For your presence hath bene heere  
most of all desired. But albeit shée set a god countenance  
on this armes, yet were her secrete sorrows innume-  
rable, being deceiued of the confort shée expected. Palmerin  
who thought he stayed too long from his Ladys Chamber:  
who angrily had thre wme herselfe on a Pallet, because hee  
stayed to speake with Brionella, then falling on his knee  
before her, he offered to kisse her hand, which with dissem-  
bling disdain, shée would not suffer him, saying: Truly  
you shall receive no fauour of me, before I know certaintly  
who you are: for I stand in doubt to be deceyued: and that  
you are some other then my Palmerin seeing you haue bene  
so long time from mee, and (which is more,) woulde never  
bomchsafe to send to me.

Then taking a Light in her hand, and earnestly behol-  
ding him, hardly could shée sett it from her againe, when  
welcomming him with an infinit number of sweete kises,  
she thus saide: Nowe knowe I well that this is my Pal-  
merin: what Countrey might be so delectable, or Fortune  
so contrarie, that could with holde you all this while from  
me? O that it might haue stod with mine honour, for my  
selfe to haue leught you out: with god will could I haue en-  
dured the Trauell, yea, much more then you haue done for  
me. How often (considering the dangers of the See) hath  
very death surprised me: and into how many sundry opin-  
ions haue I fallen: Sometimes to disguise my selfe into a  
mans attire, to enter the estate of a knight Errant, and be-  
gin a search whiche never shuld haue ended, till I found you.

Fo

## THE HISTORIE

For this hath been receiued as a generall rule, that by too long sufferance and expectation one may endure a thousand deaths: and think not but the very least of my afflictions, haue been of force to deprive my life. Consider that griefe, desire, rememb'rance, languor, sorrow, hope, suspition, teares, complaints, and other such like passions common in loue, continually beate upon the hart with burning affection: & to such incomuenience their issue growes, as the vitall spirit is chased from the body. For Gods sake Madame, quoth Palmerin, leauue these wounding speches, and suffer me to take a little life, in beholding that which is no lesse divine then humane, for my offence deserves not these accusations. Then discouered he all his fortunes passed, whiche droue the Princesse to no little admiration, when she said;

Beloue me my Lord, seeing that by your meanes my Brother Trineus is lost: for my loue, and to satisfie your promise to my Lord and Father, you must needes goe find him againe. That shall I Madame, quoth Palmerin, but before I begin this tourney, let me intreate that fauourable regard: which is the comfort in loue, and uniteth life and soule together, which heretofore you haue granted, and I hope will not now denie me. What may I judge (quoth she) of your constancie since your absence? for not long since I was sollicited with a vision, which told mee, that you committed breach of loyaltie with a Queene, to my no little griefe: although full often I reprooued you therfore, to cause you forsake that sinne, when mee seemed the Queene thus answered. Be thou assured Polynarda, that although Palmerin esteeme thee aboue all other, yet shall he leauue some part of his loue with me. Hearing these words, I brake forth into teares, wherewith you seemed to be moued, and so forsaking her, followed me: and here with I awaked, finding (indeed) my face besprent with teares, and my heart overcome with insupportable griefe. Palmerin abashed hereat, remembred what entertainment

the

## OF A PALMER IN DOLIVA.

The Queene of Tharsus made him at the Banquette, of her sundry delights and great fauours for his arriuall, her piercynge, amorous, & alluring speches, wherwith incessantly she did sollicite him: and such was his conceit, as he verily perswaded himselfe, that by enchanted practises shee had abused him: whereupon he sayd, I sweare to you Madame, by the religious vowe of our loue, that never did I committ such wrong against you: if the Queene of Tharsus of whom you haue spoken, did not one night deceiue me by an enchanted drinke, which unwittingly I received as I satte at Supper, causing me to lose both sense and understanding: and so acquainted her with his Dreame that night likewise.

Doubtlesse my Lord, quoth she, considering the extremitie of her affection, she practised some meanes to compasse her desire: but seeing it fell out in that sort, and beholding you would not willingly offend me, I am contented to pardon that fault. In these and such like speeches, they spent that night, and soure moore afterward, all which time Palmerin was kept vnscene in her Chamber: till his departing time being come, when the Prince attynging herselfe in her wonted mourning garments, and shewing her countenaunce to her former sorrow, shrowded her pleasures past, and thus we will leauue them, returning to our Affriens sayling on the Sea.

C P A P.

# THE HISTORIE

## CHAP. XXIII.

Now after the tempest was past, the Soldans Armies assembled together, and came against Constantinople, where by the Emperours power they were discomfited; and the King of Balisarca, his Sonne Gueresin, and diuers other great Lords of Turkie slaine.



The tempest which had thre wne Palmerin on Hercules Pillars, after many long and contagious stormes, began now to cease, the sea boeing faire and calme, and the winds very quiet, wherupon the King of Balisarca Generall of the Armie, in short time assembled together the most part of his

Fleete, and came vpon the Coast of Natolia, where hee attened the rest of his Foyles and Gallyes. And having there stayed about fiftene daies, ameng all the shippes that came, he could heare no tynges of Palmerins Carrick: the long stay whereof caused him to doubt, least he had di-  
happily perished in the sea, and overcome with exceeding grieve, he thus began.

Ah gentle Palmerin, the flower of all Chivalrie, in lucklesse houre didst thou betake thy selfe to the sea: what answer shall I make the Soldans for the losse of thee, and the Prince Olorico, being so especially committed to my trust? Now cannot Fortune be so fauourable to vs as she would: for by thy losse I utterly despayre of expected victory. To cut of these bothe complaints, he was councel-  
led by the Lgds, Knights and auncient Captaines, to set

forward

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

forward to Cōstantinople, to discharge themselves of their promise to the Soldane, least in returning without dealing with the enemie, they should be reputed for fearefull and faintharted Cowards. Setting their sailes to the wind at length they came to the Bosphor. Now was the Emperour verie Aged and sickly, having altogether committed the superintendance of the Empire, to his Sonne Caniano, who had a Sonne aged seauen yeares, named Cariteos. And beeing aduertised of the comming of so many Asirians, Turks and Moores, he sent to all the Christian Princes for succour: the greater part whereof, was there as nowe arrived, with resolute determination to welcome these Infidels.

When the Emperours scoutes had espied the enemie to enter the straignt, young Cariteos beholding the Knights on all sides, some on the Walles, and other in the Fieldes: came and kneeled before his Grandfather, earnestly desiring him to graunt him his knighthode. For my Lord, quod he, a better time and occasion cannot be then now. The aged Emperour graunted his request, and with the teares in his eyes said. In the name of God, my Son, maist thou receive thy order, and to the glorious maintenance of the Christian faith: albeit thy youth forbids thee to venture so lone.

Presently arose the young Knight Cariteos, and clapping on his Helmet, was the first that went forth of the Cittie, accompanied with tenne thousand Horsemen, and twentie thousand Footemen, to hinder the landing of the enemie: which a great while he did with such valour, as the Hauen was chaunged with the blood of the slau-  
ted. The King of Balisarca hearing thereof, commaunded his Archers to their taske, whose shafts flew so thicke in such multitude, as it were the Hayle that falles from the Cloudes: and on the other side hee gotteth thirtie thousand men on Land, who assailed the Christians so furiously, as young Cariteos was slaine, and a great number of noble

## THE HISTORIE

personages, which was the cause that the Christians refi-  
red to the very Gates of the Cittie. The Prince Caniano  
aduertised of his Sonnes death, & the great danger where-  
in the Armie was: issued forth of the Cittie with eight  
thousand Horsemen, and four thousande hardie Archers,  
who like hungrie Tygers ranne upon the Turks, beating  
them to the earth in such heapes, as twelve thousande of  
them were slaine at this encounter, and the rest repulsed  
backe to their Ships, where many entred for sauagearde of  
their lives, and a great number were miserably drowned  
in the Sea.

At this mishap y King of Balisarca was greatly enraged,  
who with his power presently went on Shore: the fight  
enduring so cruell and bloodie thre houres space, as ney-  
ther side could be reputed likeliest of victorie. In this en-  
counter ended their lives, the King of Balisarca, his Sonne  
Guercin, and a great number of Califfes and Tabozlanes  
of Turkie: and of the Christians, the Prince Caniano,  
with divers other great Princes and Lords, whose deathes  
are to this day lamented in Greece, yet were the Pagans  
and Christians so animated one against another, as darke  
night was the cause of their separation. When the Empe-  
reur understood the death of his Sonne and Nephew, hee  
was readie to die with conceit of griefe: but seeing the ne-  
cessite of the time required other matter, then sorrowing  
teares and vnpofitable lamentations, hee presently dis-  
patched Postes and Messengers, to hasten the succor was  
comming from Christendome. In short time arrived a  
mighty Christian power, and in despight of the Turks en-  
tered the Cittie, when the Emperour presently sent tenne  
thousand into the fielde, and provided a signall for y other,  
to sette fire among the Turkish Fleete, at what time they  
received the signe from the Cittie. The Infidells seeing the  
Christians to sallie abroad, left theye Ships and came to  
mete them: whereupon, the Christians deuided theselues  
into squadrons, and running furiously on the Moores,

Arabes

## OF A PLIMER IN DOLIVA.

Arabes and Assirians, made such havocke and slaughter of  
them, as happy was he coulde best defend himselfe. Then  
suddainly was the signall of fire made, on the highest stee-  
ple in Cōstantinople, to the Emperors power wauing on  
the Sea: which immediately launching among the Tur-  
kish Fleete, suncke the greater part of them, and burned  
the rest with their wilde fire. When the Turks behelde  
this stratageme, and that they were now destitute of any  
helpe, they began to faint: so that at the comming of the  
Emperour, who came himselfe upon them, with a freshe  
saille of thre thousand men, they were all slaine, except a  
few that escaped into Galleyes, that brake from the rest  
upon sight of the pollcie. Great was the spoyle gotten by  
this conquest, which the Christians taking with them, en-  
tered Cōstantinople, where they gaue God thanks for their  
happy victorie.

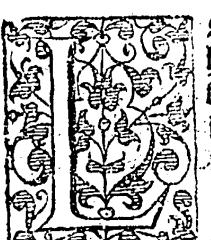
But although the Emperour saw his enemies van-  
quished, after the Princes were depaited that came to his  
succour, right greevous was the losse of his sonnes to him,  
wherfore his Lords aduised him, to send for his Daugh-  
ter the Queene Griana, and King Tarisius her Husbande,  
and to commit the government of the Empire to him. For  
the accomplishment of this generall determination, the  
Duke of Pera was appointed Lord Ambassadour, being  
one of the most auncient Princes of Greece: who accom-  
panied with many noble Gentlemen, made such expediti-  
on in his iourney, as hee arrived in Hungaria before the  
King and his Queene Griana, whose sorrowes may not be  
expressed for the death of her Brother. When they under-  
stood the Emperours pleasure, they resolued on theye ob-  
edience, which caused the King to send for two of his Ne-  
phewes, who were Sonnes to the Duchesse of Ormeada his  
Sister, the one named Prompaleon, & the other Oding,  
to be his Lieutenant in Hungaria during his absence. Up-  
on their preface, before the Ambassadour of Constantinople,  
the King Tarisius tolke their oathes, for their loyall and  
faithfull

## THE HISTORIE

faithfull government. But because we must now reue  
matter long expected, as concerning the noble Prince Flo-  
rendos of Macedon: I am loth to spend any further time  
in vaine; and will now report what happened at Buda,  
during the time of this determination.

## CHAP. XXV.

How the Prince Florendos of Macedon, accompanied  
with none but his Cozin Frenato, departed from his  
Country in a Pylgrims habit, iournyng to Hungaria,  
where hee killed the King Tarisius: and how hee and  
the Queene Griana were taken prisoners.

  
Dwinges, let vs volve remember  
how after that Palmerin was departed  
from Macedon, hauing recovered the  
healt of the olde King Primalcon, Fa-  
ther to the noble Prince Florendos,  
who during the time of Palmerins pre-  
sence: was somewhat more pleasaunt  
then of long time he had bene, appeasing his complaints for  
the Princesse Griana; by the happy tidings of the auncient  
Knight, that sent the Sheild to Palmerin at his knighting.  
But now Florendos hearing no newes of him, returned  
to his former heauines, and languished much more then e-  
uer he did: so that when the Macedonian Princes & Lords,  
pressed him with continuall request of marriage, that hee  
might haue issue to succeede in the Kingdome, he was con-  
strained by their importunitie, to make them promise of  
their request, craving a yeres respite before, in which time  
he intended to make a devout voyage, whereto they conser-  
ted in respect of his promise. So lo did hee not deuaunde

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

this time of his Subjects, for any desire he had to be a Pyl-  
grim, or any superstitious zeale to the Spanish Leather  
Cape, Shoses, Stock and such like: but for he longed to see  
his late Mistresse Griana, whom he serued in hart with  
such loyall affection, as till death he would not marry with-  
out her consent and licence.

The day being come that he would depart, he tooke his  
leauue of all the Princes, Lords and Gentlemen, and acco-  
panied with Frenato Father to Tolome, both scaped after  
the manner of Pylgrims: mounted on two Palfaynes of  
small value, and without any weapons, except each of them  
a little short Dagger, departed the Cittie, making such  
haste in their iourney, as they arrived at Buda; where as  
then the King kept his Court, prouiding to set forward to  
Constantinople. There were they lodged in one of the best  
Dsters in the Cittie, and the next morning went to the  
great Church, where the Queene was ever wont to heare  
divine service: and so well it sortuned, that at the time  
these two pylgrims entred the Church, the Queene her-  
selfe was in the Chappell. Florendos who was merueil-  
lously disguised, stood not in doubt to be knowne: but seeing  
the Chaplaine had begunne service, hypocritically he appro-  
ched to the Altar with holy devotion, to the end he might  
the better behold the Queene. Regarding her sweet coun-  
tenance, he remembred y courtesies hee sometime received  
of her, and what exceeding affection as then she bare him:  
but now being in the custodie of another, and hee out of  
hope to haue any more gracious pittie, his spirits were so  
wonderfully troubled, and so many passionate sighes hee  
breathed from his hart, as he fell downe in a swoone, that  
every one reputed him for dead. The Queene, who many  
times had noted his pitiful looks, commayneded Tolome-  
melstra one of her Ladies, she that had the charge of her in  
the Tower at Constantinople, that shee should goe vnder-  
stand the Pylgrims disease, and do her best to recover him  
againe, which Frenato had done before she came.

## THE HISTORIE

Tolomestra demanded of Frenato, the cause of his sickness; who answere. Madame, we are newly come from the holy voyage of Ierusalem, and he ( who was wont to endure many vehement alteracions, which the contrary ayres by the way do breed ) feeling the fleshe colenes of this Church, hath therewith bene overcome as it shoulde appere.

My Friendes, quoth Tolomestra, withdrawe your selues to the Court, and enquire for the Gallery, in which place the Queene doth daily give her Almes: there shall be prouided some remedy for you, and I will giue you certaine precious Drugges, which shall heereafter comfort you, when any such humour offendeth you. A thousande thanks (god Ladie) sayd Frenato, we will do as you haue commaunded vs. Service beeing ended, they went to the Gallery, whither soon after came the Queene, and opening the Casement of her Window as she was wont, stod to behold the Almes giuen to the poore Pylgrimes. Frenato and his companion had gotten so neare the window, that the Queene might easly heare any thing they said. After most humble reverence made, Florendos thus beganne. Most excellent Queene, renowned beyond al other Ladies among so many of your daily charities, may it please you to pittie the most poore & myserable Knight in the wold? The Queene at these words knew him, and was in such feare least the King should know his beeing there: as he could hardly sustaine herselfe, but satte downe on a Pallet by Tolomestra, who seeing her suddaine alteration, sayde. What ayle you Madame, that your colo ur chaungeth in such sort.

Ah my trusty Friende ( quoth the Queene ) the Pylgrime that I wounded in the Church, is the Prince Florendos of Macedon. I pray thee goe to him, entreate him preſently to depart hence: for if the King come to the knowledge of him, all the wold cannot heelde him from death. For the rest, will him follow no further what he lost by his

o wile

## OF PALMRIN D'OLIVA.

owne defaulte: and that the Fauour heretofore graunted, my dutie and honoure now forbiddeth me. Tolomestra entring the Gallerie, laid the message to the Prince Florendos: who vnderstanding this sharpe answere, shedde many teares with griefe of minde, saying: Ah my deere Friend Tolomestra, desire my gracious Mistresse Criana, that in requitall of so many tormenting Passions, which now for twenty yeres long I haue patiently endured: shee will asſayde me once to speake with her, and kisse her hand, before I depart. Tolomestra brought this answere to the Queene, perwading her to heare him speake: which shee might doe with safetie, vnder colour of requesting to knowe the meuilles of Palestina, with the precious and worthie Monuments of the holie Citie.

I am content to graunt so much (quoth the Queene) but I greatly feare the issue of his speches: goe then and cause him secretly to enter. Ah gentle habit, where vnder many one often beginne theyre delight, which in the ende prooues worse then Tragical. The two Pylgrimes being entred, Florendos fell on his knee before his Ladie, and kissing her hand, sayd:

Oh my God, thy Name be praised through all woldes, permitting me now to kisse these hands so long time desired. See here sweete Mistresse your Florendos, that with such loyalty hath loued you, and hitherto hath kept the faith which he vowed to you at Constantinople, in your Fathers Pallace: and which no death can cause me to forſake or change, vntille you please to suffer me take another wife, wherin I shall satisfie the importunate requestes, which daylie the Lords of Macedon make to me for mariage, that I might leaue them an Heire of my Littage. Which is a matter so grieuous to me, in that I failed of you, to whom I first gaue my Faith: as I resolved never to take any other, which I know not how I shall perorme without losse of my life.

As he thought to haue proceeded further in speches, and the Queene having not answereed one word: unhappily the King

## THE HISTORIE

King entred, which the Queene beholding, swoyned with feare. But he was immedately recovered by her Ladys, when the King seeing her in such estate, and in what secrecie the two Pylgryms were talking with her, hee gathered some suspition, and ouercome likewise with the force of iealousie, saide:

Madame, what make you heere at this time? and in so slender companie of Ladys? how dare you stand talking with these strangers? I would gladly know the matter, and what hath made them so bold to enter your Chamber?

Florendos seeing his affayres to growe from badde to worse, and that his Ladie was so threatned: entring into choller, hee drewe his Dagger scon under his Frocke, and taking the King by the Bosome, saide: Tarisius, I will not hyde from thes who I am: it is more then twenty yeres since I promised thy death, and nowe I am come in person to perorme it. With these wordes hee stabbde the Dagger to his heart, and downe fell Tarisius dead at his feete: which when the Queene saw, she on the other side fell in a swoun againe. Frenato greatly annoyed hereat, saide to Florendos: For Gods sake my Lord, let vs shife for our selues, before this misfortune be blazed abroad. Carent thy selfe, said Florendos, never shall it be reported that I left my Ladie to suffer for mine offence: or that for the feare of death, which is the ende of all mishaps, I will endure such intollerable anguishes and tormentes.

Now by ill fortune, one of the Pages of Honour attending on the King, and having ierne this Homicide, hastilie ranne downe the staires, crying alowd: Arme ye Knights, Arme yee, and reuenge the Kings death, who by a traytorous Pylgrym is slaine in the Queenes Chamber. Cardyno one of the Queenes Squyres, his Brother that carried young Palmerin to the Mountaine, had no leasure to take any other armes then a Sword and Shield, wherefore hee was the first that came to the Queenes Chamber, wheres he found Florendos guarding the Entrance, who presently

knew

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

knew him, saying: Depart my god friende Cardyno, but lese for the Queenes Lcue I shall take thy life from the. And what art thou (sayde Cardyno) that knowest mee so well? I am thy friend (said the Prince) the most insolunate Florendos.

Strange is it my Lord (quoth Cardyno) that ycu durst venture into this Courte: But take here my Sworde and Shielde, and defende your selfe: for I thinke you will stand in great neede thereof. In the meane while, I will goe aduertise the Duke of Pera of this mishappe, hee is your god Friend, and by his meanes you may haue some succour: for oftentimes haue I hearde him say at Constantinople, that he wished you as wel as my Lord the Emperour. Dispatch then (said Florendos) that thcu be not found here with me, assuring the, if I may escape this present danger, I will acknowledge this service to thine owne content. Florendos armed himselfe with the Sworde and Shielde, whereof he was so gladdes, as if hee had bene backed with many trusty friendes: vwing before hee dyed to make sych a spoyle amoungst his enemie, sas shuld remain for an after memorie.

Cardyno went with all diligence to the Duke, and secrely acquainted him with all this misfortune: Whereat the Duke greatly amazed, answered. I will do my bittre- most for his safety, because full well he hath deserved it. And so accompanied with many Grecian Knights, hee went to the Queenes Chamber: and thrusting through the throng in despite of them that guarded the staires, hee gotte to the Chamber. At the entraunce whereof hee found Florendos, defending himselfe with such manly eourage, as nine or ten lay slaine at his feete.

The Duke and his men caused the Hungarians to withdraw themselves: saying, that himselfe would not suffer the master so to escape, for the offence ought to be punished by Justice, after the truth were knowne and throughly understood. Hereupon, the Kings two Nephewes came in great rage, saying to the Duke of Pera, that the Queene and the

## THE HISTORIE

Pilgime ought presently to dye. What: (quoth the Duke) depart you likewise; your wills shall not here stand for Lawe: nor yet the Duke to bee intreated with such rigour.

So drawing out his sword, and his Knights likewise, resisted the Hungarians, so that many of them were slaine; until certaine Gentlemen came, who louing and esteeming the Duke, appeased this tumult. Then was it agreed vpon, that the Duke should take him into his charge, who had murdered the King: on whom such punishment should be inflicted, as the cause required: and herevpon the Duke tooke his Oath before all the whole compaie. In this sort the Kings Neophewes were quieted, who presently departed the Chamber, causing the dead and wounded to be conueyed thence, that the people might receyue no further occasion of offence, and then the Duke comming to the Prince Florendos saide:

Yelde your selfe to me my Lorde, and I promise you on the faith of a Prince, that I will maintaine both your right and the Duxenes, whosoeuer danger I shuld hazard thereby. If you will not assure your selfe, that your bodyes cannot suffice the villainous furie of these people, for they haue confidently sworne your deaths. I know my Lord (quoth Florendos) that you speake the truthe, and I repose my truthe on your Nobilitie, whiche is such, as you will not suffer any iniurie to the Man being in your Guard: I yelde my selfe to you: and earnestly intreate you not to impison the Duxene, for (on mine Honor) she is guiltlesse. And if any offence hath bene committed, it was by me: yet not without iust cause, and in defence of mine owne life. My comming hither was, because I am newly returned from Ierusalem, and remembred the inauspiciohonours, which sometime I received of my Ladie in the Emperour her Fathers Court: in my passing by, I was desirous to do my dutie to her. At the instant time I was saluting her, the King came into the Chamber, who moued with an auncient hatred, which

you

## OF PALMRIN D'OLIVA.

you very well know, would haue slaine me: but I preuenting his intent with the ayde of my weapon, bethowled that on him which he wished to me. I belieue well what you haue saide, quoth the Duke, yet must you needes abide tryall in this case.

Frenato perceiving his Cozyn in such danger, sought about the Chamber for some Weapon to defend him: and finding the Kings sword by the Duxenes Bed side, shewed it to the Duke, that he might give the better credit to the Princes wordes. Yet notwithstanding all theyr excuses, these two Pilgrims were taken into sure custody, and shut vp both together in a strong Tower: which was very long before they could accomplish, because in leading them thither, manie songht meanes to kill them, and they had done it, but that the Duke very strongly defended them.

## CHAP. XXVI.

The sorrowfull complaints made by the Queen Griana, seeing her Husband dead, and her friend taken prisoner. And how the Duke of Pera conueyed her to Constantinople, causing Florendos, and Frenato to bee brought hither, by five hundred armed Knights.



Ery sorde sorrowfull was the Duxene Griana, seeing so many severall misfortunes succede one another, as every houre her death was expected: and saue shee would haue committed vidence on her selfe, but onely that Cezyno with divers worthy Knights attended on her, that none of the Kinges kindred should offend.

## THE HISTORIE

offend her, whiles the Duke of Pera leyde Florendos and  
Prenato to the Tower. At whose returne, as hee thought  
to comfort her, she fell on her knees before him, saying. Ah  
Noble Duke of Pera, if euer pittie had place within your  
heart, for Gods sake make an ende of my inforunate life:  
and execute on me (without any fauour) the sharpest rigour  
of equal Justice, not suffering longer life, to a Woman so  
despised and miserable.

O God, doest thou permit a happy life, to entoy so bad  
an end? Thou that onely knowest the inward secrets of  
the heart, seeing I stand suspected in this Treason, let my  
spedy death deliuer my inconstancy. Oh inconstant Fortune,  
that in my younger yeres was so aduerte to mee: howe  
might I credit thy continual malice, by this straunge and  
unrepected accident. Ah gentle Prince Florendos, it was  
not for loue that thou comest to see me, but for a secrete ha-  
tred, more then deadly: seeing that by the (and that with  
great shame) I shall remaine for ever defamed. Where was  
that great loyaltie, and the great feare to offend mee, which  
sometimes thou seemedst to haue? Knowest thou not that  
in a roiall and noble minde, one only iote of infamie is an  
extreame torment? Doubtless, if thou wouldest well con-  
sider the wrong thou haft done me, thou shalt finde it to ex-  
cede all other worldy iniuries. But I may perswade my  
selfe, that my Destinie was such: For being long since by  
thee dishonoured, it must fall out for a finall conclusion, that  
by the same I shall receiue death.

In this manner the Queene complained, with such ex-  
fuse of teares and bitter sighes, as the Duke pittyng her  
case, saide: I beseech you Madame, to endure this mishap  
patiently, seeing nowit cannot be recalled, and consider that  
these teares and Lamentions can yelde yee no amendes:  
Cat rather threaten daunger, and will in the ende not only  
weaken your bodie, but hazard desperation. The King is  
dead, he must be buryed: Florendos hath offended, he shall  
be punished: your people are wounded, they must be cured.

Offendo

## OF PALMER IN DOLIVA.

Offend not then your selfe with these bootlesse regreets;  
but commaunde that the paise of your innocentie be fol-  
lowed. Hereoppon the Duke caused preparation for the  
funerall pompe, and brought the King to the bed of honer,  
not without many teares and lamentations of his subiects.

When the Obsequies were finished, Promptaleon and  
Oudin came & exclamid on the Duke, because hee brought  
not the Queene and Florendos to open punishment. By  
Friends (quoth the Duke) Haue I not heretofore told you,  
that we must not inconsiderately put such persons to death?  
let the Counsell bee called together, and as they determine  
I will procede.

Then were al the Princes and Lordes assembled,  
among whiche the Duke was intreated to speake his op-  
tion, which he did in this manner. I thinkie it conuenient,  
vnder correction of you my Noble Lordes, that the Prince  
Florendos and the Queene, ought to be sent to my Lord the  
Emperour, and there to haue Justice extended on them: as  
well for the surety of your owne persons, as for the conser-  
uation of the Realme. For except iustly and by probablis  
causes you condemne the Prince Florendos, hardly may  
you perswade the Macedonian Princes: beside, the Lordes  
may say, that without hearing hee was cutte off, and like-  
wise by his open enemies. Againe, thinkie you that the Em-  
perour will let passe in silence so great a wrong, to punish  
his Daughter, and not acquaint him with her offence?

Considering this indifferently, you shall find your selues  
on either side endangered: your gods will be spoyled, your  
lives endamaged, for hardly can you resist against such pal-  
mer. So well could the Duke set forth his Discourse, with  
confirmation of Histories both ancient and moderne, that  
in despight of the Kings Rephevies it was concluded, how  
the Prisoners shoulde be sent to Constantinople. If they  
were hereat offend, it is not to bee doubted, but hearing  
the Counsellors resolution, prepared themselves to goe to  
the Emperour, determining a sharpe and seuerre accusation:  
trust

## THE HISTORIE

trusting so much in their owne strength and powesse, that if the Emperour (for paze of the cause) shoulde conuict it to the Combat, they easly thought to compasse their intent.

So were the two Pilgrymes committed to the Dukes Nephew, with an hundred knyghtes of Grece, for theyr garde, and somme hundred Hungarians, who would naides follow, for the loue they hate the Queene: she being maruellously fauoured in her Countrey, for her many vertues, and chiefly charite.

The Queene her selfe, with the young Princesse Armida her Daughter, and all her Ladyes and Gentlewoman, were committed to the Duke of Pera his charge, and the rest of the Traine that came with him in commission of the same Embassage. When the Queen understood she should be carried to the Emperour, she was further out of patience then shee was before: rather desiring a thousand deathes, then to come with this reproche before her Father: yet notwithstanding all her intreaties, shee was conuayed into a Litter, and not so much as a pinne left about her, for feare of inconuenience.

To confort her, her Daughter Armida was placed in the Litter: without whose companie, such was her griefe to come before her Parents, as shee was divers times in daunger of death by the way. But the young Princesse being twelue or thirkene yeres of Age, could so well confort her sorowfull Mother, as her talkes expelled many bitter Imaginations. If the Queene was in heauiness, we must thinke Florendos grieses nothing inferiour, seeing his Ladie ledde in such sorte, and accused of a cryme where in none but himselfe was culpable: and yet made he no account, being reuenged of his ancient enemy, so the Queene were deliuered, though himselfe endured the death. But now are they come to Constantinople, yet not so swone but the Nephewes of the Deceased King were before them, where they had blazed a most false and shamefull repotte. And but for the god advise of certayne Noble Princes, that fauoured

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

fauoured Florendos & the Queene Criana, upon the trouth leste speeches of these twaine: the Emperour had concluded to burne his Daughter and the Prince so soone as they came, such horrible slaunderers had these Traytors spred of them. Namely, that the King was murdered, finding Criana committing adulterie with Florendos. At which wordes the Emperour was so enraged, that like a man deprivyd of reason, he violently puld himselfe by the beard saying.

Ah wretched and infortunat olde man, haue the heauens suffered thee thus long life, that after the death of thy Sonnes Caniano and yong Cariceos, thou must see thy Daughter couidicid of treason, adulterie & murder? If I haue had some comfort by my Sonnes, lying now in the Hearse of honor, for maintenance of the Christian faith: doubtless this iniurie is so great and enormie, as no joy or comfort can now abide in me. Ah my louely Daughter Criana, whom I had god hope would bee the onely support of mine age, and for that cause sent to haue thy company: comonest thou now with such shame & monstrous report? Florendos, if heresofore against the Turke Gamezio thou didst me service, with great wrong hast thou now reuenged thy selfe, taking from me that good, which thou canst never restore againe. But let it suffice, that knowing the trouth of thy disordered dealing: such shall bee thy punishment, as shall remaine for perpetuall memoire. The Empresser likewise forsaking her Chamber, came and kneeled before the Emperour, desiring him to put Florendos to the first counsell, and he to be dispachid with diligence. At which words the cheller of olde Remicius augmented, hee amouiring.

Madame, for Gods sake gette you gone, for you are the onely cause of my dishonor: and then you beganne it, when you would not suffer the Prince Florendos of Macedon to marrie with our daughter, but gaue her to your Nephew perforce, and contrarie to her owen likynge. The Princes

# THE HISTORIE

seeing him so offended, intreated her to depart, persuading her, that the accusers of Griana were her cheefest enemies: and that might easily be gathered, by their proude and malvolent detractions, which happily would proue false, rather then truthe. For if they might heerein spede of their purpose, and their accusation passe for currant, the Princesse Armida should be disinherited, and themselves be the onely heires to the Kingdome. This was their principall drift, not any deuotion to reuenge their Uncle's death, as they in outward shew declared: and hereupon all opinions were sette aside vntill the next day, when the payso-  
ners arrived.

## CHAP. XXVII I.

How Florendos and Griana were brought to Constantinople, and there were appointed by the Emperours Counsell, to purge themselves of their accusation, by the Combate of two Knights, against theyr accusers Promptaleon and Oudin.



¶ **H**e Duke being arrived at Constantinople, immedately caused y<sup>e</sup> Queens Griana and Armida her Daughter, to be conducted to the Pallace, by many noble Lords and Gentlemen. When Griana saw she must needs goe before her Father, she began againe her wonted pittifull complaints: notwithstanding, she was so comforted by the Lords of Greece, by their solemn promise to defend her right, as she encouraged her selfe, and comming before her Father, fell on her knees,

## OF APLMER IN DOLIVA.

knees, and thus began. My gracious Lord and Father, in-  
constant Fortune euermore hath bene, and still will con-  
tinue, a most cruell enemie to them of highest calling: and  
no farther nedē I seeke for profe of my wordes, then the  
History of your last warres against the Turkes, and the  
present slander of mine enemie against mee. I cannot  
likewise forget, that twentie yeres and more are now ex-  
piced, since (to my great griefe) I was separated from you:  
but with much more exceeding heauines am I now return-  
ed, if by my misadventure you receiue any impeach, or  
I deserue to lose the name of your Daughter. Therefore  
my Lord, forgetting the name and office of a Father, let  
natuarall regard be exempted from you, and exercise on me  
tyrannous torments, with the greatest rigour that may be  
denised. Yet all too little in respect of my deserts, not for a  
ny offence in this matter, as God is my witness: but for  
the suspition of the common and vulgare people, more cre-  
duous of the faults of Princes and noble Ladies, then of  
their discreet and sober vertues. Nevertheless, receiuing  
death for a matter neuer committed, and with patience:  
despight of mine enemie, it will redound to my immortall  
hono<sup>r</sup>.

Upon these speches, the Princesse Armida making  
great reuerence to the Emperoz, and with the teares tric-  
king downe her cheeke, sayd. Dread Lord, my cheefest de-  
sires euermore haue bene to see your Maiestie: but so it  
falleth now out, that in steede of ioy and pleasure, it is with  
griefe, teares and tribulations. Yet gracious Lord, for the  
firſt request that euer I made to your highnesse, I beseech  
you to credit me, that my Mother hath committed no trea-  
son, or any dishonor to the deceased King my Father, nei-  
ther euer permitted any man enteraunce into her Cham-  
ber, but he whom now the question concerneth, and at that  
time, I with these other Ladies were present, and are cre-  
dible witnesses of the whole action. Such efficacy wrought  
her wordes in the Emperours minde, as he began to defie

## THE HISTORIE

the accusation, perswading himselfe that it was nothing but falsoode: and louingly taking the yong Princesse vp by the hand, addressed his speeches in this manner to the Queene.

Well hast thou sayre, that Fortune hath beene too contrary towards thee, for when my n hole hope remained in thee, and that the Crwne of mine Empire shold haue bene placed on thy head: then hast fallen into such wounding reproch, as both thou and I shall be for euer dishonored. By Lord, quoth Griana, vnder correction, and saving the reverence to your imperiall Maestie, never imagine the case any thing to your desaie: if you credite not myne enemies, or common report, from whence is engendred all vrtructh. This spake I not to excuse my death, which I know to be the refuge for the desolate, and end of all afflictions: but to declare mine owne innocencie, and that mine honor shall at length be found unspotted. But now censurer god Father, with what violence you enforced me to match with the King Tarisius: my hart beeing still against it, and the nearenesse of lineage betwene us forbidding it. Nor were you ignorant of my loue to the Prince Florendos, the most gentle Knight of Greece, & whose enely traualle hefher was to make mee his wife: all this will I not deny, nor can my hart permit to passe in silence. Yet notwithstanding, by your commandement I was constrainyd to forslake my best beloved, and take the man I was not borne to fancie. After I saw it must needs be so, acknowledging him my Lord and Husband, and my selfe his wife and Subject: neither in word or deede, nor so much as very thought, did I dispose my selfe to any disobedience, but liued in most loyall and honorable duty. Very true it is, that he scund Florendos talking with me: but I protest before Heauen, that it was with such chaff and medest regard, as the Sister might conserue with her Brother. And so little time our talke endured, as I had not y meane to answer the Prince, for the King comming in, and pro-  
voked

## OF A PLMER IN DOLIVA.

uoked with scandie or wicked iealousie, would haue slayne him, whereby such fortune fell out, as the King received what he would haue givien. Nor can Florendos be wrongfully blamed for comming to see me, in respect of the long time since our last company: beside, having not so forsaken his pylgrym weede, wherein hee traualled to the holy Lande, hecame to acquaint me with the meruitiles in his journey.

Se heere in breife the whole trueth of this Historie, and if the Kings Neophyes auouch otherwise, I say ( my Lord) they lie falsely. In which respect, as well to protect mine owne honour as the Princes, I humbly desire your Maestie, that our innocencie may be discibed by Combat: for which is my hope in a rightfull cause, as I shall find some knyght to fight for me. The Lords of the Empire were altogether of the same opinion, and instantly desired the Emperour, to graunt his Daughter her lawfull request: wherefore he auinwered, that he would take counsell thereon, and justice should be done her as it ought. Hereupon the Emperour went into his Chamber, and the Queene was brought to the Empresse her Mother: where the poyne Ladie was assaulted asch, for she was no soner entred the Chamber, but her Mother thus beganne. I know not Daughter how hardly thou hast bene councelled, that since the daie of thine espousall to the Prince Tarisius, who loued thee so deereley: thou hast continued such hatred against him, that at length thou art become the onely cause of his death.

Madame, quoth the Queene, you speake your pleasure: but (in regard of my reverence to you) I answer, that I never thought it. Wherefore I intreate you to forbear such peches, and if you consider all things well: your selfe will be found in greater fault then I. For contrary to my sollemne promise, which I had made to the Prince of Maledon, you compelled me to marrie with him: and if Florendos had the opportunitie, and in defence of his owne

## THE HISTORIE

person hath slaine him, ought you then to impute the crime to me? With these words the Empresse held her peace, and sat conferring with the yong Princesse Arimida: in aane while came the Queene of Peira, who had the Queene in charge, and conducted her to her Chamber, and aferwarde (by the Empressers commaundement) ha ihut Florendos into a strong prison.

The next day, Promptaleon and Oudin came to the Pallace, where with great and audacious impudence they came before the Empereur, saying. Why haue you not my Lord prouided the fire, to burne your Daughter and her adulterer Florendos? Host and faire, and answered the god Remicius, he not so hardy, I finde them not so faultie as your accusation delivereith: so no other harme was committed then talking together, and becaue Florendos was disgraced, is that a consequence, my daugther must die? So will I eucurre such infamous report, in putting such a Prince to death, without hearing how he can answer for himselfe: you therefore my Lord of Peira, geue fetch Florendos that he may answer to their propositions. The Duke obeyed his commaundement, and brought the Prince so spent with extreme gracie, because he had brought the Queene into such daunger: as hardly he could sustaine himselfe, but after he had with great humilitie prestreated himselfe before the Empereur, he began in this manner. Most mightie Lord and Empereur of Grece, meruaille not that with such heauines I com before you to aske: When in steede of doing yee service, according as my duty commandeth me, I bring you cause of offence and displeasure. Nevertheless, I reape my selfe by your benignitie and princely justice, wherin I must intreat you, to haue regard on the Queene your Daugtheris innocencie; for the fault that is comittid, if it deserve to be called a fault, was done without the Daugthers knowledge, so much as a thought of the matter on her part, before it happened. Moreover, there is none of so harsh iudgmet to reason but will con-

sider,

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

consider, what familiarity & friendship, doth passe between Princes and Ladies in occasions of honour. Which may serue to answer the cause of my comming to see the Queen, being thereto bound by duty and honest loue, wherewith in my yongeryeres I faithfully serued her. And this I did, without any iniurie to her honor, much lesse occasion of offence to the King: which haue would needes interpret in that sort, when with so great in discretion he came and as sailed me.

These are fables, quoth Promptaleon, for the conspiracie and treason betwene thee and the Queen is so manifest, as euerie one knowes it. And if the Empereur do not this day consummate yournes, both together in one fire: he offereth the greatest in justice that euer Prince did, and before the whole worlde wee will heereafter accuse him. Darest thou maintaine by Combat in fieldes, sayde Florendos, what thou with such brauerie affirmest in this Hall? That will I by mine honor, quoth Promptaleon, and let the Knight come that dare aduenture: on this condition, that if I be the conquerour, the Queen and thou may be burned as ye haue deserued, and the Princesse Arimida declared not legitimate, and so disinherited of the kingdome. Now hast thou revealed the villainie, said Florendos, and for the last condition doest thou follow the cause so earnestly rather then by any matter of trueth and equitie: but thou art deceived in thyne intent, and thy death (villaine) shall deliver assurance of her succession. So please my Lord the Empereur of his grace, to prolong the day of Combat till I haue recovered some health: my selfe alone, against thee and thy Brother, will proue ye false Traytors, and that maliciously ye haue accusid the Queen. The Empereur seeing the Prince so weake and sickly, and yet with so god courage willing to defende his Daughters wrong: refouled himselfe that shee was innocent. Remembred then his noble seruices in defence of his Empire, and how iniuriously he denied him his daughter: he was moued in

# THE HISTORIE

such sort as he could not refraine from teares, thinking for vengeaunce of that offence, that heauen had iustly permit-  
ted the death of Tarisius, wherefore beholding Florendos  
with pittifull lookes, pronounced the sentence in this man-  
ner. You Promptaleon and Oudin, Nephewes to our de-  
ceased dñe and beloued sonne the King of Hungaria, shall  
maintaine your wozdes in open fiede, against two such  
knights, as my Daughter and the Prince Florendos can  
deliver on their behalfe, and that within twelue daies af-  
ter this instant. One of which the Prince himselfe halve,  
if he be not furnished with another to his liking: always  
provided, that the vanquished shall be declared Traytors,  
and attainted of the crime of Leze Maiestatis, and so puni-  
shed according to the exigence of the case. The two Bre-  
thren acceped these conditions, beeing so farre overcome  
with their owne pride, as they reputed themselues y most  
valiant Knights of the world. Florendos seeing himselfe  
so weake of body, would gladly haue demanded a longer  
day: but the sentence beeing given, the Emperour like-  
wise promising to appoint another knight in his stead, he  
was contented, and committing all to the Emperors plea-  
sure, was carried backe againe to prison in such penitue-  
nes, as he was iudged not able to liue till the Combat day.  
The Duene likewise was kept in sure garde, despoyling  
how she shold finde a knight, that would aduenture on  
her behalfe in fight: because the strength and powesse of the  
Challengers was so renowned. Leaving thus these two  
louers in doubts and feares: let vs returne where we left  
before, to noble Palmerin, that he may bring them some  
better confort.

CHAP.

# OF PALMRIN D'OLIVA.

## CHAP. XXVIII.

¶ Howe Palmerin hauing stayed with his Lady fiue  
dayes, in so great pleasure as heart could desire, sea-  
ring to bee discouerd to the Emperour: tooke his  
leauue of her, promising to beginne the searche of  
Trineus and Ptolome,



Olynarda having her friende in her  
custodie, would not willingly presume  
so farre vpon her owne selfe, or the tru-  
thy faithfullnesse of her Ladys, as that  
shee would permit or suffer him to stay  
there in the Day time: and doubting  
likewise least his coming in the Night  
should be espyed, committed the whole  
matter in especiall charge to Bryonella, as they performed  
their joyes without any impeachment. During these de-  
lights and Amozens contentments, which these timorous  
Louers passed together, the Prince among other famili-  
iar talkes heareld to her friend, how the King of Fraunce  
sent his Embassadours to the Emperour, to treate on the  
Marryage betweene her and his Eldest Sonne, as also her  
Brother Trineus, with his Daughter Lucemania. And  
how impotunate the Emperour had bene with her, discou-  
ring what Honour and Felicitie it shold be vnto her selfe to  
Duene of so great a Kingdome as Fraunce is. And trist  
me my Lord(qd. shee) I know my Parents are so affected  
to this Alliance, as if my Brother Trineus were come, I  
know no meane whereby to excuse my selfe. Alas Madam,  
(quoth Palmerin) heerein you may consider, if the Emp-  
erour by violent force constraine you hereto: what continu-  
all griefe it will be to your Servant Palmerin: what tor-  
ments

## THE HISTORIE

ments? What tyrannous paines of straunge conceite, may equall themelues with the very least of my Passions: nor can I any way bee able to endure them. The doubtfull Impression, as hee fell in a swoune betweene his Ladys armes, shewes embracing him with such ardent affection, as the soule of the pore tormented Louer, feeling with what equall desire his Ladie requited him, receyued fresh strength into his languishing bodie, and being come to his former estate, the Princesse said. Alas my Lord, at the time I was possest to be in assurance with you, and to thinke on no imaginacions, but new pleasures and delights: forgetting the regarde you haue long continued, in expectation of the wylled fortunate houre, wyl yee be now the cause of my death? Think you, that if Loue be so violent on your behalfe, it exceedeth not a thousand times more in mee? Believe me: You men make your vauntes of the great Passions, feares, and doubts you haue to offend you: Ladys, whom to serue loyallie you haue especially chosen: but in no wise may these oppresions be compared to ours. Whereto haue among ye, who hath expermented, how great the paine of dishonour is, and can couer his extreame Loue with diffumilation? What a death is it to constraine violence against it selfe? to containe the piercing Eye, and subdue an heart so affectionate, as bringeth death to the rest of the bodie, if she shewe not some parte of her desire, by looks (the faithfull and secrete Messengers) to him she hath chosen, loueth, and wylleth? The torment of the willikelwise, when one dare not come in presence, nor beholde her favoured, to languish, and yet may seke no meanes of helpe: All these insupperable miseries wch pore Ladys must endure, being given by nature, or forced for a custome. Wherefore my Lord, present not me with your Passions, considering each thing as it ought, they may not be compared to the least of mine: for Loue who hath ouer-maistred me, reigrieth with such absolute Authoritie, as I must sooner dye, then offer you any wrong,

## OF PALMER IN DOLIVA.

wrong, seeing that as my Lord and Husband I haue elected you, and bestowed these fawnes on you which are most dearest, to wyl, willing obediencie, and that (ther which) no thing is more precios. Haeling then made you soueraigne of my selfe, the Prince of Fraunce cannot eroy an other mans right. And if my Father vsing his authoritie, shall enforce me, although it be grieuous to mee, I will tell him what hath happened, and no menaces whatsoever shall alter my opinion.

Palmerin seeing his Ladie so firme and loyall, was not a little ioyfull, thus answering. Doubtlesse my deere and most gracious Mistresse, hetherto I durst presume on my selfe, that by my manefolde loyall seruices, I shold one day deliuer recompence, for some part of the Honours you haue done me: but now may I well perceyue, that abounding in your graces, you deprive mee of all meanes to acknowledge your Mountie, which commonly men desire to shewe by their obediencie: nor shall I be able to deserue the inestimable value, contained in the simplest word of your last mosthonorable Promise.

Now the Princesse discerning by the Windowe, that Aurora Phœbus his sayre Porter, began to lette forth the Morning light, and prouide way for his Maisters journey: withdrawe herselue to her Chamber, and quickly layde her downe by Bryonella, whc the better to hide her Ladys affaires, disengaged that she had a feuer Quotidian, by whch meane she compassed to keepe her Chamber, and enterained Palmerin as her selfe desired. All this while Vianello brought newes from the Prince Olorico, whc was so desirous to see the Princesse againe: as hee vowed not to depart the Cittie, before hee accomplished what he intended.

Palmerin whc loued him as his Brother, was in great doubt, how he shold safely bring it to passe: vntill Bryonella, whose denises were cheare readiest, sayde. My Lord the man beeing no way able to hurt yee, and of the lesse importance neede you make the matter: will you see how

## THE HISTORIE

we will a little iuggle with the Emperour: Let it be saide, that the Prince is Cozin to Vrbanillo, and the cause of his comming into this Countrey, was to seeke you: then because hee understandes howe my Ladie loues the Dwarffe, his Maestie (without anie doubt) will suffer the two Cwyls to take theyz leaue of her: Will not this deuise then shadow his seeing the Princesse? Without question (quoth Palmerin) I shold never haue inuented such a subtilltie, but then as you haue determined: But with great politicie, that the Emperour misdoubt nothing, for if he discouers, we are shamed for euer. Refere it to me (said Brionella,) if I describe not theyz kindred cunningly, Neuer believe that a Romanian inuent a Lye without studie. Brionella conserning with the Dwarffe, layde downe the Plat forme in such order, as the next day the Prince came before the Emperour: when Vrbanillo on his knee desired leaue, that he might depart with his Cozin there present, to seeke his Maister, in whose searche he would trauell, till he heard certainly of his life or death.

Ah Vrbanillo (quoth the Emperour) in such a god lucky houre mayest thou go, as to finde both him and my Sonne Tryneus, God leaue hast thou to goe when thou wilt. But when I beholde you both aduisedly, very hardlye doe you see me to be Cowitzs: for if there be any Allyaunce betwene you, it never came by the Fathers side: and if it bee by the Mother, the one was then married in Barbarie, and the other in Scotland. Why my Lord (quoth the Dwarffe) rather had I dye then tell an untruth before your Highnesse: and with such protestations did the Dwarffe sooth his tale, as they of greatest doubt gaue credite to him. Hereupon, the Emperour commanede them to goe take theyz leaue of his Daughter, willing her to write to her Brother. Having obtained what they desired, they stayed not long in returning thens: but went presently to the Princesse Chambre, where she (aduertised of their comming) sayd for them. Honourable salutations on eache side delivered, a Chayre was

## OF PALMERIN DOLIVA.

was brought for the Prince, and he sitting downe by Poly-narda, she thus beganne. Albeit my Lord I am very loath to forgoe my Servant: yet haing founde him so honest, and for the god will I wish to all his knytes, especially you, who houe Enterprised to seeke his Maister and my Brother, I am the better contented to part with him.

If the Prince commanede her Beautie, when being in Embuscado he saw her passe by: What may we imagine of his opinion nowe? For beholding her, the comsorte of her long absent friende, had called all her Beauties together, enriched with so manie sweete and amiable graces: as hee could not repute her of humane lineage, but rather some Angel descended from Heauen, to make the glorie of Palmerin more ample, wherupon to deceiu the Ladies being present, returned this answer. Undoubtedly Madame, if I and all mine had spent our soules in your seruice, were shcild holde our selues sufficiently recompenced, with the princely fauor you affordre our Cozin, which he is no way able to deserue. And perswade your selfe faire Princesse, that if hee be your obdient Servant, my selfe am no lesse, in all things that your Excellencie shall please to commannde me: So that if there were not urgent occasions to excuse my departure, it would be my onely content to remaine at your disposition. Yet such is my hope, that this griesse shall be chaunged into ioye by a speedy returne, when wee shall bring the Prince Tryneus and our noble Maister Palmerin. The sooner, the better welcome will they be (quoth the Princesse) for there in consisteth my chiefeest comfort. And after many other speches betwene them, she gaue him many rich gifts, wherewith he helde himselfe so honoured, as if he had gayned the whole Monarchie of Asia: So kylling her hand, the Prince with his new Cozin, returned to his Lodging. Now was it concluded betwene Palmerin and the Princesse, because the Empresse on the morrow would come to see her daughter, that hee shold depart the same way he came: Wherefore the houre beeing come that hee shold passe the Wall,

Poly-

## THE HISTORIE

Polyinarda thus spake. Now is the time (my Lorde) that you must leue me, and I be forced to consent, because there is no remedie: but perswade your selfe, that with this parting beginnes my sorowes. Yet if I knewe where you trauelled, my grieses would be the lesse, and my life prolon- ged with better hope: but beeing uncertaine of your way, and knowing what misfortunes and daungerous perilles, my encounter you in vnknowne Countreys, I know not how I shall dissemble my torment. Notwithstanding, sweete Friend, if your stay be long, send Vrbanoillo againe, to comfort poore Bryonella and my selfe: For losyngh the onely maintenance of our languishing lynes, impossible is it but our Spixites will scorne to forsake theye miserable ha- bitations.

For Gods sake Madame (quoth Palmerin) never talke of such a separation, for the remembraunce thereof, is death to mee: and it so much offendeth me to see you in this per- turbation, as I lose both courage and hope of well doing. Continue then the humour you haue done since my com- ming, that I beholding you pleasaunt, may be comforted thereby, during the searche of your Brother, which I hope wilbe both short and sudden. Otherwise, before the Earth be ready for me, I shall be enforced to take vpp my endlesse Hostage. So after many sweete kisses, and gracious lo- uing Courtesies passed betwix them, they tooke their leaue of eache other, with such effusion of Teares, as the very in- ward soule beworred theye departing. So with his Lad- ders of Cordis, he got ouer the Wallagaine, and came to the Lodging where he left Olorico: then Arming them- selves, they rode away in great hast, because they feared to be knowne by any.

CHAP.

## OF PALMRIN D'OLIVA.

### CHAP. XXIX.

¶ How after Palmerin was departed from his Lady, there appeared to hir one of the Fayties of the Mountaine Artifaria, who declared to him part of his Fortunes following. And of a Combat which hee and Olorico had against tenne Knights.



Neat hast in theye Journey made these two knyghtes, so that in shorte time they came to the Kingdome of Hunga- ria, where passing through a great For- rest, they ascended a high Mountaine, at what time the Ayre being calme and cleare, was vpp a sudden obscured with many darksome Cloves, and such out- raggerous Wyldes, as they were glad to shrowde themselves vnder certayne Pine Trees neare at hand.

Hauing there sheltred themselves a while, they behelde a very thicke Myste about a Fyre Tree, and hearde with- all a very terrible Thunder: and the Fogge somewhat clearing, they beheld a comely Lady vnder the Tree, where- at they were stroke into no little admiration, yet Palme- rin being desirous to vnderstand the effecte of this Aduer- ture, made towards the Tree, when the Lady beganne in this manner to him.

Palmerin d'Oliva, maruell not at this Accident which hath happened onely for thy sake and profite. Heretofore I came to thee on another Mountaine, where I and my Sisters healed the Wounds thou didst receiue by the Hex- pent. At this tyme I am come to thee, to wylsh the follow- thy

## THE HISTORIE

thy journey begunne : Assuring thet that they whom thou seekest , are yet living, and in the custodie of Turkes and Infidels: but before thou canst finde them, thou shalt be deliuered from death by him thou hatest most. And after that thou hast found this fauour by him, hee shall ayde thee in recovering from Palson and death, thy best and dearest friends: and so I leaue thee to thy happy successe. Then suddenly vanished the Woman away, and could not afterwards be seene againe, leaving Palmerin very pensive for what hee had heade, which hee esteemed to be true, because hetherto he had found no lesse, all that the Systers said to him on the Mountaine Arctaria.

Returning to his compaニー, Olorico demanded what Goddesse had talked with him, and what had made him ou a sudden so chearfull? Trust me my Noble Friende (quoth he) the matter is such, as for all the Golde in the worlde, I would not but haue knowne, which Vbanillo can better declare vnto you, moare then I am able: But because wee would make no more straunge Aduentures in this Mountaine, let vs spedily set sywards on our Journey.

All that day they rode without any occasion to stay them, and the next day likewise, till towards the Euening, when they espyed ten Knights before them, the foremost of them leading a Ladie, who made very grieuous and pittifull Lazimations: whereupon Palmerin claspred his Helmet, desiringe Olorico to do the like, Because (quoth hee) for any thing I see, we shall haue paltine with some danger. The Prince tolde as his friend requested him, and when the Ladie was come somewhat moare neare them, shee stamed her speches to them in this maner. Gentle Knights, for Gods sake helpe me, for these Traitors haue forcibly brought me herher: and to compasse their villainous intent, they haue murthered my Husband, and two of my Brethren. Palmerin without answering one worde, approached to him that ledde her, and gaue him such a rap on the pate, with a Hace that he carped at his Saddle bow, as with the stroke he fell

dead

## OF A PLMERI ND'OLIVA.

dead to the earth : making him sure not to escape, during the time that he dealt with the other. Olorico had taken his careite against an other of them, whom he encountered so puissantly, as the Knight breaking his Lrance, Olorico thrust his quite through his body: whereof Palmerin being glad, said.

To the rest noble Prince, for we are sure two of them can do vs no harme. With such courage did these Gallants besturre themselves, as in lese space then halfe an houre, sixe more of them were slaine: for Palmerin never gaue stroke, but either he brake an arme, head or neck. The two which were left, seeing the hard fortune of their fellowes, would abide no further daunger, but tooke themselves to flight with all the spide they coulde. When the Ladie saw her selfe deliuered of her enemies, she came and humbled her selfe at Palmerins feare, earnestly desiring him not to leaue her, but that it would please him to conuey her to her Castell neare at hande: whereupon Vbanillo alighting, holpe her to mount on one of the vanquished Knights horses.

By the waie she rehearsed, how he that led her, had of long time loued her, but because he was proude and of euill conditions, her Father could not like of the match: but gaue her to a yong Gentleman his neighbour, who was a very vertuous and worthy minded Knight. This seemed displeasing to him that was refused, so that he brought nine of his kindred and friendes with him, and hid themselves in ambush neare my Fathers Cattle, wherto I haue intrusted you to conduct me. They laying there thus unknowinge to any all the night, and the most part of this day, tell my Husband, two of my Brethren and my selfe, toke horse, intending to goe hunt at the Riuers side, they seeing vs far enough from any reskew, violently set on vs, kilde my Husband and Brethren, and brought me away with them, the Traitor himselfe saying, that after he had cauished me of mine honor, he woulde commit me to the like drage

L

by

## THE HISTORIE

by the Comes of his Stable, who when they had satisfied their villainous wiles, should put mee to cruell and shamefull death.

Belame me Madame, quoth Olorico, you are happily deliuere from such violence, and I thinkie if all such like Ruffians were so servid as they are, Ladies might passe through the Countrey safely and without danger. By this time they were come to the Castell, where (because it was night) the Bridge was drawne: but when y guard heard that the Ladie was come, it was presently let downe, and one of them ranne to the Ladies Mother, who fearing she had lost her Daughter, was now greatly comforted, especially when she understood, that they which had slaine her Comes, were likewise kilde themselves: and certainly both the Mother and the Daughter reputed themselves so beholding to the Knights, as they knew not in what sort to entertaine them, wherby they might expresse their content.

Being very honorably vsed by these Ladies, after supper they were conducted to their Chamber, where they reposeid themselves that night: and the next morning came to take their leaue of the Ladies, to the no little griefe both of the one and the other. All that day they traualled without any aduenture, till at length they came to a godly fountaine, where they alighted, to let their horses pasture awhile: and having refreshed themselves with certaine victualles, that Vrbanillo had provided for them, Palmerin laid him downe and slept, and Vrbanillo by him, finding themselves somewhat wearie with riding all the day. Olorico being a yong Prince, and desirous to see any strange occasion: walked about into divers places, regarding here and there the scituacion of the Countrey, the Mountains and golde Castelles builded vpon them. He was no sooner departed, but there arived fine Armed Knights, two of them being they that escaped, when Palmerin so nobly deuoted the Ladie, they having that night past ledged at his

Fathers

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

Fathers house who ledde the Ladie, and which Palmerin first kilde with his Hace. And thinking now to reuenge themselves, had brought thre of his Cozins in their company, and watched at the Ladies Castell the coming forth of the Princes: but their stomacks would not serue them to meddle with them there, wherfore they followed them all that day, till they behelde them seperated as you haue heard.

When they saw that Palmerin slept, one of them (fearing least the noise of the Horses shoulde awake him) alighted, and drawing his Sword, came therewith to haue slaine him: but by good fortune there arived a Knight, who had bene hunting there about all that day, and he cryed to him with his Sword drawne. Ah villaine, kill not the man that sleepes. The Traytour seeing this new come Knight so brayne a person, begann to be afraid, and therfore slept backe againe a little, at that time Palmerin, by y Knights cri, awaked: and seeing him so neare that thought to gaine the mortall stroke, was greatly amazed, suddenly drawing his Sword to defende himselfe, not hauing the leasure to put on his Helmet, by which occasion he received a small wound vpon his heade. The Knight seeing the cowardly villainie of them that assailed Palmerin altogether, bestirred himselfe so worthily among them, as he that gaue the wound, died soone after vnder his Sword. Whereupon the fourre Knights desirid themselves, two against Palmerin, and two against him, who defended themselves so worthily, and had brought their enemies into such danger, as they two that before escaped, seeing to what danger the fight would extind, gaue the spurres to their horses, and galloped away so fast as the horse could pace. By this time y Prince Olorico heard the Dwarkes clamour, beeing greatly affraide of his Maisters deaht: came running thither with all speede, when the Knight that had sau'd Palmerins life, said.

Poble Knight, well may you gaine thankes to Heauen,

## THE HISTORIE

in that your enemies, who thought to kill you sleeping, are  
seylen: for if God had not permitted my curse this late,  
without all doubt you had lost your life. But since it hath  
bene my god happe to prevent your onerous fortune, I  
will advise yee hereafter to beware of like hazard: and  
may it please you to accompany me to a Castel within two  
miles distance, your entertainment shall be good, and your  
woundes cured by a Ladie verie expert in Chirurgerie. I  
accept your offer gentle Sir, quoth Palmerin, with right  
god will, as well to haue your friendly company, as to  
thalde you from any other such like villainies, who happily  
may seeke your harine for this noble fauour. So they rode  
on altogether, Palmerin remembraunce the wordes of the  
Faerie Ladie, and could not imagine who the Knight shuld  
be, that had so honorably preserued his life: this made him  
more to iernauie, that he shuld be his enemie, whom (to  
his remembraunce) he had never seen in any place be-  
fore.

To put him from these cogitations, Olorico ashamed  
of his absence in such a nadfull time, came to Palmerin  
with these wordes. Certes my noble friende, I am hence-  
forth unworthy to beare Armes, seeing that in such dan-  
ger I left your company: unhappy that I am, might not  
former experience teach mee, what suddaine aduentures  
do often happen to Knights errant: what punishment may  
be sufficient for my heinous offence: Leauie such speeches  
to Women, quoth Palmerin, for if we knew before what  
would happen afterward, never shold we fall into any in-  
conuenience: but it is sufficient that we haue so well esca-  
ped, and let God haue the glorie for so happy deliuerance.  
By this time they were come to the Castell, and entring  
the bale Court, the Seruaunts came to take their Horses  
to the stable: meane while the Knight himselfe went to  
aduertise y Lady, of the other Knights arival, saying, Faire  
Leonarda, I pray you vouchsafe the best honor and enter-  
tainment you can devise, to two Gentlemen I haue here  
brought

## OF PALMRIN D'OLIVA.

brought with me: for I imagine by theyr rich Armes and  
Courteous behauiour, that eyther they are Princes or distin-  
cted of very honourable Parentage. Trust me my Lord, (quoth shee) for your sake I endeuour my selfe to welcome  
them as they ought.

And comming into the Hall to salute them, after many  
courtesies deliuered on eyther side, the Lady King Palmerins  
Armour besmeared with blood, by reason of the wound  
he recoured on his head, saide. I feare my Lord you are ver-  
y sore hurt: therfore the sooner it be seene too, the better  
eale you shall finde, Herebypon her selfe helpe to vnaime  
him, and afterward she brought him into a godly Chamber,  
where when she had stanched his bleeding, and bound vppe  
the Wound, he was laide in a maruellous Rich Bedde  
prouided for him, she promising within ten dayes and lesse  
to restoore him so well, as he shold at pleasure trauell with-  
out any danger.

For this kindnesse Palmerin returned her manifolde  
thankes, and because he might the better rest without distur-  
bance, shee caused every one to departe the Chamber, her  
selfe likewise courteously bidding him godly night. Palmerin  
being alone, looked round about the Chamber, to see if  
by any Armes or devise, he might know the Knight that so  
happily deliuered him: At length, hard by his Bed side, hee  
espied the Shield of Fryssell, with the Sunne painted there-  
in, which hee well remembred to be his Devise, whome for  
Polynardes loue he hated, according as you haue heard in  
the former part of this History, whiche when he behelde, the  
teares trickling down his cheeks, he thus began to himselfe.  
I perceue that the Lady which saluted me on the mountain  
is of excellent knowledge: For though the Knight bee my  
chiefest enemy, yet for the honorable kindnesse he hath this  
day shewed me: I will forget all former iniuries, and loue  
him henceforth as hee were my Brother, and what I could  
never compasse by rigour and force of Armes, I will nowe  
seeke to conquer by loue and courtesie. While he continued

## THE HISTORIE

These priuat speeches, Fry soll opened the Chamber dore, and entred to bid Sy: Palmerin good night: who not a lit-  
tle glad of his commynge, sayde

I pray you Sir Knight, by the honorable loue you beare to Chivalrie: to tell me your name, and if heretofore you were never in the Realme of Englād. My name, quoth the Knight, which hetherto I never hid from any man, is Fry soll, and two yeres I remained in the Realme you speake of, with the Duke of Gaule in his Court. You remember then a Knight, sayde Palmerin, with whom in lesse space then twelue daies together, you had two severall Combats. Very true, quoth Fry soll, and some good reason I haue to remember it, for the fight on my behalfe was so daungerous, as but by the fauour of a Lady and a Squire, I never had escaped with life. Now hast thou in thy custo-  
die, sayde Palmerin, the man that did this such wronge, no more an enemie, but for ever thy bowed, true and trutchie Friend: and by the order I haue received, there is no man this day living, that shall withdraw me from thy friend-  
ship, because thou better deuernest it then any Knight in the world.

And hath by my meanes, quoth Fry soll, the onely flower of Chivalrie bene deliuered from death: and the resolute hattred betweene vs, united now with loue more then brotherlike: in an happy houre went I on hunting this day, and Fortune could never honor me with more desired successe. For confirmation of this new alliance, he ranne and called Leonarda, Olorico and the rest, and before them all killed Palmerin in the Wedde, to seale the perpetuall league of amitie betweene them. Then was recounted their aduentures and hatred past, wherat every one great-  
ly mercuaied, seeing this sudaine change to such surpassing loue.

Fry soll also rehearsed, how after the raps of Agriola, the Duke Grenus his Lord went to the Court, wher he aduised the King to pursue his Daughter, or to sende him in

## OF PALMRIN D'OLIVA.

in search of her: whereto hee could not any way perswade the King. Doreouer, how his Majestie would haue kept him still in his seruice, whereto he might not graunt, for the promise he made the Ladie that came thither, whom after he had brought to her Castell: hee traualled by the Emperour of Allemaigne Court, where he certainly vn-  
sterstood, that Tryneus and Agriola were not as yet there arrived, nor could any newes bee hearde what became of them.

Yet during all these speeches, he concealed all his own noble deedes of Chivalry in England, Allemaigne & other places, so vertuous and devonaire was this gentle Knight, courting in nothing to extol himself. He forgot not likewise to report, how that Lady cured him of a long and greevous disease: for which hee had so giuen himselfe to her seruice, as for euer he vowed himselfe her Knight. Palmerin not a little contented with this discourse, sayd. I thinke the king of England would not send his Shippes after his Daugh-  
ter, remembryng her happines to come, bee now the es-  
poused Wife to Lord Tryneus, and the honor thereof had bene already seene, but that the tempest of the sea was too much their enemie. Then declared hee their troublesome time on the Sea, in what manner he lost them, and how he now traualled to finde them againe. Since Fortune hath so appoynted ( quoth Fry soll ) that this loue and friendship should be begunne betweene vs, to continue the same I will beare ye company, and will not for sake you till yee haue found them, may it like you to accept me for your co-  
panion.

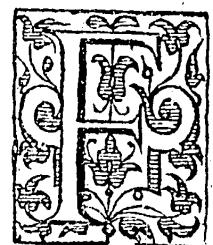
If it like me, quoth Palmerin, you neede not doubt thereof, and rather you then any man that I knew: for which noble kindnes, I thinke my selfe most fortunate. In this manner beganne the concorde betweene Palmerin and Fry soll, which continued with vertuous and perseuerant constancie, as in the Chapters following you shal perceiue. Thus soiourned these Knights there louingly together, till

## THE HISTORIE

Palmerin being recovered, and able to beare Armes: they departed thence, leaving the pwo Lady Leonarda in great heauiness, because her Friend Fry soll left her so soone.

## CHAP. XXX.

¶ How Palmerin, the Prince Olorico, and Frisoll, went to Buda, thinking to finde the Court there, where being arriued, they hearde Newes howe the Prince Florendos was taken: whome they went to succour with all diligence at Constantinople.



Rysoll, because hee woulde not haue his Ladie Leonarda too much discontented, made promise of his speedy returne to her: Which wordes somewhat pleasing her, hee departed with his two new Friends, and such quicke haaste they made in theyr Journey, as

within six dayes after, they arriued at Buda. There were they aduised of the Kings death, whereof the Prince of Macedon was accused, and the Dueane likewise: For which cause they were as Pysoners conveyed to her Fathers Court, to the Cittie of Constantinople.

At these tydings Palmerin was very displeasant, wherefore he said to his Companions. Believe me good Friends, My heart will never be at quiet, till I haue bene before the Emperour, who ought to be an indifferent Judge to Florendos, and he is the onely man of the worlde, to whome most gladly I would do any seruice: therefore let vs make haaste to Constantinople, to the end we may succour him, if he stand in any need of our aide. I am ready (quoth Frysol)

and

## OF APLMERIC NDOLIVA.

and let vs set forwarde when you please. Herewith he remembred his father, to whom he Crowne by right appertained, if Carisius deceased without any heire; where to (by this meane) he might attaine right swere. Perswading himselfe with assurance hereof, hee w<sup>t</sup>is now more easyness to be gone, and hastened his companions in such sort, as they came to Constantinople, two daies before the appointed time for the Combat. As they entred the City, they met a Knight riding on hunting, whom after they had saluted, Palmerin questioned withall, if hee knew any thing of the Prince Florendos his misfortune, & what the Emperour intended to do with him. Sir, quoth the knight, the Emperour hath resolutely set downe, that the Prince and his daughter shall receiu<sup>e</sup> their triall by Combat against the two Nephewes to the deceased King: and furnished they must be of their Champions, before the limited time of ten daies be expir'd, and nothing else as yet is done to my knowledge. I thank you good Sir, quoth Palmerin, it is happy the m<sup>t</sup>ter is no further forward. So leaving the Knight, they prauanted mercly into the Cittie, and because it was too soone to take vp their lodging, they rode to the Pallace, to know at full the certainty of the m<sup>t</sup>ter: thus being al Armed, except their Helmets, which their Squires carried after them, they made a lesnely shew as they rode, in that they were all three of one stature, and very beautiful young Princes, they were especially noted, and followed by many Knights and Gentleman, who imagined such persons went to the pallace for other m<sup>t</sup>ters then Courts by dancing.

These three companions being entred the great Hall, which was hanged round about with blacke veluet, in signe of mourning, they maruelled what might bee the occasion thereof: wherefore Palmerin falling on his knee before the Emperour, and having humbly kissed his hand, thus spake. O most renowned Monarch of the worlde, my Friends here and my selfe, within these few daies, as

we

## THE HISTORIE

wee trauelled through the Realme of Hungaria, were aduertized that you keepe in Prison the Prince of Macedon, whom (so please your Maiestie to bouchsafe) I would gladly see, in respect that hee is my Lord, as for the desire I haue to deale in the Combatte appoynted, if it like him to make choyse of me.

The Emperor perceyuing Palmerin so faire, modest, and courageous, beganne with himselfe to conceyue well of him: and imagined that his Sonne Caniano was againe reviued, so neare did hee resemble him in countenance, stature, and all proportions of his bodie, wherefore hee returned him this answr. It shall not in ought displease mee, my friende, to let you see him, to the ende you may conceiue no suspition of iniustice. So calling a Gentleman Usher, commanded him to conduct the Knight to the Tower wher the Prince Florendos was: afterwards enquiring of the Prince Olorico and Fryfoll, what the Knight was that so hardily did enterpris the Combatte. Dread Lord, (quoth Fryfoll) he is called Palmerin d'Oliua, a Knight (in my Judgment) of the very highest qualitie in the Worlde. Then hee and the Prince Olorico, rehearsed the prowesse and deedes of Chivaltrie by him accomplished in Fraunce, England, Allemaigne, Bohemia, and Turkie: which being heard by a Bohemian Knight present, he came to Fryfoll, saying.

I pray you Syr, is this that Palmerin who killd the Serpent on the Mountain Artifaria, and brought the wafer from the Fountaine, which healed the good King Pyrameon, Father to Florendos? It is he Sir (qd. Fryfoll) and no other. Then dare I say, gracious Lord (quoth the Knight) that you hauesene the most valiant and vertuous Gentleman, that euer came in Thrace. Heereupon he discovered the noble victory hee obtained in Bohemia, against the two Gyants Dormaco and Mordano, whom hee slew before his worthy Coronate on the behalfe of Dyardo, Comptegermaine to the King and sayre Cardonya: against the

Com-

## OF A PLMERI NDOLIVA.

County of Ormecke, and his Cozins, in the Company of Prince Adrian and Ptolome. Hereat were all the Princes and Knights present amazed, so that the Emperor himselfe, saide:

Well may Florendos nowe Aduenture the tryall of his cause, having the onely Champion of the Worlde on his side: and in this maner they deuised of him, till his retorne from the Prison againe. Palmerin entring the Tower, Florendos was assayled, because no person was wot to come him: but chiesely when hee slew him on his knes to him, vsing these speches. Alas my Lord Florendos, how grieuous to me is your imprisonment: in unhappy tyme did you know him, that hath caused you to bee so ill intreated. I pray you my Lord comfort your selfe, and take courage: For heere you may beholde your Seruaunt Palmerin, who wil be hewed in a thousand pieces, but he will deliuer you from this miserie. Florendos, whose eyes and face were greatly swolne with incessant weeping, onely with the sorow hee conceyued for his Ladie, knowing him to be the same man indeede: was so exceeding ioyfull, as infinite embracings and kissings, woulde not serue to bewray his comfort, for such gracious welcomes, reverence, and courtesie hee bled, as Palmerin (hathfull to be enterained with such honour) saide.

Unseemly is it my Lord, that you should thus much abase your selfe to me: For (vnder correction) it ill agrees that the Master shoulde honour the Seruaunt. The poore Prince could not but still holde him in his armes, and with teares and maruellous affection, thus answered. Ah Palmerin, mine onely hope and comfort in trouble, where haue thou bene? What fortune hath kept thee so long from mee? My deare friende, howe maney yrelome thoughts haue I endured, expecting comming: so that when I sawe thou didst not retorne, and I coulde no way haere what was become of thee: the carelesse conceit of thy absence had neeraine ale. Then carelesse what became of my selfe, benn

dep

## THE HISTORIE

deprived of my loue and honor of my life, I am fallen into these miseries farre exceeding death: which Fortune I see hath permitted, because I am perswaded, that thou must deliver me from all mishappes, and by thee shall I attaine my cheapest desires. Ah happie and fortunate helver, well worthy for ever to be celebrated with triumphes, finding that the onely cause of my god, whom long since I feared was consorted with the dead: but seeing thou art now so happily come, acquaint mee with the fortunes that staid thee thus long, for very desirous am I to know them. Palmerin was so grieved to see him in such weake and fidelie estate, as he could hardly make any answere, yet stirring with himselfe said.

My noble Lord, the time requireth now other occasions, hereafter shall I tell you the whole discourse. Graunt me, I beseech you, without further intreating, that I may enter the Combat in your name, against one of those Traitors, who haue accused you: for such is my hope in God, that I shall speede luckily, and bring him to the end such a villaine deserve. With all my heart, quoth the Prince, I am contented, assuring my successe so well in your vertues, as if five hundred of my Knights did enter the field for me. And to the ende, that without feare or doubt you may take my cause in hand, I sweare to you by the living God, that since Tarisius espoused Griana, I never saw her, till when the King cayne and found me with her: which was so shoxt a time, as she had not the leysure to make me any answere. True it is that I kild the King: but how? I did it in respect he was mine enemy, and abused my Lady and lawfull wife. What though they were espoused together? the mariage was not to be allowed, in that it was done against her will: she being (as I haue laid) my wife, by sollemne speeches before God maried to me. It suffiseth, said Palmerin, I haue enough. You shall likewise understand my Lord, that I haue brought with me another Knight, who will gladly aduenture the Combat on the Queenes behalf,

halfe,

## OF PALMRIN D'OLIVA.

halfe, and such a one hee is, as that the other accuser will scant dare to stand against him: Wherefore let me intreate you to comforte your selfe, expecting our happie and fortunate successe.

Florendes falling on his knee, gave thanks to Heaven for this luckie event, and haing an indifferent while conferred together, after Palmerin had aduertised Frenato of his Sonne Prolomes health, and that in short time hee had god hope to finde him, hee returned to the Emperour, to whom making great reverence, he saide. Now my gracious Lord, I come to understand your answer. I pray you Sir Knight (quod the Emperour) holde mee excused, if I haue not welcommned you, as your Pabilitie, Bonaitez, and high Chivalry deserueth: but after the Combat is ended, which for my part I graunt yee, what haſt wanted now shall bee supplied, so that your selfe shall rest contented. I thanke your Majestie for this extraordinary fauour, said Palmerin, and seeing the Prince haſt committed his cause to my Fortune: I beseech you send for the Kings nephewes, that the appointed day may not be preuented by any further delays. And if the Queene your Daughter bee not prouided of a Champion, this Knight (pointing to Fryfoll) my boyled friende and Companion, shall undertake her cause, in that he came hither for no other busynesse: and such god expe-rience haue I made of his Thalour and hardynesse, as if by Knightly Chivalrie her right may be deuided: assure your selfe my Lord, this is the man. I thinke (saw the Emperour) he is not as yet determined of any one, albeit full many haue made offer of themselves: and for we will expect no furler, this Knight shall be preferred before all that come. I humbly thanke your Majestie for this fauour, (answering Fryfoll) yet would I be loathe to presume too faire, before I understand the Queenes pleasure. The Emperour caused him to be conducted to the Queenes Chamber, and his two Companions with him, who desired to see the Ladies: where being entred, Fryfoll humbly upon his knee, began

in

## THE HISTORIE

in this manner. Right noble and excellent Quene, so farre throughout Christendome, is spred the reporte of your rare vertues and integrity of life, especially your Innocencie in the crime wherewith you are accused: as from farre Countreyes I am come to be your Knight, if you will vouchsafe me such honour as so to accept me. Assuring you, that vnder your commandement, and in the company of my Noble Friend, who undertakes the Combat for my Lord Florendos, right willing am I to aduenture life and credite.

Alas gentle Knight, quoth the Quene, this offer procedeth from your courtesie and bountie, not by any vertue on my parte deserving: For to contrarie hath Fortune enuymore set her selfe against me. But very ingratefull might I bee accounted, and never be reckoned among Ladys of regard, if hauing taken such paines for mee, I should not accept you for my Knight, especially in such urgent occasion. Wherefore I entertaine you into this Service, and I desire of God, that you may be as easily delivred from the charge you take in hand for me, as my conscience is cleare from the faulte wherewith I am accused.

I hope Madame (quoth Fry soll) that my Lord your Father shall ere long perceyue, your loyall, perfect, and pure Nobilitie, which never can keepe company with seruile and detestable treason. All this while Palmerin beholding the Quene, seeing her sweet face so stained and blubbered with teares: moued with naturall remorse, was constrained to turne his head aside, to hide the teares that trickled downe his cheeke.

The Quene likewise regarded him so earnestly, as when shee behelde him wepe, shee imagined that one gaue a violent pull at her heart: which shee dissembled so well as shee could, determining not to deauand the cause thereof, vntill such time as the Combat were finished. So taking they leaue of the Quene and the Princesse Armida, they returned to they Lodging till the next Morning, when the Emperour sending for them to the Pallace, where Promptaleon

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

taleon and Oudin stayed they coming: the Emperour himselfe thus beganne. Now Promptaleon, here mayest thou beholde the two young Knights, who speake the contrary of that thou hast reported: Wilt thou yet maintaine that my Daughter hath committed treason, and bin disloyall to her Husband, thy decesser Uncle: I will my Lord, (quoth hee) and swere by my Baptisme, for that cause she shall dye the death: and if any dare vndertake the contrarie, I am ready to proue it by force of Armes. I thinke it conuenient (said Palmerin, my god Lord) that no Combate shold be graunted, without the presence of the accused.

Immediately Florendos and Giana, were sent for, and beeinge come before the Emperour, Palmerin sayde to the Prince: How say you: my Lord, do you permit in maintenaunce of your right, that I gue these false accusers such discipline, as their wicked and trecherous dealings deserve? I do (quoth the Prince) and Heauen prosper thee in thine enterprise. What say you Madame (quoth Fry soll) to the Quene, do you afforde the like to me? Shee answered as Florendos before had done: Wherebyon Palmerin thus spake to the Accusers.

See two Knights will maintaine, that you bath are Traytors, and that by coulous and greedie desire of rule, and to enjoy the Kingdome, you would (against all Right) disinherit the young Princesse Armida: for which cause you haue shamefully accused the Quene her Mother, to haue committed murther, and more then that, charge her with disloyal labyrity. For if the Prince Florendos talkid with her, when the King found him in her Chamber: it was in no other sort then honour allored, and according to the dutie of honest loue, wherein all Princes are bound to they Ladys. Besides, if your King was slaine by the Prince, it was in defence of his owne life, and in repelling the iniurious speeches he gaue him: To approue what I say, we present our gages to the Emperour, so please hym but to receyue them. The like did the two Brehren, desiring his High-

Hightest to appoint the Combattē presently; in the suide and necessarie place before the Pallace. For (quoth they) we will teache these vaine-glorious Strangers, the price of such iuritous speches, spoken to those that know how to correct hem.

I think (quoth Palmerin) thou shal neede to teach thy selfe: but if thou haue any newe dexterite, practise it well thou arte best, for I can tell thee the time will requyre it. The god Emperor Remicius commaunded silence, and taking the Gages of these fourre Knights: bad them goe Arme themselues; saying he would see the ende thereof before hee take any sustaunce. The Duke of Mensa, and the Counte of Rodona, auncient Princes of Greece, were appointed to be Judges of the Fielde: who commaunded two hundred Knights to Arme themselues, for assuraunce of their owne persons.

## C H A P. XXXI.

Of the noble Combat in the Cittie of Constantynople, by Palmerin, & Fryfoll, against the two Nephews of the deceased King of Hungaria, whom they vanquished, by which meanes the Prince Florendos and Queene Criana were deliuared.

Rompaleon and Oudin being departed the sumptous Hall, Palmerin and Fryfoll taking theym leue of Florendos and the Dneens, whom the Emperor caused to be shutte uppe in their Prisones againe, went to their Lodgings to Arme themselues, for performance of the Action undertaken. The Duke of Meccena,

all



## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

an honorable Prince, descended of the most auncient race in all Greece, with many other great Lordes went after them: & when they were Armed, the Duke would needes bear Palmerins Lance, and the grānd Squire attending on the Emperor, carried Fryfolls. In this manner came they to the place appointed for the Combat, where the two Brethren were alreadis staying for them, the eldest of them thus beginning in mockage. Beleue me Knights, for me i' shewed themselves so hardie in a Hall, methinks you haue beene very long Arming your selues. I thinke you came on your fountcloth Mules to the Fielde entrance, for feare of falling to hurt your selues: but soone shall ye be taught better horsemanship I warrantye. If there were in thos so much wisdome & exercise of Armes, answere Fryfoll, as are high words and brauing behauour, it would be a litle better discretes then it is: notwithstanding, ere we haue done, I thinke they that came first into the fielde will tarrie last here, unlesse some bodye for pittie carrie them out before. Herewith the Trompets sounded, and the Heraldes commaunded the Champions to do their deuorit, which was the cause, that these hole words were chaunzed into deedes: and running fiercely against each other, they encountring with such puissance, as Palmerin cast Oudin forth of his saddle, with a very great wound on his left side, and Rompaleon was received by Fryfoll so roughly, as he fell backward on the crupper of his Horse, because he was loth his Brother shold fall without company. The two Brethren enraged to be thus foiled at y first, came with their swords drawne to kill their aduersaries Horses: so that they were constrained quickly to alight, when they assailed each other with mernallous furie, for either side expected victorie, the one in hope of a kingdome, the other to saue their friends lives.

Strange was it to beholde this violent fight, yet the two Brethren seemed vnable long to holde out, for they

## THE HISTORIE

Armoz was so cut and mangled, and themselves so driven sooth of heath, as hardly they could sustaine themselves; so that Promptaleon desired Fry soll to rest a while, who inowid with anger, thus answered. Nay Traylor, now shall I teach thee how to defend thy selfe, and not one minute will I graunt thee to traueise with me; but will send thy soule to the fater of thy villany, unlesse with speede thou denie thy staundre. With these words he laid so many sound strokes on him, as at length hee fell downe dead at his feete, which when Oudin perceiued, hee threw his Sword at Palmerin, and caught him fast about the middle, thinking that way to get him downe, but Palmerin striking away his feete, caused him fall on his backe, and without attending for his revolte, nobly strooke his head from his shoulders.

So comming to Fry soll, he asked if he were wounded: No my Lord (quoth he) I thanke God, the greatest wound I haue cannot withhold me to doe you further seruice, if so be you haue any neede. Then putting vp their Swords, they demaunded of the Judges, if any thing else remained to be done, for deliverance of the prisoners. Nothing, worthy Lords, answered the Judges, and then will the Emperour now deliuer, with all possible speede. The good Reinicus hartilic thanking God for this victorie, sent a Knight to the Champions, with request to come and lodge in his Wallace, as also that they shold presently come speake with his Maestie: yet could not the Messenger make such haste, but they were come sooth of the field, the Mecæna and the Prince Olorico bearing them companie.

When the Knight had overtaken them, hee said. Returne worthy Knights to my Lord the Emperour, for hee would conferre with you, and haue your wounds attened by his owne Chirurgions. So turning again to the pallace, they entred the Hall, where the Emperour meeting them, said. Right welcome are ye my noble Friends, who haue

53

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

so happily defended my Daughters honoz: for whose sake I shall make ye such recompence, as shall be henceforth an encouragement to all Knights, to aduenture the Combat on the chalfe of any distressed Lady. Immediatly in their presence, by sound of Trumpet hee caused to be declared, that the Prince Florendos and the Queene Grian, were innocent of the trayterous accusation, and therefore in open field had they shold bee deliuered: commanding likewise his most expert Chirurgions to giue diligent attēdance on the wounded Knights, causing them to be lodged in the most stately Chambers of his Wallace. Afterward, he suffered the bodies of the vanquished to bee buried, giuing expresse charge on paine of death, that none of the Knights of Hungaria shold depart from Constantinople without his leaue; because he wold while they staid there, prouide for the gouernment of the Kingdome, as appertaining to his young Daugter the Princesse Armida. The Empesse was so ioyfull for the deliuerance of Grian, as shee had done, forgot her Nephewes misfortune: the Queens Ladies likewise were not a little glad, but aboue all, the young Princesse Armida, her comfort could not be exprest, that her Mother was so graciouslie defended: and now the Duke of Pera, who had the Prince Florendos in custodie, fetching him forth of prison, said: My Lord, thank God and the Knights that sought the Combat for you: for by their meanes, the Emperoz declareth you absoluied and set at libertie.

The Prince lifting his eyes to heauen, thus beganne: Ah my God, how happy is the man that trusteth in thy mercy: doubtlesse he that believeth in thy promises, shall never perish. Noble Duke, in all mine afflictions, I haue evermore found your speciall fauour: but if God prolong my life, I wil not be unmindful of your gentlenes. In sooth my Lord, quoth the Duke, for so good a Prince, any honest mind would gladly endeavour himselfe: and if I haue pleased you in any thing, I did no more then my duty,

52

which

## THE HISTORIE

which christian amitie requireth of each other. So taking him by the hand, hee brought him before the Emperour, when falling on his knees, the Prince thus spake. If herefore dread Lord, both I and my people gaue our selues to trauell, and aduentured desperate hazard in your defence: at this time I count my selfe sufficiently recompenced, seeing your displeasure qualifieth, and the hard opinion you conceiued against me, changed into princely and honoable justice.

Sir Florendos, answered the Emperour, When I remember the mrong you did my Daughter, leaving such a scandalous report of her, at the first time you came to this Cittie: I thinke you Worthie of the sharpest death. But placing mercie before rigorous iustice, I am desirous to let you know, that it liketh me better to be loued then feared: forgetting quite the offence against our person, the murder of our Son, without any regard to the maruar of the people, whose ignorance cannot consider of Princes mercie. So will I staine mine aged yeres with mine owne proper blood, or the death of a Prince so noble, whereby I should leaue to my following posteritie, as a Trophe of my life, an endlesse memorie of tyrannous craultie: but rather shall my chiefest aduersaries stop their mouthes, with remembrance of my clemency and princely bountie, as your owne conscience shall wel witnes with me. You therfore my Lord, the Duke of Pera, see that the Prince Florendos bee lodged in the best place in our Cittie, and keepe him company, vntill his traine shal come to Macedon. With great humilitie the Prince kisst the Emperours hand, acknowledging his manifold and princely courtesies: desiring the Duke likewise before his departure, that hee might speake with the two Knights Fry soll and Palmerin.

Being brought to their Chambers, the embracings and gracious courtesies he vised to them, I am not able to bittre, and very loth was hee to part from them, but that

he

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

he would no way pxiudice their health: wherefore giuing them the god night, he was conducted to his lodging, leauing Palmerin very sad and pensiue, remembraing what the Duene of Tharsus had said to him, how he should deliuer his Father from death, before hee could know him, which was likewise confirmed by the apparition of the Ladie to him, vnder the name of his best and dearest Friends.

That the Heauens did so sauour me, quoth he, that I were the son of the Prince Florendos and Queens Grianza, then would I imagine my selfe the happiest man in the world. Yet can I not forget, that the Fayries told mee on the Mouneaine Artisaria, that one day I shold be Lord of all Greece, but God is my witnes, that I couet not such honor and preferment, were it not for the loue of my Lady, to the end her Father might not dislike of our contract. And hence will I not depart, before I understand the truthe hereof, and to what end this aduenture will happen. Frisoll on the other side, he deuised how to make himselfe knowne to the Emperour and Empresse: because hee had god hope when himselfe might be knowne, that his Father Netrides shold enjoy the kingdome of Hungaria. The Prince Florendos likewise could take no rest, for his great desire to recover the Duene Grianza. Such were the passions of these three Princes; each one living in hope of god successe, which happiness according to their expectations, as you shall heare hereafter.

# THE HISTORIE

## CHAP. XXXII.

How the Quenue Griana with the young Princesse Ar-  
mida, went to visit Palmerin and Fry soll, and how the  
Queene knew Palmerin to be her Sonne, to the no lit-  
tle ioy of the Emperour, and the Prince Florendos.



Two daies after the deliuerance of the  
Prince Florendos, the young Prin-  
cess Armida deuising with the quene  
her Mother, said. She thinkes graci-  
ous Madame, we are to be reproued  
of ingratitude, in that we haue not as  
yet visited the poore wounded  
knights, considering how greatly we  
are beholding to them: I beleue you let vs this morning  
goe see how they fare.

Alas daughter, answered the Quene, hast thou the  
heart to bring me among such persons, when I am said to  
be the cause of thy Fathers death? Then the Princesse  
breaking forth into teares, replid. Beseeue me Madame,  
if you remember your selfe well, you are in as little fault  
as I am, and so hath an honourable victorie declared: but  
had you been any way culpable therein, yet now you ought  
to comfort your selfe, having had such a famous prooofe  
of innocency. In signe whereof, and to declare your thank-  
fulness to those gentle knights: it will be counted a special  
point of courtesie, to visite them that ventured for you. Soe  
we then, said the Quene, seeing you thinke it so necessarie,  
and are so desirous. So accompanied with many Ladies,  
clothed

## OF PALMERIN D'OLVA.

clothed all in mourning blacke, they went first to Fry soll,  
greatly thanking him for the paines he had taken, putting  
his life in danger, for the conservation of their honours. Not  
to me Lady, answered Fry soll, ought you to give these  
thanks, but to him that onely giveth strength to man: and  
if from my birth I had continually trauelled in your service,  
yet your graces are such as I should never deserue to bee  
reckoned among your meanest fauorites. The yong Prin-  
cess thinking her selfe greatly bound to him, would not  
give him good morrow with so little talke: but sitting  
downe on the bede by him, taking him by the hand, began  
againe thus.

I know not Sir Knight, how the Quene my Mother  
will procede in requitall of your noble seruice, for mine  
owne part, not forgetting how the Traytors threatened  
me, whom (to their endlesse shame) you haue vanquished  
and slaine: I finde my selfe so indebted to you, as it far ex-  
cedeth my power, to guerdon you with answerable recom-  
pence. Fry soll perceiving the yong Princes affection, who  
Loue had caught somewhat within his reach: knew im-  
mediately by her sober bashful looks, the cause why so ma-  
ny sighes were coupled with her words, himself likewise  
suddenly sicke of the same disease, returned this answeare.  
Madame, if Fortune, the friend to your happines, would  
fauour me so much, as the enterprise done by your coman-  
ding, might sorte to an ende fitting my desire: I should  
then account my selfe more then suffice. He gratified in  
this, that the act is agreeable to your liking, and the fauor-  
able countenance of such a Ladie, is more then so meane a  
Knight as my selfe can merit. Beside, from the day that  
the high renowne of your prudence and gracious beautie,  
assured me of those exquisite gifts, wherwith Nature hath  
plentifully enriched you: I take such a religious bole of  
hondage on me, as (considering your high calling, and my  
selfe so far inferior) I shall never obtaine the fauour of li-  
bertie, if your benignitie, exceeding all things else, graunt

## THE HISTORIE

me not that speciall grace. The Dueene loth to trouble this forme of confession, withdrew her selfe into Palmerins Chamber, where (as it fell out) shee found no body but him selfe: by which occasion, remembryng the loue shee bare to Florendos, after shee had humble saluted him, shee thus began.

Valene me, gentle Sir, your knyghtlie Chivalrie hath shewed it selfe of such desert, as the Prince Florendos, for defence of whose honour, you haue not feared to adventur your life, your dangerous wounds well witnessing the same: shall never deuise sufficient satisfaction. For in my iudgement it may well be said, that goods, honour and life hath been restored him by your noble magnanimitie. Madam, quoth Palmerin, these wound that for these two daies haue made mee keepe my Chamber, thanks be to God are not so dangerous, as if occasion were offered, either for you or my Lord Florendos, but full well could I be seene therin, to purchase entertainment into your gracious conceit. The Dueene then sitting downe in a Chaire by him, and viewing him very earnestly, his locks of haire kept downe by a gorgious wrought Cap, embroidered with Saphires and small Emeralds: shee beheld the mole on his face like a Crosse, which made her remember, that her Son had the like, and in the selfe same place, when Cardyna tooke him from her and caried him to the Mountaine. Hereupon shee tooke greater occasion to regard his countenance, and imagining him very much to resemble the Prince Florendos, immediatly shee persuaded her selfe that he was her Son. Which conceit moued her to such alterations, as of long shee continued silent, though Palmerin (in meane while) demanded many questions of her. These changes oueruled by reason and discretion, shee commaunded her Ladies to depart the Chamber, and to goe accompanie the young Princesse Armida: they being no sooner gone, but shee began in this manner.

Let me request, Sir Palmerin, to know your Parents and

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

and the name of the Countrey wher you were borne. Palmerin somewhat amazed at this demand, was now in the midist of his onely desire, verily perswading himselfe that the Dueene was his Mother, wherefore he thus aunswere.

Madame, I sweare to you by my faith, that I know no Ladie this day living, to whom I would willingly reveale more then to your selfe: but so contrarie was Fortune to me in mine infancie, that as yet I could not get a ny knowledge either of my Father or Mother, nor of the Country where I was borne. Yet thus I haue bene certefied, that I was nourished on a Mountaine not farre from this Cittie, which is called the Mount of Olives, where (as I haue bene many times tolde) my foster Father founde me in rich swadling clothes, and more then this, so please you to credit mee, cannot I telvraie of whence or what I am.

Heauens, quoth the Dueene, how greatly am I bound to praise your infinite bountie and pittie, for so safe protecting mine infant, whom I forsoke so cruelly: Ah gentle Knight, see heere thy Mother, even shee that commaunded thou sholdest be caried to the Mountaine: and the Prince Florendos, whom so lately thou diddest deliver from death, he (noble Palmerin) is thy Father. Notwithstanding my Sonne, I desire thee by the reuerend loue thou bearest me, to conceale secretly what I haue saide, vntill I gaine the meane to discouer my shame to the Imperour: yet such a shame, as neuer came greater god to thy Mother, nor can I now account the dede sinfull, in that my fortune hath brought me such an honorabile Sonne. So ravished with ioy was both the Mother and the Sonne, as neither could expresse their inward contentation, for such was their alteration, as they reputed for an illusion or dreame, what was most certaine indeed: such wonderfull comfort brought this unexpected chaunce, wherewith the greatest endowments of honor or riches may not bee compared. Being in this extasie,

## THE HISTORIE

extasie, the Mother of her Sonne, and the Sonne for his Mother: Palmerin having now againe recovered his forces, said.

By God, I tender thy name immortall thanks, in that I drew my breath from so noble and vertuous personnes, as also for graunting mee knowledge of them in a time so fortunate: for beare then (god Mother) to misdeeme of any thing, for I will discourse the matter in such sort to the Emperour, as forgetting all thinges past, hee shall receive both the Mother and Sonne with greater ioy then you can imagine. But to the ende Madame, you may be more certaine of your Sonne, see heere a Crucifire of Golde, which was tied about my necke when I was founde, and hath of long time beekept by the most perfect Ladie in the worlde. The Queene knowing it right well, after she had killed it many times, answered. Assuredly my Sonne, it is the verie same that my selfe tied about thy necke, when I was in the greatest griefe that euer distressed Mother might bee: to see her infant violently rapte from her, so lone as Nature had brought him into the worlde. But if my mishap as then surpassed all other womens: yet now is it recompenced with such a fortunate houre, as no Ladie may compare her felicitie with mine. Ah my Sonne, by thee are my sorowes chaunged into ioy, my despaire into content, & from death it selfe am I brought againe to life: for if my Husbands hard hap made me despise life, now may you be assured how much I desire it.

Then declared she, how to saueth the Prince Florendos life, whose faithfull loue brought him to such extremity by sicknes, she adventured her honor for his safety, & entring the paradise of loue, bellowed that Jewell on him which she most alresteemed. And so marrist thou (quoth she) report to the Emperour, yet in this manner, that not by carnall impudicitiie I so consented, for God is my witness, that notwithstanding the peril wherein I saw him, no perswasion could cause me yeld him that especiall remedy, before

## OF APLMERIN DOLIVA.

before he had firste solemnly boyled mariage to me, whiche against al right was broken by the Emperours commandement.

Madame, quoth Palmerin, Florendos is of such valour, and his honorable actions so wel received among men, that albeit he had made you no such promise, yet reason may excuse you in this matter. But if by promised faith, and to saueth the life of so gentle a Prince (who happily by your refusall might hane miscaried) you honored the Temple of Loue with so sweete an offering: among people of good minde, it ought rather to bee feard a vertue, then any bad affection or unlawfull lust. And therfore Madame comfort your selfe, for shortly I doare to assure your peace with the Emperour: and seeing I haue you for my Mother, and the Prince Florendos for my Father, I feele my selfe free from any griefe or vexation, assuring you, that I wil dñe it to no further delay, but this morning will I conser with his Maiestie.

The Queene being fearefull, that her long stay should cause any bad opinion, hauing killed her Sonne: gaue him the good morrow, and so went to her Chamber, where she found Cardyna her Gentlewoman, to whom she shewed the Crucifire her Sonne had given her, saying. Tell me I pray thee Cardyna, doost thou remember, that heretofore thou hast seene this Crucifire, and in what place? Eleue me Madame, quoth shee, I thinke I haue seene it before now: but in what place I am not certaine: Whyp? forgetful creature, knowest thou not, that this is the Crucifire which was tied about my Sonnes neck, when thy selfe did carrie him to the Mountaine? In good faith, the Knight is hee, who fought the Combat for my Lord Florendos. Now see the great mercie and bountie of our God, who preserved his life then, and from infinite dangers hath defended him hitherto. Notwithstanding, be thou secret, and on perill of thy life reueale it to none, vntill the Emperour my Father be acquainted therewith. Cardyna was so ioyfull

## THE HISTORIE

full hereof, as he must nedes goe presently to see Palmerin, and finding the Chirurgions wth him visiting his wounes: he fetched a gorgious Mantle of purple Velvet broydered round about with Pearles, Diamonds and Rubies, as wel might beseeme the greatest Monarch to weare. As Cardyna holpe him to put on this Mantle she noted the marke on his face, which she remembred since the time of his birth: and in this manner goes Palmerin chearefully to the Emperour, whom he founde consering with his Lords and Barons, but his presence caused the to breake of talke, imagining him the comliest personne that ever they saw. The god olde Emperour Remicius, reioycing to see him in so god and able plig: demaunded of him how hee fared? Right well quoth he. I thanke God and your highnes, ready to aduenture on any occasio shal like you to commaund me: and now am I come to aduertise your Maestie of such matters, as will not a little glad ye in the hearing, so please your gracie to vouchsafe me private audience. Hereupon the Emperour commaunded every one to depart the Hall, and they being now alone, Palmerin thus beganne. Dread Lord and mightie Emperoz, till this time haue I frequented the Courts of many Kinges and Potentates, without desire of requesting any thing, vntill this present: when faine wold I request one bone of your Maestie, y graunt whereof shall returne you both profit and honor. By noble friend Palmerin, aunswere the Emperour, what ever thou pleasest, demaunde, and on my word it shal be graunted.

Palmerin, with humble obaysaunce kissing the Emperours hand, said. In sooth my Lord, all that I haue to request, is onely to desire your highnes; that all offences committed by the Prince Florendos and Madame Griana your Daughter, may not onely be forgotten, but also forgyuen. For thy sake Palmerin, quoth the Emperour, I forgyne all their offences whatsoeuer. May it then please your Maestie, quoth he, to remember, how when Florendos came

to

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

to do your service, during your Warres against Gamezio, because you denyed to give him your Daughter, hee was so sicke, as every houre his Death was expected? It then so forayned my Lord, the Princeisse your Daughter, acquainted with the cause of his sicknes, to give him some comfort, as also to defende so god a Prince from death; by gracious speeches shee gave him some hope of Loue, and such (soe truth) as before they parted, a sollemne promise of Marryage was concluded betweene them. I know not the conditions of theyr agreements, but it seemed the Articles confest on no difficult accorde: for eache received of other the swete desires of Loue, in so much as that night was I begotten. And for a truth my Lord, I am the Sonne to the Prince Florendos, and Madamne Griana your Daugther: who (as I understand) by the Empresse perswasion, against all right you compelled to marry with the Prince Tarifus. Florendos notwithstanding my Mothers wrong, was verie great, hath continued so louall, as hee woulde never accept any other for his wife; nor as yet will, but onely her. Now my Lord, that this matter may not seeme a fantastical invention, I can resolve you of the place of my bythe which was in the Tower, where my Mother remained Prisoner by your Commandement, vnder the charge of a Ladis named Tolomestra: whos to defende your daughters honor, caused me to be caried to a place not far hence, which is called the Mount of Olivet, from whence my surname is likewise deriu'd, & in that place was I found by a Countrey Peasant under a Palme tree, who in signe thereof, named me Palmerin d'Oliva. My sorrowfull Mother, hoping one day to see me again, diligently noted divers marks I haue, and hung about my neck a golden Crucifir, which this day I gaue her againe: and by this marke on my face like a Croffe, she well remembred me to be her Sonne. In this repecting my Lord, that your Daughters offence was accustomed by true & faithful Loue, and having likewise promised to forgyne all causes of displeasure: graunt my father no

## THE HISTORIE

now at length to enjoy his lawfull wife, that I being their Sonne, may not bee esteemed as Illegitimate; the doing whereof will redewine your name for ever, and loue tryed in so many afflictions, shall be crowned with his long and desired reward.

The Empresse amazed at this straunge discourse, could not imagine what answer to make: Wherefore hauing sett a pretty while silent, lifting his eyes to Heaven, he thus beganste. O hightie King of Kings, onely god and full of mercie, I render thy Name everlasting thankes, for thy gracious regards to the distressed Empyre of Greece: for though in our last Warres thou tookest away my Sonne Caniano, thou hast at this instant sent mee another, who well hath learned to defende this State, from the pride invading Gouvernour of Turkie. Ah my Sonne Palmerin, right well do I belieue what thou hast said, and albeit thou hadst not shewen such probable Argumets, yet doest thou so perfectly resemble my Sonne Caniano, as easly may be conjectured whence thou art distended. Whatsoeuer thou demandest my Sonne is already granted. And with these words, the teares trickled downe his Milke white Beard, such was his inward earnest conceit of joy: and embracing Palmerin in his armes, he called his Lordes, who maruelled not a little at this Event, and thus spake the Emperour. See here my Friendes, your Liege Lordes and Soueraigne, the Sonne of my Daughter Griana and the Prince Florendos: How may you applaude the bountie of Heaven, prouiding for you such a Noble Prince? The Lordes all wondering at these speches, came and entertained him, with many signes of honour: So that it is not registred in any auient memorie, that ever King or Prince had such sudden and gracious welcome.

By this time these newes were spredde throughout the whole Wallace; and the Empresse hearing thereof, sent one of her Squyres for Palmerin: when the Emperour taking him by the hand, brought him to her Chamber, saying; See here

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

here Madame your Son, who by your meanes hath long time besieghed our Court; hereafter loke, hee bee better used.

The Empresse surpised with incredible joy, louinglie embracing him, said: Welcome my Sonne, forget my heynous offence, when I would not suffer thy Mother to enjoy the Prince Florendos, which fault Heaven hath revenged, with the death of my three nephewes, whereof I now make no reckoning, fearing God hath sent vs such a gracious comfort. The Emperour on the other side welcomed the Queene his Daughter, which as yet hee had not done since her comming from Hungaria. Lay by (quoth he) faire Daughter, these blacke garments, the witness of your inward mourning, and deck your selfe presently in retoryng habits: for now before all my Lordes of Greece, will I haue you espoused to the Prince Florendos. So departed the Emperour and the Prince, leauing the Queene with her Ladies, who disclored her of her mourning garments: his Matelty commanding Palmerin, to goe seeke the Prince of Macdon his Father, accompanied with all the noble men of the Court.

In the meane while, he caused al the ornaments of blacke to be taken downe, and the Wallace to bee hanged with sumptuous cloth of gold: and gave in charge to the Empresse, that the Queene, the Princesse Armida, and all the Ladies should adorne themselves, as to receive the very greatest Prince in the world. Likewise he said to all his Knights, Reioice my good Friends with mee: for God tooke away my Chidren, and hath double restored them, for those that bee dead, hee hath raised vs more. Palmerin hauing with him all the Emperours Knights, went to the lodging of the Prince Florendos, & by the way the Citizens of Constantinope, Nobles, Merchants, & Artizans, welcomed him very honorably: making bonfires and Garlands of triumph, in every streete, crying; Welcome to this noble Cittie our new Lord and Master; and such cheerfull

## THE HISTORIE

cheerfull delights did they sollemnize the time withall; as though it had bene the Feast of Christmas, Palmerin & his Traine, beeing come to the Princes Lodging, found two Squires at the gate, sent thither by the Emperour, the one holding a Horse very richly Caparisoned; and the other costly Garments of cloth of Golde, which hee caused to bee brought vp after him into the Chamber, where falling on his knes before the Prince, he saide.

Nowe come I my Lord to kisse your hande, not as I haue done heretofore, but as becommeth a Sonne to his Father: For I am your Sonne, begotten on the Quene Griana, whom the Emperour will now bestowe on you in Maradge. Florendos was so ravished with these speches, as hee was ready to swoone betwene Palmerins armes: but at length fetching a great sigh, said. O celestall Soueraign, what am I, whom thou shouldest so respect, and list to such surpassing happynesse! Ah poore Florendos, not long compare with thy fortune, haing such a Knight to thy son, and faire Quene Griana to thy wife! Go we my Sonne (quoth he, embracing Palmerin) For it is no reson to stay, the very first time I did beholde thee, my heart was sollicited with greater ioy, then I am able nowe to expresse: which euer since made me conjecture, that there was more betwene vs then friendly aliaunce. Then was hee cloathed in stetch Garments sent by the Emperour, and his Cousin Frenato in like manner: So coming to horsebacke, Palmerin on the left, with many Princes, Lords, Knights, and Gentlemen, ryding both before and behinde them. In this manner came they to the Pallace, where the Emperour himselfe stayed their comming at the Gate: and after they were alighted, the Prince making humble reverence to his Maestie, thuo spake; Mighty and redoubted Lorde, I knowe not how to render sufficient thanks in that your High-

## OF PALMERIN DOLIVA.

highnes is pleased to honoure me with your daughter, which is the thing I alwaies desired, notwithstanding, I hope to shew such deserts hereafter, as neither she shall be uncontented, nor your Maestie repente your gentle gift. Noble Lord quoth the Emperour, well haue you deserved her, and mine Empire with her, in respect of your worthy Sonne Palmerin, whom all Europe, Asia and Africa honours Wherefore in the presence of all my Lords, I will give her to you: deferring the day of sollemnitie, until the states of Macedon come, therefore Sonne Palmerin goe to your Mother.

Presently hee departed, the Dukes of Perea and McCana with him: and soone they returned, bringing with them the Empresse, the Quene, and his Sister the young Princesse Armida: whom hee had schoold with such gracious speeches, as shee had neuer forgotten her displeasure towards the Prince Florendos, for the death of the King her Father. There openlie in the Hall, by the Archbyshop of Constantinople, the Prince Florendos & Griana were affianced together, to their no little contentment: as also to the good liking of all the Princes and Lords of Greece, who spent the rest of the day in ioyfull disputes, and triumphes.

N. CHAP.

# THE HISTORIE

## CHAP. XXXIII.

How Fry soll declared to the Empresse, that he was sonne  
to her Nephew Netrides.



ALL this pleasure of the Princes and Lords of Greece, for so many ioyfull and vnexpected accidents, might not be compared with the pleasures of the Prince Olorico and Frisol, who would now no longer keape his bed, in respect of his ioy for the good fortune of his friend, wherfore putting on his garments, and accompanied with Olorico, he came downe into the great Hall, as the Prince of Macedon was betrothed to his Lady, when Palmerin stepping from all the rest, welcomed them with very gracious courtesie. After they had been generally saluted, Fry soll came before the Empresse, and on his knee began in this manner.

Most excellent and gracious Madame, may it please you pardon mine offence in shedding the blood of your kinsman. Notwithstanding, as the law of judgement and reason exhorteth me, of two evils I chuse to take the least: so did I rather thinke it god, to bathe my hands in the blood of mine owne Cozin, then permitt him (by the Prince Florendos offence) to suffer open violence. This speake I Madame, as being the Sonne to your Nephew Netrides, whom long since his elder Brother disinherited, and banished him his Countrey to a little Castell, where at this time he remaineth in good disposition. Now judge which of these events is most admirable: that of your noble Son

Palmerin

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

Palmerin, or this which I haue now rehearsed. But may it be (quoth the Empresse) that my Nephew Netrides is yet living: and can it be possible that thou art his Sonne? Trust me Madame, said Fry soll, I haue told you truth, and by Gods leane, you shall haue more ample proove therof within these few daies.

Hereupon the Emperour, the Empresse, Florendos and Palmerin, with inexpressible rejoicing, embrased Fry soll, nor a little extolling their fortune, that such hardie Knights were descended of their lineage. Then Fry soll rehearsed before them all, the thre Combats hee had with Palmerin, and what great honor he wonne at the Turney in France, which report greatly contented the Prince Florendos, hearing the honourable Chivalrie of his Sonne, nor would he forget to ioyne therewith his conquest on the Mountaine Artisaria, with his Combats both in Bohemia and Durace.

At these reports the Emperour somewhat amazed, said before all his Lords, I beleue my friends, that the maruellous and rare fortunes, of these two Cozins, Palmerin and Fry soll, with the strange aduentures they haue finished in their youth: promise greater matters in their following yeeres. There an ancient Knight of Hungaria, who was named Apolonio, said to the Emperour, how in time past he had been Page to the Father of Tarisius, by which meane he knew Netrides right well if he might see him. And if he be yet living, quoth he, in regard of his manifold princely vertues: the Realme of Hungaria neede no better Gouvernoar, nor will the people themselves mislike of so god a change. Wherefore, may it so stand with your highnes pleasure, to graunt me company beseeming the cause, I will doe my dutie in the search of him, bring him hither with me to the Court. Willingly the Emperour consented thereto, and like order tooke the Prince Florendos, that Cardyna with her Brother and other Gentlemen, shoud goe to the Mountaine of Olives, and enquires

## THE HISTORIE

for Gerard, Palmerins foster Father, Marcella his wife, and Dyoseda their Daughter. Palmerin seeing all things so fit to so good ende, falling on his knee before the Emperour and his Father, said. Seeing it hath pleased God, to make me knyght for your Sonne, I will not conceale a matter from you, which concerneth me very nearelie: and although it be of great importance, yet will I not further procede without your advise. So discovered he all his sevral apparitions, while he continued with his supposed Father, whereby he was prouoked to goe seeke the Lady, who by fatall dessein was promised him: nor did he hide his troubles in her search, but therewith bewrayed that her name was Polynarda, Daughter to the Emperour of Almaigne, and his wife by sollemne boyles passed betweene them. He declared moreover, how he travellled to find the Prince Tryneus, whom he lost on the Sea with the Princesse of England, and them he would recover againe, in respect of his faulch promise to his Lady. Notwithstanding, quoth he, if you thinke it convenient, I would gladly send to aduertise the Emperour and my Lady his Daughter, of my present god fortune, that his Maiestie may confirme our priuate agreement: because I doubt the Prince of France, whose Ambassadours haue beene there to conserue on the matter, may otherwise preuent me of mine onely choise. In like manner, if Netrides shall be found, to bee made King of Hungaria, and the Princesse Armida to bee bestowed in mariage on Sir Fry soll, who is such a Knight in my judgement, as well deserves one of the chiefeſt Ladieſ in the world.

So God helpe me my Sonne, quoth the Emperour, no reason were it to disappoint what thou hast so well contrived: for seeing things haue bane forepointed by fortune, mere folly it is for men to contrarie them. And because I haue heretofore heard, that the Emperours Daughter is the flower and choise Ladie among all other, whose vertues challenge the man beyond compare in Chivalrie: I

will

## OF APLMERIN DOLIVA.

will ſend mine Ambassadours to the Emperour, as well for the perfection of the marriage, as to comfort her in her despaires, with certaine assurance of our health and welfare, and ſo ſhall your intended trauell not bee hindered. Notwithſtanding, before you begin your tourney, you ſhall receue the homage of all Princes and Lords of Grecce, as their liege Lord and ſupreme Gouernour: which being doone, I will like wife take order for my Nephew Fryſoll, ſo ſonne as his Father ſhall come to our Court. Then calling for the Master of his horſe, commandement was giuen for ſpedy diſpatch of meſſengers to al parts. So leauing the Emperour buſied in theſe affaires: Florendos and Palmerin went to the Daſene, who cauſing them to ſit downe by her, after ſhe had very graciously welcommed them, ſaid,

I pray ye tell me, which of vs thare is moſt beholding to Fortune: the Father, the Mother or the Son: Doubtleſſe, who ſo conſidereth the condiſion of our aduenture, wil find it ſuch, as ſeldome hath the like beeene heretofore. And in looth my Lord Florendos, the grieuous torments I haue endur'd ſince the loſſe of my Sonne, and my great diſloyaltie towards you by breach of my promife: I iudge may bee equalled with the burthen of mine offence. Neuertheleſſe, if you eſteeme not your ſelfe ſatiſfed, let your noble regard excuse what Nature hath perſecuted, which is, to endure much moſe then as yet we haue done. Madame, anſwered Florendos, in time of ioy, remember not our paſſed miſfortunes, but thinke what now is done, our happy Starres haue graciously furthered and limited to this end, that my loyaltie, with the bouniety and proweſſe of our Son, would be laid open to euery iudgement. Here had the Prince occaſion to rehearſe his afflictions in loue, endur'd twenty yeres ſpace and moſe for her ſake, which Palmerin hearing, either ſearing to offend them, or induc'd by moſt baſhfulnes, he went to his Sister the Princesſe Armida, whose thoughts he ſcoundred by ſuch ſubtilties and

## THE HISTORIE

distimulations, as he found the effect of her desires, which was to enjoy Sire Fry soll to her Husband. Hee not a little contented herewith, confirmed her chiose to bee commendable, sealing the assurance thereof, with an honourable report of his knightly deedes of Armes. Then the Emperour called for the Duke of Mecana and the County of Reifort, as also his principall Secretarie, whom hee commaunded to write to the Emperour of Almaigne, touching the mariage of the Princesse Polinarda and his sonne Palmerin, shadowing the secret agreement betweene themselves, and committed the rest to the discretion of the Ambassadours.

The Letters sealed with his great Signet, was delivered to them that had the charge of this message: who could not so speedilie depart from Constantinople, because the wind and weather was not nauigable. Now had Palmerin promised Fry soll that he would speake to the Princesse his Sister, and sollemlie resolute vpon their mariage: Wherefore (meeting with this earnest Louer) he thus laboured to please him. Trust me Cozin, I haue so surely imprinted your especiall generositie in my Sisters minde, as the carracter can never be defaced: but remaine more perfect by your speedie marriage. Fry soll requied with these nesues, as all pretenders of loue may well imagine: offered to kisse his hand, which Palmerin would not suffer, whereupon hee thus proceeded. Ah my Lord, how am I more and more indebted to you: right wise was he which said, that affabilitie and liberalitie, are continuall compa-  
nions with nobleries and magnanimitie. And though by all my seruices, I cannot deserue the honour you doe me in accepting me for your Brother: yet am I so faithfullye vowed yours, as the honours of my Father, nor loue of the Princesse your Sister, can separate me from your company, vntill you haue found your long desired Friend Trineus. And for this cause my Lord, I earnestly intreate you, to haue Apolonio towards my Father, for I will send him to the

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

the place, where he shall be assured to find him. Palmerin accordeed thereto immediatlie, and so labored with the Emperour, as the Letters were heliuered: and the oathes taken of all the Hungarians, they were sent home into their Countrey, with a Lieutenant appointed to gouerne them vntill the coming of Netrydes, to whom Fry soll wrote the truth of all his fortune, with earnest request of his speedie presence.

And to induce him to the greater hast, he feigned that many Princes laboured for the Crowne of Hungaria, and were in likelihood to obtaine it: all which was but to enjoy the faire Princesse Armida. The same day Florendos sent to the King his Father at Macedon, that hee shold send the chiefeſt ſtates of his Realme againſt the day that Palmerin ſhould be ſworne the Prince of Grecce.

## CHAP. XXXIV.

How Cardyna the Gentlewoman attending on the Queene, accompanied with her Brother and diuers other Squires, brought Gerrard, his wife and daughter to the Court, and what entertainment Palmerin made them.



Ardyna, with thofe that were committayd to keepe her company, in ſhort time came to Gerrards house, whom ſhe found ſitting at dinner with his familie. The good man was at firſt amazēd, ſeeing ſuch courtly perſonages enter his house, a matter eſteemed rare among the perſons dwelling on the Mountaunes;

## THE HISTORIE

taine: but seeing they came in decent and modest sort, not proffering any discourtesie, he entertained the very friendly, when Cardyna taking him by the hand, said. Good Father, are you the man that is called Gerrard? I am the same, quoth he, gentle Mistresse. You are then the man, answered Cardyna, that I seeke, and therefore I pray thee tell me what thou didst with a Child, that twentie yeres and more since, thou foundest in swadling clothes vnder a Palme Tree on this Mountaine: for certaine I am that thou didst take him home with thes to thy house? Ah Mistresse, quoth the god old Man, you haue told my hart in remembraunce of him, whom I loued dearer then any of mine owne. The infant whereof you speake, I found not farre hence vnder a Palme Tree, for which cause at his Baptisme I named him Palmerin. From that time forward, I nourished him as he had biene mine owne Sonne, till he came to full stature, and as he grew in yeres, so did he in vertuous and noble qualities, which made him not a little beloued in these parts: for when he attended my catell, hee tooke pleasure to course the Wolfe, Hart, Beare, Boare and Lyon, and oftentimes would kill them when him listed, which none of mine owne Children durst at any time aduenture.

Ah swete Mistresse, when I remember his many seruices, the dutifull reverence and loue he bare mee: I am readie to die with conceit of grieue, that it was my ill hap so soone to lose him. Yet came not this misfortune alone, for mine elder Sonne, who loued him as he had biene his owne Brother: immediatly went after him, and yet could I never heare any tidings of them. Notwithstanding, Mistresse, if you know of whence he was, I can shew you all the clothes wherewith I found him. I shall be contented to see them, quoth Cardyna: but what will ye give the partie that can tell ye where he is? Gerrard, at these wordes fell on his knee before her, and with the teares trickling downe his gray beard, said. By my troth Mistresse, if it shall like you

## OF PALMERIN D'OLVA.

you to do me so great a pleasure, of all my substance, I will give ye the one halfe: or all my herd of Beastes, which ye saw feeding on the Mountaine as ye came, besyde my continual service while I live. Gramercies Father, said Cardyna, but call to your Wife and Daughter, and ther shall I tell ye newes that will content you. As for him, whose friendly Parents you were so long time, hee is now at Constantinople, & is the Sonne of Madame Griana daughter to the Emperor: whos commandement you thre to come to the Court, that she may content ye for nourishing so wel the noble yong Prince. The odds were exceeding myfull, without ordering his affaires, & appointing his Servants their course of labour: sayde to his Wife and Dyofena his Daughter.

Make ye readie presently in your best garments, and let vs goe see that noble Gentleman: for all the gold in the world cannot make me stay, now I haue heard so happye tidings. The god woman and her daughter, trickt vp them selues in their country fynes, and taking the rich swadling clothes, set forward to Constantinople so merrily, as sometime did the foster Father of Paris, Alexander, his wife, and their Daughter Pegasis, when they brought the Cradle and acoustrements of the infant roiall, to the Cittie of Troy, after he was known by his Father King Priam, and Queen Hecuba his Mother.

Palmerin being aduertised by one of the Ladies of honor attending on the Empresse, that Cardyna had brought Gerrard: to prouoke greater contentation, he would needes goe meete him, and so went downe into the Court, accompanied with many yong Knights lately come to the Emperours seruice. Gerrard seeing this godly troupe, among them all knew Palmerin perfectely, wherfore alighting from his Horse: and without giuing him in charge to any Page or Lackie, ran and fell downe at his feete, but Palmerin laying him in his armes, said. Father Gerrard and my deare sciende, the God of Hemmen bee dñe meye praised, in that

## THE HISTORIE

that by bringing me to the knowledge of my Parents: I haue the meane to satisfie your paine and trauaile for me, sauing my life in my yongest yeres, and nourishing me to the state of discretion.

Ah my Lord, quoth Gerrard, I thinke in all the world is no man so happye as my selfe, hauing defended from perill so noble a person, therefore needelesse is it to make offer of mony for your nurture: in that I prize your golde and silver lesse then drosse, such is my content to see you so well. Palmerin likewise, whyle match might not be found in courtesie and nobility of hart: louingly welcommned Marcella and her Daughter Dyosena, walking along with them vp into the Pallace, where in this sort he presented them to the Emperour. See here my god Lord, thy that from mine infancie, with exceeding kindnes and loue nourished me: let me therefore intreate your maiestie so to conceiue of them, as their paines and charges may be sufficiently repaid. The Emperour taking great pleasure to behold them, said they shoulde continue in the Court with him, commaunding them to bee brought to his Daughters Chamber, who entertained them very graciously: but when they came to vsold Palmerins little pack of clothes, hardly can you imagine the inwarde ioyes of the Mother. For Tolomestra well knew the Scarlet mantle, which her selfe had all embroydered with curious knots of Gold, and all the other prettie trinkets, saying. Doubtlesse Madame, it cannot be but that Palmerin is your Sonne: for well I knew hee was wrapped in these clothes, when Cardyan caried him hence to the Mountaine. Then did Gerrard discourse before all the Ladies, in what manner hee founde yong Palmerin among the Trees: not forgetting to report every thing, from that day till his departure without his knowledge.

Many sweete smiles did the Queene intermedle with her forced teares, hearing the sundrie daungers her Sonne had enured: and for the great loue shee bare to Marcella, shee

## OF PALMERIN DOLIVA.

she made her one of the Ladies of her Chamber, and gaue Dyosena a worthy dowrie to her marriage. As for Gerrard himselfe, the Emperour made him one of his chiefeſt Barons, and dubbed his Sonnes Knights, who proued afterward of hardy courage, as hereafter in the History you may perceiue. This done, the Emperour brought Florendos and Palmerin into his Treasurie, saying. My friends, take, beare away all is yours, dispose thereof as you please; furnish your selues with all needfull thinges against the day of my Daughters marriage. Give bountifully to the poore Knights, that they may likewise prepare themselves in readines, all which will redound to your perpetuall honour.

In sooth my Lord, answered Florendos, it is against all equitie and reason, that during your life I shoulde presume so farre: well worthy were I of the sharpest reprehension, to blanke that, which by right appertaines to him who gaue me life and honour. When the Emperour saſe hee could not perswade them, hee ſent a ſumpter Horsle loden with Gold, to the Prince Olorico and Fryſoll: beside diuers other Jewels of inestimable value, that they might the better furnish their estate againſt the ſolemnitie of the Macedonian Prince. On which day, theſe two Knights determined a Triumph at Armes for the loue of their friend and companion Palmerin, who the ſame day ſhould be sworne Prince, and ſole kyze to the Empire. Upon this occation, and by his highnes commandement, the Heralds were ſent abroad to publish the Tourney, which ſhould endure ſixteene daies together: with the excellencie of the prize to them, that ſhould beare the honor of the tourne each day. Theſe diſports ſo prouoked the Lords of Greece, as neither King, Duke, Countie, Baron or Knight, that was able to manage Horsle and Armes, but repaired to Constantinople, in ſuch troupes, as though a new world had been to be conquered.

# THE HISTORIE

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

### CHAP. XXXV.

How the Knight that Florendos sent to Macedon, referred to the King Primaleon the effect of his charge: and how Palmerin entertained his Fathers Princes and Knights.



Lorēdos having sent one of his Knights to Macedon, in very short time the Messenger arrived at a Castell of pleasure, where as then the King remained for his delight, with the Princess Arismena his Daughter, to expell such contagious thoughts as daily troubled the, for the absence of y Prince, of whom they could understande no tydings. The Knight beeing come into the Kings Chamber, where his Maiestie satte deulring with his Daughter: and setting his knee to the grounde, in this manner began his message. Right high and mightie King, I bring you the very strangest tidings, yet replete with joy and speciall comfort, whereof your Maiestie never heard the like. My Lord the Prince Florendos your Sonne, with humble dutie saluteth your excellencie, and the faire Princess Arismena his Sister, certifying you, that the aduenturous Knight Sir Palmerin, even he by whose meanes your health was recovered: in his owne Son, bogotten on the Princess Griana, Daughter to my Lord the Emperour, to whom he is now betrothed by the consent of all the Princes of the Empire, and Sir Palmerin your Sonne shall be Emperour, after the decease of his noble Grandfather. The god King Primaleon

leon old and decrepite, was so surprised with these newes, as he imagined he heard some fantastical illuding voice, rather then matter of trueth and certaintie: with which inward oppression conceite, his weake estate unable to support it selfe, being overcome with joy, doubt and suspition, as hardly could Arismena his Daughter keepe life in him, so often hee swooned with hearing this reporte, yet at length taking the Knight by the hand, he sayde. My god Friende, God I trust will blesse thee with hono: and prosperitie, for bringing me the tidings I haue long desired. Now may I well saye, that never any Princes age was more beautified with happiness, then mine is, hauing my Sonne allied in such an house, and another Sonne excelling all the Knights in the world. But if the Heauens boughsafe mee so much grace and fauour, that I may once see him before I ende this life: it will be such sufficient content to mee, as then I force not though I liue no longer. Then calling for one of his Secretaries, to reade the Letters his Son had sent him, and hauing heard the contents thereof: commaunded present dispatch of Messengers, to aduertise the Lords and nobilitie of his Realme, who likewise were so glad of these newes, as each one prepared himselfe against the day appointed. The King hauing written Letters to his Sonne, as also to Palmerin, whom he intreated to come and see him: gave them to the Messenger, and withall such an honorable gift for his paynes, as well might content a greater personage. He returning to Constantinople, effectually discharged his answer: and Palmerin reading his Grandfathers Letters, vowed to fulfil his request, and afterward to follow the search of Tryneus.

Now the day being come, when the Lords of Macedon should set forward to Constantinople: they came to take they leauie of the King, who beganne to them in this manner. Ah my god Friendes, God is my witnes, with what god will I wold beare you company, if my yeares

## THE HISTORIE

Yeres did not forbide me: neuerthelesse, let me desire y<sup>e</sup> to behau your selues in such sort, as if I were in person with y<sup>e</sup>, and honor Prince Palmerin no lesse then my selfe. So creating the Duke of Pontus his Lieutenant in this Embassage, because he was a braue and comely young Prince, bequeathed them to happy fortune in their iourney, commanding a Knight to poste before them, that Palmerin might be first aduertised of their comming. On the same day as they shold arraine at the Citie, Palmerin accompaned with the young King of Sparta, the most subtil and ingenious Prince of his time, (as well instructed in the manners and conditions of the auncient Kings his predecessors, especially imitating cautelous Vlisses) and divers other young Princes and Knights, rode to meet the Lords of Macedon at the Gates of the Citie. There alighted all the Lords to kisse his h<sup>m</sup>ds, which he would not permit them to doe: but casting himselfe likewise from his Horse, embrased them all one after another. And mounting on horsebacke againe, entred the Citie, which was so plentifullly stord with Knights and Gentlemen against the triumph, as the Prince Olorico and Fry soll were appoynted by the Emperour, to see the Lords lodged according to their estats, and to erect Tents and Pavillions without the Citie, where the rest of their traine might bee decently entertained.

This chioise made the Emperour of these twaine in this matter, because in all his Court were not two more courteous Princes: beside, they were the only men in the world for assable and gracious entertaining strangers. All this busines ended, and Palmerin deuising with the Queene his Mother, Fry soll being in his compaiane, saw her enter the chamber, to whom he had vowed his serviceable deuotions: wherfore seing some occasiō at the window where the Princes stood, he went and stood by her a pretty while, and at length entred into these speeches. Madame, as yet in al my life I neuer requested any thing of a

Ladic<sup>s</sup>.

## OF PALMERIN DOLIVA.

Lady, and now would I gladly iure one sute to you, (as to her that is the only Mistres of my heart) if I shold not seeme ouerbold in this petition: assuring you, that having obtained this fauour of you, you shall not command any thing, how difficult so ever it be, but I will gladlie enterprize it for your sake. Belike me, Sir Fry soll, answere the Prince s<sup>e</sup>e, you speake but reason, demand then what you please, and you shall obtaine it: because I hold this opinion of you, that you will not request any thing, that shal en ought be prejudicall to mine honor. I shewd thank his god Madame, said Fry soll, this hewe I hope hath beaded me good fortune, and this is my request: that you would so much honor me, as to permit me enter the Countrey under the name of your Knight, because I wuld enterprize nothing but by your comandement. And this (in my iudgement) is such an especial favour, as I durst not presume to sollicite you withall, without the grant my of Lord your Brother Palmerin made me: with this addition, that according to my deserts in the Countrey (if you can so fance) to accept me as your Lord & Husband. With these words the Princesse was touched to the quicke, in that her deserts were that way addicted: and her colour changing with her private conceit, shewd so artificiallie as shewd, and with words fearefull and trembling, thus answere.

In sooth my Lord, never was I moued with any such sute heretofore: but my Brother may so farre comand me, as what likest him I would be loth to gainsay. As for your demande, to enter the field vnder the name of my Knight, with right god will I graunt it: assuring you thereof with this Jewell, whch henceforth so please you to weare, shall remaine as token of my loue to you. So taking a goodlie Emralde from her finger, kissing it, with great courtesie gaue it him. Now am I sure Madame, quoth Fry soll, to haue part of the prize, seing I shall aduenture in your service; nor is this Ring of so little value, but when in the

Combat

## THE HISTORIE

Combat I shall beholde it, my forces wil be redoubled, and new life enter my fainting spirit. Moreouer I dare saie, that never did the King of Giges bring him more honour, then this will to me; for this could not profit or aduantage him, but onely by being invisible. On the contrary, I haue no pleasure but in your presence: nor shall I think my selfe at better ease, then when among Launces and Swounds I may labour for your loue. Then entred the Empresse, with other Ladies newly come to the Court to see the Jousts: which brake of their talke, wherefore taking leaue of each other, they departed the Chamber.

## CHAP XXXVI.

How the Duke of Mecena and the Countie of Reisort, arriued in Allemaigne at the Emperors Court, and after theyr Ambassage dispatched: the Emperour sent backe with them to Constantinople, the Duke of Lorrayne, and the Marquesse of Licena, as his Ambassadours.



W<sup>i</sup>s the day come, when the Fleete appointed for the Embassage to Allemaigne, should depart, wherefore being furnished with all thinges necessary for their voyage, the wind and sea likewise very seruiceable: they came to aduertise Palmerin therof, to know if hee would command the any further seruice.

Palmerin walked with them to the Hauen, & by the way gaue a Letter to the Duke of Mecena, saying, Worthise Duke,

## OF A PLMERIN DOLIVA.

Duke, present my humble dutie to my Ladie Polynarda, and give her this Letter, whereof I pray you bring me an answere. And pleased God that I might goe with ye, never could any voyage better please me: therefore let mee intreate your returne so soone as possible may be. The Duke promised to accomplish his desire, and taking leaue of each other, they went aboord, where hoysing their sailes, with a merrie wind away they went, and arriued in Allemaigne sooner then suspected. When they were come on shore, shoo sent a knight before to the Emperour, that he might bee acquainted with their coming: yet could not his Majestie but marwaille at this Ambassage, because in all his time he never had the like, and therefore thought this strange occasion would sort to as strange an end. At length, to doe them the greater honour, he sent all his Knights and Gentlemen to receive them, who conducted the Duke of Mecena and the Countie of Reisort to the Pallace, and afterward to the presence of the Emperour. When the Duke entred the Chamber, hee saluted his Majestie with great reverence, yet not kissing his hand, because hee came from as great a state as he was: afterward hee begannen in this manner.

W<sup>i</sup>ghtie and redoubted Monarch of Allemaigne, the most high and excellent Emperour of Constantinople my Master, understanding the losse of your Sonne Tryneus, greeteth you with health and continuall happiness. Giuing you to understand, that within these few daies such good fortune hath befallen him, as in all his life time he never had the like. And albeit in his last warre with the Turkes and Mores, he lost both Sormes, Pephewes, and many great Lords of his kinred, and since that time hath beeene troubled, with the hard hap of his daughter Griana Duene of Hungaria, and the suddaine death of her Husband the King: yet hath his Majestie changed all these grieves into joy by knowledge of the godly Knight Sir Palmerin, whose renowne liues as wel in Heathenesse as in Christendom,

D

being

## THE HISTORIE

being now found ~~so~~ enne to my Lord the Emperour, and therefore created sole heire to the Empire. And the noble Prince Palmerin on his behalfe, humbly saluteth your imperiall Maestie, being the Lord to whom he is most affested in service, so that to find out your Sonne Tryneus and the faire Agriola Daughter to the King of Engeland, who two yeres since and moe he lost in the East seas: he abandoneith al honorable preferments, vntill his travel shall be finisched, and he hath brought him hither before your highnes. And having already searched in many Kingdomes, at length he understood that they were living and in health, also that himself shoulde in the end recover them: he thought it necessarie to acquaint you herewith, because he doubted of your extreme sorrow and heauines. The Emperour also minded to heare the good fortune of Palmerin, as also the losse of his Son Tryneus, could not subdue his passions, which moued the teares to trickle downe his cheakes, with conceit of ioy and griefe together: yet shadwing his alteration so well as he could, thus replied. In truth my Lord Ambassadeur, I alwaies imagined by Palmerins worthy actions, that he was descended of noble or royal linage, and greatly it contenteth mee, that he so happily hath found the house of his descent: expelling altogether (considering his promise and proweste) what hath been long imprinted in my heart, concerning the losse of my Son Tryneus. For so fauourable are the heauens to Palmerin in all his enterprises and admirable aduentures: as one may imagin, that deedes of honor & account are reserved only for him, chieflie the recovery of my Sonne, which I hope he will effectuallie bring to passe. And trust me, not without great and sufficient reason, doth the Emperour your Master repute himself happy: this onely good fortune being of soze enough, to discharge his minde of al sorowes and cares, that former occasions moued him withal. Nor know I how to recompence his princelie kindnes, honouring me with so god and happy tidings: but that it may please him to accept.

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

cept of me hereafter, as his louing Brother and faithfull Friend. No other thing my Lord (quoth the Duke) doth his Maestie desire, and to begin this amitie and alliance betwene you, he requesteth, that if his Sonne Palmerin hath heretofore found such fauour in your eies, you would now confirme it, by giving him to wife the Princesse Polynarda your Daughter, whom he will not marry, vntil he hath brought home your Sonne Tryneus. As for the other conuentions of the mariage, these letters shal certifie you: so killing them, he deliuerned them with very great reuerence.

And her shall hee haue with right good will, said the Emperour, for a fitter Husband can she not haue: I think likewise her selfe will consent thereto, for the good opinion she had of him while he remained in our Court. But because I will not displease the King of Fiance, who in like manner requested her for his Sonne and heire: I will conserue with the estates of the Empire, and then deliuern you certaine answere. So the Ambassadours withdrew themselves to their lodgings, and the Emperoz caused the Letters to be reade before all his Princes and Lordes, who could no way mislike of this mariage: and therfore great ioy was made through the Empire, in hope the Prince Tryneus shoulde soone be recovered. These ioyfull newes soone spreading throug the Court, at length were brought to the Princesse Polynarda in her Chamber: who not able to conceale her sudeine ioy, ranne to Brionella, saying. Sweete friend, now mayst thou reioyce with me, in that our loues are now assured vs, whereof before we were vtterlie despaired. Ah my Bryonella, Heauen hath now confirmed our fortunate successe, in that my Palmerin is found to bee the Emperors Sonne of Constantinople: wheresoever he hath certified my Lord and Father by his Embassage, and how Palmerin hath heard tydings of my Brother Tryneus, whom shoulde he will bring home againe, yet not without thy Proclomie I hope. Therefore (my onely copartner in

## THE HISTORIE

loue and feare) let vs abandon all griefe and sorrow, which greatly may prejudice our health and welfare: and now dispose our selues to a contented resolution of life, attaining our long desired fortune. God graunt it may bee so, quoth Bryonella, yet my minde perswades me, that we shall not see them so soone as you wane. The Emperour having conferred with the Lords of Allemaigne, who very well allowed the marriage of his daughter with Palmerin: determined to send to the Emperour of Constantinople Ambassadours, for perfect confirmation of the marriage. And by generall consent, the Duke of Lorryne and the Marquesse of Licena, were chosen for this present Embassage. Whiche being done, the Emperour went to the Empresse Chamber, and sent for his daughter Polynarda, who was so ioyfull of these happy newes, as she could not imagine how to dissemble her content, when shee should come in her fathers presence, yet shadowing it from any open suspect, after shee had saluted her Father with great reverence, the Emperour thus spake.

Daughter, you haue hetherto refused so many noble offers, as hardlie can I permit to moue you with any other: yet once more wil I trie you againe, in hope you wil stand vpon no more refusals, but ioyne with me in opinion, as beyond all other best beseeing you. The man of whom I speake, is noble Palmerin, of whose honorable behauiour you haue some knoledge: and for no other cause hath the Emperour sent his Ambassadours, advise your selfe then what you answer, for all our nobility allow the match, and thereto haue generally subscribed their consent. The Princesse couering her inward joy with modest bashfulnes, thus answered.

If heretofore my god Lord, I excused my obaysance to your commaundement, especially for taking a husband, it was onely for the promise I made to my Brother Tryneus: but now, seeing it is your pleasure, and the good liking of all the estates, as also that the mariage shall not be solemn-

## OF PALMERIN DOLIVA.

solemnized till n.y Brothres presence: I will not disloyly your command, assuring your Maestie, that more content am I to match with him, then any other you named heretofore. And this one speciall cause, that hee laboureth to bring home my noble Brother, which Heaven graunt hee may: otherwile can I not marry, without very great impeach to mine honour.

The Emperour well perceived by the grace of her answer, and her countenance now nothing sad or melancholly: that she was nothing offended with this motion, Wherefore he said. Happy may I count my selffaire daughter, that among all the Christian Princes you haue chosen such a Husband: therefore apparrell your selfe to morrow in the best sort you may, for then shal we Lords the Ambassadours see you. So departed the Princesse to her Chamber, and no more spaches were used till the next day, when the Emperour sent for the Ambassadours of Constantinople, and in the presence of the principall estate of the Empire, ratifieth the mariage betwene Palmerin & his daughter. And for further confirmation thereof, premised to send his owne Ambassadours with them, to satisfie (on his behalfe) the Emperour, Florendos and Palmerin. For which exceeding gentlenes, the Duke of Mecena (in the Emperours name) thanked his Maestie, earnestlie intreating him to dispatch them thence so soone as might bee, because their charge was to retorne with all possible sped. This resolution absolutely set downe, the Emperour (for the greater hono) caused them to dine with him at his owne Table, & grace being said by the Lord Almicer, the Duke of Mecena desired his Maestie, that hee might see the Princesse Polynarda: whereof hee made promise so soone as Dinner was done, when taking the Duke of Mecena by the one hand, and the Countie of Reisort by the other, brought the to the Empresse Chamber, where they found the Princes in such sumptuous ornaments, and accoupanied with such rare grace and exquisite beautie, as they

## THE HISTORIE

judged her rather an Angell then any earthly creature. And greatly was the Duke abashed at such a singular spectacle, not knowing how to frame his opinions: but having humbly saluted the Empresse, came to the Princesse, and on his knee reverently kist her hand, with these speeches. Let it not displease you faire Madam, that I blesshis honorable dutie to you: for I doe it in this respect, as to the gracious Ladie and Empresse (hereafter) of Constanti-nople.

By this meane hee secretly conueied Palmerins Letter into her hand, for which the Princesse gaue him many devout thankes, which were coupled with such maiestiall gestures, as neither Nero or Galba were done the like, no not by Constantine himselfe to the Pope. And the Dukes words had raised a swete blush in her cheekes, yet could she with such choyse answeres excuse the same, as gaue greater countenance to all her behaviour. Then turned the Duke to the Emperour, and smiling, said: Trust me my Lord, now doe I verilie beleue what hath heeretgore been told me of the Prince Palmerin, that hee is an especiall Judge of the beauty of Ladies, for in mine opinion he hath chosen one without a second: and of her may truly be affirmed, what the Poets described of Helena, terming her the Goddesse of beauty. With this rare Princesse to be matched an Husband so famous, well may be said: the couple to be without compare, for the faire forme Paris may not be equalled with Palmerin. So the Ambassadours departing, the Princesse withdrew her selfe to her Chamber, where reading her friends Letter, heroyes and pleasures redoubled, because she might now boldlie credite her fortune.

And before shee would forget the inuention her spirit of feso, shew presently wrote an answer: earnestlie intreating him to hasten his return, to abreviate her languishing desires, which now made her life but a shadowe of death. Having close sealed her Letter, shew sent it to the Duke by

one

## OF PALMERIN DOLIVA.

one of her most truffie Ladies, with divers other rich gifts and presents. The Duke of Lorrain and his company readie, departed thence with the Ambassadours, and winde and weather seruing so well, they arrived at Constanti-nople the day before Florendos his nuptials. Newes being brought hereof to the Court, Palmerin accompanied with many Princes and Knights, went to the Hauen, and at the landing of the Ambassadours, Palmerin embrased the Duke of Lorrain, and the Marquesse of Licena: and so ryding to the Pallace, beguiled the time with divers discourses, where among, the Duke of Lorrain thus spake. Sir Palmerin, I alwaies did imagine, that those strange ad- ventures atchived by you, during the obscurity of your you- ger peers, woulde in the end reueale your honorable pa- rentage, and make your name for ever immortall: & were the Prince Tryneus with you now, for the very best con- dition in the world would I not leauue your company. Gen- tle Duke, answere Palmerin, if I did not persuade my selfe, how greatly I shold comfort your mind, by recou- ring your Prince Tryneus, I shold account my life so un- happy, as presensly I would desire my death. God graunt, quoth the Duke, that you may finde him againe, for that will bee the greatest god that ever came to our Empire: considering the vertues, magnanimitie and speciall chival- rie, which is as currant in our yong Princes as in any o- ther. And thus they spent the time till they came to the Pallace, where the Duke of Lorrain after hee had saluted the Emperour and the Princes, delivered the message committed to his charge. Wherewith Palmerin was not a little pleased, considering what he had read in his Ladies Letter, which discouered the sorowes shew endured for his absence: but being assured of her firme loyalty, as also that he was now promised him in mariage, his cares were the lesse, commaunding the Duke to be lodged neare his owne Chamber, that he might the better confer with him of his Mistresse, whom he loued as deere as his owne life.

CHAP.

# THE HISTORIE

## CHAP XXXVII.

How after the Prince Florendos and Queene Griana were espoused together, Palmerin was sworne Prince and heire of Greece and Macedon, by the consent of the Lords of the Empire and the Reelme.



He Ambassadours of Alimaigne being now come, the Emperour was aduertised thereof, and considering that the Princes of Thrace and Macedon had expected their presence for the space of six daies: it was appoyned, that on the morrow the Prince Florendos and Griana should be married. And the day being come of this long desired wedding, she was clothed in such rich and costly vestures, as though she had bene still a Virgin. And heere to set downe the sumptuous vestures of her, her Husband, the Emperour, the Empresse, with diuers other Lords, Ladies and Gentlewomen, also the sollemnitie and ceremonies, both at the Church and at the Pallace: would waste a great deale of Readers, and therefore I will let it passe vnder your conceit, and speake of such things as are most needfull.

After that the Prince Florendos and Griana were espoused by the Patriarch of Constantinople, the whole traine returned to the Pallace, where before the Gate was erected a goodly Theater, hanged round about with cloth of Golde, and therin were set many Chayres and Canopies of estate. There was the Prince Palmerin placed in

the

## OF PALMERN D'OLIVA.

the cheefest seate, the Emperour and Florendos on the one side, and the Empresse and Griana on the other: then was Palmerin sworne Prince of Greece, with all the observations in such causes accoumpted, by all the Lords of the Empire, from the Emperour himselfe to the very meanest Gentleman. In like sorte did the estates of Macedon, his Father Florendos first beginning, the Duke of Pontus next, and in the selfe same order as the Imperialistes had done. This done, the Tables were couered, and all the Princes placed according to their dignities, the Emperour and Empresse at the cheefest, the new maried couple at the second, and the Prince Palmerin at the third: so consequently the Kings, Princes, Dukes, Marquesses, Countes, and all the rest in order. As to the magnificence of yeruice, the roiall order obserued, the Triumphes, Homories, Masques, and daunting: would but fill paper with needelesse reports, in that your iudgments can concerne therof sufficiently. But the Tables beeing withdrawne, the noble Gallants went and Armed themselves, and entred the field which was appoynted without the Cittie, and furnished with Scaffolds and standings for the Lords and Ladies, where the afternone was spent gayly at Yll and Tourney, with daintie chivalrie performed by Fry soll, Olorico, the King of Sparta, the Duke of Pontus & many other Knights. When night was come, and Supper ended, the Bride and Dide grame were honorably brought to their Chamber, and Florendos beeing alone with his Ladie, thus beganne. Ah sweete Madame, how many sorowes haue I endured, in expectation of this long desired houre: but hauing at length compassed my will, I hold my selfe sufficiently satisfied: giving credite to the auncient proverbe, That true loue never wanteth his reward, and that which I thought would haue bene my death, hath now returned me greatest hono: and prouit. In sooth my Lord, answered y Queene, I was euermore perswaded of your louytle: but where necessitie ruleth, reason hath no place. And if by the exterieour action

3

## ANV. THE HISTORIE

I have bene disloyall to you: yet my hart, which first of all I gave to you, never diminished in will to loue you firmly. For which Tarisius very often reproyed mee, not withstanding in the ende, and by the sufferance of God I thinke, he received the reward, that the blumper of another mans right deserueth. But why shold we (my Lord) call now to memorie things past, or remember maters which brede nothing but heauinesse: it is for you to excuse me, and for my selfe to loue and honour you. All the points of theyr former Diuorce debated betwene them, to such effecte theyr pleasures, sorted in the ende, as that night shee conceyued with a daughter, which proued to be beyond all other in beauty.

On the morrow the Prince Palmerin entred the Lysts Royall, because this day hee desired to Joust. Before him went the chiefe Princes of Greece on foot, and six Trumpets to make him way: hee managing his Horse with such lofty Voltages, as every one delighted to behold him.

After he had done his reverence to the Emperour, he gaue the spurres to his Horse to encounter Fry soll: But when they came to mete, Fry soll threwh by his Lance, and would not touch him. The like did the Prince Olorico, and divers other Knights: whereat Palmerin somewhat angry, stroke his Lance into the ground, and brake it, and causing himselfe to be unarmed, went vp to the Emperour in his standing, to see the Pastime of the other Knights: and he was no sooner come, but the Emperour thus spake vnto him.

We not offended my Sonne, because you haue unarmed your selfe without tryall of the Joust: for the Knights haue don as best deserued them, not to aduenture on their Lord and Maister. But if you would so faine haue some spoyle with them, you must heereafter disguise your selfe from being known: otherwise I see you shall but lose your labour. When Palmerin hearde these words, to the end hee might somewhat delight the Emperour and the Ladys, especiallie such as never saw his behaviour in Chualtrie: hee was determined the last day of the Tryumph, to come sudden-

ly

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

ly among them, and to be Armed in such sorte as none shuld knowe him. In brieue, nowe is the last day come, and the Emperour understanding that Palmerin woulde enter the Lysts disguised, went to his standing, and Palmerin secretly entring his Chamber, found there a white Armour, such as the yong Knights was accustomed to weare, which his Diuatre had there prouided for him: Armed himselfe presently therewith, and mounted on a Horse of the same colour, entred the field on the Assailants side, because hee had heard, that this day the King of Sparta woulde encounter the Duke of Pontus, Fry soll, Olorico, and others of the moste gentle Knights in the Companie. The Emperour knewe Palmerin among all the rest, and said to Floreados: What thinke you (Sonne) of the white Knight? Do you knowe him? No my Lord, (quoth the Prince) I knowe not what he is: but me thought he entred with a tolly countenance: It now remaines to know what he can do.

At the encounter, Palmerin vnderstod the Prince Olorico, afterward the Duke of Pontus, and the other Knights compaine: then hauing broken his Lance, the Emperour sent him another by a Squyre, willing him (for his sake) to implore it as he had done the other: but hee woulde make no answer because he feared to be knowne. Now was Fry soll much offendid at the Prince Oloricos misfortune, wherefore he woulde reuenge his friends cause: but the King of Sparta, esteemed a hardy & approued knight, slept betweene him, and being cast of from his Horse, was so hurt with the fall, as he was carried forth of the field to his Chamber.

Then Fry soll gaue the spurres to his Horse, and encountring Palmerin with such puissance, as he made him loose his Sychrops, and had he not caught fast holde about his Horse necke, he had fallen to the ground: but Fry soll, his fortune was so bad, as his Horse tumbling felldowne, and his man stier under him, wherevpon the Emperour saide to Floreados, that the knight in white Armour was his Sonne Palmerin. In sooth my Lord (quoth the Prince) his fortune is god

## THE HISTORIE

good if it be hee, and well may hee be esteemed the worthyest in the company. The Duke of Lorrayne hearing their talke, said.

Peruaile not my Lord that Prince Palmerin hath so good successe, for in Allemaigne haue I seene him doo much more then this, and so much, as my Lord the Emperour hath beeene constrained to cominaunde them gine ouer. Palmerin seeing himselfe Maister of the fielde, departed as secretly as hee came thither, and so did the Emperour, Florendos, Griana, and all the other Ladies, among whome the yong Princesse Armida was most penitue for her friendes misfortune, so that by her countenaunce her inwards affections might easly bee discerned. But on the morrowe, when Palmerin sent for all the Knights of name with whom he had Jousted, and euery one knew that hee wonne the prize of the last daies Tryumph: the sorrow of the Princesse Armida was converted into pleasure, reputing it an honor to her Knight to be vnhorsed by her Brother.

When the Emperour understood that Palmerin was iesing with the Knights, hee came into the Hall, and taking him by the hande, merrily sayde. See heere my friendes the white Knight, whome you all were so desirous to know, but if you finde your selues agreed with him, you must late the blame on mee: for I was the onely cause of this enterprise, to the ende that having made open prooofe of himselfe, you all might witnesse his valour and bountie; who after my deceasle must bee your Lord and Gouvernor.

Now were all the Knights well contented againe, especially the Prince Olorico & Fry soll: who thought hee was somewhat bruised with his Horse falling on him, came and embrased Palmerin, saying. In sooth my Lord, the strenght of your arme and Launce yesterday, hath giuen vs good experiance of your vertue: yet our desire to reuenge our companions soyle was such, as had you bene

our

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

our Father we shoulde not haue knowne yee. It may be (said Palmerin) that yee made no reckoning of the Knight, who handled ye in this rough manner: or that you thought him not worthy to beare a Launce, because you refused to Joust with him the other day. A kinde soute (quoth Fry soll, perceiving how Palmerin tested) and queintly deliuered, is this your recompence to the knynghts that friendly spared you? If I had knowne so much before, I shoulde haue cryed quittance with you before wee parted. These wordes Fry soll spake in such sort, as Palmerin imagined he was in choller: wherefore he thus answered. Good brother I pray you excuse mee, if in doing my deuoir I haue offendyd yee: when you please I will do penitance for it, if it be but to please her, who cannot hide her god will towards you.

Hereupon all the thre friendes embrased together, taking leaue of each other till the next morning, when a new Tourney was begonne againe, and continued for fve daies together: the hono wherof (to make short) happened to Fry soll, until the last day, when a strange Knight came into the fielde, and brought one with him resembling a Gyant in stature, who with a Turkish Bow and enuenomed arrowes, seu and wounded very many. So that Palmerin seeing the spoyle of his friendes, was constrained to goe armes him selfe, and defying the Gyant, overcame both him and the Knight that brought him. Some haue reported this Giant to be a Monster, in forme of the Centaures that encounthered Hercules at the nuptials of Hippodamia: but such ridiculous folties are not here to be inserted, and though the Spaniard in his history affirme it, yet carreyes it no likelihood, wherefore leauing such impertinent discourses, let vs proceede as occasion doth leade vs.

CHAP.

# THE HISTORIE

## CHAP. XXXVII.

How the aged Knight Apolonio, found Netrydes Father to Fry soll, and brought him to Constantinople, where he was made Gouernour generall of Hungaria: and how Fry soll espoused the Princesse Arinida.



Polonio having received Fry solls Letters, and a brefe direction for his tourney, to y place where he shold find his Father Netrydes: followed his intent with such diligence, as he came to the Castell where he remained, and found him sitting at the Gate, being newly returned from hunting in the Forrest. So soone had Apolonio beheld him, but hee presently knew him, wherefore feigning that hee and his company were Knights errant: saluted him, and demanded if he wold give them entertainmet for that night, because they knew no place of lodging neare at hand. Netrydes, who was ever of a most noble minde, welcommned them very courteously, commanding their Horses to the stable, and themselves to be honorablie feasted at Supper. All suppetime, Netrydes very earnestly eyed Apolonio, perswading himself that he had seene him before: and Apolonio likewise well regarded Netrydes, neither daring to question with other for feare of misconceipt.

In the end, Apolonio thorowly resolued that this was the man he sought, and seeing two yong Gentlemen sitting at the Table by him, he thus beganne. I pray you Sir tell me, are these two Gentlemen your Sons? They are sy, answered

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

answered Netrydes. Haue you not one more (q. Apolonio) elder then these? When Netrydes remembred his Sonne Fry soli, whom he iudged to be dead because of his long absence: wherefore breathing forth a very great sigh, saide. In trueth Sir, I know not whether I haue or no, for it is long since I lost mine elder Son by great misfortune, and he hereto haerde no tynges of him, nor know I whether he is living or dead. By what mishappe I pray you Sir, quoth Apolonio, did you lose him? Whereupon Netrydes discoursed the whole circumstance, in selfe same manner as Fry soll had reported: whereby he was now assured that Fry soll was his Sonne, and so without dissembling any longer, said. I can iesolue ye my Lord, that he is yet living, and in very god disposition. O my God (answered Netrydes) if these newes may be true, then am I the most happie Knight in the world. And so are you, saide Apolonio, for he is living, recovered of the disease hee had when he departed from you, and is now one of the most esteemed Knights in all Greece: so that having deliuered the Duccene Grian a scony pryson, which victory he obtained in the company of noble Palmerin, against y two Nephewes of King Tersins, he is founde to bee neete knyght to the Empresse. For which cause he hath sent, and I am expecially hither come, to bring you with me to Constantinople, to the end you may receive your owne by right, I meane the principall regiument in the Realme of Hungaria. Ah heauens, answered Netrydes, for ever be your prayses, in revealing the wrong my Brother did, when causelesse he banished me my nativ Country: but that I may be resolued in one doubt, I pray ye tell me, were ye not sometime of my Brothers Court? Yes trulie answered Apolonio, and to your Father I serued as a Page in his Chamber: now in respect of the manisfolde courtesies I received at your hands, for ever I bowed my selfe to doe you any service, desiring you with all possible spedde to hasten your departure; for I greatlie doble we shall not else finde your Sonnes

## THE HISTORIE

Sonne at the Court, because hee determineth to iourney with Palmerin, in the search of Trincus the Emperours Sonne of Allemaigne.

Heremans Netrydes leauing the charge of his house to one of his Cozins, departed with his wife and his two Sonnes : making such spedie dispatch in their iourney, as not many daies after the Tryumph, they arrived at Constantinople. Whiche when Frysol vnderstood, hee went to meeete them : beeing accompanied (for the greater hono: to his Parents) with Palmerin, the King of Sparta, and many other yong Princes. There were many salutations and welcomes, giuen with great toy by the Sonne to his Father, Mother, and Brethren, and by the Parents likewise to their Sonne, with such exceeding signes of loue, as you can better conceiue then I expresse. After all these courteous greetings, they went to the Court, where began a fresh occasion of toy, betwene the Empresse and her Neephew Netrydes : shee then embracing him in her armes, thus spake.

Ah my noble Neephew, how haue the Heauens blessed me with speciall fauour, in suffering me before my death to see my choyest friendes, whom I was out of all hope to behold againe : especially you, whose long absence from your Countrey, hath rather deliuered imaginacions of your death then life. Neuerthelesse, it is the prouidence of the highest, that after all y<sup>e</sup> troubles you suffered in your youth, you might receiue the recompence in your age, by the knightly hono: and bountie of your lineage. In sooth Dame sayd Netrydes, not so pleasant to me is high preferement, as that I liue to see my Sonne againe, for hauing contented my selfe in my little Castell, with a life free from offence and solitarie, I did account it to exceede all other : but now seeing in my declining yeeres, the God of Heauen hath thought god that I might profit his people, the thought were base and abred in me to make refusal. So long were they deuising on these and other matters, as the good

## OF PALMERYN DOL IVA.

god night being giuen on all sides, the Emperour caused these new come friendes to be conducted to their lodgings.

But on the morrow, when Palmerin came to bid the Emperour god morrow, he thus beganne. You know my Lord, that a Common wealth without a head and Gouvernour, (as for example) is the Realme of Hungaria, cannot long endure without sedicione, tumults or rebellion: wherefore, vnder your Maiesties reuende regarde, I thinke it expedient that my Sister Armida shoule be giuen in mariage to Sir Frysol, because in nobilitie of minde and perfection of iudgment, hardly may so god a Knight be found, nor she enioy a fitter Husband, and so may the Realme by neallie descend, from Netrydes noble aged, to his noble Sonne.

The Emperour liked well of this advise, wherefore the same day were Frysol and the Princesse Armida espoused together: to the god liking of all, but especially of the louers themselves, whose secret desires were now effectually required. After the feast was ended, Netrydes iurited Gouvernour of Hungaria, departed with his wife & Sons to his Kingdome: where he was received very honorablie by his Subiects, who had not forgot their former loue to him: and the unnatural dealing of their King his deceas'd Brother.

## CHAP. XXXIX.

How Palmerin tooke his leaue of the Emperour, his fa-  
ther and mother, to follow the search of the Prince  
Trineus,



Certaine daies after the solemnite of this honorable mariage was ended betwene Fry soll and the yong Princesse of Hungaria, Nirrides likewise gone to his seate of government: al the Lordes and Princes of the Empire, except such as continually abode in the Emperours Court, returned to their owne homes, thelike did all the strange Knights that came to the Tryumphes, except the King of Sparta and the Lords of Macedon. Wherefore Palmerin now remembryng his promise to his Ladie, and how long he had staid slothfull at Constantinople, determined to depart, and vnderstanding that his father was with the Emperour, came to them with thele speches.

My gracious Lords, it is now thre moneths and more that I haue remained heere by your commaundement, contrary to the promise that I made my Ladie: wherefore (by your leaue) I am nowe determined to departe hence, before the Duke of Lorayne returne backe againe, that he may assure my Lord the Emperour that I am gone to seeke my Friends. My Sonne quoth the Emperour, unwilling am I thou shouldest leaue vs so soone, but if the matter may not be contrarie, in respect you are bound to her by faithfull promise, who aboue all other deserueth lou-

all

## OF PALMERIN DOLIVA.

all service: I neither may or will gaine say you, but intreat your retурne so soone as may be: You shall therfore take with you a good company of knyghts, who may prevent any sinistre occasions, whiche your trauell in strange Countreys happily may offer: that my heart enyoying life by your presence, may once more see you before my daie be expired.

I beseech you amy Lord, and wered Palmerin, grieve not your selfe by my absence, which shall not be long I hope, neither will the multitude of knyghts availe in my enterprise, for more by fortune then by force of Armes must the aduenture be ffulli shewed. Deschene as you thinke good answere the Emperour, in meantyme I will cause phoulation for your traime. Palmerin having now licence to depart, persuaded Fry soll so earnestly as hee could, to abide at Constantinople, as wel for the loue he bare his Sister Armida, as because he was loth to part the new married couple: but all the circumstantes he could see, might not perswade him, for his religiouse loue to his Friende, exceeded his affection to the Princesse; so that for a flat resolution, he answered, that nothing but death shoulde separate their company. Palmerin seeing Fry soll continue in his former amittie, and that the desce whiche conquers all men, could not preuaile in his noble minde: reioyced greatly therat, determining to recompence his princely kindnes, if Fortune did not contrary him in his enterprised tourney. And fearing least any new occasion shoulde arise to delay this intent, dispatched presently his Letters to the Emperour of Allemaine, and his Ladie Polynarda, honouring his highnesse Ambassadours with many sumptuous gifts. Having now ordered all his affaires, and euerie one being ready to mount on horsebacke, hee came to bid the Dueene his Mother farewell: for well he knew, that if shre could any way hinder his departure, his tourney shoulde soone preuented. The Dueene with motherlie loue embrasing her Sonne, said, Ah my Sonne, hast thou been so shor a time

# THE HISTORIE

with me, and will thou now leave mee? truff mee it to a point of great vngentlenes: to deale so hardly with thy mo-  
ther: but saving the Emperour and my Lord haue quen-  
their consent, my gemesay will be to little purpose. And  
nothing would it availe me to set before thine eyes, the  
inconstancie of Fortune, her sleights and trecherie; com-  
monlie against great personis: when they are in the way  
to prosperitie, honor and renowne. Therefore my Sonne,  
I commit the to the protection of Heaven, desiring that to  
regard mine honor, which by the ought to be defended; and  
now may runne in danger of common reepoch, in that the  
bulgars as judge after their owne humours, not according-  
to the qualite and estimation of vertue. For this cause  
let thy returne be the sooner, as thou tenderest my life and  
thine owne god.

All which Palmerin promised to doe, and so comming  
dolme into the Court, found there the Emperour and his  
Father mounted on horsebacke, who bare him compaines  
two miles from the Cittie: where after many courtesies  
betwene them, the Emperour and Florendos returned to  
the Court againe, where the Duke of Lorraine staid  
their comming, when taking his leue likewise, went a-  
boord, and sailed with so good a winde, as in shourt time he  
arrived in Allemaigne, where he was graciously welcom-  
med by the Emperour, and especially by the Princesse his  
Daughter, to whom he reported the honourable behauoir  
of Palmerin, and how he was sworne Prince of Greece  
and Mace don. Whereof was she so ioyfull, as never could  
she be satisfied with the discourse, making many demands  
to the Duke, as well of the Trympes, Tourney and dis-  
ports, as also of the mariage celebratzed at Constantinople:  
whereto the Duke returned such fit answers, as nothing  
wanted to extoll her friends honor, yet with any occa-  
sion of calouzie to the Princesse, whereto amorous Ladies  
are commonly subiect.

But now returning where wee left before, you must  
note

# OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

note, that Palmerin beeing departed the Confines of the  
Emperour, entered his Fathers Realme, where in every Cittie  
he was entertained with great triumphing: especially  
in the Cittie of Hermida, where the Merchant dwelt that  
was Palmerins Master, for whom he sent, but he was ad-  
uertised by his Wife, that her Husbande was gone to the  
Sea, and his two Sonnes with him, wherfore he gaue her  
many Rich gifts, and Letters for his Masters frere entran-  
chise and libertie. At his departure from thence, he came to  
the place where Vrbanillo his Dwarfe was borne, whose  
Father was there living a pore auncient Knight, and his  
Sister as tall stature as Vrbanillo, whome Palmerin (at  
her Brothers request) sent to Constantinople, to his Bro-  
ther. And for the honor of the Order his Dwarfs Father  
had receyued, hee gaue him the Village wherent he dwelt,  
and in the presence of the Macedonians put him in posses-  
on thereof, who not a little commended the discrete and li-  
berall minde of the Prince.

From thence he iournayed to the chiese Cittie of Mace-  
don, where remained the Aged King his Grandfather: but  
how the Citizens entertained him, and what honourable  
Tryumphs were made at the Court, I list not here sette  
downe, because it would bee more tedious then beneficiall.  
As for his Aunte the Princesse Arismena, shee at his com-  
ming met him in the Basse court, with all her Ladys: and  
as Palmerin fell on his knee before her, to kisse her hande,  
shee stayed hym in her armes, saying: God forbid syr Pal-  
merin, that the Knight of greatest fame in the Worlde,  
should reverence so simple a Damosell as my selfe: but ra-  
ther am bound by duty to honor you, as the man by whose  
especiall vertues, our Linage is this day crownd with per-  
petuall memorie.

Fayre Aunte (answering Palmerin) if before I knew you  
to bee my fathers syster, I deuoted my selfe to your Ser-  
vice, with much more affection shall I desire to followe it  
now: therfore suffer me (swete Madaine) to kisse your  
hand,

## THE HISTORIE

hand, as being the Ladie to whom I rest continually bounden. I beseech you my Lord (quoth the Princesse) to pardon me, for never shall a Macedonian Maiden be so reprooved, but that she well knowes her duty to her betters. At these speeches came the King of Sparta, the Dukes of Pontus, and Meccena, and the Prince Eustace, whome the Princesse welcommed with exceeding honour. After all courtesies ended, Palmerin saide,

I understand Madame, that the King your Father is crazed and sickly: if it be so I am very sorry, I pray you therefore let vs see how his Maiestie fareth. When you please my Lord (quoth the Princesse) for I thinke if heretofore he receyued health by you, Fortune may at this time afforde the like: and yet (as I haue read) there is no remedie for troublesome Age, but onely death it selfe, which is the Gate to immortality, and endeth all Diseases whatsover. So entred they the Kings Chamber, and the Princesse going to the Bed-side to her Father, saide: My Lord, se heere the god Knight Palmerin your neophye, may it please you to speake to him, and bid him welcome: Well knowe I that hee is right welcome to your Maiestie, were there no other cause then the happie recoverie of your sonnes health, which his Aduenturous Travell heretofore brought ye.

The god Olde King, whome the Palme caused to shake and tremble: raysed himselfe uppe a little, and beholding Palmerin, with weake and fable boyce, thus speake. Come vvere my Noble Sonne, that these armes halfe deade may embrase the, and my lips now dry and withered, may once kisse the before I die. So holding him betwix his armes, and lifting his eyes to Heauen, said. O my God, for ever be thy name honored and praised, in vouchsafing me to see my Sonne before my death. Ah sweet death, the ende of all miseries, and beginning of felicity, now art thou welcome, for bear not thy stroke, in that I haue now seene the honourable defence of my Subiects hereafter, yeasuch a worshipe

Friend

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

Friend for them, as never had they thelike. Ah my Son, how dearely ought I to loue the: how gracious hath thy remembrance binne of me: yet feare I my selfe so weake and fable, as nature cannot prolong my life thre daies. Alas, I know not which of vs twaine hath greatest cause to reioyce; either the Father seeing his Sonne, even when he is readie to leaue him, or the Sonne finding his Father attending his coming before he glie vp the ghost. I hope my god Lord, said Palmerin, that you shall not leaue vs so soone, therfore take a god hart, and that no doubt will prolong your life. Alas my Sonne, quoth the King, unluckie age hath so weakened my bodie, and euern dryed vp my vital blood, as longer I may not live: and had not hope to see the lengthened my languishing daies, thou hadst found my bodie breathlesse, which yet sustayneth fable life, onely by thy presence.

Now that I may leaue this world with content, and traualle with better quiet to mine ende: tell me (good Sonne) the whole matter concerning thy Father Florendos, with the perfect discourse of thine owne fortunes. The Palmerin rehearsed every circumstance, both of his Fathers delivery, how hee had married the Duccene Griana, and in what estate he left them both at his departure.

## CHAP. XL.

How the aged King Primaleon of Macedon, Grand Father to Palmerin, died, and how the King of Sparta espoused the faire Princes Arismena, Sister to the Prince Florendos.



At two daies had Palmerin staid in the Court of his Grand Father, but the aged King resigned his life to the celestiall powers: for which cause, all the Tryumphes ceased, and generall sorow entertained for the losse of their good King. Arismena who so reverently loued her Father, as in his life time shee would not match in mariage with any one, because it was his will it should be so: neuer shewed her selfe discontented therewith, but her Father being now dead, she committed the whole affaires of the Realme to the Countie Roldin, one appointed for that office by generall godliking. With such honorabile pompe was the funerall obsequies executed, and the Princesse gracious behavour therein so espeially commended: as the young King of Sparta became amorous of her, and discouered his minde to Palmerin, in treating him so to fauour the cause, as he might make Arismena his Queene.

Palmerin very toyfull of the Kings motion, in that hee was one of the chieffest estates of Greece, acquainted his Aunt with the Kings request, and what an honor it was to her to be so matched. Nor was the Princesse hart so cold by her Fathers death, but seeing the yong beautifull King loued

## OF PALMERIN IN GOLIVA.

Whereto so well as he gaue to haue againe: so that considering her owne estate, being now in geeres past fowre and twentie, she made some excuses by her Fathers late decease, but Palmerin perceyued by her modest yelding looks, that the heart consented; although the mouth was lothe to detest it. Wherefore the next day they were espoused together, by which meane the King was moare affected to follow Palmerin, as he determined before he came from Constantinople; as well for the great kindest he found in him, as for his fauour in furthering him with the ende of his desires.

Soin was the King more importunate on Palmerin, to accept him for his companion in his travell: who at length condiscended, although he imagined, that his Aunt had rather haue her new husband farre with her. The day being appayned for their departure, Palmerin concluded with the King of Sparta, that hee shold send Arismena to Constantinople, there to stay his returne with her Brother Florendos. For her safe conduct thither, all the chieffest knyghts that came thence with hym were chosen, except the Prince Eustace, Daute to Duke of Mezena. And Palmerin fearing his voyage would be longer then hee expected, commanded Vianillo his Dwarse to returne to the Queene Arismena: and if I say (quoth he) longer then a yare from Constantinople, goe then to Allemaine with his Letter to comfort my Ladie, and take with her the Sister, whom I sent to the Queene my Mother.

The Dwarse (although he had rather haue gone with his Master, then attred on Ladies) not doting to gainsay him, returned with Arismena, who in short time after arrived at Constantinople; where the Prince Florendos very ioyfully receiued her, being not a little contented that she was ioyned in mariage with the King of Sparta, yet his Fathers death he tooke very heauily. How welcome he was to the Emperour, the Empresse, and Queene Griana, I doubt not but you can suffitiently imagine, who continuall

olky consoled her till her Husband returned. Before Palmerin departed from Macedon, he established all things in due and decent order, treating the Countie Rouldin Lieutenant Generall for the Realme: commanding as full obeysance to him as to theyr Soueraigne Lorde the King his Father. Afterwardes hee tooke order that his Shippynge might be ready, because he would delay no longer the search of Trineus.

CHAP. LXI.

¶ How Palmerin and his companions sayling on the Mediterranean Sea, were taken by Olimaell, Admyrall to the great Turke: & of their fortunes in Greece, where Palmerin saued Laurana the Princessse of Durace.

**R**oldin beeing established in the Gouernement of Macedon, and the Shippe ready whiche Palmerin hadde appointed: he went aboard with his vowed Friends that wold not leue him, viz. Frisoll, the Prince Olorico, the Duke of Pontus, the King of Sparta, and Eustace Honne to the Duke of Mecena. These syre having sworne theye endeuours in the search of Tryneus, committed themselves to the mercie of the Winde and Seas, not knowinge where they should first take Landing. Having thus sayled syre or sea-uen dayes together, & the Seas nothing rough or tempestuous: they climbed vp to the maine toppe, to see if they could descry any shore. And as they were deuising merrily to-  
ther, they suddenly espyed a great flote of Shippes, which with winde at will made apace towards them; but because you

204

## OF PALMERIN H DOLIVA

you shal understand of whence and what they were, attend the sequell and you shall hereof know The More Olimaell, as you haue read in the former part of this Historie, after he had giuen the Princesse Agriola to the great Turk, entered into so great credit, as is recompence of his gift, he was made high Admirall of Turkie: so that beeing renowned for a knyght of pereleſſe deſert, the Turk gave him the charge of his great Armie, wherewith he shold continually diſturb the Christians. This Olimaell was Generall of this huge Fleete descried by Palmerin, whereat somewhat amazed, he called one of the Pilots, demanding if he knew the Enſigne of whence they were. The Pilot had no ſooner beheld them, but hee presently ſaid they were Turks, and no was there war for themſelues to eſcape, because he ſawe ſixe light Galleys were made out to him, and the reſt came mainlie vpon them. But Palmerin as a Prince experimeted in daungers, thus ſpake to his companions,

P  
Noble frendes, wheres knyghtly force or boun-  
tie cannot availe, it were mere folly to vse it, we are but  
sire, and all in one vessel, and farre we cannot lie before  
we shall be taken: I thinke it best therefore that wee vse  
sound dissimulation, and so expect when Fortune will bet-  
ter teach vs the way to recover our losse, and revenge vs  
on our enemies to their confusyon. Withdraw your selues  
and leane me alone to talke to them, because I can wel  
speake the Arabian language. Yet thinke not that covar-  
dise or feare of death makes me vse these speches: for in  
an action invincible, hardines and knyghtly proesse will  
be esteemed as folly and indiscretion. Haue then patience  
my good frendes, I hope that all shall turne to our god.  
No sooner had he ended his speches, but he heard the Cap-  
taine commaund them to yeld, or els they shold die. Die  
quoth Palmerin, that goes verie hard: assure vs our liues  
and we yeld, otherwise not. I promise thee, said the Cap-  
taine, neither thou nor thy compagine shal haue any harme

162

## THE HISTORIE

Soleaung on the Shippes, they brought it to the Com-  
rall Olimaell, poynting to him all the knyghtes they tooke  
therewer for which he hardely thanked them, saying,

Tell me Gentleman: and dissemble not, are ye Turks  
or Chirstians? Sir, quoth Palmerin, seeing Fortune hath  
biene so contrarie to vs, you shall understand truely what  
we are. We are Chirstians and poynted knyghtes, searching  
aduentures to gaine honor and profit, in some Princes ser-  
vice, be he Heathen or Chirstian. And because wee cannot  
now shew you what we are able to do: it please you to sus-  
ser vs enjoy our libertie, and graunt vs the beneftie of our  
Armour, we will promise you we shall make fathfull seruice.  
Olimaell, wha was by nature ferre and austere, seeing  
these ffeyned knyghtes so yong and braue accoumpled persons,  
imagined their assistance wold greate availe him,  
wherefore he thus answered: Gentleman, if you will shew  
to me by your fath, that you will not depart from me with-  
out my licence, but will loyallie employ your selues in  
what I shall comand: you shall haue your Armour a-  
gaine, and I will not vse you as my slaves and prisoners,  
but as my honeste compaunions and frendes: whiche oache  
they all tooke to binne; wherefore they were immedately Ac-  
tmed againe, and remained in the Galley with Olimaell:  
wha sawing their armour so rich and costly, esteemed them to  
be of noble blood, and therfore caused them to be verie ho-  
norablie intreated.

So sayng on, at length they came neare to the great  
Cittie of Albania: wher Olimaell comandmented two or  
three foyllas, to goe vnder stand in what estat the Cittie  
was: whiche were aduertised by certaine Frenchmen, that  
the people were unprovided of any fortifications, so that  
winning the Porte, the whole Cittie might easilie bee con-  
quered. These synges caused them forciblie to enter the  
Cittie, wher setting all the Shippes on fire, they went  
on shore, and murdering the Waruers at the Gates, tooke  
the Cittie at the ffeyn assault, wher Palmerin and his noble  
Friends

## OF PALMERN D'OLIVA.

Frendes (to theyz great sorow) declared howe well they  
could skil of such assayres. The Cittie thus overcome, and  
the chiefe Cittizens therewer taken prisoners, the Turke  
following their Fortune, marched further, and came to the  
Cittie of Durace, where the faire Princesse Laurana abode,  
of whom Palmerin was sometimes Amorong: when he  
imagined by her excellent Beaulte, that it was shee who so  
often sollicited him in his Dremes. Palmerin being there-  
come on Land, presently knewe the Countrey: Wherefore  
he said to his compaunions;

I nowe perceyue dñe Frendes, that Fortune forceneth  
vs from ill to worse: This speake I in respect of this Cittie,  
against which wee must be compelled to fight, and not  
many yeares since, with the pice of my Blood I labored to  
defendes it. But because the Dukes Daughter is so worty  
a Ladie, as in my heart I reverence and honour: I beseech  
you euery one employ your selues, to preserue both her  
and her Ladys, and demand them of the Admyrall for our  
part of the spoyle.

Whiles Palmerin thus conferred with his Frendes,  
Olimaell vnderstood by certaine Prisoners, that the Cittie  
was very slenderly defended, and therfore no great maistrie  
to winne it quickly. Yet at theyz first Assaill, they were so  
valiantly repulised, as Olimaell and his men beganne to des-  
payre of Victorie: wherefore he made open Proclamation,  
that he who first Entred the Cittie, should obtaine of him  
any Bone he would request. Palmerin toysell of this pro-  
mise, caused sixe strong Scaling Ldders to bee raised vp  
against the Wall, wherpon he and his friends ascended, and  
on the Wall cried, the Cittie is ours: wherewith the people  
within were so dismayed, haing endured a long and furi-  
ous Skirmish, as they all fledde out at the further Gates.  
The Turkes then burned the Gates on the Sea side, and  
entring the Cittie, put olde and young to the Sward. But  
Palmerin and his compaunions feigning to pursue them that  
fledde, ranne straite to the Wallace, at the entrance whereof  
they

## THE HISTORIE

they found many Doves, who had taken the Duke, wher-  
fore they went to finde the Princesse Laurana, who sat in  
her Chamber, well neere dead with griesse, because shee  
heard that her Father was slaine. Her hee committed to  
the custodie of the King of Sparta, Frysoll, Olorico, and  
Eustace, desiring them to comfort the Princes, in that nei-  
ther she or her Ladies should fall into the Tyrants power:  
and so comming to Olimael, on his knee he began in this  
maner. You know my Lord the promise you made to day,  
by vertue wherof, because I first got ouer the wal into the  
Cittie: for my share I request the Dukes Daughter, and  
for my Friends that followed mee, her Ladies and Gen-  
tlewomen, for other spoile of the riches and treasure wee  
desire not.

Olimael graunted his demand, charging his people  
on paine of their lives, not any way to offend the Ladies.  
In this maner was the Princesse saued, whereupon the  
Duke of Pontus presently went to her, and taking her by  
the hand, acquainted her with these ioyfull newes, where-  
with she thus replied. Can it bee possible that Palmerin,  
who heretofore ventured his life in my fathers defence, a-  
gainst the County Passaco of Meccena, shold now become  
so familiar among Turkes and Doves? Hath he so forgot  
his hono: to God, that himselfe is not only a bastaile to the  
enemie of his faith, but doth likewise seeke their destrucci-  
on that serue Christ Jesus? Be silent good Madamie, an-  
swered the Duke, for if his name be knowne we all perish:  
what hath beeene done, is for the safetie of your life, and our  
swine likewise, which haeth obtained of the Generall of  
the Armie.

With these words she was somewhat pacified, and the  
old cinders of loue, which now began to spread abroade,  
caused her retorne this answer. In sooth my Lord, seeing  
I am become Palmerins prysoner, I thinke my honour in-  
nous to mee, in that this matter may sorte to better effect

then

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

then I can conceiue. By this time was Palmerin come to  
her, who entreated her to keepe all things secretly, for hee  
woulde endure a thousand deaths, before she should be anie  
way dishonoured. In time (quoth he) woe may be deliuered  
from these Hellhounds, as for you and your Ladys, the  
Admirall hath openlie commaunded that you be reverently  
used.

A thousand thanks my Lord, quoth the Princesse, and  
siring matters ere so come to passe, yet doe I reioyce that I  
fell into your power. The citie of Duracc left in the same  
state of Albania was, the Turkes went aboorde, taking  
no prisoners thence but Laurana and her Ladies, whom  
Olimael intended to give to the great Turke. So passing  
along the Coast of The slalie, they spoyled manie Citties on  
the Sea side, tooke the King and manie noble men: so that  
now they were stord with a number of Christian pyses-  
ners. Now Olimael feared, that the Christian Princes  
hearing what spoyle he made in their dominions, woulde  
raxe a mighty power against him, wherefore hee gaue  
charge to his Pilots, to order their course towards the Cittie  
of Tubant, where as then the great Turke kept his  
Court.

The King of The slalie thre daies before his taking,  
sent his Queene (who was great with childe) to one of his  
Castels, a good dayes iourney from the Sea: but then he  
heard her Husbands misfortune, i the grefe she conceived,  
caused her presentlie to fall in trauaile, when she was deli-  
uered of a goodlie Daughter, named Francelina. At this  
time the thre Magdalene Sisters, who appeared to Palmerin  
on the Mountain Artaria, and one of them afterward in  
his going to Buda: made their abode in an Isle thereby  
named Carderia. When they (by their hidden Philosophy)  
heard how the King was taken, and shoulde be kept in per-  
petuall prison, without the helpe of his Daughter which  
was newlie borne: they concluded to frame such an en-  
chanement, as maugre the Turke and his power, as hee  
that

## THE HISTORIE

that would not deigne to kisse his shooe, shold be deliuered from imprisonment. Whereupon the youngest of these three Sisters went to the Castell where the woefull Queene remained, where she was very honourably entertained: because the Queene desired to know, if the King her Husband was dead or aliue, and if any hope shold be expected of his deliuerance.

The Damosell Enchauntresse aduertised the Queene, that in departing with her Daughter Francelina, the King her Husband shold enioy his libertie, and in time to come, she shuld be maried to one of the best Knights in the world.

We neede not doubt that the Queene was hereat amaz'd, yet the loue of the Mother to her Infant, cannot conquer the Loue of the Wise to her deere Husband: Which among all Loues is the most honest and loyall: So that in hope to free him againe, on whom depended her wealth and welfare, shee gaue her Childe to the Damosell, intreating that she might bee vsed as besemed the daughter of a king, and as the sweete beauty of the Infant deserved. Shee returning to Carderia, with the Childe, made her Sisters very ioyfull by her comming, who there nourished the Infant till she was three yeares old: when the beauty of the young Princesse began to shewe it selfe, as faire Cynthia doeth among the Starres.

Nowe did the Sisters enclose her in a strong Tower, made of purpose for young Francelina, wherein was the moste godly Garden in the world, there was she attaine'd by her Nurses, and faire wayling Gentlewomen: and such Enchauntments were imposed in the Tower, as no man shold ever see her, unlesse he were the best Knight of his time. The Entrance into the Tower was very straite and narrowe, barred ype with a great Gate of Iron, and Guarded by two furious Lyons. Duer the Gate stode a huge Image of Copper, holding a mighty Hace of Steele, wrought by such cunning, as if any Knight but he that was deliuered to end the aduenture, shold assay to enter, hardly

mighty

## OF PALMERN D'OLIVA.

mighty he escape to returne againe. Moreouer, the conquerour shold not demand the first demand of the Princes, which was the deliuerance of her Father: and for this cause the Sisters enchaunted the faire Francelina, whose Historie we must yet forbearre, proceeding where we left before.

Olimaell being thus on the Sea, laden with Christian spoyles and prisoners, at length entred the port of the great Cittie of Tubant: where he made such a cheerefull noyse of Drummes, Trompets, Clarions & Cornets, as though the greatest Monarchie in the world had come to take landing. The great Turke mewailing at this suddaine meling, sent one of his Knights to understand the cause, who being certified by Olimaell, what great victories hee had obtained against the Christians and the number of prisoners he brought with him returned to the Pallace, where he told his Lord that the Admirall Olimaell was come, and had brought with him great spoyles from the Christians, where among (quoth he) is a Christian King in personne, many worthie Knights and Gentlemen, and a yong Prince of incomparable beautie. Not a little ioyfull was the Turke at these newes, wherefore comming into his great Hall, where the imperiall seates of maiestie were erected, himselfe sate downe in the one, and faire Agriola of England in the other, expecting the comming of Olimaell: who in triumphant manner set forward with his prize, brauelie mounted on a lustie Courser sumptuouslie caparasoned, and aduauncing his sword drawne in signe of victorie. Being come to Pallace, Olimaell saluted his Lord with great reverence, standing by him to make report of his conquest, and make present of his prisoners after their estate and calling.

First he caused all the riches to be brought, and all the meanest captives one after another to kis the great Turks foote: then commaunding them to be carried thence, he began in this manner. It is not to be doubted, most high and

D

mighty

## THE HISTORIE

mighty Monarch, that this victorie gotten on the Christi-  
ans, enemies to our Gods, hath beene obtained onely by  
your fauour: therefore it is great reason, that to the princi-  
pall head of this enterprise, the great and chæfest honour  
should be doone. The wilnes hereof are the treasures pre-  
sent, and their prysloners abyding your mercie: who from  
the very meanest to the highest, shall humble themselves  
at your Majesties foote. When very many had doone  
their reverence, and the King of Theßsallie should next fol-  
low, who though his armes were pinniond behinde him,  
yet had a Crolwe of Gold on his heade to shewe what hee  
was although he saw himselfe in the Tyrants power, and  
Olimaell had commaunded him to kisse his Maisters foote,  
boldly made this answere. Now will I so much displease my  
God, uncircumcized Tyrant as thou art, in such sort to abase  
my selfe, beeing a King, & administratour of justice to faith-  
full Christians: to kisse the foote of the most nastie and un-  
cleane creature in the world: proclaining the worship which  
I onely owe to my maker. It is in thy power to take my  
life from me: but not to constraine me deo the thing where-  
in consiſt my damnation, and a thousand deaths I will  
endure, before I yeld so much as in thought to thee, Tyl-  
laine (quich the Admirall) dares thou speake so haue-  
rently in the presence of my Lord: did not my regarde of  
him with hold me, soone should I separate thy cursed head  
from thy shoulders. With these words hee gaue the King  
such a blow on the face, as made him fall on his knies to the  
ground.

Ah Traylour, quich the King, well haſt shewen  
the nature of a villaine, that without commaund steyllast a  
King captaine, and vnyrouded of Armes: but might it so  
please thy Lord, in open Fielde will I prooue the a disloy-  
all and unchristened Curre, that thus abuseſt the blood roy-  
all. The great Turke ſeeing the King ſo moued and angry,  
the blod likewiſe trickling from his noſe and mouth: com-  
maunded him to be caried thence, to one of the Strongest  
Castells.

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

Castells in Natolia, where he ſhould be enclosed without a  
nie compaニー, that this captiuallie might bee the more gree-  
uous to him.

When the King of Theßsallie was deparfed, Palmerin  
approached, leading the Princesse Laurana by the hand, hee  
and his five compa尼ons being Armed, except their Hel-  
mets, Gantlets and ſwordes: Whereat the great Turke  
meruailing, demanded of Olimaell why he ſuffered them  
to be Armed? By Lord, quoth he, these ſire Knights were  
the firſt prize I tooke, who (after they had given me their  
oathes) haue doone ſuch ſervice to your Majestie, especially  
this, poynting to Palmerin, on of the beſt knights that euer  
I ſaw: as full well doe they deserue libertie, which in re-  
compence of aduenturing their liues in your ſervice, vnder  
your highne correction, I promised them. By Dahomet,  
answered the great Turke, for thy ſake I likewiſe conſirme  
it, and if heereafter they will abide with mee, I will make  
them greater then euer they were. While the Turke was  
making theſe promiſes, Agiola haſing well noted Palmerin,  
knew him, and with the ſuddaine conceit thereof was  
readie to ſwoune: but ſtaying her ſelfe on her Chayre, ſaid.  
O ſole bountie, who is this? are not mine eyes deluded and  
my thoughts beguiled? At theſe words Palmerin knewe  
her, which before he did not, by reaſon of her ſtrange diſ-  
guyſed apparell: yet thought hee best to conceale his in-  
ward ioy, leaſt crooked Fortune ſhould now againe pre-  
uent him.

The great Turke ſeeing Agiola looke ſo pale and wan  
ſtarct from his Chayre, and takeing her in his armes,  
ſaid. Alas Madame, hath any ſuddaine ill befallen ye? hath  
any one in this company offendēd ye? by our Gods if I  
knew him, preſently ſhould he die the death. The Prin-  
ceſſe trembling with ſearc, ſeeing Hippolyta was not pre-  
ſent, ſpake thus in English. What will my Lord and Heſ-  
band Tryneus ſay, if he be in this compaニー, ſeeing I haue  
ſo diſloyallye forſaken him, and thus (though God knowes  
perforſe)

perforce in steede of him, haue taken the enemy to him and our faith? Yet one comfort haue I that this infidell hath not carnally knowne me, for which protection I thank the heavenly maiestie. At these speches Palmerin was so glad, as the feare of death could not with holde hym: but in the same language he thus answered.

Feare not good Madame, Tryneus is not in our companye: but so please you to say I am your Brother, you may happily saue my life, and practise your deliueraunce. The Turke misdoubting by Palmerin's persuading, that he had caused this sudaine alteration: imagining him to be her Husband of whom he had heard her talke so often, in a great rage sayd, Knight, how darst thou presume my Ladie's presence, knowing the sight of the wold any way displease her? By the Prophet Mahomet thou shalt immediatly die, that all such audacious villaines may take an example by thee.

Agriola knowing the Turks censures were very peremptory and commonly no sooner said then executed, embracing him, thus replied. Ah my Lord, do not the thing in halte, for which afterward you will be sorie, for I assure you on my honor, the Knight that spake to mee is my Brother, and hath left his Countrey onlie to find mee: and him do I loue so effectually, as if you put him to death, impossible is it for me to liue afterward. When the Turk heard her speake with such affection, qualifying his anger, said, I promise ye Madame, for your sake, he shall haue no harme, but he entertained with loue and honour: conditionall ye, that you forget this melancholy, and henceforth shew your selfe more pleasant, for in seeing you sad I am more grieved, then if I had lost the moostie of dominions. In sooth my Lord answered Agriola, now shall I be merry, seeing you intend to loue me Brother, for greater good cannot happen to mee then his gentle entreatance: and henceforth shall I treade vnder foote, the sad remembrance of my Countrey & parents, hauing him with mee, by whom

I hope to gaine my greatest comfort. So the Turke aysing from his Chayre, caused Palmerin and Laurana to accompanie Agriola, and the other ffeue Knights having kisst his hand: hee went to his chamber, comuaunding Olimael (for his greater honour) to bshir Agriola, who as he went, thus spake.

Believe me Admirall, if I was offended when thou broughtest me Pissner hether; thou hast now made mee sufficient amends, in that by this I enicye my Brother, whom I was out of all hope to see againe. Alas Madame, (quoth he) little did I think him to be such a one, for had I his blage shold haue bene much better, which fault I hope hereafter to recompence. I command him to thy courtesie, saide Agriola, let him and his friends haue all things they want, according as my Lord hath appointed. So taking her leaua of them, she entred her Chamber, where shee and Hypolita conferred with Laurana, of all her fortunes passed, and the aduentures of her Brother. Now was Palmerin and his companions, by the Dukes commaundement, lodged neare the Pallace, and to each of them he sent a goodly Horse with costly furniture, thinking by these meanes to conquer Agriola, and purchase that of her which hee long had desired, and talking with Palmerin, saide. Right well may you be brother to my Lady Agriola, in that your beautie and complexion deliuers great likelyhod: Seeing then our Gods haue permitted, that for her comfort you should be brought hither: persuade her I pray yee, that shee no longer repugnant to my will, for could I haue a Childe by her, I would think my selfe the happiest Lord on the earth. Beside, I would haue you for sake the folly of your Christianitie, and yeilde your selfe to our Law, which is much better then yours: and you shall see how our Gods will fauour you, likewise what great good you shal receive thereby. My Lord (quoth Palmerin) I will labour with my Hyster, so much as lies in me to doe, as for your Law as yet I am but acquainted therewith: but when I shall finde it to be such

## THE HISTO RIE

as you assure mee, easly may I be drawne thereto, and to serue you with such loialty, as so great an estate doth woythlie deserve. I confesse my selfe likewise greatly bounde to your Miechie, in that you haue accepted my Syster as your Wife, and to me a poore slave giuen both Life and Liberty, which I beseeche you also graunt the Parriners, in whose Vessel it was my chauice to be taken, in so doing shée may be greatly moued by your magnificente liberalitie and mercie.

The great Turke presently gaue his consent, causing theyr safe Conduct to be openly proclaymed: So Palmerin and his friendes humbly departing to theyr Lodging, the Turke went to Agriolae Chamber, where sitting downe by her, hee thus beganne. Now shall I perceiue Madame, how much your Brother may preuaile with you: For hee hath promised me so to order the matter, as you shal graunt my long desired suite. My Lorde (quoth he) my Brother shall command mee nothing, but I will do it with all my heart: as for your request, it is not in my power, but in the hand of God, wh<sup>o</sup> defendeth me as best him please. Nor can I chaunge the opinion I haue helde so long: though by hating my Brother with mee, I enjoy farre greater content then I did before.

It sufficeth me (saide the Turke) to see you so well pleased, and as for your Brother, that you may perceyue howe well I loue him: before one moneth bee expyred, I will make him the chiefeſt Lord in my Court, next mine owne person: so kissing the Princesse, he departed to his Chamber. The day following, Palmerin said to his companions. You see my friendes, how friendly Fortune smileth on vs, but leaſt ſhe chaunge, as euermoſe ſhe is wont: we must practise ſome good meaſs to escape from theſe Turkish Illiſdeſ. Beside ſeeing we haue found the Princesſe Agriola, I hope Tryneus is not ſo ſecreſtly hiddeſ, but we ſhall haue ſome tydinges of him. Of her therefore will I enquire, if ſhe knowe what became of him & Ptolome, when I leſt them.

ut

## OF PALMERIN DOLIVA.

in meane while you may closelie conclude with our Parriners, that they be euer readie at an houres warning, for I hope we ſhall ſet hence before eight daies be paſt. Palmerin went to Agriolae Chamber, and there by good hap hee found her alone: whom after he had humblie ſaluted, the Princesſe thus ſpake to him. My noble Friende, you muſt be carefull how you ſpeake to mee, especially before the aged Ladie you ſaw here yester day, for ſhe vnderſtandeth all languages, and if we be diſcouered, there is no way but death: therefore when you ſee her with me; conſerue rather with Laurana, and ſay to her what you would haue mee know, because ſhe is a Ladie both vertuous and faithfull. No leſſe (Madame) haue I alwaies found her, quoth Palmerin: therefore I beſeeche you make account of her, and acquaint her with your greatest affaeres, for ſhe is Daughter to one of the moſt gentle Princes in the world. But Madame, I would gladly know what became of Tryneus, after that ſo unhaſpilie I departed from you. The Admirall Olimaell, quoth he, came with his Galley ſo ſore as you were departed, who tooke vs, and then ſepareted vs in ſunder: ſcant permitting me to ſpeakē to him or Ptolome, ney know I what is become of them. It ſuffiſteth then Madame, anſwered Palmerin, that I haue found you, for on you dependeth the life of Trynens, who ſhall not long (I hope) be concealed from vs: therefore aduife your ſelfe on the day when you will depart, for I haue a ſhip readie to carrie you from this ſeruitude. Thans be to heauen, quoth ſhe, for ſo good Fortune, I will be ſo ready as you ſhall not ſay for me. Now entred Hyppolita, who brake off their talke to other occaſions, where ſoe will leaue, and returne to the Prince Tryneus.

# THE HISTORIE

## CHAP XLII.

How Tryneus being enchaunted into the shape of a Dog in the Isle of Malfada, there came a Princesse of the Moores, who requested him of the aged Enchantres, to whom he was giuen: and what happened to him afterward.



Whink as yet you remeber, without repetitions of the former discourse, in what manner the Knight, Cozin to the Admirall Olimaell, to whom the prince Tryneus was giuen: arried by tempest in the Isle of Malfada, and how hee with his people were transformed into divers shapes of Beastes, among whom

Trynens bare the likenes of a godly Dogge. Being thus disguised, a young Princesse, named Zephira, Daughter to the King of the same Countrie: came to demaunde counsell of the aged Enchauntresse Malfada, for the cure of a certaine disease, which by strange aduenture happened to her in this manner.

This young Princesse one day being pleasant in her Fathers Courte, among many of her wanting Ladies: entered a godly Garden, which abounded with great diversity of sweet flowers, and after she had walked a prettie while in an Arbour of Muske-roses, she espied a Gille-flower, which seemed so faire and beautifull in her eye, as shee was prouoked to goe ercp it from the stalke. Having this delicate flower in her hand, wherein (by misfortune) a venemous wozne was crept, shee tooke such delight in smelling it:

## OF PALMERN D'OLIVA.

it: as her bresch drew vp the wozne into one of her nose, thrilles, not being able to get it out againe. So the venome and Poyson of this little wozne engendred a putrefaction, and other like Woznes, which gaue a smell so filthie and loathsome, as hardly could any abide to stand by her. Her Father not a little agrieued at this mischaunce, sent for the most skilfull Physitians, to know what remedie might be concluded vpon: but all the pain and trauell was in vaine, for the Disease continued still without any amendment. In the ende, the King fearing it would change to a Canker incurable, and having heard what strange actions the Enchauntresse Malfada performed: sent the Princesse Zephira to her, where shee being arried without any daunger, because she would not hunte any inhabiting in the Isle, declared to the Enchauntresse the whole manner of her misfortune.

The Enchauntresse answered that shee could give her no remedie, and hardly shold she finde any at all, except it were by an auncient Knight, who remained in the Courte of the King of Romara and Grifca, Realms Subject to the Soltan of Persia, and the Knight was named Muzabelino. The Princesse was so displeased at this answer, seeing her intent frustrate, as shee wold receyue no sustenance: wherefore walking in the fieldes, to expresse her anger, and so to the Sea-side, where the Shippes lay confusid, she behelde the Dogge which was the Prince Tryneus, and so faire in liking was shee with him, as she desired the Enchauntresse to give him her, and having obtained her request, returned to her Father, who lay sicke in one of his Cittyes called Nabor, whereof the whole Realme bare the name.

When the King saw his Daughter returned without cure, his melancholike conceit so stroke to his hart, as with in throe dayes after he dyed. Having made his Testament before his deceasse, he gaue his Daughter as her portion a Cittie called Elain, one of the greatest & surest Strengths in

the

## THE HISTORIE

the Realme, with all the Signories belonging thereto. To Maulerino his youngest Sonne, he gaue an other like position, which was a dayes iourney distant from Elain. After the Kings Funerall rytes were solemnized, the Princesse with her Brother Maulerino, went to their owne posses-  
sions: doubting the furie of the Prince Tyreno, their Eldest Brother, who alwaies had shewre himselfe proud and con-  
tentious.

She being thus in god quiet by herselfe, looks no other pleasure then in playing with her Dogge, because he seemed verie subtile and politique, so that shee prepared a Couche for him at her Beds side. Tyreno beeing crowned King after his Fathers deceasse, began greatly to despise that his Syster shoulde enjoy the fayrest Cittie in the Kingdome: For which cause he cunningly practised all the meanes hee could to put her to death. And that he might the better compasse his mischievous purpose, he secretly sent a Messenger to the Maister of the Princesse Horses, that if hee would but condicend to kill or poysen his Brother and Syster, he would give him fiftie thousand Seraphes, and make him Gouvernour of Elain. The wicked Noble man, greedy and couetous, seeing the large promise of the Tyrant, consented thereto: so that one night the Princesse being asleepe, he entered her Chamber with his Sword drawne, there to haue murthered her, and after ward the Prince her Brother.

Tryneus, who had lost nothing belonging to a man, but bodily shape and voice, seeing the Traytor enter his Ladies Chamber with his Weapon drawne, started vp presently, and setting his two foefaste on the Villains breast, bit him so cruelly by the face and throat, as he being vnable to helpe himself, was constrained to crie out aloud. With this noise the Princesse awaked, and her Brother likewise, who lay in the next Chamber, comming in haste to see the cause of this outcry: and knowing the Traytor, beat him so sore with the pommell of his sword about the stomacke, as in the end enforced him to confess his Treason. Whereat Maulerino

not

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

not a little meruailing, and wrathfull at his villainous intent, snote his head from his shoulders. In the morning he appointed such guard in the Cittie, as no stranger might enter without great examination. The Princesse knowing how her Dog had sau'd her life, loued him afterward so tenderly, as she would feed him at her owne Table, and none but her selfe might giue him any food. Here will we likewise pursue awhile, and declare the deliueraunce of the Princesse Agriola.

## CHAP. XLII.

How the great Turk became enamoured with the Princesse Laurana, by meanes whereof he was slaine, and Agriola deliuered.



Almerin being vpon a day in his chamber with his companions, practising some meanes for the deliueraunce of Agriola: the Princesse Laurana of Durace, came to them, framing her speches in this maner. Gentlemen, if any of you bee desirous to deliuere vs from this cruell enemy, who holds vs in this thrall and bondage: I haue devised the best meanes that may be, and thus it is. The Turke, the most luxurious and vrchaste man in the world, not contented with infinite number of Concubines, hath many times made loue to me, so that to compasse mine intent, I haue made him promise within thre dates to graunt his request. In this time I haue intreated the Princesse Agriola to shew him the most disdainefull countenance that may be, which shee hath faithfully promised,

## THE HISTORIE

mised, and for this cause hath sent me to you, conuays hence all the riches he hath given ye, and which sheher selfe will likewise sende ye: so that when the howre is come for me to fulfill his pleasure, one of you beeing pruilegar me, shall in my place murder him, in reuenge of the ill Christendome hath sustained, by the last vnhappie voyage of Olimaell, who determineth verie shozile, as I vnderstand, to goe spoyle the Isle of Rhodes Palmerin very glad of the Princesse notable iuention, thus answered: For cause (Madame) I lateuer promised the Turke, not to depart his Court, but to keepe him company, when he denyed his Admirall, that I and my compaionis shoule goe with him to the Rhodes: I cannot be the man to end this worthy reuenge, therfore one of you (my friendes) must resolute to perfoarme it. In meane while, you Madame Laurana may returne to the Turke, pleasing him with faire and friendly speches: for if never so little suspition bee gathered, not one of vs can escape with life. Feare not, said the Princesse, I will use the matter so carefully as you can desire, right well know I how to enflame his hart with queint lookes, coy disbeines, feint yeldings, and other such like ceremonies vsed in leue: as seare not you to prosecute the stratageme, in that a beginning so good, must needes sort to a successiue ende. The young Duke of Pontus, who began to grce w affectionate towards the Princesse Laurana, said,

In sooth my Lord, so please you to commit the charge hereof to me; so well hope I to execute the same for her sake that did so worthilie iuinent it, as I dare warrant to deserue no reproch thereby. For my first earnest to gentle Loue, shall be so gracious, as in qualifying the unlawfull heate of our enemy, I will bind my selfe never to loue any other; and her faith received, if I bring not his head to Madame Laurana, let me be accounted as one of the most foolefull knyghts that euer bare Armes. And certeyn therfore of the place and howre, and doubt not of my faithfull

## OF PALMERIN DOLIVA.

full performance. At this pleasant answer they all began to smile, whereupon Palmerin thus spake. Belue me no. ble Duke, considering your yongth and braue disposition, I know no one in this companie more mate for the Princesse Laurana, then you are: but I thinke when the appointed howre shall come, you will be a little more angrie with the Turke then her, if she haue you in that subiecton as it seemes she hath. Yet let vs not now trifle the tyme in vaine, when such waightie occasions commandeth our diligencie.

So returned Laurana to the Princes Agriola, acquainting her with the knyghts determination, when not long after, the great Turke entered the Chamber, accompanied with Palmerin and the King of Sparta, and that he might the better speake to her he so earnestlie desired, hee caused Palmerin to sit betwene him and Agriola, then turning to Laurana, he began to deuise familiarie with her. Which when Palmerin and Agriola perceived, the better to beguile him, he made a signe to the King of Sparta, that her should enter into some take of hunting: wherat the Turke presently arose, and taking Laurana by the hand, led her to the window, with these speches. Mistresse of my hart, and the very fairest creature that euer mine eyes beheld, will ye graunt the request I made to you yesterday? See you not what great hono: I haue done to Madame Agryola? Notwithstanding, if you will loue me, I will make you my wife, that I may haue issue by you to succeed in my kyngdome, and your hono: shall be nothing inferiour to hers. And though she will denie me the fauour, which with long and continuall pursuite I haue desired; yet doe you consider my griefe, and if in shor tyme you vouchsafe me no pitie, the extreame afflictions I endure for your leue, are rated at the price of my life. God for bid, quoth Laurana, that so great a losse shold come to the Orieniall Empire by me, rather will I forget the accustomed regards of mine hono: to bee accepted into your grace and fauour. And the cause

cause that made me deserve so long from this answer, was the feare I haue of Madame Agriola, and her Brother, to whom I was given by your Admirall after my Fathers decease.

But to the end my Lord, that none of them may suspect our loue, I thinke it conuenient that Hypolita, who alway lieth in your Chamber remoue her selfe to the Ladies attending on Agriola, and her shall you commaund to gloue me the Key of my Ladies Chamber, which he hereto the hath used to carrie. By this meane may I the more safely, and without suspition of any one, come in the night to fulfil your desire. The Turke imagining he had gained the Princesse loue indeede, was not a little ioyfull, wherefore he said.

Sweete Lady, you shall haue the Key as you request, nor shal she longer lodge in my Chamber, whom you feare so much. Moreouer this night will I perswade Agriola, that I feele my selfe not halfe currant: and therefore to keepe her selfe in her owne Chamber, and so may you come boldly to me this night. If any ona chaunce to mete yee, say that I sent for you: and if they dare bee so holde as to hinder your comming, in the morning shall my Janizaries put them to death, whatsoeuer they be. So taking a Ring from his finger, wherein was a stone of inestimable value, he gaue it to the Princesse, saying. Holde Madame, take this as a pledge of my promise: for which Laurana humbly thanking him, thus replied. My Lord, I see Agriola hath four or five times earnestly noted you, I thinke it gred herfor that we breake off talke: assuring you, that I will not tyme at midnight, when euerie one is fast asleepe, to keepe my word, and in the Bawle whiche you sent mee yester day, I wil courte enter your Chamber, conditionallie that you keepe your promise to me afterward.

Doubt not therof, said the Turk, and so taking his leaue of her, went presentlie to his Chamber, where finding Hypolita, he commaunded her to take thence her bed, and

carry

carrie it to the Ladies Chamber, likewise taking the Keye from her, he sent it by one of his Pages to Laurana, who hauing it in hand, came laughing therewith to Palmerin, saying.

How say you my Lord, haue I not handled the matter as it shoulde be: the Turke incoued with pitie of our straite imprisonment, hath gluene into the charge of Madam Agriola: for by his Page hath he sent me the Key of her chamber, and Hypolita shall lodge now among other Ladies. And because this night the action must be fulfilled, doe you aduertise the Duke of Pontus, that at midnight he saile not to come to vse drunken Holofernes as he had deserued. Palmerin and the King of Sparta praesing God, that their affaires went forward so lucklie: returned to their lodgynge, intreating Agriola to be ready at the houre, that their intent might not be hindered by her. Afterward they re-hearsed to their companions, what was concluded by the Princesse Laurana: wherefore quoth he to the Duke, prepare to bring your Armour secretlie to Agriolas Chamber, where you shall finde the King of Sparta and my selfe. Meane while, Fryfoll, Olorico and Eustace, see that all our bagage be conuayed into our Ship, which may safelie be done without suspect, considering what great multitude of Souldiers are embarking, and therefore preuide all things readie against our comming. The howre being at hand, Palmerin, the King of Sparta, and the Duke of Pontus, went to the Princesse chamber, where the Duke was immediatlie arm'd, except his Helmet, which he left on the table, couered with the Mantle wherof Laurana shalke, putting on the attire the Princesse wore vpon her head, and so finely was he disguised in those habits, as in the dark he might be reputed rather a woman then a man, and beeing readie to depart about the practise, he said to Palmerin, I thinke it best my Lord, that you and the King of Sparta, conuict the Ladies besyze to the Porte: for if in mine attempt, I shoulde happen to saile, yet shoulde you lose but the

wo<sup>W</sup>

## THE HISTORIE

worste in your company. So importunate was hee with them to follow his advise, as he caused them to depart presently to the Hauen, where they were joyfully welcommed by Fry soll and the rest, without meeting any by the way to hinder them. When the Duke saw himselfe left alone, and now he was to dispose himselfe to his intent, falling on his knie, he thus spake.

D my God, that suffered the mightie Holofernes to bee beheaded by thy Servant Judith: afford me at this time the like grace, and give me strenght to worke his death, who is the greatest living enemy to Christians. This said, he went to the Turcs Chamber, where he found the doore readie open, and appoynting the bed: the Turke (who verily thought it was Laurana) raised vp himselfe, and taking him by the arme, said. Welcome sweete Lady, for very long hane I expected thy comming. Ah Craytor, quoth the Duke, I am not the thou lookest for, regard of honour will not suffer her to sinne in such sort. With which words hee stabb him to the heart, and smiting off his head, wapped it in the Mantle that Laurana gaue him: so going to Agriolae Chamber, and clasping on his Helmet, went presently to his Friends, whom hee found in prayer for his good successe, and thowling the heade into Lauranaes lap, said.

Madame, he that was so importunate for your dishonour, as a wittnes of his loue to you, hath sent you his heade heare by me: wherwith I present you so deuoutly, as hence forth I dedicate my life & seruice to your disposing. A thousand thanks my Lord, quoth the Princesse, this vertuous act hath made mee so constantly to bee yours: as in any thing that toucheth not the impeach of mine honor. I remaine with my vttermost endeouours to pleasure you. As the Duke wold haue replied, the other knyghts came to looka on the heade, whiche when they had cast into the See, they presently hoised saile, and before day had gotten faire enough from thence.

In

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

In the morning, as the Marriners came from their Galleyes towards the City, they espied the heade floting on the water, and taking it vp, shewod it to their compaines, to know if they could tell whose it was. When they beheld it so dreadfull, the mustachoes strouting out like wiffe histles, and the locks of haire hang shagging down, they knew not what to think: and one of them having well marked it, said:

By all our Gods, if I bee not deceived, this is the head of my Lord the great Turke: at which words all the other began to scorne and mock, Hyppolita seeing faire Phebus let soorth the morning light, came to the Princesse Agriolae Chamber, where not finding her nor Laurana, the chamber likewise dispoiled of many things: she doubted immedately that they were fled, whereof to be resolved, shes went to the great Turcs chamber, and seeing the Pages standing at the doore, said: Why enter yee not? the houre is past, and my Lord is not yet risen. Lady quoth they, as yet he hath not called vs, and you know that yesternight he forbad our entrance till we were called: it may bee heo slept but badly this night, and therefore now is contented to take his rest. I feare quoth she, some other matter then sleepe doth hinder his calling you, so thrusting open the doore, and entring the Chamber, saw the blood dispersed on the ground, and the headlesse truncke hanging beside the bed. with which sight they made a very pittifull outcry, wherat many noble men and Gentlemen came, who likewise beholding what had happened, ioyned with them in sorrowfull complaints. None was the report of this murder blazed through the Cittie, so that Olimael hearing thereof, ranne thither in all haste: where he was no sooner present, but Hyppolita thus began. Ah Olimael, thou broughtest the traitors hither that haue slain my Lord, and by thy meanes hath this treason been committed. By all our Gods, said one of the Turcs peyhelwes present, it is true: but because thou hast suffered Agriola, her Brother

R

and

## THE HISTORIE

and the other Knights to escape, thou villaine shalt aby it  
darely. So drawing forth his Semitarie, killed Olimaell  
therewith saying. Such be their reward that trayterouslie  
betray their Soueraigne: mine Tackle of a pore Janizary  
made the his chieft Admirall, and thou for his kindnesse  
hast requited him with death, but now thy villainy is worse  
thilie recompenced.

Olimael thus slaine, his men ranne furiously on the  
Turks Pepew, and slew him, with fistie Knights beside  
that defended his quarell: and had it not been for an an-  
cient Bassa, who with an hundred Scaldiers came to  
part them, they were in daunger of a greater sedition, be-  
cause they saw none pursue Palmerin and his compa-  
nions.

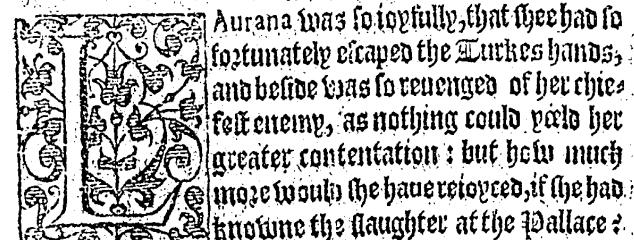
The Bassa that had thus pacified this tumult, by pro-  
mises perswaded the Janizaries, and prevailed so well  
with them: as the same day he was declared yonger Bro-  
ther to the Soldane deceased, and great Emperoz of Tur-  
kie. Many iniuries did he to Christendome afterward, in  
revenge of his Brothers death: which yet we will for-  
bear, to rehearse what happened to Palmerin  
and his companions being on  
the Sea.

## CHAP.

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

### CHAP. LXIII.

¶ How Palmerin and his companions met two Turkish  
Ships, from whom they deliuered Estrbon the Mer-  
chant and his Sonnes: and came to the Isle of Malfa-  
da, where Palmerin lost them all, and of the sorrow he  
made for this mishap.



Aurana was so joyfully, that shee had so  
fortunately escaped the Turkes hands,  
and beside was so reuenged of her chie-  
fest enemy, as nothing could yeld her  
greater contentation: but how much  
more woulf she haue rejoyced, if she had  
knowne the slaughter at the Wallace:  
As she sat discoursing hereon with Palmerin and the Duke  
of Pontus, Frycoll being alos on the decke, espied four  
Shippes comming towards them with full saile: whereupon  
he called to his companions, that they shold presently  
armethemselues. For quoth he. I see two Roving Ships,  
and they haue taken two other, or else my iudgement sa-  
leth: let vs therefore labour to withstand them, lest we su-  
staine a further danger.

No sooner had hee spoken these words, but they all put  
themselves in readinesse, so that when the enemie closed  
with them, and many entred the Ship, thinking it was  
yalded, they had a sharper entertainment then they expe-  
cted, for not one escaped aliue, that came aboard, but either  
were slaine or throwne into the Sea. In brefe, they ouer-  
came both the Pirats, and left not one aliue to carrie ty-  
dings hereof into Turkie. Afterward, as Palmerin searched

## THE HISTORIE

the Cabins, to see what Prisoners the Moors had taken: he spred his Maister Estebon, the Marchaunt of Hermida, and his two Sonnes by him, with two other Merchants chaluned by the hands and necke, in like sort as are the poore Slaves in the Galleyes: Whereupon he said:

Trust me Maister, hee that put this Collar about your Necke, was little acquainted with your honest humanitie. Walking vp and downe, for the bunch of Keyes, that opened the Locks of the chaynes, he espied a Turkish Mariner, who fearfull of his life had hid himselfe: to whom hee said: By God, villain, if thou shewest me not quickly where the Keyes are, I will send thy soul after thy selfe. Spare my life most noble Knight, cried the Turke, and I will shew not onely the Keyes, but also shew you such secrets herein, as no other now but my selfe can shew you, wherein is infinite wealth and riches.

Dispatche then (saide Palmerin.) The Moors fetching the Keyes, opened the Locks, toke off their Chaynes, and brake the Manacles bound about their Hands: when Palmerin, lifting his Eyes to Heaven, saide: Thankes to my God, that so happily sent mee to succour Estebon, by whose meanes I came to the knowledge of my Friends and Parents, and who first gaue me Horsse and Armes for Knightly service. Estebon hearing Palmerins words, maruellung not a little, fell on his kné, saying: I beseech you my Lord to tell me your Name, to the end I may be thankful to him, by whom I haue escaped these cruell infidells, and received such an unpeakable benefit. Why Maister (qd. Palmerin) know you me not? I am your Servant Palmerin, who you first prouoked to followe Armes by your liberalitie: and euer since haue I followed that profession, and now haue re- quited some parte of your kindnesse. Ah my noble friend Palmerin, said olde Estebon, suffer me to kisse thy hand, for if heretofore thou didst deliuer me from the Lyons throate: what may I say of this danger, from which I am now de- fended? In happy howre was that Knightly furniture

given

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

given, and with successfull fortune haue you employed them: but may it please yee to goe with me, I will prouide you of all things necessarie, and giue you my Sonnes here to be your Servants.

The King of Sparta seeing Estebon use such zealous speeches, said to him, Father, you are very much deceived, imagine you the Sonne to the Emperour of Constantynople, a simple Souldour: your age (Father) makes you soe get your selfe. At these words the god old man somwhat astonied, excused himselfe to the King, and turning to Palmerin, said: Alas, my Lord, in not knowing you otherwise then one of my Servants, I haue offered your excellencie very great wrong: and great hath bene my desert of punishment, being the great Lord of Greece so vniuerently. But pardon my boldnesse, noble Lord, and let mine ignorance excuse the offence committed: for unwillingly did I fall into this error. Content thy selfe, god Maister, quoth Palmerin, in nothing hast thou offended mee: but if thou wilt returne to thy Countrey, these Vessells belonging to the Moors, and all the treasure in them, will I frantellie bestow on thee. Ah my Lord, answered Estebon, since Fortune hath so happily brought mee into your compaines, so please you to licence me, loth am I to depart from you: for such store of Theures and Robbers are on the Seas, as hardly can I escape their hands aliu. And soone would I be, said Palmerin, that you or these Merchants should any way mistarie, though perhaps your Villes would gladly haue ye at home: but this I must tell yee, that I cannot returne to Constantinople. I shall be contented, said Estebon, to stay your god leysure: for a poore life is better to me in this company, then welthy possessions among mine ene- mies.

Whereupon, Palmerin commanding all the riches in the Moors Shippes, to be conuerted into the other, set fire on the Vessells, and hysing saile, rode on merly. Within thre daies after arose a mighty windes at North-East,

## THE HISTORIE

which caried them with such violence: as the Pilots tolde Palmerin they were now come on the borders of Persia, and very neare the Isle of Malfada, where they arrived before the Sunne setting. They seeing the Countrey so faire and delectable, would needes goe one shone to refrech themselves: for the Ladies were so distempered with the rough stome, as they were very desirous to recreate them selues a little.

Palmerin not able to shun this fatall chaunce, went on shone with his Friends and the two Princesses, all the other likewise speedily following them, where they had not long staied, but they were all diverslie enchaunted. The two Ladies were transfigured into the shape of Hindes, the other to Dogges, Wolves and Leopards, all of them running with such swiftnes, as though the Furies had stod to chase them: but Palmerin could not be enchaunted, by reason of the gift he receiveth of the thre wise Sisters on the Mountaine Artisaria, wherewith he greatly grieved, for such was his impatience thus to lose his Friends, as he entred into these lamentations.

Ah peruerse and vncoustant Fortune, how diuers and dangerous are thy treacheries: Ah stepmother too cruel, why dost thou not exercise thy rage on simple and forsaken soules, but on such as excede in honor and vertue: Doubtless my sinne hath caused this i' th' hap, when I perswaded my Friends to goe against their Christian Brethren, only by feare of my wretched life. As he stood thus complaining, he beheld the Ladie of the Isle with her Servantes, comming to take the ipeyle of their boote: whereof being ioyfull, and thinking by her meanes to finde some succour, he ran apace towards her, and falling on his knee, thus shake. Alas noble Ladie, if ever pittie had power to move: instruct me how to recouer my companions, and the two worthy Ladies transfigured into brute Beastes. Malfada swelling with anger, to see that he was not likewise enchaunted, answered. Wretched Knight, accursed be

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

their power that defended the from my incantations, live not thou in hope to finde anie remedie heere: for these enchantments are of such strength, as they may not be bin done, but by the most skillfull magitian in the world, whch thou art not I am well assured, and therefore doest thou but loose thy labour. But because by mine arte I cannot be reuenged on thee, some other meanes will I seek for thy destruction. You therefore my servants, lay hands on him, and carrie him to the darkest of my prisons: that his living daies may be spent in greater miserie. Uncourteous and despightfull, quoth Palmerin, are these speeches, speciallie comming from ons that vaunteth of her knolledge, nor can the be measured by loue or charitie: and therefore shall I chastise such bad creatures, as refuse a matter no way hurtfull to them selues, but wherin their owne honour might be discerned. Whch which wordes he smote her heade ston her shoulvers, and valiantly buckling with the other, in the ende left not one to carrie reporte of this massacre: afterward he fell into his lamentations againe in this manner.

Unfortunate Palmerin, seest thou not how mishap wil never leaue thee: for where thou thoughtest with comfort to finde thy Brother Tryneus, now hath Fortune ouerwhelmed thee with a whole world of mischaunces. Ah noble Agriola and gentle Laurana, two of the most modest Princesses that ever the earth bare, how may you iustifie blaine me: bringing you from where you liued in honor, in this accursed place to bee transfigured to brute Beastes. Neuer did Circes deal so cruelly with Grillus, and other Soulviuers to the wise Vlysses: as this villanous old haghath done with me. Had you yet been altered to Lyons or Tygers, you might haue defended your selues from the crueltie of other Beastes: but this damned Sorcresse hath transformed you, to the most fearefull and tumerous, among all other creatures, and therfore subject to enerie inconuenience.

## THE HISTORIE

Ah loyall companions who loued me dærer then your Father or Brother: from the Turke that cherished you with such kindnes and loue, haue I brought you to the cruell and inercilesse Malfada. My noble friend and Brother Fryfoll, what now will auaille thy haughtie Chivalrie? And gentle Prince Olorico, who sozym sake sozyme Courte, Parents, Friends and all: how maist thou tully condonne me of infamous reproch? What answer shall I make to mine Aunt Arismena, for her noble Husband the King of Sparta? And vertuous Duke of Pontus, a Knight of high and especiall qualitie: greatly maist thou blame thy fortune to be acquainted with me. Not forgetting the magnanimous Prince Eustace, how can I excuse thy hard hap to the good old Duke of Mccena thy Father? Had it pleased the Soueraigne Creator of all things, that among you my selfe had taken the strange shape, my quiet would haue been the better, to accompanie you with mishappe, as I haue done in good fortune. Ah sweete Sister Arimda, little thinkest thou what offence thy Brother Palmerin hath committed; and gracious Mistresse Polynarda, what to zent will this bee to your heauenlie thoughts, when you shall understand the summe of my ill successe? Tandering along in these mones, he came to the Enchantresse Castell, where at the Gate he saw two Damsels, who humbly saluting him, said. Welcome, Sir Knight, heere may you repose your selfe if you please. Alas Ladies, quoth he, it is now no time for me to rest, because the Ladie of this place I think, being the most ingrate and despightfull Woman that ever I saw, hath deprived me of all my joy and comfort: but I hepe I haue so well paide her for her paines, as hereafter she shall doe no further harme. Yet if any of you haue been so well instructed by her, as to finish the diuellish coniurations, and will accomplish it, or tell me, if by force they may be reduced to their former shapes, who remains enchaunted here in this Island: for ever will I bee her Knight, and will preserve her in honour beyond

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

yond all other of her race. The Damsells, (who thought they Ladys cunning had brought him thither, that shee might abuse him, and afterwards trans-forme him as was her custome) being amazed at this answere, thus spake. Accursed Villaine, of an euill death myst thou die, whom our Mistresse by her Artificiall skill cannot transforme, nowe knowe we that thou hast murthered her: but assure thy selfe to finde vs thy two most mortall enemies, and though wee can chaunge thy Friendes to their former shapes, yet in despite of thy Villany, we wil not, nor shalt thou know how it may be done.

Awaye Shtrumpets (quoth he) get yee going, or else I will sende your soules after your Mistresse: and were it not a disgrace to mine honour, to defile my hands with the blod of such wicked creatnres: By Heavens I would cut ye as small as sie h to the pot. Then came a Knight forth of the Castell, who embracing Palmerin, said: My Lord Palmerin, what crosse Fortune hath brought you into this accursed Island? Palmerin seeing such strange events succede one an other, knew not what to imagine: but at length returned this answer. You must hold me excused Sir, for in truth I know ye not. Whyle my Lord (quoth the Knight) haue you forgotten Dyardo, whose life you defended in the King of Bohemiaes Court? By Heauen (said Palmerin) I could not call you to remembraunce; But tell mee good Knight, what aduenture brought you hither? For my chance hath bee ne so unfortunate, as the rehearsal would be most dolorous. Then Dyardo declared, how the King had sent him with some small assistance, to pursue the Foyles of the March Pyrates, who had done many iurries to his Subjects. And (quoth hee) after I had long time chased them, three other Galleyes came, and toyning with them, toke me, and slue all my men.

At length by tempestuous weather, we were call on f. is Isle, where we landing to seeke sic h water, all the Peoples were changed into Harts, Dogs, and Bozes; but the Lady

## THE HISTORIE

spacing mee in regard of amorous desire, hath kept mee in this Castell a yeaire and more, abusing mee at her owne pleasure, and never could I compasse any meanes to escape hence againe, for if I hadde but made offer neare the Gate, by forcible strokes haue I bene beaten backe, yet not able to discerne who smote me.

Your hap (quoth Palmerin) hath bene very hard, but her cursed head lying on the shore side, perswades me heeraf-ter she shall doe no more harme. But tell me good Dyardo, is there no one within so skilfull in her Magicall Science, as we may winne to doe vs some good? Not one (answ-ered Dyardo) therefore I am loth you would stay long here, in doubt of further daunger. I will then (said Palmerin) go seeke such a one as shall ende these Enchauntments: and because you shall not be injuryed by ane in the Castell, we will make them fast in Prisoners till my returne. After they had so done, they went to the Stable, where Dyardo gaue Palmerin a lusty Courser, and taking leaue of him, set for-wards on his journey.

## CHAP. XLV.

¶ Howe Palmerin departing from the Isle of Malfada, came to the Court of the Princesse Zephyra, she that kept Tyneus transformed: where hee was entartayned to ayde her against her eldest Brother, who vexed her with daylie troubles.



¶ Sone as Palmerin had thus left the Island of Malfada, and had that daye passed through a very daungerous Riuer: the same night he came to a little Village, where taking vs his Lodging, he fell in talking with his Hoste in the Arabian tongue, if hee knewe any one that

## OF PALMERN D'OLIVA.

that was expert in Pigromancie? I knowe none (quoth the Hoste, but an olde Lady in an Island hard by, to whom our Princesse not long since went, for remedy of a straunge disease, wherewith she is tormented. Where abideth your Princesse (said Palmerin?) Not farre thirtie miles hence, (quoth the Hoste) in a Cittie called Elain. Perhaps (quoth Palmerin) by her meanes I may be better resolued. So bidding his Hoste god Night, withdrew himselfe into his Chamber, where many Imaginations passed him concer-ning the Princesse Zephira.

It may bee (quoth hee within himselfe) that the En-chauntresse vnable to helpe her, hath yet assigned her by direction, unto some other man, more expert in that Diable-lich science: who compassing her health, happily may gaine me some counsell to amend my misfortune. In this opini-  
on the next morning he rode to the Cittie of Elain, heauy  
and sad, yet in hope of comfort: and as hee came nere the  
Cittie, hee was inclosed with two or thre hundred Light  
Horsemen, whom the Prince Maulerino, Brother to Ze-  
phira had there Embushed, to take all Sauant-curers and  
Knights passing by them. Yet obserued they these condi-  
tions, that who so would take the Princes Paye, and swere  
falechfull service, should sustaine no harme: but such as refu-  
sed so to do, were carryed into the Cittie, they Horse and  
Armour taken from them, and they inclosed in strong Pri-  
son. These Hores were amazed to see Palmerin so richly  
Armed, and much more beholding him so branely mounted,  
wherefore they said so hym:

Yeld your selfe Sir Knight, and swere to maintaine  
our Princes quarrell: else be assured thy Death is present.  
The condition is very hard (said Palmerin) but for I haue  
heard the wrong offered by the King to your Princesse: I  
will sustaine her cause, not as a Prisoner enforced heereto,  
but of mine own gay wil, as all Knights Errant are bound  
by dutie, to defende the iust Quarrell of distressed Ladys.  
Presently was Palmerin brought to the Princesse, and her

## THE HISTORIE

Brother, who were conferring togeather about these earnest assayres: when the Knight that conducted Palmerin, kept to the Prince Maulerino, and thus spake. See here my Lorde, a Knight lately taken, whom for that wee haue found honest and courteous, wee haue suffered him to remaine Armed, and commit him to your opinion. While the Knight continued these speeches, transformed Tryneus, who lay at the Princesses Foote, seeing Palmerin with his Beuer open, ran and leaped on him, whining and falowing on him so louingly, as every one greatly maruelled therat. In brieue, they myght discerne by his cryes, colling about his legs, and pittifull mourning, that faine he wold haue spoken, and shewid his loyall friende his inward complaings. The Princessesse maruellung at this strange occasion, said. I thinke (Syr Knight) my Dogge knowes yee, for since Malfada gaue hym me, I never could see hym so falome on any body. In sooth Madame (answere Palmerin) to my remembrance, I never saw your Dog before this present. Hereupon shée called hym to her, and made many meanes that he shuld come to her, yet he wold not leaue Palmerin, but shaking his head still whyned to his friend, as cravuage aide and succour at his hand, wherewith the Princessesse mewed, thus spake.

I pray thes Knight conceale not any thing from me, for I perswade my selfe, that thou hast beene heretofore some great friend to the Enchauntresse Malfada, seeing my Dogge is so loath to come from thes. Let mee understand the trueth I pray thes, and if thou likewise wilt assist me against my euell Brother, thou shalt be Honourably vsed, and thy ordinary Day redoubled. Madam (answering Palmerin) heere you may beholde the most distressed Knight living, and a Christian, whose hard fortune hath bene such, as arriving in the Enchauntresse Isle whereof you spake: I haue lost true friends, my true and honorable compaines, and with them two Ladys, who in all Vertues may not be equalled. Yet haue I reuenged their losse on the old

Hagge

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

hagge and her seruaunts, whose breathes bodies remain for lode to the soules of the aires. And because I hearde (faire Princesse) your selfe was not long since with her, for counsell in some vnhappy fortune befallen you, faine woulde I know, may it please you to graunt me so much fauour, if shē assigned you to any other moze skilfull then her selfe, by whom you not alone shall find remedie, but my tormenting grefes may likewise bee consoled. Good Knight, answered the Princesse, the Gods themselves will trauaile to helpe thee, and it may be I haue learned of her, by whose death thou hast reuenged the wrong of manie noble persons: some hope of further god, to ease those passions which thy speeches bewraye. True it is, that I stayed with Malfado the space of eight days, yet not learning anie thing of her Worshie the rehearsall, this on clie excepted: she told me that in the Kings Court of Crisca and Romata, remained an auncient Knight named Muzelino, by whom (if my maladie were curable) I shoud finde help, and by no other man whatsoeuer, so did he extoll him beyond all other. And had not the King my Father died soone after my retурne, and my iniurious brother ever since molested mee: long ere this had I gone to that skilfull man, whom I meane to finde, so soone as I can bring my troubles to anie good ende. By all our Gods, quoth the Prince Maulerino, seeing Malfada is deade, Muzelino may finish all the enchantments: but duryng her life, neither he nor all the Magitians in the world were able to compasse it.

As for the Kingdome of Romata, it is very farre from this Countrey: the greater will your paine and daunger be in trauailing thither. Right pleasant will the paine be to me, said Palmerin, so may I recouer my dearell frends againe: and for you sweete Madame will I adventure my life, either to winne you peace with your Brother, or a happy victorie by his death, that wee may the sooner set for ward to Romata.

8

## THE HISTORIE

A thousand thankes good Knight, quoth the Princesse, and this day shall we know what our Brother intendeth: if peace, it is welcome, if warre, we must defend our selues so well as we may. Still did the dogge cling about Palmerins feete, so that hee demanded of the Princesse, if shee brought him from the Isle of Malfada, for doubtlesse, quoth he, I thinke it be some Knight transformed by that cruell woman, who heretofore belike hath knowne me. At which wordes the dog howled exceedinglie, when Palmerin, tooke an oath that hee wold search all the wold ouer, to finde some means to bring him to his former shape, that he might know from whence this loue proceeded. The next day the King Tyreno assaulted the Cittie, who was slaine in the battaile by Palmerin, so afterward was Maulerino crownd King of Nabar, and all the Countrey enjoyed their former quiet: whereupon the Princesse Zephira gaue Palmerin her dogge, who requited her with manie gracious thanks, because he greatly suspected that it was his friend Tryneus transformed into that shape: but now let vs retorne to the Soldans of Babilon, understanding how his Armie was discomfited at Constantinople.

## CHAP

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

### CHAP. XLVI.

How one of the Nephewes to the King of Balisarca, brought newes to the Soldan of his Uncles death, the foyle of his Armie, the losse of Palmerin and Olorico. And how the Princesse Alchidiana brought Ptolome, whom she greatly honored for Palmerins sake.



He King of Balisarca, (as you haue heard before) being slaine, his Armie discomfited, and all his Galleys burnt before Constantinople, one of his nephewes that kept the straite of the Bosphor with two Foxles, least any succour should come that way to the Christians, by one Gally that escaped, heard all this misfortune: wherefore making hasse backe againe, fearing to be taken, at length arrived in the Soldans Kingdome, whereso not staying long, he postled to the Court, and to the Soldane revealed all that had happened. When the Soldane heard how his Army was thus ouerthronwe, Palmerin whom hee loued so well, and the Prince Olorico lost in the storne on the Sea: vexed with griefe and rage, he called his Lord Ambassadour Maucetto to him, saying: Haste the god Maucetto to my Brother the Soldane of Persia, and desire him to leuey me a strong Armie against the Moneth of March next ensuing, to encounter with the Emperour of Greece: promising him the spoile whatsoeuer it be, reserving for my selfe nothing but the same of revenge.

Mau-

## THE HISTORIE

Maucetto departed presentlie on his iourney, and by the was met sise Moores, leading two Christians to the Holdans Court to sell, which were Ptolome and Colmelio of whom he demaunded wherefore they were so bounde in chaines:

My Lord, quoth one of the Moores, they be Christian slaues, who not long since were taken at the Sea by Oli-maell Admirall to the great Turke. And how came you by them? said Maucetto. The Admirall, quoth the Moore, gaue them to one of his Cozines, now is dead, and his wife beeing loath to keepe them anie longer, sends them to the Court to be sold for monie. Maucetto bought Colmelio of them, refusing Pcoleme because hee was somewhat sicklie, and so passed on his Embassade. The Moores comming to the Court with poore Ptolome, and placing him among other slaues that stood to be sold, there came a deformed Moore, far worse mishapen then was Thersites the Grecke, and he would needes buy Ptolome of the Merchant; but Ptolome disdaining to be subiect to so vile a creature, gaue him such a stroke on the Stomacke with his fist, as made him tumble ouer backward, saying; Thou monstrous Villaine, let me rather die, then come into thy subiection. At this instant passed by the Princesse Alchidiana, smileng to see the Moore lie along: but when she beheld the good personage of Ptolome, shee remembred her louer Palmerin, and was therewith mooued thus to speake, How durst thou take such hardines vpon thee, beeing a bondslauue and a captaine, thus to strike a Moore, free of this Countrey? Ptolome perceiving by the Ladies attending on her, that shee was the Holdans Daughter, falling on his knee, thus answered.

Alluredie Madame, rather desire I death, then to live at such an ill fauoured villaines controll, my selfe beeing a Knight at armes. Are you then a Knight? said the princesse. I am good Madame, quoth he, although my servitude hath very much altered mee. Alchidiana without any further question

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

questions, deluined the Merchant twohundred Setaphes, and by two of her Sisters caused him to bee conducted to her Chamber, where he was presently disrobed of his vntidie garments, and clothed in such as well became a Knight to weare, afterward, shee commanded her attendants to depart the chamber, and comming to Ptolome, he thus be spake.

How Sir Knight, I intreate you by the holy faith you owe to your best beloved, that you will truely tell mee, by what misfortune you happened first into thaldome. Madame, quoth he, seeing of your owne grace and bountie, you haue deliuered me from these villaines that made sale of my life: I will not sable with you in any one point, but tell you a Historie replete with wonderful sorrow. Having reuealed the manner of his taking, and all the mishaps hee endurde euer since, the teares trickling downe his cheakes, he said. And yet sweete Lady, all these passed miseries, and still abiding your slauue, grieues me not so much, as the losse of my dearest friend, the best Knight in the world, who went to see his Falcon lie, when the Pirats came and un-happily tooke vs. Tell me good friend, quoth the Princesse, what may the Knight bee called, of whom you make such estimation? Quoth Ptolome, hee nameth himselfe Palmerin d' Oliua.

O soueraigne Gods, said Alchidiana, haue you beeene companion to the noble Palmerin? That haue I in truth Madame, quoth he, and know moore of his affaires then any other man doth. Unhappy that I am, said the Princesse, now see I well that I am deceipted in all my hope. Say god Knight, nay more, I coniure the by thy faith to the soueraigne Creator of all things, to tell me, if the bee of our Law, and hath beeene dumbe of long, or no? By God Madame, answered Ptolome, your adiuration is such, as rather will I make a sacrifice of my selfe, then bee found untrue to you in any thing. Hee is a Christian, borne in Greece, and never had defect in his speach: if discreet consider-

## THE HISTORIE

ration of following events, either to escape captiuitie or death, did not enforc him to seigne such a deceite, for he is most expert among all other, in dissembling any matter may turne him aduantage. Then such hath been my fortune, quoth Alchidiana, as his vertus, bountie, and wise foresight, vied for the space of a yere and more in my Father's Court, made me so religiously bowed to him in loue, as I never intend to make other chiose: and I swewe by al Gods, that if I heare not the better tydings of him by thee, my spirit will forfake this wretched bodie, and expect better fortune among the soules in Elisium. Ah impetuous loue, how wonderfull is thy stroke: My friends is confrarie to me in law and profession, a Knight errant, vnyknowne, absent from mee, and loues me not: for these occasions, were I the onelie Daughter to the great Empesour of Turkie, I neither can or wil change my former opinion.

Hap then what shall, and let my Father make an oblation of my bloud to his secret Idoll, I will not desist from louing him. And thou my friend (quoth she) to Ptolome, because thou hast not hid the truth from mee, bee thou at this instant free, and vse thy libertie as thou pleasest: for rather let me abide the death, then the companion to my noble Lord suffer shame by mee. Ptolome falling on his knee, humbly kissed her hande, and beganne to recuale the Knightliche chivalrie, that Palmerin and Tryneus sometimes did in England: likewise how they brought the Dainges Daughter from thence, who remained captive among the Turks, and her Husband given as slave to the Admirals Cozin. It is enough said the Princesse, talk to me no more heereof, for by the great God, the very remembrance of him is greater griefe to me, then the mercilesse seritude appore slave endureth. The loue he bare to you, to the other Knight, and the yong English Princes, whose misfortune I cannot sufficiently bewaile: calleth me hence to trauell in search of him, and may I find him with them, right

## OF PALMERIN DOLIVA.

right gladsome will the iourney be to me, because he is the onelie darling and fauorite of fortune. And now shall I tell you how I meane to colour mine intent. My Father not knowing your captiuitie, to him shall I say how you are the onelie companion to Palmerin, and hither are you come to seeke him, as having hearde before that hee remained in your service: of this I dare assure you his Maiestie so deere lie loueth Palmerin, that hee will deliuer you all things necessarie for his search, be it by land or See. And if your God shall favour you so much, as in your traualle you happen to finde him, or else to send me certaine tidings of him: you doe me the greater honour, that euer Knight did to distressed Lady. So forward was the Princesse in her amorous desire, and loth to walke tyme with tedious delay: as that day she acquainted her Father therewith, and so cunningly she plaid the Draff, as the Souldane gaue Ptoleme Armour, Horses, Servants, and sorte Knights to attend on him. Beside, he furnished him with two great shippes, that he might enquire at all the Ports on the See, for Palmerin.

The day being come of his departure, hee tooke his leue of the Souldane, the Princesse Alchidiana accompanying him to the Poorte, where for her adieu she gaue him a sweete kisse, saying: Sir Knight, if your fortune be such as to bring me the man, who only hath power to mittigate my tormentes: beside the continuall fauours of a Princesse, I will make you one of the greatest Lords in the Orient. Madame (quoth he) I will doe my diligence, and till I returne let god hope per swaie. So hoysing saile they set to sea, where we will leue him till he meet with Palmerin.

CHAP.

# THE HISTORIE

## CHAP XLVII.

How Palmerin and the Princesse Zephira, departed from Elain towards Romata, to seek Muzabelino, and what happened by the way in their iourney.

After that Maulerino was croboned King of Mabor, the rebellious Subjects brought to obediance, and the boode of the slaine King Tyreno entered: the young Princesse Zephyra and Palmerin, thought long to set forward on their iourney, wherefore the King allowing them a verie honourable traime, bequeathed them to their desired fortune. Having passed many Regions, and sundrie daungerous incident in traualle, chieselie of a Basiliisque, whom Palmerin with the helpe of the dog Gryneus valiantly overcame, at length they entered the Realme of Romata, where by commandement of the King Abimar, their entertainment was according to their estates: the occasion thereof being thus. This King Abimar, holding the greatest possessions in that Region, would never yelde himselfe as subiect to the signorie of Persia: whereat the Soldan now growing offendred, sent an Ambassadour to commandement him, prefetliche to determine on his obediance, or els he should ouerrun his Countrey with a mighty Army, and put both old and young to the Swoarde. Abimar abashed at this threatening Embassage, demanded counseil of the wise Muzabelino, what answer he shoulde make the Ambassadour, whereto the Magitian thus answered. Feare not my Lord the threatening menaces of the Soldan,

for

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

for in that you haue two noble Sannes, to wit, the Princes Tomano and Drumino, Knights of high and special account: yet come there two others, (one whereof may not be knowne) with the Princesse Zephyra, Daughter to the King of Nabor, who shall deliver you from his tirannie, and make him your Friend; therefore dismay not to send him a hardie answer, as well beleemeth a Prince free, and not be commanede. And though one of the Knights that commeth with the Princesse, shal a while be unknowne to you, by the bountie of his companion, with whom no other may well compare: yet ere long you shall know him, to your no little ioy and contentation. Abima: giving credit to Muzabelinos speeches, gaue charge in all the Citties where t'rough the Prince should passe, that she shoulde be entertained with honoorable trympes, as if himselfe had beene in companie. And though the Prince Tomano grieved hereat, who loued the youngest Daughter to the Soldan of Persia, yet the King answered the Ambassadour: that he would maintaine his right by the Swoerde, and if the Soldane came to assaile him, hee would defend his Countrey so well as he could.

The Ambassadour dispatched with this auns were, Tomano came to Muzabelino, saying. Ah my dere friende Muzabelino, what wrong haue you done mee, in perswading my Father to hold warre with the Soldane: whose Daughter you know I loue in such sorte, as if I obtaine her not in mariage, hardly can my life long endure. Content your selfe my Lord, answered Muzabelino: for if the two Knights that come, bring fortune for your father, you must expect the like for your selfe. But, said the Prince, may I not know their names? Let it suffice (quoth Muzabelino) what I haue said, yet hereof I dare assure you, that they are Christians, and extract of the greatest lineage on the earth, in bountie and valour incomparable: whereof if you list to make experiance, and thereby to credit what I haue said beside, I shall shew you a meane auailable for

## THE HISTORIE

the purpose. You shall cause two Tents to be erected by the Cedar Scowntaine, which is halfe a mile distant from this Cittie, in the one of them let be your Brother Drumino and your selfe, with tennie of the best Knights in your Fathers Court, and in the other let be your Sister, accompanied with ten of her chieffest Ladies, and about a bow shot from thence towards the high way side, you shal set vp a Marble Pyllar, wheron let these lines be engrauen.

Sir Knight, in these pauillions doth remaine,  
A Lady faire, kept by a Princes sonne:  
Foyle him by Ioust, and winne her hence againe,  
Thou maist not passe before the deede be donne.

If it happen that they passe by and see not the Pyllar, send one of the Ladies to them, to let them understande, that they may not passe, before one of them hast Iousted with the Prince and his Knights. If they bee vnhorred by him, the Lady must be deliuered to him: yet with this condition, that he refuse not to graunt her one demaunde. By Mahomet, said Drumino, husband to the Ladie, I will not meddle in this matter, he may be such a one, as if hee hap to winne my wife, he will be loth to rettore her back againe. Feare not that (quoth the Magitian) hee is so courteous, and hath so faire a friend himselfe, as hee neither may, or will withhold her. By heauen, said Tomano, I will cope with him, and to morrow let the Pyllar and pauillions bee erected, there wil I with my companions stay his coming: See here the cause why the King Abimare, commaunded the Princesse Zephira and her Knights to be so honorablie entertained. By this time is the Princesse come within a dayes iourney of Romata, and Tomato with his Brother, Sister, Ladies and Knights, betake themselves to the pauillions, hearing that Zephira was come so neare, and be-

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

ing themselves Armed, their Sister decked likewise in most sumptuous ornaments, they vowed to hreate many Launces for her sake.

## CHAP. XLVIII.

How Palmerin Iousted against Tomano, Drumino, and their Knights, whom he all dismounted, and what entertainement the King Abimar, and the wise Negro-manner Muzabelino made them.



This time is the Princesse with Palmerin and her company, come to the place where the pauillions were erected, and not seeing the Pyllar, they passed on: wherefore Tomano sent a Damosell to declare the conditions of the passage. Palmerin feigning himself somewhat wearie, made this answere. Damosel, you may say to the Prince and his Knights, that the Princesse Zephira is not in our garde, as the Ladie hee fights for abideth with him. Nor comes she hither to be fought for, rather doth she intreate him to spare vs the Ioust, in that it will be small honour to him to conquer Knights overlabored in trauaille, and whose Horses are not able for that exercise.

The Damosell certifying the Prince of this answere, he grew into anger, swearing they shold not passe before they tried their fortune: wherefore he sent the Damosell againe, who thus spake to Palmerin. Sir Knight, your excuses may not excuse you, you must either Ioust, or leave the Princesse behinde you. Trust me Damosel, answered Palmerin,

## THE HISTORIE

merin, soxte would I be to accompany her so farre, & leane her in the custody of one I know not, did your Prince shew more courtesie, it would agree much better with his order: but because hee shall not thinke, that we refuse the Joust through feare or cowardise, say hee shall haue his desire both he and all his shall trie their fortune ere we passe fur-ther.

This answerc returned to the Prince, Drumino first shewd himselfe in the field, and by importunate intre-ty, certaine of the Princesse Knights would first try their valour: but such was their ill fortune, as Drumino vanquished them one after another. Zephira somewhat offended heereat, entreated Palmerin either to win them passage, or else with his successe she was content to stay prisoner. I goe Madame (quoth Palmerin) and Fortune speede mee, as I regard the safetie of your hono. Muzabelino, having acquainted the King with this pastime, they came in habits disguised to behold it, at what time the Prince Drumino encountr'd Palmerin. But not to hold you with tedious discourtle, considering which way the victory is intended, the two Princes and all their Knights were manfullie foyled by Palmerin.

The Joust being ended, and the King returned againe to the Cittie: Muzabelino came to Palmerin, and having saluted him with great reverence, thus spake. Worthe Lord, who onely deseruest the name of chivalrie, let mee intreat you to excuse the Kings Son, who to make proue of your valour, by my meanes attempted this noble aduen-ture, from which you haue escaped with great honour, and to their shame that made the challenge. What are you sir, said Palmerin, that know me so well, and the cause why I came into this Countrey? Your Friend Muzabelino, (quoth he) whom you haue taken such paines to finde, and whoe woulde you to be a Christian, will keape you from adan-gers among these Mahumetistes. Palmerin suddenly alighting from his Horse, came and embrased him, saying.

Noble

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

Noble Friend, suffer me to kisse your hand, as a witnessse of my reverence to your honorable Age. Not so my Lord, an-swered Muzabelino, rather suffer mee to doe my dutie, to that incomparable person, by whose meanes ere syre Moneths be past, the greatest nobilitie in the woorlde shall re-cue incredible honour.

While these courteous Ceremonies endured, the con-quered Princesse with her Ladys came from the Pavilli-on, and saluting Palmerin with great courtesie, saide. See heere Syr Knight the Lady, who trusling in your honoura-ble benignitie, commeth to submit her selfe at your disposi-tion, deing wonne with more choyse Chivalrie, then euer any other Ladie was. Notwithstanding, I heape that you will not refuse to graunt me one demand, according to the conditions agreed in the Joust. Palmerin seeing her so dis-creet and modest, so sumptuous in Apparell, and accompa-nied with so many Ladys, indged that she was the Kings Daughter, and wife to the Prince Drumino, wherefore entertaining her very graciously, he thus replied. Unfit-ting it is faire Ladie, that a Princesse of so high and speci-ally qualitie and worth, shoulde be Subject to a pore and un-known Knight: and though the agreement of the Joust bee such, yet doe I humbly thanke you for this honour, bequea-thing you to your former Libertie, and restoring you to him that hath best right to you.

A thousand thankes worthy Lord, saide the Princesse, now see I that words of Muzabelino to my father are true, that the Knight who conducted Madame Zephira, as in Chivalrie her surpasseth all other, so in chancie, munde and Liberalitie hee hath not his seconde, which was the chiefeest cause why I adventured my selfe in this hazard of Fortune.

Madame (quoth Palmerin) if the wife Muzabelino hath vsed any spech of me in mine absence, and to my ho-nour, it proceeded not by my Vertue but his god will in so doing, which if I live, I will one day acknowledg. Right welcome are you saide the Princesse, and faire Zephira the

## THE HISTORIE

rather for your sake: and such be the houre of your arraiall here, as you may obtaine the ende of your desires. Zephira humbly thanked the Princesse, Tomano, Drumino, and all the rest embracing Palmerin, thinking it no dishonour to be conquered by him: they mounted all on Horsebacke, and comming to the Cittie, they found the King there, ready with an honourable fraine to receyue them: who saluting the Princesse Zephira very kindly, saide. So maruell Madame, if you durst undertake so long a iourney, ha-  
ving the onely Knight of Fortune in your company, as my Sonnes haue god occasion to iuities: and shee that commits her selfe to his charge, may be well assured of speciall defence. Zephira with humble thanks requiting the King, all to the Vallace, where being entertained in choyself sorte, as his wonted kindnesse to his louing Dogge.

## CHAP. XLIX.

The talkke that the Princesse Zephira and Palmerin had with the wise Muzabelino: and how Palmerin departed from Romata, to the Castell of the tenne Rockes.



He Princesse Zephira, who had not as yet talked with Muzabelino, in y<sup>e</sup> Morning sent for him and Palmerin: she causing them both to sit downe by her, beganne her speches in this manner. My Lord, if your deere knowledge and great Judgement haue acquainted you with the cause of coming hither at this tyme, and that you be pleased to do any thing

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

thing for the loue of Hy<sup>r</sup> Palmerin, let pittie perswade you, for in you onely consisteth my remedie. Madame (quoth Muzabelino, use not such speches, for what my studie and practise hath taught me, you must make no account of: but referre your selfe wholly to the Supreame Creator, who by the meanes of Roble Palmerin, will restore your health, him will I acquainte with the manner how it must be compasse.

Your Disease happened by smelling to a flower, and by the smell of an other it must be recovered. The flower appoynted to give you Health, groweth in an Arbour in the Castell of the tenne Rockes, and kept by the Enchantment of a Ladie more skilfull i<sup>n</sup> all Magicall artes, then ever was the skilfull Medea. This Ladie deceasing a hundred yeres since and more. Shes living before her death the vertue of this flower, and of a Byrd which is kept there by the selfe same meanes, having Enchaunted them in a Garden, the most sumptuous in the worlde: raised tenne Rockes of Marble without the Castell, eache one ascending higher then an other, and by these Rockes was the Castell named. Such Enchauntings did the Lady Exercize on them, as when any one thinketh to passe by them, presently starteth out of each Rocke an Armed Knight, who returneth the aduenturer so forriblie, as to this day they haue not beene passed by any. Couragious therefore must hee be that passeth these Rockes, which if Palmerin by his Bountie and prowe doe not accomplish, no man living can end the aduenture: for by force nat cunning, must the Enchantment be ended. When the Princesse heard, that by the daungerous trauell of Roble Palmerin her health must be restored, shee thus sorowfully complained.

Ah Gods, suffiseth it not that heretofore this god Knight aduentured his life, in the dangerous Battell when my Brother was slaine: but now he must abide the diuellish Coniurations, where Death is daily and hourelly expected: shall I consent to offer him such wrong, and be guiltie.

## THE HISTORIE

guilty of his Blode, who surpasseth all other in Chualtie: rather let my death be a warrant for his safety, then Noble Palmerin should endure such perill for me. Lament not Madame, quoth Muzabelino, before you haue cause, he that newe Maltada and her Seruants, is so highly and special- ly fauoured of the Heauenly powers, as no Enchaunting whatsoeuer hath any power to hurt him. Why Madame, (saide Palmerin) thinke you my god will is lesse to doe you seruice, then when I was first brought to your Courte? Forbeare these teares I pray you, and offend not your selfe: for such is my hope in God, that what is done by man, shall be destroyed by man: besides, it will be great reproach to me, if coming into straunge Countreyes to seeke Aduen- tures, I shall depart without tryall of my fortune. Muzabelina hearing him speake so couragiouly, tooke him aside, saying: Noble and hardy Knight, whome feare of Death cannot dismay, happy shall I account my selfe to doe the q- my seruice.

And to the ende thou maist with better affection follow this Enterpize, assure thy selfe to passe the Rockes with safety, and enter the Castell with happy victorie, where endyng all the Aduentures therein contained, thou shalt finde a part of remedy for recovering thy companions, but not all, for the rest is in the Tower of Maltada, where as yet thou canst not enter, but at thy returme shalt easly open, and in the ende joyfully finde all thy Companions and Friendes. For the rest, feare not my discouerie of thy secret Loue and Parentage, which is the most Noble in all Christendome: for rather shall I be tornie in a thousand pieces, then so god (qd. Palmerin) I commit all to God and you, let mee there- fore right soone crame leue of the King for my departure, because I long that the Princesse were easled. Right soory was the King to parte with him so soone, yet the hope of his soone returnes somewhat pacified him. And when the newes were spread abroade that Palmerin shold trauell to the

Castell

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

Castell of the tenne Rockes: Tomano Drumino and the Princesse Zephira wold needs beare him compaines, which he beeing not able to gaine say, because they were unforunat on him, gave his consent. So departing from Romata, they made such halte in their tourney, as within fewe daies after they arrived at the Castell: and comming to the first Rock, they beheld a goodlie Sworde, enclosed therein vppre to the crosse. The two yong Princes mewailing thereat, alighted from their Horses, and assale by strength to pull it out, which they were not able to doo; wherefore Tomano entreated Palmerin to try his fortune, who after manie courteous refusals offered to pull it forth, but a fearefull flame of fire sudainly issued forth of the Rock, which compelled them to retire back, wherefore Palmerin said to the Princes: This Sworde I see must be none of ours, therefore it is in vaine to strive anie further.

## CHAP. L.

How Palmerin passed the tenne Rocks, vanquished the tenne enchaunted Knights, and entred the Castell, where he finished all the enchauntments: Tyreneus returning to his former shape, and what happened to them afterward.



Palmerin when he had sayled in draving the Sworde out of the Rocke, hee prepared himselfe to the Combat with the enchaunted Knights, whom as yet hee could not anie way discerne: but first he began his ouisons in this manner: O loueraigne Creastour, who emprise hath succoured me

## THE HISTORIE

in all my aduersities and fortunes : this daye giveth mee  
strength to confound this diuillish enchantment, and let thy  
name haue the honour of a glorious victorie.

Then giuing his Horsle the spurrs, galloped onwaards,  
saying. Sweete Mistresse Polynarda, if euer you remem-  
brance gaue me aide and fauour , now let your diuine re-  
gard comfort your Servant . Beinge then betwene the  
two formost Rocks, a mightie Knight mounted on a lustie  
Courser, with a huge Launce in his hand , called to him,  
saying.

Turne Sir Knight, you may passe no further, then fur-  
tiouslie encountering one another, they met so roughlie to-  
gether with their bodies , as they were both cast foorth of  
their saddles . The Dog that still followed Palmerin, see-  
ing his Friends horsle offered to starte, caught the bridle by  
theraynes with his teeth , and would not let him passe a-  
nie further . In meane while Palmerin hauing fought  
with the Knight, and after a long and cruell combat, smot  
his head from his shoulders . In briese, he was so fauoured  
of Fortune, as hauing vanquished all the ten Knights , he  
passed the tenne Rocks ; and no sooner was he mounted on  
the formost, but a darke Clokde compasched him about, so  
that the two Princes, Zephira and their knights, to their  
great amazement lost the sight of him , yet his former vic-  
torie, exempted all feare from them of bad successe . There  
stayed they Palmerins returne till Sunne setting , when  
the two Princes demaunded of Zephira , if she would de-  
part thence, or stay there all night ? Depart quoth she, no  
by my life, heere will I bide the good Knights returne from  
the Castell : wherepon her Servants hauing erected their  
pauillions, they there tooke vp their lodgynge for that night .  
By this time Palmerin was come to the Castell Gate,  
where looking on his Armour which was hacked in peaces,  
his flesh cut and mangled in manie places, breathynge forth  
a bitter lgh; said. If yet this traualle may availe the Prin-  
cesse , and my noble companions that are enchaunted, let  
haz

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

happe to me what please the Heauens , for their liberty is  
more deere to me then life . Then looking on his dog, who  
all this while helde the Horsle bridle in mouth , he re-  
membred that he had not demaunded of Muzabelino an-  
nie thing concerning him, wherefore he said. Ah gentle dog,  
yet no dog ( I thinke ) but rather some Knight thus trans-  
formed , how forgetfull haue I been of thy seruice in my  
necessite? why did I not demaund the trues of Muzabe-  
lino, what thou art? But must thou prooue to be my good  
freend Tryneus , when all the enchantments in this Ca-  
stell shall be ended, thy forme shal I hope shall bee resto-  
red.

So strikynge at the Castell Gate, to see if any way hee  
could get it open : at length hee looked vp to the batta-  
ments, and beheld an auncient Knight, with a long beard  
so white as snow, who furtiouslie thus spake to him. Proud  
Knight, who made thee so bolde thus to beate on the Gate:  
enter , unto thy furder ill I hope , with these wordes the  
Gates opened of themselves , when presentlie Palmerin  
with his dog entred, and the old man , who seemed ouer-  
spent with yeeres and weakeenes meeting him in the Gate  
takynge him by the arme, threwe him vglyly against the  
ground, saying . Thou that hast overcome the ten Knights  
young and Armed, what canst thou do to an olde man with  
out defence ? Wretched vllanie , answere Palmerin,  
wherefore hast thou stroken me? by the living God , dyd  
not thine age excuse thee, soone should I lay thee breathlesse  
at my foote.

Soft and faire, sayd the olde man , thou shal haue worke  
enough to defend thy selfe . So catching Palmerin about the  
middle , he wroting him so cruellie , as one might heare his  
bones crack . O my God cryed Palmerin, defend me against  
this cursed deuill . At length hee forced the olde man to let  
goe his holde : when began such a furious fight betwene  
them, as never was Palmerin in such daunger, in that every  
blowe was giuen him , her thought did breake all his  
bones .

## THE HISTORIE

bones in peeces. The dog seeing his master in such extremitie, caught the olde man by the throat, and never left tugging till he got him downe, when suddenly he vanished away, and was no more seene afterward. For this victorie Palmerin thanked God, and having cherished his dog, entered further into the Castell. Where he beheld most late-ly Galleries, erected on reat collombes, Porphyry and Alabaster, as never did he behold a more sumptuous spectacle.

In the midst of the Courte was a goodly Tombe, enclosed with barres of beaten Golde, and ouer it stooode a goodly Table of Chistall, upheld by fourt Satires of Aga-cha: and on the Table was pictured the personage of a Ladie, drawne by such curiositie and workmanship, as hardly could it be equalled through the world. Palmerin approached to behold the counterfeite, which held in the one hand a Booke fast shutte, and in the other a keye of Golde, pointing with the keye towarde the Gate of the Pallace: Whereupon he imagined, that this was the Tombe of the Ladie Enchantesse, whereof Muzabelino had tolde him before, and putting his hand betweene the Golden barres, the Image presently offered him the keye, Hereat being somewhat abashed, he judged that this happened notwithstanding great cause, wherefore taking the keye, he went and opened the Pallace Gate, and entring the great Hall, hee founde it so richlie paued, and garnished round about with such costly Tapistrie, as the greatest Monarch in the world had not the like.

Looking behinde him for his Dog, he beheld him suddenly chaunged to his former shape, and running to embrase Palmerin sayd. Happy be the houre of thy comming deere Friend, to whom I remaine for euer bound, in acknowledging the speciaall graces and fauours received. But Palmerin deceaued with so manie illusions before, would hardlie give credite to what he now behelde: reputing him rather some hellish furie so disguised, only to entrap him with

## OF PALMERIN DOLIVA.

with further danger, which Tryneus perceiving, spake againe. Ah my noble Friend Palmerin, for Gods sake doubt no more, I am thy Brother Tryneus, who since thy com-  
ming from Elain, followed thee in the enchaunted forme of a Dog: reiye then with mee, far since thy long desired  
hope hath now so god an end, doubt not but the residue of  
thine affaires will psonne as fortunate. Palmerin being  
now thorooulte resolued, I leauie to your iudgements the  
kinde gratulations betweene them: who well can con-  
ceive the wonderfull joy of long absent friends, especially  
of such as live to die for each other. Ah my Lord, quoth Pal-  
merin, why did I not sooner acknowledge thee? the great  
succour thou gauest me by the way, might well haue per-  
swaded me: yet though I still imagined thee my friende  
transformed, hardly could I resolve thereon till further ex-  
perience.

Ah Fortune, if heretofore thou hast beene enuious to-  
wards me, yet now hast thou recompenced mee in such  
sort: as now I haue no cause to exclaime on thee. So sitting  
downe together, Tryneus reuealed the manner of his ta-  
king, and all that besel hym til his transformation. Which  
Palmerin to requite, discoursed the knowledge of his Pa-  
rents, how he was betrothed to his Ladie Polynarda, and  
how he recovered the Princesse Agriola, who afterward  
was likewise enchaunted in the Isle of Mafada. Tryneus  
at these newes, was readie to die with griefe, but Palme-  
rin perswaded him of the wile Muzabelinos promise: that  
shortly hee shold returne againe to the Isle, and they fi-  
nish all the enchauntments whatsoeuer. While they thus  
conversed together, they saw suddainlie sette before them a  
Table furnished with all kinde of meates, and a hand hold-  
ing two great golden Candlestickes, wherin burned two  
faire ware Tapers: beside, they hearde the trampling of  
their feete that brought the meate to the Table, but they  
could not discerne any living creature. Trust mee, quoth  
Palmerin, I thinke some body knowes I haue an hungry

## THE HISTORIE

appetite, sit dolvynge with me good Friend: for these two monethes had I not a better stomacke. After they had well resehed themselves, the Table was presently take away againe, and they entring a good Wardrobe, whiche vnder a Canapie of cloth of Gold, they found two maruellous rostly greene Armours, so be et with faire Emeraldes and great Oriental Pearles, as neuer proude Pagan wore the like in heathenesse. By them stooode two goodly Shields of proesse, in the one being figured the Armes of Constanti-nople, and in the other the Crest of Allemaigne: wherat Palmerin not a litle meruailing, said to Tryneus. I thinke my Lord, that these Armoires were provided for vs, let vs sye if they be fit for our bodies: so helping to Arme each other, they found them so fitte as they had been purposchly made for them. There found they likewise a Siluer Casket, wherin were two sumptuous kinglie Crownes of Golde, and between them stod a rich Golden Cup, having in it a King, with the most beautifull stone in it that euer was seene.

Wondring at these euentz, and doubtful to take shence those rare presents: immediatly a Damosell came before them, and humbly on her knees thus spake. Most mighty and magnanimous Princes, the Jewels you haue found in the Casket are yours, and them must you carrie to the Ladies of yor affections: because they were purpose-ly made for them, as these woxthie Armoires were for you. As for her that deuised the n, in this she accounteth her selfe right happie: that this day they are fallen into your power, and by you shall all the aduentures heere bee finished.

You my Lord, quoth she to Tryneus, must take the King that is in the Cup: and leane it not wheresoeuer you come, lest you bee chaunged to the shaxe of a Dog againe. And you my Lord Palmerin must take the Cup, to put the flowers therin, whiche you must beare to the Princesse Zephira; assuring you that no one must drinke therin, but

she

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

she to whom you must carry it. Faire Damosell, said Palmerin, tell me how I shall find the Garden, wherre those flowers groe of such soueraigne vertue, and how I may come to the Arbour, wherre the strange Bird remaneth peached: likewise if any other then your selfe is in this Castell:

My Lord, quoth she, the Ladie of this Castell at her decease, left all the persons in this Castell a sleepe by en-chauntment, except my selfe that am her faire, and such coniurations hath she charmed them withall: as they shall not stirre till you haue taken the Bird you aske for, at whose fearefull cure they shall all awake, in all this leng time no whit consumed. And heere haue I never since re-mained, forespoynted by her to doe you service, in helpeing you the manner how to gather the flowers, and to take the fatall Bird peached in the Arbour, wheret I will bring you at the appointed howre. In meane while rest your selues on this rich bedde, which hath bee ne prepared onely for you, and here repose your selues til my returne. By my Sword Damosel, quoth Palmerin, you selvs mat-ters full of wonder: notwithstanding, seeing we find some part of them true, we giue crevit to the rest. So bidding her good night, there slept they till the next morning, when the Damosell came to call them: conducting them into the Garden, the most braue and stately that euer they beheld, and after she had shewed them the Arbour, departed. Palmerin looking round about him, maruelled at the ingenius foundation of the Castell, the surpassing faire Galleries, and the beautifull fountaines in the Garden, wherre hee heord an exceeding pleasant harmony of Birds. Then calling Tryneus to him, entred the Arbour, where taking the fatall Bird by the wings: he gaue three great cryes so loud and searefull, as made both the Princes greatly amaz-ed.

At this instant were all the enchauntments there ended, and the Servaunts restored to their former libertie, when

## THE HISTORIE

Palmerin having stide the Bird to his fist with a thred the Damsell gave him, and filling his cup with the soueraigne flowers: they came soorth of the Garden, and in the great Hall met them the Lord and Lady of the Castell, so olde, withered and decrepit, as it seemed hardly they could sustaine themselves, casting themselves at Palmerins feete, they said:

Ah noble Prince flower of all chivalrie, the highest God hath blessed thee from thy Cradle, and in the end shall make thee the happiell in the world, for the especiall good thou hast this day done, restoring all them to life that haue slumbred, except the aged Lady my Clines Sister, who for these hundred yeres past hath slept in her Tombe. After many courteous speches passed betweene them, Palmerin and Tryneus departed the Castell, and as they went downe the Rockes, Tomano and the Princesse Zephira came to meete them, she courteously embracing him, said: Holu faires my noble Lord: greatly did I despaire of your health: for this morning I heard such a fearefull cry from the Castell, as we were out of all hope to see you againe. By the aide of God, Hadam, answered Palmerin, and this Knight my deere Friend, whom in the shape of a Dog you brought from Mafada, I find my selfe in perfect content: and here haue I brought you the soueraigne remedy for your so long and unfortunate disease. But may it be, quoth the Princesse that so faire a Knight should be so traissored? No lesse do I rejoyce for his good fortune, then mine owne. So entred they the Princesse pavillion, discoursing all the maruels they had seene.

## CHAP.

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

## CHAP. LI.

How the Princesse Zephira was cured of her disease, and how Tryneus ended the aduenture of the enchaunted sword in the Rocke.



After that the Princesse Zephira had felt the sweet odours of the flowers Palmerin brought her, the enuenomed wormes which so long time had tormentid her, fell from her head dead to the ground, and the lothsome smell of her Canker began to cease. Yet all the scartes on her face were not throughly healed: but the sudaine easse that she found by the flowers, gaue her hope that in time they would weare away. Meane while the two Princes of Romata, conferred with Palmerin about the strange Bird, as also of the costly Armours they brought with them from the Castell: which being past over with no little admiration, they remembred the Sword enchaunted in the Rocke, whereupon the Prince Tomano entreated Tryneus, to try if that aduenture were reserved for him.

Say quoth Tryneus, if you haue alreadie failed, hardly may I hope of better fortune: yet can I but loose my labour as you haue done, and shame were it for me to passe hence without triall. So taking the Sword by the handle, with very great ease he puld it out of the Rocke, being the goodliest Sword in workmanship that euer was devised. Trust me, quoth Tryneus, he that made this weapon doubtlesse hath tried the vertue thereof. That may bee, answered

## THE HISTORIE

Palmerin, but had hee likewise knowne the valour of the Knight, who now is woxthilie become Maister thereof, of greater count would he haue esteemed his labour, and to thy perpetual honour deere Friende maist thou employ it. But now woxthy Lords, seeing the Princes Zephira hath found so good ease, and my louing Broth her Tryneus hath wenne this Sword: I thinke it best that we set forwards to Romata, which (after they had seene the sumptuous buildings in the Castell, the rich Tombe, the beautifull Garden, and all the other monuments woxthie view) they did.

Being come to Romata, and there received with speciall signes of honor, the wife Muzabelino, caused the fall Bird to seede of the flowers, which Palmerin hadde brought from the Castell of the tenne Rocks. No sooner had the Bird tasted the flowers, but presently he deliuered such melodious notes, as sweter harmonie was never heard before: and during the time of her singing, fell so many droppes of precious water from her beake, as before Dinner time the Cuppe was well neere filled. Whiche when the wife Pigromancer perceiued, he brought a verie faire Lute to Palmerin, saying. I beseech you my Lord play some exquisite peece of Musique, that the Bird listning to your melodie, may cease her owne records: els shall we loose the soueraigne vertue contained in the Water. Palmerin taking the Lute, plaide thereon so artificiallie, that the Princesse of Romata, whom he won in the Joust, was enforced to bie these speeches. How can we sufficientlie maruaile at the perfections of Palmerin: for if in prowess he surpasseth Hercules of Libia, who overcame Tyrants and Monsters at his pleasure: well may we name him an other Amphion or Orpheus of Thrace, who with their inelodie tamed the Fishes, Beastes and Birds. Tryneus taking the Cup, brought it to the Princesse Zephira, who sipping her handkercher therein, bathed her face therewith: the precious vertue wherof was such, as all the enuenomed scarres the wormes had made, were presently washed away, and her face so delicate as euer it was before: whereupon the Princesse falling at Palmerins feete, joyfully thus spake. Doubtlesse my Lord, I am greatly beholding to the Prince Tryneus, who sauad my life when the Traytour woulde haue slaine me in my bedde: but I must confess my self much more indebted to your woxthilie, by whose paines the venomous putrefaction is extinguished, whereby I endured tormentes farre exceeding death.

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

enuenomed scarres the wormes had made, were presently washed away, and her face so delicate as euer it was before: whereupon the Princesse falling at Palmerins feete, joyfully thus spake. Doubtlesse my Lord, I am greatly beholding to the Prince Tryneus, who sauad my life when the Traytour woulde haue slaine me in my bedde: but I must confess my self much more indebted to your woxthilie, by whose paines the venomous putrefaction is extinguished, whereby I endured tormentes farre exceeding death.

Madame, answered Palmerin, your happy recoverie must not be imputed to mee, but to the soueraigne Lord that so prouided for you, and seeing your health is so woxthilie restored, I thinke best that we set forward to morrow on our iourney, that we may finish the Magicall coniurations of Malsada, as wee haue alreadie done those at the tenne Rocks. The Princesse of Romata hearing these words, presented the answer of Zephira, and comming to Palmerin, said: I beseech you Sir Knight, in honor of that God whiche you reuerence, that you will not refuse my one demand, according to your promise made mee, when you overcame my Brother and his knyghts in Joust. Aske Ladie (said Palmerin) what you will, and you shall not be denied, so the matter consist in my power to perfore. Well may you perfore it (quoth she) and to your endlesse honor I hope. The summe of my request is, that you will not forsake the King my Fat' er till his warre against the Holdane of Persia be finished. And that you woulde entreate your Frend to accompane you therein. Denie mee not good Sir, for no greater shame is to a knight then breaching of promise: nor will I stirre from your foote, vntill you haue graunted what I request. In sooth Madame, answereid Palmerin, although my Frend and I haue great affayres in our Countrey, yet (in respect of my promise) wee will assit your Father: let vs in meane while intreate you, to pardon our retorne with the Princesse Zephira, who

## THE HISTORIE

thinks the time long before shee came to Nabor. Doubtles my Lord, quoth Zephyra, rather then you and my Lord Tryneus, shall breake your promise to the Princesse, in giving succour to the King Abimar her Father: I can content my selfe to stay here more willingly, then to retarne to the King my Brother. Madame, said Muzabelino, assure your selfe, that Palmerin is the onely meane whereby you haue attained your present felicitie: and by him shall you with honour see your Countrey againe. In sooth my Lord, said the Princesse, full well I know his owne gracious nature induced him, first to aduenture his life for the safetie of my Countrey, then to passe strange Countreyes with daunger, onely to finde you, and lastly, his rare fortune at the Castell of the tenne Rocks, from whence hee brought those precious flowers, and the fatall Wyrd, wherby my long infirmitie hath beene cured. To offer him favour, or al my possessions in way of recompence of so great paines, they are not comparable: for though I made him Lord of my selfe, and all those territorie my Father left me, yet doth my conscience tell me they are too base. In bries, I know his deserts so exceeding my reach: as well may I sit downe to imagine, but never bee able to contrive a sufficient reward. Beleue mee Madame, answered Muzabelino, you haue spoken trueth, and his noble magnanimitie must onelie helpe my Lord: and this I assure you, that were it not the daunger of his kingly hono, and hazard of the whol Monarchie of Asia, hardly might the Knight be staid here, of such waight and importance are his other affaires. The calling Palmerin to him, whose inward thoughts were busied with the remembrance of his Ladie, he said:

Let not your stay here my Lord offend you, though well I know the wait of your griefe, for that God who hath called you to this present estate, hath forepoynited things that you can not shun, in recompence whereof, befoze your departure from this Countrey, great & victorious honours

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

honors are appointed you. Beside, for a perfect resolution your further doubtles, take you no care for nourishing your Wyrd: for when your Musique made her cease singing, at that instant I threw such a Charme on her, as hencesorth she shall live without taking any fosde. And when you returne to your Cittie of Constaatinople, let her be pearched in someconuenient place, in the great Hall of your Pallace: and there shall shee remaine as a certaine Oracle vntill the day of your death, to deliuer tidings of good or bad. If any Knight or Ladie shall enter your Court, either with intent of Treason, or bringing ill newes, the Wyrd shall give such fearefull chrikes, as shee did at the time when you tooke her in the Arbour: but if the newes be of ioy, and for your god, then shall shee sing more sweetely, then when that Soveraigne water fell from her Beake, wherewith the Princesse Zephira was cured.

In bries my Lord, at the time when you must leaue this leaue, for the glorious habitation among the blessed, she shal foretell such strange occasions, as shall dismay the most resolute courage. By this meane shall you be guarded from all inconuenies, and your good Fortune continued in such sort, as you shall be the most peaceable Emperour that euer liued in Greece. Certes my Lord ( answered Palmerin ) not by any desert in me, am I thus honored with so high a present, which I will keepe so chare as mine owne person: but that the name of Muzabelino may for euer be imprinted in my heart, give me some one of your name or kinred, who euermore may be nearest to my person. By Lord ( qd. Muzabelino ) to you I will give one of my Sones, begotten by me on a Christian Ladie, agreeing with you in faith and opinion: whereof I am not sorry, yet doe I feare that the King should knowe so much, least his Religion might his death.

Dare ffriende, said Palmerin, for Gods sake give him me presently, and him will I loue, as he were my Brother. Your request (quoth he) can I not yet satisfie, vntill we goe

## THE HISTORIE

to my Castell where hee is kept, which because I will not longer deserve, to Morrowe will I perswade the King to tourney to his great Cittie of Grisca, there to take viewe of his Armie, when I shall compasse the meane to give him you, vpon this conclusion they departed to their Chambers.

## CHAP. LII.

¶ How Muzabelino gaue Palmerin his Sonne Bellechino, entertaining the King and all his Companie Royallie at his Castell: and how the two Armyes of the King Abimar and the Soldane of Persia encoun-tered, with the successe thereof,



Vzabelino perceiving by his Arte, that the Soldane of Persia with his power, was neere at hand, thinking to ruinate the great Cittie of Grisca aduertised the King thereof, willing him withall sped to huster his Armye, and prevent the Soldanes cruell determination. The King not mistaking his god aduisenent, set forwardes presently to Grisca, and by the waye, at the earnest intreatie of Muzabelino, the King with all his Courly compaines laye at his Castell: where many rare denises were showne them by Enchauntment, which I passe ouer, as matter altogether impertinent. There did the Magitian gaue Palmerin his Sonne Bellechino, one of his Daughters likewise to the Quene, and an other to the Princesse Zephira.

Afterward they tourneyed to the Cittie of Grisca, where all his Army was ranged in readinesse, being numbered at

hunc

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

hundred thousand fighting men: the Auanguard hee committed to the two Princes, Palmerin and Tryneus, consisting of twentie thousand Horsemen, his two Bastells of 10000. Archers on Horsebacke, the two Princes Tomano and Drumino had in charge, and the Kereward was gouerned by the two Kinges of Sauata and Garara. The Soldanes power being ordained in Battell-wise, within fewe dayes after the Fight begaune: which continued with such danger on eyther side, as the Victorie hung very long in suspense. In the ende, after a mighty Massacre made of the Persians, among whome was Donadel Prince of Siconia slaine, with many other great Califfes and Lords: the Soldane himselfe was taken Prisoner by Palmerin, and sente bounde with Fetters of Golde to the Princesse Zephira. The Messenger comming to the Princesses Chamber, declared how Palmerin had sent her that Prisoner, to intreat him as her selfe best liked. In sothe (my Lorde) quoth the Princesse to the Soldane, you are right welcome for his sake that sent you: here shall your entertainment be as fits your calling, and dislike not your mishap, in that the Knight who sent you hither, is wont to Conquerre where himselfe pleaseth. The Soldane angrie at his hard Fortune, yet seeing he was Prisoner to a Lady so beautifull: was immedately so surprised with Loue, as he was not able to answer the Princesse one word. But shre perceiving hee was very soore wounded, caused him to be conducted to a godly Chamber, commaunding her best Chyurgions to attend him diligently.

On the morrowe she came to see how hee fared, when Loue ouer mastering all his senses, made him forgetto his hatred to the King Abimar, resoluing to become his friend, by Marriage of the Princesse: and vnable longer to supprese his weightie passions, which more troubled him then his daungerous Wounds, in this sort he begaune. Failest among the Daughters of men, tell me I desire you, if you be the Childe of the King Abimar, or else of whence you are: to

the

## THE HISTORIE

the end I may one day acknowledge this fauor, which your  
hinde and milde nature affords your Prisoner. Hereunto  
the Princesse answered, how she was daughter to the king  
Onodius of Nabor, coupling therewith all her passed For-  
tunes, concluding in the end, that in all actions agreeing with  
honour, she remained his humble Servant. Fortune (qd.  
hee) never constant, but in vncostancie : once yesterday  
was I the greatest Prince in the Wozde, and now none  
in my Kingdome so miserable as my selfe, being brought in  
subiect to my inferiour, and snared in Loue with my vas-  
sals Daughter. Wilye saide the Poet, That badly doo  
loue and Maiestie agree together. For though the height  
of mine Estate so biddes my desired content, yet Loue and  
mine owne liking are two such seuere enemys, as I must  
not now stand to dispute the cause. Happie is the Knight  
in whose Powre remaines a Ladie so excellent : but much  
more happie is the Ladie that can commaunde so great a  
person, by whome such honours are this day afforded you  
fayre Princesse, as well may you vaunt to bee the greatest  
in Persia.

If by Knight surpassing in Procelesse I was conquered  
in battell, by one in beauty and fourtiese incomparable, am  
I again ouermastered, so that I am enforced to present you  
my hart, and all the signozies I posesse, to vse at your plea-  
sure, bowing (for your sake) perpetuall peace with Abimar  
my hatefull enemie. The Princesse abashed at this vner-  
pected offer, a sweete blushe coloured her daintie cheeke, and  
fearing to bee imputed too indiscreet, shaped her answere to  
the lust point of all the Soldanes speches, as thus. In sooth  
my Lord, well could I like, that Peace were concluded be-  
twene the King and you, though not by any meane in me,  
but by the Omnipotent power of the Goddes: who letting  
you know the weaknesse of your owne strength, would not  
hauie any Marre between you and the King Abimar. And  
if it like you so much to abase your selfe, as to like the sim-  
ple Daughter of a King, who whilist hee liued, was your  
high-

## OF PALMER IN D'OLIVA.

highnes Subiect: well may I with modestie giue consent,  
for if my Father in all his lifetime obeyed you as his Lord,  
unseemelie were disobedience in his Daughter. By the  
holie Alacion of Bahonet, answered the Soldane, your  
benigne humilitie hath moze conquered me, then the prou-  
dest enemie in the world could doo: doe you therefore ap-  
point the Articles of our peace, and I as vnpartiall will a-  
gree thereto.

Thus began the peace and the promise of mariage be-  
tweene the Soldane and the Princesse Zephira, which be-  
ing thorowlie agreed vpon, the King Abimar, Palmerin,  
Tryneus and all the states subscribing thereto: the Camps  
on either side were discharged, and the Soldane with his  
great Senechal openlie in the Cittie of Grisca, proclamed  
peace in this manner: That the Soldane shold espouse  
Zephira, and Tomano the Prince Belfina the Soldanes  
Daughter Beside, he renounced all pretended rights to  
the realnes of Grisca and Romata, nor wld he demand  
an tribute of them afterward, or enter his confines with  
an violence, but alit the King continually againg all his  
enemies.

Moreover, within two moneths, hee would deliuer  
tenne thousand tallents of Golde, and two millions of Se-  
raphes, in recompence of his wronde done to the King of A-  
bimar. All this my Lord, quoth the Soldane, will I faith-  
fullie performe, and all the Kings my Subiects shall sub-  
scibe thereto: on this condition, that you accompagne the  
Princesse to the Cittie of Harano, thereto honor with your  
presence our espousall, where your Sonne Tomano shall  
likewise match with our Daughter. To this the King wil-  
lingly consented, whereupon the Soldane sent his Sene-  
chal to cause his armes to march home-wards into Persia,  
except sir thousand men at Armes, to guard the Soldanes  
person: then openly in the field was the peace proclaimed,  
and the Captaines on either side freindly embayacing ea-  
other. Afterward the Soldane coming to the King Abimar  
and

## THE HISTORIE

and in the presence of Palmerin and Trynens, thus spake: Needesse were it now (my Lord) to remember our passed displeasures, but generallie to conferre of loue and peace; yet heereof I can assure you, that the Princesse Zephira, and these two strange Knights, preuailed more against me then all the rest of your Armie. But least your people shoule thinke, that our concluded peace is not thoroowly grounded to morrow will I bee oppenlie affianced to the Princesse Zephira, and afterward set forwarde to Harano, that my Sisters may be present at our nuptials, in the meane while our Seneschall and the sire other noble Lords, shall remaine with you as our hostages. These determinations fulfilled, the Soldane posted to Harano, where hee heard of the death of the Prince Donadel, and the Kinges Sonne of Rosillia with diuers other Princes of his kinde slaine in the battell: but the heale of his newelous caused him make smal account thereof, preparing all things readie for the solemnite of his mariage.

## CHAP

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

### CHAP LIII.

The conference that the Soldane of Pesia had with his Sisters, thinking by their meanes to stay Palmerin and Tryneus in his Court, and the honourable entertainment hee made them at the arriuall of the Princesse Zephira. And how by good fortune Palmerin recouered his Squire Colmelio, from the Ambassadour Maucerto.



Sooner was the Soldane come to Harano, but he presentlie despatched messengers to his Sisters, that they might be present at his honourable mariage: and calling for his Daughter the young Princesse Belfina, hee thus beganne faire Daughter, I thinke you are not ignorant, for report lieth quicklie farre, that I haue promised you in mariage to the Prince Tomano: therefore I account it verie requisite, that your solemnitie bee done on the same day, when I shalle spouse the Princesse Zephira.

My gracious Lord and Father, quoth she, I remaine altogether at your highnesse direction, and if for conclusion of peace you match with us faire a Princesse as is Zephira, it were against reason I shoulde refuse the worthy Prince Tomano of Romara. When he perceiued the readie goodwill of his Daughter, and his two Sisters by this time were come to the Courte: after hee had welcommened them in most gracious manner he entered into these speeches. I thought it verie expedient (faire Sisters) since you under-

stand

## THE HISTORIE

Stand the peace concluded betwene the King of Grisca and my selfe, to acquaint you with other matter greatly concerning you.

There commeth hether in the compaines of the Princesse Zephira, two strange Knights of very care perfectis-  
tis to whom I would willingly haue you use such especiall  
behaviour, as we might purchase the meanes to enjoy them  
continually in our Courte, for no other intent I promise  
you, but onelie that they may match with you in mariage.  
You Lister Lyzanda, (quoth he to the eldest) I commit to  
the chiefeſt Knight, the very ſame man that moſt valiant-  
lie太ke me prisoner in the battell: and you Aurecinda,  
(for ſo was the youngesſt named) I bequeath to the other,  
who is one of the goodliest perſonages that euer nature ſta-  
med.

Hereunto they were right ſoone entreated, el-  
ſpecially Aurecinda. Who though her elder ſiſter were graue  
and well aduised, yet was ſhe pleasant, quaint and ſo ſub-  
til, as eaſilie could ſhe practiſe the meanes to deceaue the  
wiileſt man, whereof ſhee made ſome expeſience, as you  
ſhall hereafter perceave in the Chapters following. The  
Holdane hauing ſent for all the Kings, Princes and Lords  
his ſubiects, to be preſent on the day of this great ſollem-  
nitie: the Prince Tomano, earnestlie deſiring to ſee his  
beſt beloved, deſire Palmerin Tryneus and the Princesſe  
Zephira, that they might ſetle forwardeſ to Haraono. But  
Muzabelino, who knew what troubles would ſucced the  
marriage, aduised the King Abimor not to goe: and coun-  
celled the two Princes Trineus and Palmerin, to keepe  
themselves continuallie Armed, because the Holdane was  
a man continuallie ſubiect to incertayne chaunces. So gy-  
ving to each of them a Cote of Aumes, of Crimson Velvet  
moſt curiouſly embroidered with Pearles, hee de parted  
from them, returning backe againe to the Cittie of Grisca.  
Now ride theſe Princes ioyfullie to Haraono, where they  
were received by the Holdane with wonderfull pompe and  
pompe

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

honor, each one admiring the rare beautie of the Princesſe, Zephira, who was conducted with ſuch a royll traine, as neuer was the like ſeen before in Haraono. At the Cittie Gate the Holdane met them, and in a ſumptuous Coch, accompanied them to the Vallacz, where after many ſolemne courtesies one each ſide deliuered, and ſuch magniſ-  
call royllty beſtowing the time and place, the Holdan cam to his ſiſters, who had not yet talkid with the two strange Knights, and thus ſpake.

Siſters, to the ende that hereafter you ſhall not bee be-  
guiled, the Knights that accompanie my Ladie the Prin-  
cesſe, and whom I haue ſo much commended to you, are  
Christians: notwithstanding they be ſuch, as they ſwarne  
deſerue greater honor, then I am any way able to exprefſe.  
As for their comely ſtratures, after that your eye hath con-  
ſerued with your heart, I referefce my opinion to your indi-  
gument, regard then that they bee loued and eſteemed, as  
their perfections doe worthlie deſerue. Aurecinda the yon-  
gesſt and moſt voluntary Siſter, hauing her eye continual-  
lie fixed on the Prince Tryneus, thus conſerued with her  
ſelfe.

My Brother verie lightly commaundeth vs to loue  
theſe ſtrange Knights, I know not what my Siſters op-  
nionis: as for mine oīone, the beginning alreadie of my  
loue is ſuch, that if I doe not quickly obtaine my deſire, I  
ſearc that my affection is rated at the price of my life. The  
time is paſſed ouer with many delights, and daily paſtimes  
after the Persian manner, but all this while Lizanda and  
Aurecinda are tormented with loue, ſo that all patience  
was vtterlie denied them, yet bearing this weightlie bur-  
den ſo well as they could, at length the two Siſters came  
to the Princesſe Zephiraes Chamber, where they found  
Palmerin and Tryneus conſeruing together, ſeigning the  
cauſe of their conning to bid the Princesſe good morrow.  
Palmerin perceiving that Lizanda ſuddainlie changed her  
colour, imagined the cauſe of her ſecret diſease, and being

## THE HISTORIE

loth to be tempted with any such occasion, dissembling that he saw her not, tooke Zephira by the hand, and leading her to the window, found some cause of conference, which Lizarda perceiving, in anger shew forth of the Chamber, yet Aurecinda would not follow her: for shee being thorowly conquerred with loue, neither regarding feare, shame, or other such likely behaviour seruely in Maidens, tooke Aryneus by the hand, and causing him to sit downe by her, thus began. I do not a little maruiale Sir Knight, that when Ladies come to see you, their entertainment is no better. It is not the manner of Gentlemen to bee so solitarie, without hauing some friend or beloued, which you shall some find in this Court of higher calling then you imagine, if Ladies may discerne some signe of your fauourable liking. In god faith Madam, answered Tryneus, if to you and your Sister, I haue not done such duty as besemeth, it proceeded by forgetfullnes, or my mind cauied away with other occasions, for nature made me obedient to Ladies. If these words Sir Knight (quoth shee) proceeded from your heart, I can assure you to be loued of such a one, who is not vnworthy the like god will: and of such account is she with the Holdane, as he shal create you one of the greatest Lords in Persia, so please you to stay in his highnesse Court. That may not be (quoth Tryneus) for so iorne as the Holdane, and the Prince Tomano shall be espoused, I must needs depart with my companion, about affaires of very great importance. Palmerin who with one eare listned to the Princessa Zephira, and with the other to the words of Aurecinda, after she was departed the Chamber, thus spake to Tryneus.

God Friend, beware of this Ladie, that shew cause you not to offend God, and violate the loyalties you owe to Madam Agriola. Such experiance haue I had in these actions, as when Ladies haue enterprises their amorous ffe, if they cannot compasse it by the meanes of men, they will aduenture it with hellish familiars, that can deceiu-

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

the very wiest, especially in this wicked Countrey, whers is no knowledge of God or his Lawes. Beside you know, that such impudent loue, cannot be carried about without such apt messengers, and from whence procedeth many inconueniences. Brother, aunswere Tryneus, feare not my constancie: for my Ladies loue hath taken such sure foundation, as death cannot make me false to her, yet proved his words contrary in the end, and for which he repented afterward.

While these delights continued, Maucerto, Ambassadour to the Holdane of Babylon arrived at the Courte, where the Monarch of Persia received him very honourably: willing him to conceale the newes till the marriages were past, which on the morrow was performed with maruellous royaltie. As the Princes and Lords accompanied the Holdane to the Temple, it happened that Aurecinda was conducted by the Prince Tryneus: whereof shew being not a little glad, by the way entred into these speeches. Oh my true Friend and Lord Tryneus, when wil the day come that I may be thus led, to espouse the man whom I loue more deere then my life? Madame, quoth Tryneus, I cannot maruell sufficiently to see you thus chaunged, considering the greatest Lord in the Orient may be thought too simple for such a wife: yet did you choose one that perhaps would not espouse you, my Lord the Holdane being your Brother, may constraine him thereto. Here-hence (quoth shee) proceedeth my sorrow, for he whom I loue, is not the Holdanes Subject, nor doth agree with mee in faith and opinion: he will give no eare to mine intreaties, much lesse to such a one, as can make him one of the greatest Lords in Persia.

But thinke you my Lord that I can conceale, what you may plainelie discerne in mine eyes? You are the onely man my hart hath chosen, and whom the Holdane loueth more then his Brother. Alas Madam, quoth the Prince, unfitting is it that a Knight errant, should espouse the

## THE HISTORIE

Sisters of so great a Lord, as is the Holdane of Persia. And would his Daiesie so much honoz me, yet the contrarie of our faith is such an impeach, as flatlie it may not be: for rather will I bee borne in peeces, then match with a Pagan, or renounce my faith for her loue. No, no, my Lord, said the Princesse, I will renounce mine for your loue, and worship Iesus Christ the Son of the blessed Virgin. Well woorthe then were I of reproch, quoth Trinens, if I should not reueire you with loue againe, considering what you aduenture for my sake.

As they would haue proceded further in talke, Colmelio, Palmerins Squire, whom Maucetto had bought, standing to see the traunes of Persian Lords and Ladies passe by, espied his Master and the Prince Tryneus, wherefore pressing through the Guard of Archers, he came to the Prince, and taking him by the mantle, said: Most happie be this houre my noble Lord, to find you and my Master Palmerin. What fortune hath brought thee hither Colmelio, said Tryneus, hast thou yet spoken to thy Master? No my Lord, aunswere Colmelio, hee conducteth the Princesse with the Calise of Siconia, wherefore I durst not presume to trouble him.

Believe mee, said the Prince, but thou shalt speake with him, and while the Arch-Flamin was performing the Ceremonies in the Temple, Tryneus presented him to his Master Palmerin, who was thereat so ioyfull, as if hee had gotten the best Cittie in Persia. Hee demanded by what meanes he escaped the Pirats hands, the true discourse whereof Colmelio rehearsed: and how Maucetto the Ambassador bought him, as Ptolome and he were brought to the Holdane of Babilon his Court to be sold, and there doth Ptolome finde great sauour as I haue heard, of the faire Princesse Alchidiana the Holdans Daughter, onely for your sake. Thou tellest me wonders said Palmerin, depart not from me till after Dinner, when I wil goe to thy Master Maucetto to demaunde thee; which I hope hee will not

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

not denie, because when I was knyght to Alchidiana, hee was one of my speciall good friendes. After the solemnite of the mariage was ended, and Dinner ended at the Pallace for preparation of pastime: Palmerin calling Colmelio, went with him to the Ambassador Maucetto, who not a little abashed to see him, that was generally reputed dead in the Holdans Court, came and embrased him with these speeches. My Lord Palmerin, what great God hath raised you againe? The Holdane was credibly informed, that you and Olorico were drowned in the Sea: for which both hee and Madame Alchidiana more lamented, then for the losse of his whole Army before the City of Constantinople.

Palmerin dissembling as though he knew not thereof, seemed to maruell thereat very much, and the better to shadow his conceit, said: that after the tempest was ceas'd, which cast him very farre from the Holdans Armie, thinking to returne to Constantinople, he was by violent windes brought to the Isle of Malfada, where the Prince Olorico, quoth he, and all the rest of my companions remaine enchaunted, whom I hope to recouer againe after I can get hence. Little thought I my Lord, answered Maucetto, to find you in this Countrey, but did Madame Alchidiana know so much, her sorow would soone be conuerted into ioy.

But what newes with you my Lord? said Palmerin: What may bee the cause of your Ambassage? I will not conceale the trueth thereof from you, quoth Maucetto, I come to demaund aide of the Holdane of Persia, for a fresh invasion against Constantinople. I maruel, quoth Palmerin, that he will enterprize the voyage againe, which hath cost him so much, and returned so little profit: rather would I counsell him to forbearre, and so will I write to his Daiesie before your departure, as also to Madame Alchidiana his Daughter. But I would request one curtesie of you Sir Maucetto, that you would giue mee your slave

## THE HISTORIE

Colmelio, who in time past hath been my Squire. Hun shall you haue with all my heart, quoth Maucetto, and not enely him, but whatsoeuer else is nune beside, so please you to accept thereof.

I thanke you good Sir, answered Palmerin, and I doubt not in time to requite your gentlenesse. While they thus talked together, the Soldane came to Palmerin, saying: Will not you make one my Lord in the daunce? the Ladies say they cannot haue your company. In sooth my gracious Lord, answered Palmerin, little do I delight in any such exercises, very earnest affaires haue I with the Ambassadour Maucetto, which craue suddaine and speedie dispatch. Beside, fauile would I know some tidings of him from my Lady Alchidiana, from whose seruice I haue now discontinued a yere and more. The Soldane abashed at these words, said: I pray you tell me the trueth, are not you he that slew the Prince Amarano of Nigrea in Combat, and afterward two other of his Brethren, of which exploits remaine such fame through all Turkie? In sooth my Lord, answered Palmerin, being bewed to my Ladies seruice, I never could suffer her honor to be any way distained, and in that duty I will continue, for the manifold courtesies I haue receiued by her. By the living God, said the Soldane, now thinke I my selfe the happiest Prince in the world, having the man in my Court, whose very name makes the scirtes to tremble. But seeing we are thus far entred, tell me: is the Princesse Alchidiana so beautifull as fame reports her? That is she my Lord, quoth he, and much more then fame is able to vtter: beside, shee is one of the most gracious and affable Princesses, that euer I beheld in any Kings Court.

Now is night come, and after the Countly pastimes were ended, the Bridegrome went to receive the honour of his Bride, commaunding Palmerin to bee intreated as his own person: which not a little contented the Princesse Lyzanda, thinking heerety (alas too lauishlie) to obtaine

him

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

him for her Husband, but herein she was deceived, so that her rash loue procured her miserable death. Aurecinda likewise continually courted Tryneus, as though shee had alwaies beene trained vp in his compaie: wherefore one day, after hee had beene warned sone or faine times by Palmerin, he thus spake to her. Madame, if your honesty and vertue hath imprinted in Noble mindes, an especiall conceit of your continencie and chastitie: I maruaile now what many will thinke, in that you should not shew any such signes of loue to me, for it seemes ye yeld the Cittie before any assault be given. All these speches could not quallifie her humour, for loue had so emboldened her with such unchamferednes, as shee made no conscience of following the cause, giving credit to one of her Ladies perswasions, that by good pursuite all things enjoy a happy end.

## CHAP. LIII.

How Maucetto the Ambassadour to the Monarch Misos of Babylon, declared his message before the Soldane and all the Princes of Persia. And of the Combar betweene Tryneus, and the King Orzadine of Galappa.



After the marriage feast was fully ended, the Soldane sent for the Ambassadour Maucetto, who in the presence of all the Persian Lords, thus began to deliver his message. Mighty and illustrious Monarch of Persia, the Soldane of Babylon my Lord & Master, having evermore continued in faithfull alliance

## THE HISTORIE

to your Maiestie: lets you know by me his great and damageable losse, which he sustained before the City of Constantinople. For recovery whereof, he humble intreateth your highnesse most fauourable assistance: which well you cannot denie him, in respect of the great sway you hold in Turkie, as also for the establishment of our faith, and generall destruction of the Grecian Empire. Ambassador quoth the Souldane, I will better consider hereon, and answer you accordingly. So calling all the Princes presentlie to counseil, divers confisid judgements were amongst them: whereupon he sent for Palmerin, and before them all demaunded his opinion, whereto hee shaped this aunswere. Right it stand with your highnesse liking, and the god concieft of all these noble Princes, gladly would I bee excused in this matter: wherein I may not spaka without suspition, because the entent is against mine owne native countrey, and those whom I agree withall in faith and Religion.

But seeing your Maiestie will needes know my judgement: pardon in speaking boldlie what I would be loth to dissemble. I think no one of you my gracious Lordes, but wel remembres the late warres against the King of Grisca: since which time the Souldours are hardly recovered, and extremitie were it to endanger the lives of wounded men. Moreouer, if the Souldan of Babilon who now demaundeth succour, sending his Armie into Greece, where raignes a Prince so mightie and puissaunt, as well could repulse them with shamefull confusione. Persuade your selues as yet there is no other, but he that triumpheth in conquest before, I feare can doe the like againe, and thus my Lordes is mine opinion.

Well haue you answered quoth the Souldane, and this peaceable conclusion liketh me best, so arising from counseil, they went into the great Hall: where before their conunning, as the Prince Zephira was devising with many Lordes & Ladies, entred an Armed Knight, accompanied with

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

with six other in Armour, and twelve Squyres, who seeing the Souldane not in his Chayre of Estate demaunded of the Queene where he was: Knight (quoth she) he is in counsell with the Princes and Lordes of his Realme, and long it wil not be before he come in meane while you may passe the time in conserpice with the Ladys. By God (saide Trineu to the Queene, I thinke hee scant knoweth howe to conserve with Ladys, for his indiscret behaviour shewes him to bee the worst nurtured Knight that ever I sawe: Saw you not (quoth he to the Prince Zephira) how unmannerly he late downe, without vsing any Reuerence to your Maiestie.

The Knight sitting strouting in a Chayre, and having unclasped his Helmet (saide to the Queene) I pray you tell me Madame, are those two strange Knights in this Court, that were against your Husbande in the Battell and toke him? They be Syr Knight (quoth she) well and in god disposition, thankes to the Soueraigne Creator. I aske not of their health (qd. he) How are they called? The one (said the Queene) is named Palmerin, the other Tryneus. And I (quoth he) am Orzadine King of Galappa, to whom Fortune hath bene moare fauourable in Loue, then in Riches: making me Friende to the faire Orona, Daugther to the Califfe of Siconia, and Sister to the Prince Donadel, who was slaine in the Battell against the King Abimar, she in my iudgement, not hauing her second in Beaufie, at whose request I haue trauelled the greatest part of Asia, to spreade her Name, and honorable reputation, which I haue done to her perpetuall faine: and returning to her when my Labors were finished, in stead of ioy and pleasure, I found her sad and penisive for the death of her Brother. These newbes were worse to me then death, and to comfort her, I promised to reuenge her Brothers misfortune: and this is the onely cause of my coming, for having combattid with him that slew the Prince, her queſſe mee will be the greater, and mine honour shall be ſyread with more advantage.

## THE HISTORIE

I beholde welb(quoth the Queen,) if you escape with life from the Combat: But tell me Sir Knight, why beare you such ill will to him that slew the Prince? considering that it was don in plaine Battell, and he his enemy who would haue done as much to him if he could. Not for this cause alone will I enter the Combat, said Orzodine, but for I am desirous to let him know that I am more fauoured in Loue then hee; and as I am one of the most happy Louers, so am I the best Knight in the world, which I will maintaine againt any that dare gainsay it. Happy louer, Dieu vous guard, said Tryneus. If the Poets had hitherto spared the description of Cupid, Sonne to the Goddess of Loue, now might they iustly haue set him downe for blinde: yet is hee moste worthie to be condemned, that he would vouchsafe any fauour to the most foolish among men, he hauing Dedicated me to the seruice of a Lady, to whom your gentle Ironia, Oronia I shold say, doth not deserue the name of her Servant.

For the rest, whereas you vaunt your selfe to be the best Knight in the world, your great folly is too apparant, for there are many Knights Errant in the world, who can giue you a bauue Camizado at the Lauree: and after they haue foyled you in the tour, beslow a little paines to take your greene head from off your grosse shoulders. By selfe that slew the Brother to your Goddess of Beauty, will do you so much pleasure as to heale the incurable disease wherwith you are Day and night tormented. O divine spirits, cryed the Pagan, fauour me so much, that this Knight may but dare to enter the field with mee. Yes I dare (sayde Tryneus) and before we part, I doubt not but to make thee quiet enough.

Orzodine presently shewē his Gauntlet as his Gage, and Tryneus a Golden Bracelet, which Aurecinda had given him, entreating Zephira to keepe them, which she refused to doe, fearing the daunger of the Prince Tryneus. Hereupon the Holdane entred the Hall, leading Palmerin

by

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

by the hand, but when they saw the Armed Knight thus to contend with Tryneus, they maruelled greatly what might be the occasion thereof. When Orzodine saw the Holdane was sette, hee entred into these speches. Holdane I am hither come to accuse thee, of a villainous Acte which thou hast committed, Harbouring in thy Courte, the man that slew the valiaunt Donadell, whose murther thou canst not so cummingly couer, but that thy Treachery shall be openly discovered.

What art thou (said the Holdane) that dares speake thus presumptuously in our presence? Orzodine King of Galappa (quoth he) of whome thou hast hearde heretofore, and nowe haue I presented my Gage against this Knight, which I will maintaine in despight of the prudell. The Holdane abashed at this Event, sought to dissuade them from the Combatte, because he had heard greate speches of the Kings Prowesse, but all was in vaine: For Orzodine was so Obstinate, and Tryneus so earnest, to reuenge the Turkes proud blasphemie against his Lady, as they wuld not be pacified till the Fielde was graunted them. Let vs haue Judges presently (quoth Orzodine) and the fielde asfured for our Combat, that I may discipline this glorious straunger.

Make not such hastē (sayde Tryneus) for I feare thou wylt thinke thy conning to sone. Immediately were the two combatants Armed, the Judges placed in their Tent, when the Holdane and Palmerin with many other Princes, went to behold this explaynt. But such a mighty man was the King of Galappa, as Palmerin feared his Friends successe. The Trumpet sounding, the Knights brake their Laurees brauely, and met together so furiously with theyr bodyes, as they were both twelue out of theyr Saddles: but they quickly recouering theyselues againe, drew theyr Swords, and marchēd against eache other with like courage, as did Achilles against noble Hector. Long continued the fight with danger on either side, but the K: of Galappa stroke

## THE HISTORIE

stroke such weighty traakes, being a man of equall stature with a Giant, as he wounded Tryneus in many places: and such was his yll Fortune: After long trauesing about, he set his fot unwarly on the tranchion of a Lance, whereby he fell downe backwards to the ground. Orzodine taking aduaantage of this fall, sette his foote on the Princes breast, stryng to pull his Helmet from his head: but God knows in what agony Palmerin was now, when he breathed forth these speches to himselfe. Ah Heauens (quoth he) haue I taken such paine and trauell to finde my Friende, and must he now dye among his enemyes? Aurecinda, likewise, ready to yelde by her ghoff with griefe, seeing Palmerin ready to swone as hee stood. Alas (quoth she) is it not enough that my Friend must die, but his poore Companion will beare him companie? While this doubtfull feare was among the Courters, Tryneus had so well sculffed with Orzodine, as he lay along by him like- wise, when drawyng a Pocket-dagger, hee stabb it through his Helmet, into one of his eyes, so that hee rayled his head to the ground. Orzodine seeing himselfe wounded to the death, gaue a very loude crie: when Tryneus having gotten his Helmet off, presently smote his head from his shoulders. If the Knightes of Galappa were nowe dismayde, and the Soldane Palmerin, Zephira, Tomano, and all the rest toyfull, I leave to your iudgements: especially Palmerin, who reioycing that Tryneus had thus conquered his enemie, entered the Lystes, and embraced him, and bringing him forth the Fieldes, he was welcommed to the Pallace, with wonderfull honour.

The Body of the dead King was deliuered to them that came with him, with maruellous reprehension of their Sisters most audacious Challenge: and so with great heauynesse they returned houie againe. For would the Soldane longer stay in his Court the Assirian Embassadour: But excused himselfe to the Babilonian Mysos, that he could not give him any assistance, couering this aunswere vnder his

vnfor-

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

vnfortunate battell against the King Abimar, Maucetto seeing that to stay longer would not availe him, tooke his leaue of the Soldane, saying. Albeit my Lord you cannot giue my Maister anie assistance: yet let Palmerin returne to him at his departure from your Court. What I can do herein, answered the Soldane, your Lord shall be assured to finde, although I thinke his minde be otherwise addic- ted: but you were best to know his minde your selfe, because I heard him say he would write to Madame Alchidiana.

Maucetto departing to Palmerins lodging, the Soldane went to see his Sisters, of whom he demanded, if they had as yet practised anie thing with the Knights. By Lord, answere Aurecinda, who in all things was more prompt then her eldest Sister, I haue fired my loue on the Knight Trineus, with full resolution never to loue anie other: dooth not he intend to stay heere in your Courte, much lesse (I feare) to make me his wife. As for my Sister, she cannot compasse the meane, how to imparte her loue to Sir Palmerin. Right strange is it, quoth the Soldane, that the promises you haue made them, and so apparant signes of ardent affection, cannot dissuade them to make choyse of you: Doubtles they bee some Great Princes, who to see the fashions of the wold haue thus disguised themselves. Continue your loue as you haue begunne: and if by other meanes you cannot stay them, aduenture your honoras as a meane to entrappe them. And now doth occasion to ell serue you Sister Aurecinda, for by courteous intreating Trineus now is wounded, you may more profit in one houre, then you haue doone during this tedious pursuite.

Peedelesse was it for the Soldane thus to perswade her, in that she laboured for no other matter, keeping Tryneus compaine both day and night: but Palmerin offended thereat, secretly thus rebuked the Prince: What meane you my Lord: If you mend not this order I must be angry with

## THE HISTORIE

with you. You see this Princesse exceeds in her desire, and you give her occasion to continue it: I know not what will happen hereon, but my minde perswades mee that you will hardly depart hence with honour. Fe advised I desire you and take this of me: that the wisest man will lende his eares to loose persons, and follow their affections: hee shall become more vngreasonable then a bryte Beast, regarding nothing but what is obiect to his eies, and what the flesh, (the onelie mortall enemy to the spirit) shall soone helpe perswade him.

## CHAP. LV.

How Aurecinda Sister to the Soldane of Persia, pursued the Prince Tryneus so neere, as in the ende, shee had her desire, and what followed thereon.



Almerin having thus schooled the Prince Tryneus, that he shold give no eare to the entisements of Aurecinda: Lyzanda came to his Chamber, and seigning vrgent busines with him, tooke him aside, deliuering her affections in this manner. Right happy would I think my selfe Sir Palmerin, so you would deigne to continue in the Soldanes Court: who doubtlesse would aduaunce you to the highest steppe of honor, and give mee to you in mariage that am his Sister, and a Ladie worthy some reckoning.

Palmerin offred to depart to the Chamber, but Lyzanda stayed him, proceeding thus. Alas my Lord will you never bouchsafe to speake to mee: now sa I well that you

act

## OF PALMERN D'OLIVA.

are the most disloyall Knight in the worlde. Madame, answere Palmerin, rather will I die then one iote of disloyaltie shall be found in me: nor can I graunt your importunaterequests, without committing notorious treason to my Ladie and offending my God, whom foolish loue shall never make me to displease. So without any further speeches he went to the Prince Tomano, leaving the poore Ladie well neare dead with this unkinde refusall, who going to her owne cabbinet, thus began to breathe sooth her sorowes.

Oh Loue, the most cruell passion that euer entred the hart of any Lady, how great and meruailous is thy power: Some thou enforcess to desire and intreate, without being heard or regarded: others thou cauilst to be happily fauoured, esteemed of their friends, seruants and louers. Unhappie that I am, but much more unhappy brother, accurled be the howre when thou diddest command me to loue the most cruell and unkinde among men. Can there be anie Ladie in the word more disgraced then I am: had I not revealed my loue to him, some comfort I might thereby enjoy among my sorowes: but the frozen mind knowing my loue: dooth holde mee in the greater contempt. My Sister tolde me, that by too long conceallment of loue, many haue lost them they most esteemed: but I (alas) doo finde it cleane contrarie. Now was Aurecinda (by chance) in the Chamber next her Sisters Cabinette, and hearing her thus sorowfullie complain: she came to her, and thus spake.

Good Sister discomforst not your selfe by your frends: refusall: I would not thinke my selfe worthy the name of a woman, if I could not winne you the man that thus tormentes you. As for me, I haue found the meane to compasse mine owne desire. Yet could not all these speeches appease her, wherefore she left her, and understanding by one of her Ladies, Tryneus shold this night suppe in the Soldans Chamber: whercupon she went to the Ladies hote house,

## THE HISTORIE

house, and there prepared his bed, and such swete delicate bathes, as might mooue the sp̄its of a verie staid Gentleman. This doone, she came to one of the Pages of honor, Brother to the Ladie whome shee most of all trusted, saying.

I pray thee good Page, goe to the Prince Tryneus his Chamber, and there attende till he come sooth: then faining that some one hath done thee injurie, thou shalt intreate him to helpe thee against him that abused thee. If he condicend, as doubtlesse he will: bring him to the bath, where I will stay his comming with my Sister, and so soone as he is entred, make fast the doore on him, and get th̄e gone, but in any case be secret herein, and I will recompence th̄e to thine owne content. The wagge was so well instructed in his arte, as he failed not in anie one point of his charge. But as the Prince Tryneus came alone from his Chamber, fell on his knees before him, saying. My Lord, if euer you pittied a Gentleman abused, let mee intreate you to revenge my cause, on a villaine that hath too much wronged me.

Tryneus, who had often scene the Page in his Chamber with Aurecinda answered; Beleene me Page, it were pittie to denie thy request, considering thou doost demaund it so courteouslie: shall I neede to be better prouided then I am? So my Lord, quoth he, your sword is sufficient. So was he conducted by the page along the Gallery, and beeing come to the appoynted place, hee opened the doore thus speaking to the prince. My Lord, the partie you must deale withall is in his Chamber, accompanied but with one Ladie, wherfore you may enter secure from danger. Hee was no sooner in, but the Page clapt to the doore and departed. Now was Tryneus not a little amazed, when he saw no bede but the Princelle with her Ladie, she being come thither to bathe hirselfe, and layd in her bed: but in such surpaſſing brauerie, as Jupiter with his lightning, Neptune with his three forked Pace, and Pluto with his Cerberus

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

berus, wculd stand and wonder thereat. So finely had shee tressed the golden lyres of her ayre, and her head attyre embellished with such goodly Orientall Pearles, as made her seeme a beautifull Angell, being covered with a gorgious Canapie, resembling the Sunne vnder a faire Claude. Betw̄ene her daintie brestes hung a precious Carbuncle which supplied the office of Venus her firebrand: when she saw Trineus stand so agast, she said. Why: my Lord, are you more afraid of a naked Ladie, then of the most puissant Knight in Persia, armed cap a pe? I can iudge no lesse, seeing you dare appoach no neerer. In sooth my Lord, quoth the Pages Sister, you may thinke your selfe happie to be deliuered of such a Lady, whom mightie Kings and Princes haue earnestly sought, and would gladly haue had the least fauour shee bestowes on you. So taking him by the hand, shee caused him to sit downe in a Chayre by the beds side, and giuing her Mistresse her Harpe, she departed leauing them together. Ah Page, quoth Trineus, how hast thou deceived me? What: said the Princelle, you forgot where you are, you must at this time somewhat pittie my sorowes, and heare a dittie which I haue made for your sake. Then taking her Harpe, she thus began to sing as followeth.

---

### The Dittie sung by Aurecinda to the Prince Trineus.

**T**He God of warre, fierce, sterne and rigorous,  
when he beheld faire Venus heauenly beauty,  
Made small account of her disloyalty,  
But suddenly became full amorous.

## THE HISTORIE

Beautie had then her power vigorous,  
Chaunging rough looks to sweetest secrecy.  
But he I loue, innocent with cruelty,  
Doth not regard my torments langourous.  
Why shoulde I then pursue that stuborne minde,  
That with excuses kils my hope out-right?  
Yet if he helpe not, death must me acquite,  
Ah mighty loue in nature most unkind,  
Thou dost constraine me to affect the man,  
That neither fauour, loue nor kindnes can.

what haue I said? the Knight of my desire,  
Is meere divine, and furthest from compare:  
whose Eagles eyes can well discerne my care,  
And with sweete pitties droppes alay this fire.  
The little God hath mide him gracious,  
His Mother mild, to ruce the Ladies smart:  
That shreines his lively Image in her hart,  
Then to despaire beseemes no verious,  
Regard sweet friend the passions of thy Friend,  
whom God and nature hath appointed thine:  
Giue loue his due, and then thou must be mine,  
So shall long sorrow haue a happy end.  
The Persian maid, say boldly thou hast wonne;  
That Monarches, Kings and Princes neere could  
(donne.

With excellent cunning did she handle her instrument,  
but with far better grace and affection deliuered her dittie,  
gracing it with such sad countenaunce, mournefull looks,  
and renting sighes, and forced the Prince Tryneus to be-  
come exceeding amorous. And burning in this new fierie

impreſſi-

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

impreſſion, beheld the singular beautie of Auricinda, which rauished his sences in such sort, as (trembling like the As-  
pen leafe) hee sat downe by her on the beddes side. The  
Princess laying her Harpe from her, embraced him very  
louinglie with these speeches. Elas my Lord, Will you still  
continue in this rigour and cruell inhumanitie: your hart  
is more hard then adamant, that will not bee mollified  
with so many intreaties: I sweare to you by the Sunne  
that lighteneth the world, vntesse you graunt me one re-  
quest, before your face will I prelentyly slay my selfe. Full  
well doe I perceue, quoth Tryneus, that hardly can I es-  
cape misfortune: the Servant hath deceived me, and  
now the Mistresse seekes my death. Ah Madame, quoth he,  
how can I graunt your request, considering mine offence  
to God, and he that loueth me leualy: Either be as good as  
thy word, quoth sheselfe stand to the danger that may be-  
fall thee.

Why? Sir Knight, is my beautie of so slender account,  
as I am not worthy to bee helde betweene thine armes?  
wilt thou suffer me to consume in this violent flame, which  
thou maist with such ease and honor extinguish: Hadst thou  
rather see a Ladie spilt her hart before thee, then thou will  
douchsafe to preserue her life? Come, come sweet Friend,  
see how loue and his Mother hath made way for thee, re-  
fuse not opportunity so fauourable offered. What ble-  
mish is on this bodie, that shoulde deserue disdaine? If the  
King of Gods woule think himself honored with this con-  
quest: much more estimation shouldest thou make hereof.  
In brieue, she was so perfect in her subtillie, and knew so  
well how to inueigle the Prince with queint speeches and  
sweet embracings: that she made him forget God, his La-  
die, loualtie, and himselfe, so that of a Maiden, he made her  
the sayrest woman in Persia. When the time came that he  
should depart, the Prin. alle said to him; Yet haue I a fur-  
ther request, my Lord, you must promise to mete me in  
this place at times conuenient, and endeuour with your

## THE HISTORIE

companion, that he may likewise loue my Sister. Tryneus made promise he wold, but rather he desired to stab himselfe with his weapon: then that Palmerin shold know this great abuse, so heinous did his offence seeme to himselfe.

Aurecinda perswaded her Sister, still to pursue Palmerin with her loue, and what had passed betwene her and the Prince Tryneus, she declared: whereupon her desire grew the greater, yet all was in vaine, for Palmerin would give no eare to her complaints, which wasthe cause of this mishap following: Lyzanda aduertised by her Sister, that Tryneus still thus vied her company in the Bath: envious of her Sisters benefit, and despitefull at Palmerins obstinate refusall, she went to the Soldane, and with many teares thus delinered her griefe. Ah my Lord, how much better had it been, that we had never knowne these cruell Christian Knights: whose ingratitude will bee the cause of my death: for the younger of them is maruellously beloved of my Sister, who forgetting her faith, honor, and her obedience to your Maestie, hath dishonored both her selfe and you, onely to make profe of the other Knights crueltie to me. The Soldane admiring his Sisters report, answered.

I did not will my Sister to abuse her selfe, without promise of marriage: but seeing it hath so fallen out, by my fathers soule they shall both repent it. Durst the Traytour abuse me so much in mine owne Court? Why: my Lord, quoth Lyzanda, you are the onely cause thereof, and therefore you must bee angry with no body but your selfe. Let me not live an houre said the Soldane, if I be not sufficiently revenged on him: Sister, bee you but secret, and refferre the rest to my direction. Then calling for the Captaigne of his Guard, willing him to take fiftie Knights, and when his Maestie was at Supper, they shold goe take his Sister and the Knight with her in the Bath, and afterward sare them to strong prison. But see it done se-

cretly,

## OF PALMERIN DOLIVA.

cretly, quoth he, for if his companion know thereof, it may arise to further inconvenience. And because Palmerin shold not misdoubt this treason, all Supper time the Soldane held him in familiar talke: he hoping by this fetch, to stay them still in his Courte, but it fell out afterward to be the cause, that many of his best and chieffest Knights were slaine.

Not long had the ambusched Knights waited where they were appointed, but the Princesse Aurecinda opened the doore, and came forth with her Friend as shee was accustomed: where they were suddenly taken, Tryneus not having the leisure to draw his sword, so was he carried prisoner to one of the strongest Towers in the Palace, and Aurecinda at the same time to another. Tryneus seeing himselfe thus betraide, fel into these lamentable discourses. Unfortunate wretch that I am, haue I so lately escaped by my Friend, the cruell enchantments of the hellish Malfada, when I endured so many paines and tormentes, and am now come to the place where they shall be redoubled?

Ah Palmerin my good Brother and companion, what wilt thou say when thou hearest of my taking: but most of all when thou understandest the cause thereof? Miserable wretch, how often did my friend warne me of this inconvenience, yet had not I the grace to credit his counsell: doublette my very conceit of shame, when thou shalt bee acquainted with my soule offence, will bee more grieuous to me then death. What dishonour, paine, torment and punishment, shall bee sufficient for my misdeede? Forlorne and despised Caitife, could not the feare of God, which hath hitherto so graciously protected thee, nor the loyaltie of Agriola, who forsooke Parents, Friends, and all for thee: haue kept thee from this monstrous acte? O eternall God, the man that forsaketh thee is vile and abominable. When I had thy fears before mine eyes, I was at rest and quiet in conscience, esteemed and beloved of all men; but when

X 3

thou

## THE HISTORIE

thou gauest me raines of libertie, I became dissolute and forgetfull of thee, as also of them that honored me so much. Ah miserable occasion, and those deceits, enticements, and subtill persuasions: how mighty are they in operation? neither men nor diuels could bring me into such danger, as you haue plunged me in up to the eares. Ah villainous Page that first brought me thither, and thou the falsest Ladie in the world art cause of my euill. For are they to be accused but my wretched selfe, who seeking mine owne hurt, found it, and hauing found it, continued in it. Thus sorrowfully wailed Tryneus, where on the contrary side Aurecinda rejoyced: for when she considered the estate of her Friend, she persuaded her selfe by this meane, that the Soldane her Brother wold enforce him to marrie her, which hope made her as joyfull, as Tryneus was sad and penitue.

When the Captaine had imprisoned Trynens & Aurecinda, he came to the Soldane sitting at the Table, saying: Will your Maiestie command me any further seruice? I haue enclosed the Knight Tryneus in one Tower, and your Sister Aurecinda in another. Why? quoth the Soldane, did you find them together? I did my Lord, quoth the Captaine, your Sister leading him by the hand out of the Ladie's hot house. By Mahomet, quoth the Soldane, but that you speake it, hardlie could I beleue it, what shamefull villainie is this committed in our Pallace: by the greatest God, the fact shall be so warthlie punished, as it shall remaine for a perpetual memory. At these speeches Palmerin was not a little amazed, and dissembling his anger so well as he could, said to the Soldane, I cannot be perswaded my Lord, that Tryneus wold commit so vile an acte, without entisement thereto by your Sisters treason: shee beeing (under your Maiesties correction) the most shameles Girle that euer I saw, for twentie and twentie times haue I scorne her follow him, with gestures farre unfitting one of her calling. Then starting from the Table, quoth he: Consider

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

sider what he is, and what thou intendest against him, for never was imprisonment so dearely bought as this will be, and before thou puttest him to death, it shall cost me my life, and the lives of an hundred thousand Knights beside, in revenge of his wrong. Being thus enflamed with ire, hee could not so grieve over, but thus began againe. By God Soldane, thy treason is so manifest, as thou canst not hide it, full welldoe I vnderstand thy flatteries, whereby thou hopest to keepe vs in thy seruice, but farre art thou from thy reckoning, for rather will I be torn in a thousand pieces, then endure the reproch of such a mans seruice, who vnder colour of friendship imprisoneth his Knights, and afterward threatneth them with death. Tomano, Dramino, Corax, and many other Knights belonging to the King Abimar, seeing Palmerin in such a rage, as it seemed the fire did sparcle fro his eyes: endeououred to perswade him, and Tomano thus spake to the Soldane. My Lord, vnder my safe conduct, and your faith promised, are these two Knights come with vs to your Courte, and you haue now imprisoned one of them, aduise your selfe of spedie justice: for this shame done him is against all right, and for ever shall you be noted with breach of faith: beside, I repute his iniurie as done to my selfe. The Soldane seeing the Princes thus moued, although himselfe procured those fiftie Armed Knights to take Tryneus, yet with smooth countenance he thus answered. Content your selues my friends, Tryneus in right shall be defended: and if I find my Sister culpable, she shall be punished as she were a stranger. More I demand not, said Palmerin, for I am assured, that by her flatteries Tryneus hath been seduced. So departing to his Chamber, he met his two Squires, Bellechino and Colmilio, of whom he demanded, if they at any time perceived the loue betweene Tryneus and the Princesse Aurecinda.

They answered that they did perceive it, and divers nights they saw him goe to the Princesse Chamber. And

## THE HISTORIE

Why did you not reueale it to me? quoth he, worthily haue you deserued death, in concealing the shame of your Da-  
ters friend, wherein my selfe cannot escape untouched. Hereupon he Armed himselfe, and sending for the Prince  
Tomano, said to him.

I thinke it best my Lord, that you keepe your ordinarie  
guards about your person, till we know how the Soldane  
will deale with Tryneus. As for my selfe, I intend (if your  
Brother Drumino and the Prince Corax will toyne with  
mee) to keepe the Field with the thousand Knights that  
came hither with vs, that none may enter into the Cittie  
without our licence. In meane while, you may send a  
Courtier to the King your Father, that he presently send  
vs what helpe he may. Sir Palmerin, answered Tomano,  
not onely my Knights shall enter the Field for you, but  
my selfe likewise, so please you to command me, and what  
you thinke best for the deliueraunce of your friende Try-  
neus, I will bee willing to accomplish to my uttermost.  
Presentlie will I send a Horseman to Grisca, and confere  
with my Brother Drumino, that his Knights and Gentle-  
men may be Armed that came from Sauara, as also they  
that came with my nephew Corax from Garara, which  
will bee in number a thousand more: your selfe in meane  
time may get forth your necessaries.

Who then had seen the Knights Arming, the Horses  
proudning, the bag and baggage carrying, wold haue said,  
that Palmerin was as much feared & beloued in a strange  
Countrey, as in his owne. Such was the diligence of the  
Nobles and Souldiers of Grisca, Sauara and Garara, as  
they were right soone before the Pallace attending for  
Palmerin, who commanded Tryneus his Horse and riche  
Armour should be brought forth by his Squires, leaping  
in his Chamber all the riches and treasure, that the Sol-  
dano and the Princesse Zephira had given him, and mount-  
ing on his owne Courser, he came and embrased y Prince  
Corax, saying: Let vs depart (my Lord) from these ingrate-  
full

## OF PALMERIN DOLIVA.

full people that never knew how to entertaine strangers:  
Well may the Soldane thanke the Princesse Zephira his  
wife, else I had smitten his head from off his shoulders.  
There the Ensignes displayed, the Drummes and Trum-  
pets sounding cheerfully, as the noyse was hearde thorough  
all the Cittie.

And in this manner went Palmerin to the field, which  
raised such a tumult among the people, and such sedition a-  
mongst the Nobles of Persia, as they boldly tolde the Sol-  
dane, that most vnadvisedly he had imprisoned the strange  
Knight and the Princesse his Sister, and Faith ought ever-  
more be defence for a stranger. The Soldane perceived  
his folie well enough, but as the man blighting in his euill,  
without altering his humour, regarded not their speeches:  
commaunding that they shold all Arme themselues, and  
charging eache one expely not to speake to Tryneus with-  
out leane: Why? (quoth hee) the Fole that is gone, too  
much abused mee in my Pallace: by my Crowne, I will  
punish both his pride and his companions, maugre all them  
that dare say the contrarie. And so hee along from them in-  
to his Chamber.

## CHAP. LVI.

¶ How the Soldane seeing hee could not perswade  
Tryneus to marrye his Sister, condemned him to  
death, and what followed afterwards.



Tomano, whs by the god counsell and  
aduiseement of Palmerin remained in  
the Cittie, with two hundred knights  
for the defence and safegard of his per-  
son: sought by all the best meanes he  
possibly could for the deliueraunce of  
Prince Tryneus, and coming to the  
Queen Zephira, thus spake: Madam,

## THE HISTORIE

seeing men can no way perswade the Soldane, syre what the pleasing speches of Ladies will do: who (in my iudgement) cannot come from him, without obtaining theyr request.

The Soldane having forgotten the especiall fauour, which heretofoore he receyued by Syr Palmerin, for whose safety he gaue both faith and promise: at the simple report of Madame Lizanda, hath this night past committed Sir Trynens Prisoner in the Strongest Tower, saying he was found in the Bathe with Aurecinda. And so earnestlye dooth he prosecute the matter, as that notwithstanding the great intreatie of all the Princes and my selfe, he will not discharge him, but hath sworne that in despight of vs all hee shall be punished. What: (quoth the Queene) doth my Lord so much forget himselfe: that he will seeke his barne who hath done him such honour? Believe me: Madame (answered the Prince, I haue told ye the trueth: therefore when you shall walke to his Chamber, which is the place wher all demands are graunted to Ladys, you may put him in remembraunce of the Prince, and to give some god words for him, that so willingly aduentured his life for you. Ah my Lord (said Zephira) I feare the Soldane will hardly heare me: For when such mightie persons are in anger, little account make they of Loue or vertue, yet will I willingly doe what lyeth in me.

So bidding the Prince god night, she went weeping to the Soldanes Chamber: whiche his Maiestie perceiving, came and embraced her, demandinge who had any way offended her? Euen you my Lord (quoth shee) and in such sorte, as if presently you doe not helpe it, I doubt the danger will be very great. I understand you haue sent Trynens to Prison, and withall sworne that hee shalldye: if you suffer such an infamous deede, thinke not but that my life will speedily follow him. Madame (answered the Soldane, what I haue done is to no other ende, but to stay him and his company in my Courte, because theyr renowne is

so

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

so famous in Turkie. With this excuse he so quallified the Queene, that she durst not moue any further questions. The next day hee sent for the Prince Tomano, and with many other great Lordes went to see his Sister Aurecinda, framing his speches to her in this manner.

Sister, you haue showne your selfe of god gouernment, and great estimation made you of honour and vertue, in dairing to thinke so fowle a thought as you haue committed in acte. Didst thou not consider the place of Honour in my Courte? what shame hast thou done to the house of Persia, whiche hitherto never sustained blemish: and now is soyled by thy immodest dealing with a straunger. So much doth thy heynous faulfe offend mee, that if he make thee not his wife, thou shalt dye the death as the Law hath ordained.

Soldane (answering the Princesse fiercely) in vaine seekest thou to recall the Acte committed. Doest thou thinke my faulfe so offensiu, whiche first was perpetrated by thy perswasion? To loue a Gentleman, faire, well spoken, comely, swete, gracious, and benigne, and who is of highest desert among all other: is it a matter deseruing death? chiesely to a Princesse, whose youth may wel excuse her trespass: If it be worthy the name of a sinne, it is more to the then mee: For thou didst first intreate, perswade, and comand mee to loue him: yea, thou diddest invent the meane how to winne him.

By thy devise first did I make proffer of that, which is the only sweet sollace in Loue. If thou therefore wilt put me to death, my care is the less, seeing that with the mooste perfect among men I haue obtained my desires. And so the fault shall not be laye on the best Knight in the world, my selfe prouoked him thereto, I called him, I deceiued him: and in briefe, more by sorte then Loue I constrained him to yelde, to ease those passions that hourelly tormented me.

When the Soldan beheld the impudencie of his Sister, he thus replied. Very true it is, that I comandde this to loue him, but not in this sort: whereof I can request nobet.

## THE HISTORIE

better profe then thine owne shamelesse speches, which I will severely corre before it be night. So departing from her, hee went to Tryneus with these wordes. Sir Knight, I did never thinke that a man wise and valiant as thou hast ben esteemed, hauing seene and frequented many Princes Courtes, could imagine an act so sole and detestable, in his Pallace that hath so highly honoured thee. It behoueth thee therefore to take thy choyse of two things: either to amende thy fault by espousing my Sister, whome I frankly give thee, and therewithall to renounce thy Baptisme, or suffer cruell death in reward of thine offence. Soldane answered Tryneus, thou abusest thy selfe in thinking to beguile me.

My God, first arm me with patience to the death, rather then for Riches and Honors momentarie, I shold forsake my Faith to my Sauour, by whom I hope to enjoy everlasting happiness. As for the fact thou twittest mee withall, well may it be excused: for I haue neither rauished or violated, but by force of Loue erred, with her that threatened her owne Death before my face, except I consented to her desire: yet in respect of mine Honour, much better had it bene to haue suffered her dye: but to shunne the reproach of so severe and inhumane nature, I yielded to her Amorous petitions. Notwithstanding, if thou therefore wilt put mee to death, thou canst not doe me so much shame as thou imaginest, but shalt cause mee to perorme the Debt we all owe to Nature, and for which wee enjoy our Byrth in this world.

To conclude, thy flatteries and menaces cannot make me thine, much lesse hers, that hath so falsly deceyued mee. By the Starres (quoth the Soldane) the audacious behaviour of these Knights maketh me to wonder: the one hath villainously injured mee in the presence of my Barons, and the other (for nothing I can say) will Exchaunge his opinion, which he shall full sone and dexterly repente. Soe causing the Tower to be fast locked, he went to the great Hall, and

## OF PALMERN D'OLIVA.

and there before all his Knights, said. You haue heard me Lordes, the confession of them both, and withall haue seene their great obstinacie: therefore by sentence irremediable I condemne them to death, and this day shall they be burned in the place accustomed, none of you all mooue mee to the contrarie, for I will not be otherwile perswaded. By heauen, said the Prince Tomano, unhappy shold I be to stay with you any longer, wherefore at this instant I forsake your alliaunce, and henceforth wil shew my selfe your mortall enemie. Alas my Lord quoth the young Princesse Belfino, will ye so soone abandon my compaines? Follow mee then answered Tomano, where I goe: for no more will I be seene in this tyrannous Court, where nothing but dishonour and crueltie is used.

Presently the Princesse and hee mounted on horsebacke, and with their trayne came to Palmerins Campe: who hauing heard the Soldanes sentence, was readie to haue slaine himselfe, but that he hoped to saue the life of Tryneus at the fatall houre. Alas my friends, quoth he, to his compaines, this day must you assist me, to deliuer the most gentle Knight that euer bare armes. Set forwarde couragiously against the Tyrant, whom with the ayde of my God, wee shall easilie vanquish. Zephira hearing that Tomano and Belfino were gone, and how the Soldane had iudged Tryneus and Aurecinda to death: entred into melancholous regrets and acclamations, whereat the Soldane was so enraged, as he comauanded that Tryneus and his Sister, shold presentlie be ledde to the place of execution, and under the charge of fiftie thousand Souldours, they were brought on horsebacke forth of the Cittie: but when Aurecinda sawe her selfe so hardlie used, winging her handes, and renting her comie locks of hayre, she brake soorth into these pittifull speches.

Alas Gentlemen, why are you the instruments to execute a Tyrants will? what recompence can you expect at his handes, that for greedie desire of my patrimony, sen-

## THE HISTORIE

deeth me to death: So pierceng were these wordes in the eares of the Souldiers, as they very much lamented her case: but Tryneus never chaunced colour, ryding on with resolute constancie, not once listning to the moanes of the Princesse.

When they were come within sight of Palmerins pow-er, they raunged themselves in battell arraie, committing Trineus and Aurecinda, the fiftie Knights, who should con-uey them to the Furnace where there death was appoin-ted, whch was a good quarter of a league from the Cittie. Tryneus now seeing death before his eyes, and no succour neere to rescwe him: prepared himselfe to the latest ex-tremite, and with manie sorrowfull farewelles to Agriola and Palmerin, was fully perswaded to endure the torment. Palmerin knowing which way his friend should be led to death, with a sufficient traine lay secretly ambushed, and espyng oportunitie, gaue the summons to his men, where-vpon they all issued foorth very couragiouslie. But as they rushed out from their secrete ambushment, the ayre was suddenly obscured, and such thunder, hayle and rayne fell, as never was the like hearde or seene before: the Soldanes squadrone seemed to be all in a flaming fire. The poore Per-sians thinking the end of the wold was come vpon them, fled towards the Cittie: but notwithstanding all their haste, the greatest part of them remained dead in the field. In the natural fire (prepared of Tryneus) made him fearful, doubtlesse this fire rayed by coniuration made him much more affrighted, but suddenly came to him an Armed Knight with his Sword drawne, and mounted on a horse of mightie bignes, who tooke the horse of Tryneus by the hysle, saying.

Come Sir Tryneus, in despight of the Tyrant thou shalt not die. At these wordes arrived Palmerin, who em-bracing Tryneus, said, Ah my deere friend and Brother, what villainous minds beare they that would doe you this outrage allight, and put on your Armour which my Squire hath

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

hath brought hither, that wee may with honour revenge this shame. As they thought to goe set on the enemie, the Armed Knight, was Muzabelino, thus spake. My Lord, let vs not farrie tryfing time heere, but summon your people together, and sette forward to Grisca, where you shall finde better succour then in this place. The desolate Tryneus, what with his former feare, and present ioy to beholde his Freind, was not able to speake one wordes, but Palmerin having well noted the Armed Knight, at length knew him to be Muzabelino, wherefore embrasing him, said;

Ah my Lord, for euer be the King of Kings prayed, in graunting me to haue knowledge of you, let me be worthe condemned of ingratitude, if I doe not acknowledge this great fauour to my Freind: which I account as deere as done to my selfe. After manie courteous salutacions passed on all sides, they sette forward to Grisca with their men and prouision: where we will leaue them, to shewe what afterward besell to the Soldane and his people. After a long and very dangerous tempest, with whirle-windes, lightnings, and strange apparacions, to the great discom-fort of all the Persians, one of the Princes, came to the Sol-dane, saying;

My Lord, the lightning hath fallen so terrible in the Court, as all the Ladies of honor are slaine therewith. An other brought newes, that thre parts of the Souldiers, whch conducted Trineus and Aurecinda foorth of the Cittie, lay all slaine in the rough tempest. While these strange mishappes were discoursing, Aurecinda entred the Cham-ber, saying, Now Soldane maist thou behold thy sin: Seest thou not that the celestiall spirites haue reuenged ourwrongs with the death of thy people? and for my escape I ren-der thanks to the highest, not to thre that gave my life to the fire, yet much better wold my death haue contented mee, then to live without him whose absence is my torment: and did not the hope of his life giue me some comfort, thou shouldest

## THE HISTORIE

Shouldest perceiue how little I esteeme of my life. Then entred the Queene zephira, and she falling at the Soldanes feete, thus began. Ah my Lord, the dishonour you haue this day done me is unspeakable. Haue my deserts beene so simple in your eyes, that I might not intreat the libertie of one Knight, who this day ( I feare ) hath perished by your ingratitude? Neuer shall I see those noble Knights againe, whose liues haue beene endaungered for my welfare. Ah my Lorde, if you looke into the weight of your offence, you shall perceiue my teares are not shedde without great reason.

Madame, quoth the Soldane, and you faire Sister, at this time excuse my fault committed, and patiently heare what hath happened: for I vowe to you by the faith of a Prince, that I will make sufficient amends for my trespass. When hee now thought to be no further troubled, his Sister Lyzanda entred mad and raging, and snatching his fashyon from his side, said. See villaine, see what happeneth by thy commaundement, one of thy Sisters is for euer defamed, and the other will presentlie end her life before thee. Herewith she stabbeth the weapon to her hart, and falleth downe dead at the Soldanes feete, to the no little sorrow of his Maiestie, and all that were present: but Zephira, causyngh the bodie be taken away, the Soldane commanede she shoulde be honourable buried and erecting a goodly Combe of Marble ouer her graue, caused the maner of her death to be thereon described. Afterward, by the counsell of the Lords of Persia, he sent the Prince Tomano and the strange Knights, all the riches and treasure they had left behinde them: the Princesse Aurecinda remaining in continual heauines, and within herte time she felth her selfe to be conceiued with Childe. Herein shew somewhat comforted her selfe, though Fortune would not suffer her to enjoy the compaunie of her freind, yet one day shew hopped to see his liuelie image: which at the time appointed by nature she did, being deliuered of the goodliest male Childe

that

## OF PALMERIN DOLIVA.

that ever was seene in Persia, naming him Ryfarano, who carried the beautifull complextion of his Mother, as hee did the hardies and magnanimitie of his Father.

## CHAP. LVII.

How Palmerin and Tryneus hauing soioured a while at Grisca with the King Abimar, departed to the Isle of Malfada, where by the meanes of Dulacco and Palmerin, all the enchauntments were finished.



By the way as the Princes rode to-wards Grisca, Palmerin vsed these speeches to Tryneus. How happy is the Prince that giues credit to good counsell, and will not beled by flatteries, or subiect hymselfe to his owne passions: and how unfortunat are they that fall into the contrarie: Can yee haue a better example heereof then the trayterous Soldane: who first (causelesse) disquieted the good King Abimar, and afterward at his Sisters motion imprisoned his friend: for your good successe herein my Lord, you must thank Muzabelino, and the Prince Tomano, whose power was so ready to defend you. Tryneus remembryng his follies past, was still so ashamed thereof, as he could make no answere, wherfore Palmerin thus spake againe.

Why? my Lord, hath the imprisonment for faire Aurecinda strooken you dumbe: leaue this basynnes to Colouen, and remember your former courage. Stoute Hercules, whose honoris are yet to rise in memorie, did not he for the loue of Iole, weare feminine garments, and spin

## THE HISTORIE

among warren? Did not Achilles the like, when he was with his faire friend in the Courte of King Lycomedes? Marke Antonie the Romane Emperour, did not he follow Cleopatra before Octavius, although his Arme on the Sea, was twofold the number of his enemies? And you, for a little familiar loue to a young Princesse, who conque red you only by importunate sute, remaine thus confoun ded. Doe you imagine your selfe to excell in strength, pow er and knowledge, Hercules, Achilles, and the Emperour Antonie?

Alas deere Brother, answered Tryneus, well may you boast of your especiall graces, being able to triumph ouer concupiscentie: but so yokesome is my offence in mine own conceit, as I thinke my selfe unworthe to be seene among men of vertue. What shall I say to my Agriola, when she shall vnderstond my heinous offence? how shal I dare to present my selfe before her? For that, saide Palmerin, we shall doe well enough: but I would it were so welcom to passe, that we were with her to abide her censure. Continuing these speeches, they arrived at Grisca, where the King being aduertised of their comming, came to mete them, vsing these gracious words at their entertainment. Right welcome are yee my noble friends, no maryell though the Holdane sought to wrong you, remembiring how for my sake you vsed him in the battell. In sooth my Lord answered Palmerin, Well doth your nobilitie deserue our service, and his iniurious dealing sharpe reuenge, which happily hereafter he may feele to his cost, vsing stran gers so unhonorable: but heere we present your Daughter Belsina to your Maiestie, after whose mariage all these troubles began.

Welcome faire Daughter, said the King, much better then my Sonne hath been to your Fathers Court. When my Father, quoth the Princesse, hath considered his furie, doubtlesse he will be hartily sorry therefore, and make sa ffaction for any thing misdone: till then I beseech your highnesse

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

highnesse to conceiue the best. And according as the Princesse had spoken, it came to passe, for within thre dales after, the Holdane sent Ambassadours to the King Abimar, to excuse the imprisonment of Tryneus, and the sentence of death hee gaue against him: sending to him and Palmerin all their treasure, and sumptuous presents in signe of satisfaction, and to his Daughter Belsina and the Prince Tomano, he sent sixe Camels laden with gold, as the dowrie of their marriage.

Now are Palmerin and Tryneus weary of their so long stay from their friends, wherefore they desired leaue of the King to depart, who seeing he could not well intreate their longer aboade, right thankfully yeeded to their request, giving them all thinges needfull for their iourney, as Horses, Armour, men, money, and divers other gifts of inestimable value. For which kindnes they hum bly thanked his Maiestie, refusing to trouble themselves with such riches in their trauaile, nor would they take that the Holdane sent them, or what they brought from the ten Rocks: except the Bird and the two Crownes, giuing all the rest to Muzabelino, desiring him to continue them in remembrance. By Lords, quoth he, no service can bee lost that is done to such liberall Princes, as now you giue mee good occasion to confesse: and though both I and mine would spend all our following daies in your service, yet can we not recompence the very least of your courtesies, recom mending my sonne Bellechino once more to you my Lord, in hope he will prove a loyall and faithfull Servant, other wise I could part his head from his shoulders in your presence.

And because the way you brought Madame Zephira, is very long, troublesome and dangerous: I haue prepared a Shippe for you, which without any perill shall speedily carrie you to Malda, and a yong Knight my brother haue I appointed Pilot therein, who shall direct you how to finish all the enchauntments in the Isle, and after

## THE HISTORIE

ward I desire you so to order the matter with the King Maulerino, that my Brother may haue the gouernement thereof after your departure. Beleeue me noble Friend, answered Palmerin, your Sonne will I intreate as well beseemes him, and your Brother shall not onely haue the charge of the Isle, whch I will ffeele giue him: but I wil so worke with the Brother to Zephira, that he shal endys hym with greater possessions. So taking their leaue of all the Courtiers, Muzabelino brought him to the Shipp: wherein they were no sooner entred, but it presentlis cut through the waters with such violence, as they were very quicklie come to Malfada. They going on shore, Dulacco Brother to Muzabelino demanded of the Prince Tryneus, if he had the King he found in the Cup at the Castell of the feme Rocks. I haue it on my finger Sir, answered Tryneus. Let vs then enter the Isle, said Dulacco, as for you Belecgino and Colmelio, stay you in the Ship till you haere the sound of a Cornet, and then may you safely venture on the land.

Dyardo standing in one of the Turrets in the Castell, saw when the Ship came and cast Anker, wherefore hee expected if any ducst come soorth thereof on the shore, and so amazed he was that the thre Knights were not transformed, as till Palmerin spake to him, hee knew not what to imagine, but afterward he made hast downe, and letting downe the Bridge, came and embrased him, saying: Welcome is my noble Lord to Malfada: haue you learned or brought any remedie with you, whereby to redouer your Friends here enchanted: in happy howre did you befall your labour, if so it came to passe, but what may these two Knights bee that come in your company? The one is the Prince Tryneus, quoth Palmerin, whom I so long thine sought for, and the other is the man that must giue vs assistance.

After many friendly embracings, Palmerin demanded what was become of the two Damosels he left there.

My

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

My Lord, said Dyardo, they remayne prisoners to dee penaunce for the hard speeches they gaue you. So went they all to the prison, where Palmerin demanded whch of the had the key of the enchaunted Tower: but they continuing in their former obstinacie and malice, would not answere one word. Falle harlots quoth Palmerin, why speake ye not: if you giue me not the key quickly, all your force-rie shall not save your lives. They being fearefull of death, presently fell on their knees, and one of them taking the key soorth of her pocket, opened the doore of the Tower, saying:

Enter Knight, I hope thou wilt repent thy hastinche Palmerin and his thre compaines went in, where they beheld a huge Doll of Copper, holding a Bow with an arrow readie drawne to shote: by her hung a goodly Cornet of Iuorie, and on the other side a faire Woke. My Lord, said Dulacco, we must haue both the Cornet and the book: and if you faile in getting them, no one aliue can ende the enchantment. By God I will strengthen me, said Palmerin, so drawing his Sword and encuering himselfe with his Shield, he boldly stopt to the Image and in despite of the devils that fiercely strocke at him, he puld the Woke violently from him: when suddenly such a seafullcry was heard through the Castell, as made them all to shake and tremble. The Woke and Cornet he easly reached, and giuing them to Dulacco, willed him to finish the rest. That will I, quoth he, but you must be readie to assist me: let vs now goe forth and you shall see ourailes: when I am reading the first lease of the Woke, do you sound the Cornet so loud as you can possible. Palmerin did as hee was commanded, and by the reading of Dulacco, and the sound of the Cornet, all that were enchanted in the Island came running thether: being so many as Palmerin was amazed thereat.

Dulacco having ended his Lecture, they all returned to their former Shores, the first were the couragious Fry soll,

23

the

## THE HISTORIE

the King of Sparta, the Duke of Pontus, the Prince of Me-  
cena, the Prince Olorico, Laurana and Agriola, whom  
Tryneus ranne and embraced, seeing her so perfect in beau-  
tie as ever she was.

Now the remembrance of his offence with Aurecinda,  
stopped the passage of his speech, and her fauours sholwe  
to the great Turke, made her likewise ashamed; yet kisses  
and embracings with teates and sighes, delivered their in-  
ward joy for this happy meeting. Here must we imagine  
the comfort of the other three Princes and Laurana, then  
which doubleise could bee no greater, seeing their noble  
Friend that had delivered them, and beholding each other  
in good disposition. Now are all those which were enchan-  
ted, brought to their former shape, as wel Turkes as Chi-  
stians, and their Shippes by Dulacco restored them againe:  
chiefly they that belonged to the Merchant Estebon and  
his Sonnes, to whom Palmerin gaue such abundance of  
treasure, as afterward they had no cause of want, dischar-  
ging each one to their owne Country, who departed thence  
to their no little contentation. Agriola, Laurana and the o-  
ther Princes, being altogether conferring of their good  
fortune, Palmerin commeth cheerfully among them, and  
discoursed what had happened since the separation, wherin  
hee revealed all that you haue heard already, whiche to re-  
peale againe would be but troublesome: it suffiseth you to  
conceiu, that all the Friends being met together, are so  
well acquainted with each others mishap, as now they  
ioyntly reioyce in this happy successe. The next morning,  
Palmerin galled Bellachino his Squire, saying to him.

Thou must presentlie poste to Elaine to the King Mau-  
lerino, and hauing saluted him on my behalfe: deliver him  
these Letters, wherin his Maiestie shall bee acquainted  
with all that hath happened, but make all possible speede  
thou canst, because at thy returne we will sette to Sea pre-  
sently. The Squire being gone, Palmerin gaue in charge  
to Dulacco, to see his Shippes victualled and prouided, and  
that

## OF PALMERN DOLIVA.

that wchall wchich Muzabellino had giuen him.

Afterward he went to bid Agriola and Laurana good  
morrow, and then comming to Fry soll, the King of Sparta,  
and Olorico, who were all pleasantly discoursing together  
in their Chamber, hee said to them. Assuredly my good  
friends, if Fortune had been ly aduise to me, that I could  
not haue found Tryneus, or the meane to deliver you from  
the enchantment: I had giuen my self wel to Armes, riches  
and honour, and woulde haue haunted those pathes where  
never man trode. For with what face could I approach the  
presence of my Sister and Aunt, hauing lost them whom  
they live onely to loue. And you noble Prince Olorico,  
haue full occasion to complain on mee, that haue caused  
you to endure such paine and troualle: but in recompence  
of this ouer great wrong, I will cause you to enjoy her,  
whom you haue so long fathfullie loued, and so soone as I  
am arrived at Constantinople, I will send Ambassadours  
to my Lord the Souldan, that he may accept you as his Son  
in my stead.

My Lord, answered Olorico, the honour you haue  
done me, in accepting my company, I account to exceed all  
other courtesies, and though for a time I haue been unfor-  
tunate. I take it patiently, assuring you by the word of a  
Prince, that I imagine the man not worthie to taste the  
Sweete, who cannot abide to feare the sorwr. By this time  
are Palmerins Letters come to the King Mauerine, who  
hauing understood their content, ioyfull of Palmerins re-  
turne, and of his good fortune in finishing the enchaunt-  
ments: hee came presentlie with his traine to Malfada,  
where to discourse the pleasure on each side conceived, the  
honourable and gracious courtesies bestowed, with all the  
especiall fauours beseeming a King and so worthie per-  
sonages, is farre beyond my capacite, and therefore I re-  
serre it to your gentle consideration. But at Palmerins in-  
treatie, Delacco was made Lord and chiefe Gouvernour of  
Malfada, and divers other territorie neare adioyning:

## THE HISTORIE

Whiche moued Palmerin thus to thanke the King. Seeing your Maistrie for my sake, hath bestowed this Island on me worthye god Friend, to the end that the name of wicked Malfada may bee utterly rased soorth: let me intreate that it may henceforth bee called the Isle of the two Lovers, because there is no such as enchaunted two, the most loyall Servants that euer loue had, hauing endured wonderfull and variable fortunes, and yet here met in the end to their no little comfort.

Let it be quoth the King, as you haue appointed, and whosoeuer hee soorth calleth it otherwise, shall bee held a mony as an open blasphemier. Afterward the King accompanied Palmerin and his friends to their Shippes, and there committed them to their prosperous voyage, so Palmerin, his seauen compaynions, the two Princesses, with his Squires Bellechao and Colmelio, entered the Shippes that Muzabelino gaue him: & an hundred Knights which the King Mulerino had giuen him, were embarked in another Shipp well appainted, so hysing saile, with a mette gale of wind they launced into the Sea, and the King with his traine returned to the Courte, leauing Dalacco quiete possesed of the two Lovers.

## CHAP.

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

### CHAP. LVIII.

¶ How Palmerin and his Companions sayling on the Sea, met with Ptolome, and of the honorable entertainment the Emperour, Flarendos, and the Ladies them, when they arrived at Constantinople.



¶ These dayes sayled our Knights without any strange aduenture, and on the fourth, as Phicebus ganne enter his Chariot, to displaye his radiant golden beames on his Uncle Neptunes Region: Palmerin standing aloft on the Decke, eppyd a great Carrick, whiche with full saile made halle towardes them, and by the Banners he discerned that it was of Turkye, wherfore he cryed aloud to his Companions to arme themselves.

Suddenly were they all come aloft on the Decke armed, and the hundred Knights in the other Shippes were likewise in readynesse: when the Carricke being come neare them, they myght behold the Turkes strongly prouded, and Ptolome their Captaine hightly encouraging them. At length they buckled together, and a baningesous fightheame betwene them, so that even of the Kings Mulerinos Knights were slaine, the King of Sparta sore wounded by Ptolome, and Dyard in great perill of his life. When Palmerin saw the King of Sparta slaine, and that the Boordes had daungerously hurt onthers of his felshires, fearing the King was slaine, hee came to Ptolome, and after many sharpe strokis on either side, it fightheame was, when pulling his Helmet furiously from him, thinking to haue smitten off his head, Ptolom. said. Will me not a knight,

## THE HISTORIE

for I yeld my selfe to thes. Palmerin knywing his Friend, said to his companions and the rest. Give ouer my friends, and fight no longer, for false Fortune hath too much deluded vs.

Ah worthy Ptolome, why haue I dealte so hardly with thes? Is it possible that any man may be likened to mee in mishap? no sooner am I out of one, but presently I fall into another: By Heauen (deare Friend) if I had slaine thes, right sone wold I haue beene reuenged on my selfe. See then sweet Ptolome, how Palmerin grieues for his offence, more then if he had lost the best limme on his body. When Ptolome behelde his friende Palmerin, and by him the noble Prince Tryneus, embracing them, he said. O Sauour of the World, how highly hast thou this day fauoured mee, permitting me to finde my dearest friendes? Then they brought him to the Princesse Agriola in her Cabbin, who was not a little glad to behold the man, that endured with her some parte of miserie, and Colmelio was ioyfull to behold hym Ptolome, in that their hap was to be parted when they were led to be sold as slaves: but Agriola wold needs heare the discourse of all his Fortunes, since the first time of theys separation, which he and Colmelio truly recounted. Belieue me Ptolome said Palmerin, I see we haue had our shares in aduersitie, and hardly can we iudge whose wrong hath bene greatest: But how came you thus to bee Captaine among the Turkes? My Lord (quoth he) the Princesse Alchidiana bought me, and charged me to sake you, as well by Sea as by Land; and so my defence gave me somtie Knights, of whome there now remaines but ten alive. That Ladie am I highly beholding to (saide Palmerin) and for the wrong I haue done her by the death of her Knights, I will excuse my selfe by an honorable Embassade, when I shall send the Prince Olorico to her againe. And that thou Ptolome mayst know some of my god happe, understande that I haue founde my Father and Mother, who are Flordos the King of Macedon, and Griana the Daughter

and

## OF PALMERIN DOLIVA.

and Heire to the Emperour of Greece. I did euer perswade my selfe (quoth Ptolome) that your Discendent was of Royall lineage: But I intreate you for my sake, that these Knights which your men haue taken, may be gently bled, and enjoy thes Libertie. Palmerin calling them to him, said. For Ptolome his sake that was your Captaine, and her Loue who commanede you to trauell with him, I wyl to you as to my selfe: yet shall you all goe with me to Constantinople, that you may helpe to conuict the Prince Olorico backe againe, whome I me to send with you unto your Mistresse.

Will abide my Lord (quoth they) at your Direction, and willingly obey your command, in that wee haue knowne how dearely the Soldane loued you, and better Fortune could not haue besallen vs, then so luckily to meet with you and the Prince Olorico: as for our Companions that are slaine, there is no remedie, for such mishappes are common, where Fortune frowneth. So sayled they on friendly together, and on the Sea we will leaue them, to tell you of the returne of the Embassadour Maucetto to the Soldane of Babylon, who hearing that the Persian had refused to assit him, was somewhat offended therat: But when he saw what Palmerin had written, heo pacified himselfe, saying: Ah gentle Palmerin, hadst thou bene in the Battel at Constantinople, I had not needed to demand help of him whom I judged my Friend: but seeing Fortune hath shalwe herselfe so contrary, I will not attempt any thing, from which thou disswadest me.

Maucetto declared, that Palmerin had likewise sent a Letter the Princesse Alchidiana, which hee commanede him presently to carry her: No sooner had shee read the Letter, and thereby understanding his Knightly deedes of Chivalry, but embracing the Embassadour, she thus spake: Maucetto, never couldest thou haue brought mee better newes, then of the man whose Name flourishest in all places. Ah sweet Letter, written by the hand of the most perfect

## THE HISTORIE

fect Knight living, full of charite, and theyselfe will I keepe  
thee. Ah Ptoleme, whome my frende loues so deare-  
ly, that haue I sent in dangerous hazard of thy life: but may  
I once see thee againe, thou shalt perceiue my loue for Pal-  
merins sake.

Happy art thou Princesse Aephira, having with thee  
the myrrour of mankinde. My Lord (quoth she) as though  
Palmerin had beene present) Wilt thou wrong thy selfe so  
much as to tarry with her? Dare the Soldanes Sisters  
daunt that they loue thee? They before, as I understand,  
but yet not so faire that thou shouldest refuse mee for them.  
What haue I said? deceipte matter to mine owne re-  
proach, for if thou wouldest, the kingly offres of my fa-  
ther, and my impotunate intreaties could no way moue  
thee: hardly may the Persians prouale with thee, especial-  
ly in such a weightie cause as loue is. Maister, what  
saies thou? is Lord Palmerin like to stay long in Persia  
with the Soldans sisters? No Madam (quoth he) I heare  
him say very often that he wouldest depeate thence before a  
Moneth was expyred.

In these and such like speches they continued, wherewith  
we purpose to leauue them: For by this time is Palmerin  
and his friendes arrived in the Haven of Constantinople,  
and Colmelio is sent before to the Pallace, to aduertise the  
Emperour of these most ioyfull tidings. As Colmelio en-  
tered into the great Hall, the first man he met was his fa-  
ther Gerrard, who was newly made Lord Chamberlaine  
to the King Florendos: wherefore falling on his knee before  
him, he said: Father, little did I thinke to finde you exalted  
to such honour, happy was the day when you found Prince  
Palmerin: and much more happiness is this day, in that I  
bring the most ioyfull newes that ever man did to this  
Court. Old Gerrard was exceeding glad to behold his son,  
catching him in his arms, said. Well comelio to thy  
aged Father: haue thou heard any tidings of thy Lord and  
Master? Ere with me father, answere Colmelio, and

you

## OF PALMERIN DOLIVA.

you shall heare matter of meruaile. At that instant came  
the Emperour with the King Florendos into the Hall, and  
all the Ladies going to heare divine service, wherefore  
Gerrard thus spake to his highnesse. My Lord, see heere my  
Sonne Colmelio, who long time hath traualled in searche  
of Prince Palmerin, he hath some mesage of importance  
to deliver to your Maestie. Right welcome is hee, quoth  
the Emperour, say what thou wilst my freind, thou hast free  
libertie.

Mightie Emperour, said Colmelio, your Son Prince  
Palmerin is arrived in the Haven, and with him the yong  
Prince Tryneus, Sonne to the Emperour of Allemaigne,  
the good Knight Sir Ptoleme, the ffe Prince which  
went with him from Mace don, the two Princes of Eng-  
land and Durace, with divers other unknowne to me: and  
saluting your Maestie with his humble, duetie intreateth  
that Horses may be sent for them and the Ladies that bee  
and they may come to kisse your highnes hande. The Em-  
perour, Florendos and the Ladies, were readie to swoone  
with ioy at these tidings, and having embraced the Mes-  
senger, commanded a roiall trayne to goe meete his sonne,  
and goodlie Halcates to bring them to the Pallace, some  
raine on foote to the Porle, other an horsebacke, so that be-  
fore the Emperours traime came, such asse of Gentlemen  
and Merchaunts were there to receive them, as hardly  
they could stand one by another. After they were all mount-  
ed on horsebacke, with great ioy and triumph they rode to-  
wards the Pallace, where Tryneus falling on his knee be-  
fore the Emperour, said.

Long live your Maestie in health and happiness, heere  
may you beholde the man, for whome my Lord Palmerin  
your sonne, hath endured such paine and trauale. The  
Emperour perceiving by his speches that he was Tryneus  
the Prince of Allemaigne, thus answered. I hope my  
Lord that you will brave with mine age and weake[n]esse,  
which hinders me from enter taining you as faine I wold,  
but

## THE HISTORIE

But I beseech you to arise, for it ill beseemes so great a Prince, to humble himselfe in such sort. Florendos & Griana (in this time) welcommed their Sonne, Arismena the King of Sparta, Armida her Fry soll, and the old Emperoz and Empresse graciously entertained Agriola and Laura na, each absent Friend so embrased and welcommed, as all the day was spent onely in those ceremonies. The next morning Palmerin dispatched his Dwarfe Urbanillo to the Emperour of Allmaigne, that he and Polynarda might understand these long expected newes : and afterward comming to Sir Fry soll, he said to him ; Brother, our Mother hath enriched vs with a Sister since our departure, and my Sister Armida me with two Nephewes, I pray you let vs goe see them.

Hereupon the Nurses brought the young Princes, the eldest of them being named Dytrius, and the youngest Belcar, the young Princesse, Daughter to Florendos and Griana, was calleyn Denisa : so fayre and comely were the Infants, as if Nature had studed to make them most exquisit. Welcome me Sir Fry soll, quoth Palmerin, if my Sister continue as she begins, the Realme of Hungaria shall hardlie want heires : what ; two at a blisw, but Lady it is a signe of good fertilitie. And when you are entred the estate of wedlocke, answered Fry soll, if your linage increase according to the greatnessse of desire : Madame Polynarda shall be as well sped as her neighbours. Thus iested the Princes together, attending newes of the Courtier, that went with Urbanillo to the Emperour of Allemaigne, who at that time was at Vienna.

## CHAP.

## OFFPALMERN DOLIVA.

## CHAP. LIX.

How the Duke of Mensa and the Countie of Redona, conducted the Prince Olorico into Assiria, where hee was espoused to the Princesse Alchidiana.



Or the space of a Moneth and more, Palmerin, Trineus and Agriola sotouched at Constantinople, till all things were prepared for them to travell towards Allemaigne : during which time, Palmerin shewed such signes of loue to the Prince Olorico, as hee would sil done be forth of his company. And seeing that more and more his amorous passions increased, hee said : Deers Friend Olorico, although I am no way able to recompence your long continued kindnes, or remunerate the paine and travell you haue suffered in my company : yet haue I determined (so you like therof) to send you to Assiria, and with you the Duke of Mensa, and the Counte of Redona, as Ambassadours to my Lord the Holdane, with such an honourable traine beside, as Mysos shall haue no occasion to complaine.

Noz doc I this (Sweete Prince) as envious of your company, or that I stand in feare of the Holdane : but on ly to keepe my promise, whiche I was, that I would aide you to my uttermost, to accomplish the mariage betwene you and Madame Alchidiana, for whom I see your mind is incessantly troubled. By Lord, answered Olorico, if ever perfect loue might bee discerned in a Princes heart, doubtlesse it is most amply deciphered in yours. Where can you

find

## THE HISTORIE

finde in any Historie, semblable affection: or that a Christian woulde fauour his enemie, that is contrarie to him in Law and profession: Were ie the humanity, that so great a Prince woulde so much abase himselfe, to accept as his companion in Armes, the poore Henne to the King of Arabia: practising for his good, not the suretie alone of the Christians, but the alliance of the greatest Lord in Asia. Wherefore my noble Lord, since of your accustomed good nature you haue made me this offer, of simple iudgement shuld I shew my selfe to refuse it. I accept your gracious kindnes, and assure your selfe of his readie seruice, whom your precious vertues hath so bound to you, as for euer I will name my selfe the Servant to the Prince of Greece. Hereupon Palmerin wrote to the Soltane of Babilon in forme as followeth.

### The Letter of Prince Palmerin, to the great Sultane of Babylon.

R ight puissant Lord of Assiria, if the obedience we owe to Parents and Countrey, are causes sufficient to call home a Knight errant, with refusall of all strange friendships and alliances: I hope your Maiestie wil not mislike of my returne from Persia to Constantinople. And because I was there aduertised by your highnes Ambassador Maucetto, how you haue resolued to vex vs with open hostilitie: I will now reveale unto you, that by the grace and fauour of the highest God, since my departure from your Courte, I haue obtained knowledge of my Parents, who are such, as if you seeke the wracke of Constantinople: you goe about to destroy that Palmerin, whom heretofore you haue so deerelie loued, and is now become the onely heire to that Empire. Wherefore my Lord, if for my sake you will graunt so much, as to forget reuenge for your depeased Brother Gamezio: both we and all our's shall

### OF PALMERN D'OLIVA.

Shall continually name our selues, your Friends and assitants against all your enemies. Contrariwise, if you will followe your former opinion, we must defend our selues so well as we may. And for I am no more (with credit) to forsake my Countrey, Parents and Friends, to returne againe to your service: I send you the Prince Olorico, a Knight both valiant and hardy as any in all Turkie, without exception of your Court, the great Turkes, or the Soltane of Persia, and he to serue you in my stead. Desiring your highnesse by that affection which you did beare mee, when the Prince Amarano was slaine in your presence: that you accept him as your Son, and give him in mariage to your daughter Alchidiana, as the man that hath best deserued her, if euer Prince might merit a Ladies loue by bountie and choise chualtrie. So shalld you perorme an action of mickle honor, and bind me continually to acknowledge this kindnes.

Yours Palmerin d' Oliva,

In other Letter he wrote to the Princesse Alchidiana, the tenure whereof was thus.

### The Letter of Palmerin, to the Princesse of Assiria.

T O you Madamme Alchidiana, daughter to the great Soltan of Babilon: Palmerin d' Oliva your Knight, sendeth health condigne to your magnificence Madam, sending to your Father the Duke of Mensa, and the Countie of Redoua our Ambassadors, to intreate of perpetuall peace & alliance between his Maiestie and vs, whereto may it please you to give favourable assistance, I thought good by them likewise to write to your excellencie, with earnest intreaty to receive as yours, the Prince Olorico, heire

## THE HISTORIE

to the Crowne of Arabia. You know faire Madame, that never had he come to your Fathers Court, had not the perillous battell against the proud Brethren of Amarano prouoked him, nor would hee haue aduentured the dangers of the See, but in hope (at length) to purchase your gracieous loue. For these considerations, good Madam, enterteine him into your sober thoughts, who hath no more feared to spend his blood for your sake, and thrust his life into infinite dangers, then I haue done to set my hand and pen to this paper. I know that your grace, beautie and great dowlie, commandeth the chieffest Prince on the earth for your Husband, and (to sheld my selfe from blame) I know that I promised you my seruice, when I should returne from Constantinople: but he w hath it fallen out: your Palmerin is knowne by them that haue like authoritie ouer him, as your loue hath on the Prince Olorico. I am a Christian, a stranger, Sonne to the simple King of Macedon, and Daughter to the Emperour of Greece, beside, of very little or no deuert at all. Hee is of your Law, your Neighbour, Sonne to the rich King of Arabia, & a Prince of as high vertue as euer was in my compantie: witnessse whereof he made on the Phrygians, and in an hundred places since in my presence. Wherefore Madam, if noblenes of hart, and loyall loue deserue so great an alliance, I know no Prince this day living more worthy then he. Assuring you withall, that more gladly would I die the death, then sollicite the cause of him, whom I shoud but imagine unworthy your person.

Your Knight, Palmerin d' Oliua,

When hee had sealed their Letters, he gave them to the Ambassadours, who accompanied with fiftie Grecian Knights, went to the Hauen where their Ships was prepared: after them followed the King Mulerinos hundred Knights, the number being supplied with other, in stead

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

steade of them that were staine, and after them went the Knights that came with Ptolome: then came the Prince Olorico and Palmerin, deuising by the way on many seuerall busynesses.

My Lord (quoth Palmerin) I imagine you nowe remember our taking by the Admirall Olimaell, and scarce that like mishappe may againe befall you: I therefore (as your Guard) give you the hundred Knights I had of the King Mulerino, and fiftie other Knights naturally borne in Greece, as able in Armes as any other whatsoeuer, intreating you to hold me excused if I give you not such estate besimes your nobility. Worthy Palmerin (answered the Prince) the greatest Lord that is, might well content himselfe with the Honourable compantie you haue giuen me. And had not extreme passions ouer-ruled me, and calld me hence to her seruice whom I haue onely chosen: I would for sake Arabia, and the Lawe of Mahomet, onely to live in your compantie. But in what place my fortune guides me hereafter, neither Parents or Friends shall hinder mee to say that I am your bowed and affectionate Servant. The like also doe you conceiue of me (said Palmerin.) So with teares they left eache other, Olorico and all his compantie being abord, such favourable wind and weather they had, as without any danger they safly arrived where the Hollandes lay: and first the tenne Knights went on shore, they that were left of the compantie which the Princesse Alchidiana gaue to Ptolome, and comming before the Princesse, said:

Madame, your Knight Sir Ptolome humbly saluteth, you by vs, sending your excellencie this Letter. Beside there is now arrived at the porte, the Prince Olorico, and certaine Ambassadours from the valiant Palmerin, Prince of Greece and Macedon, who come on his behalfe to kisse your hand. The Princesse hauing heard these newes, and read the Letter which Ptolome sent, containing the great god softraines of Palmerin, was inwardly so rauished with

## THE HISTORIE

delight, as along space shee remained silent, but at length brake sooth into these speeches. Ah Fortune, how well thou knowest to change matters which way thou pleasedst, not according to the will & desire of passionate mindes, but on the behalfe of the highest in perfections. Ah Palmerin, the man whome my heart shall ever loue, how may faire Polinarda iustlye teame her selfe happy, hauing thee for her Lord and loue: considering that the beautie and graces of so many Ladies conquered with thy deserts, nor the sumptuous riches continually offered thee, could once diuert thee from thy first affection. Ah Alchidiana, that which hath made so many Ladies and Knights fortunate, in compassing the onely issue of their desires, both now remaine for thy torment alone, making thee the most unhappy creature under the Sun. Agriola, Griana, Acismena, Armida and Zephira, are they (swete Knight) by thy meanes in assurance of their loues? Tryneus, Fry soll, the King of Sparta, Maulerino, Abimar, Tomano and diuers other: are their Realmes quieted, and their Ladies triumphing in their ioyes, onely by the pice of thy blood, and danger of thy life? And must I alone remaine disgraced, for euer confounded, hauing lost the Knight I loued as my soule? While the Princesse continued these complaints, the Prince Olorico and the Ambassadours were come before the Soldane, and being entertained by him with very gracious countenance, they presented the Letters from Palmerin, which being read in the presence of all his Lords, the Soldane thus answered.

My Friends, I will impart these newes to my Counsell and my Daughter, and afterward make you answere as I may. Hereupon the Duke of Mensa, the Countie of Redora, and the Prince Olorico withdrewn themselves, and sone after the Soldane sent for his Daughter, thus speaking to her; Daughter, our Princes thinkes good, and haue counselled me to make peace with Palmerin, who at this present is heye of Greece: and requireth in witnessse

of

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

of our fruce, that I shold give you in mariage to the renowned Prince Olorico. Advise your selfe hereon, for Palmerin hath earnestly intreated it by writing, and here I haue a Letter for you, I think to the same effect. The Princesse hauing read the Letter, returned this answere. It is very true my Lord, his request to mee is for the selfe same cause: seeing therefore it liketh you, and the Princes of our Realme think it conuenient, in respect of the common profit and good may ensue thereby: it is not for mee to make deniall.

Right glad was the Soldane of this answere, wherefore he said. Goe then faire Daughter and decke your selfe accordingly, for after Dinner in the Presence of the Ambassadours, you shall be affianced to the Prince. Olorico since his arrivall had talked but little with his Ladie, wherefore hee now determined to goe see her: and meeting her as she returned from the Soldane, hee saluted her with great reverence, but the Princesse feigning that shee knew nothing yet of their mariage, thus spake to him. I understand my Lord, that your companion Palmerin hath altogether forsaken vs. Madame, quoth the Prince, if hee haue abandoned your company, it is onely by the fauour of Fortune, who hath been a greater friend to him then any man beside: yet cannot the great honours and possessions hee now enjoyeth, make him forget you, in that at my depariture he said, for euer he would live and die your Knight. God keepe him, said the Princesse, where euer he is, for still is my hart bounde to his remembrance: and gladie can I doe as much for him as for my Brother, though his present auauncement hinder him from my service. Such is his trust Madame, quoth he, in your fauour, that you will not refuse any honest request he makes to your excellencie, in which respect he hath sent mee to intreate you, that you will be affiuant to the peace he desireth with your Father, and that you would vouchsafe me so much honoz, as in his bed to entertaine me into your service, which to begin, I

## THE HISTORIE

present you my heart, that never since the day of our departure from Constantynople, hath entred any rest, being absent from the onely means of my comfort. If then I haue lived all this while in some hope, by remembraunce of your exceeding graces and courtesies: beyond all other should I account my selfe in happiness, if now at length you receiue me as your Servant. I receive you, saide the Princesse, for Palmerins sake, and for your saine deserts, which haue bene so worthy: requiting you with equall affection, so that you denye me not one request. Nothing shall you be denyed (sweete Princesse, quoth hee) if by my life it may be compassed.

Now will I demaunde any thing of so great value (said she) this is the fauour you shall graunt me: hereafter when time shall serue, that you will conduct me to Constantynople, there to behold the faire Princesse Polynarda, and the magnificent Courts of noble Palmerin, in recompence whereof, I give my selfe to be your wife, and accept you as my Lord and Husband. If Olorico was now well pleased, I referre to your iudgements, wherefore confirming their premises, by kisses and embracings, with solemne protestations and irrevocable bowes, they departed thence, to their Chaunes.

After Dinner, the Princesse attyzed in most sumptuous Garments, came into the Hall with her Wayting Ladys, when the Soldane sent for the Ambassadours, and thus spake to them. My friends, I now perceiue the man to be ouer foolish that trusteth in himselfe, I thought by my power to destroy Greece, where on the contrary my people are destroyed. I thought to continue vnquenchable hatred toward your Maister, and now I am constrained to graunt him Peace: yet not constrained, but by the werke of the greatest God, I am moued so to do, which in the presence of all my Lordes I protest, and with as god a will as he doth demaunde it. See then the power of that Maisterie, which can subdue and conquer wheresoever he list: and I sweare

to

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

to you by my Crowne, that the god Fortune of Palmerin, contenteth me as well, as if hee were mine owne Bonne. Rightie Soldane, answered the Duke of Mensa, if you resolve to loue the Prince Palmerin, both hee and his will not faille to perforne the like unto you: and on his behalfe we mooste faithfully promise, that against all your Enemyes, (Christendome excepted) you shall be assured of his succour assistance.

I request no better assurance (quoth the Soldane) then this that he hath sent, and that you may witness I am his faithfull Friend: at this instant shall the peace be ratified by all the Lords and Princes here present, and to seale the same, as he requested, I give my Daughter to the worshie Prince Olorico. Great joy was generally made for this god agreement, and the two Lovers were Espoused together within fewe dayes after: and the time being come for the Embassadours returne to Constantinople, Alchydiana sent divers rich gyfts to Palmerin and Polynarda, the like did the Soldane and the Prince Olorico.

## CHAP. L X.

How Palmerin, Tryneus, and Agriola, accompani-  
ed with many great Lords and Princes, went to the  
Emperour of Allemaigne at Vienna, where great  
triumphs were made, at the celebrating of the Ma-  
rriage between Tryneus, and the Princesse Agriola.



Done after the Prince Olorico, and  
the Embassadours of Greece were  
gone towardes Assiria, Palmerin (al-  
though the Aged Emperour very much  
diswaded him) made prouision for his  
speedy voyage to Allemaigne: and ha-  
ving already conducted the R. of Sparta

## THE HISTORIE

and his Aunt Arismena some part of their way homeward: at his returne to the Citie of Constantinople, came to the Duke of Pontus, saying: I remember the time when you did cut off the great Turkes head, an acte deserving god and especiall recompence, and that you thereby deserued vs, and performed it at the motion of the Princesse Laurana: her haue you loued euer since both on land and sea, and her Countrey is not farre hence, wil ye now make her your Ladie & Wife? I promise yee my assistance so farre as I can.

My Lord, answered the Duke, fearing to offend you, I still deserued to moue you in this cause: but seeing wee are now so happily fallen into these tearmes, I will not conceale the truth from you. In sooth my Lord, when first I salte her, I loued her, and haue euer since continued in this hope, that time at length would fausur my intent. It suffiseth, said Palmerin, and presently he acquainted the Emperour therewith, who thinking the match very meete and conuenient: they were the next day maried by the Arch-bishop of Constantinople, and in shott tyme after went to take possession of their Duchy of Durace, where they were received very honozable, and the whole State yelded vp into the Dukes hand.

When Palmerin saw that the most part of his compaions were departed, at the earnest intreatance of the Prince Trineus and Agriola, he set forward to Allemaine, accompaniued with Frysoll and Armida, whom he conducted into the Realme of Hungaria, where Frysoll was crownd King by reason of his Fathers decease, there went with him likewise Diardo of Bohemia, y Prince Eustace, Ptolome & other Lords of great account. Such god spedde they made in their iourney, as in shott tyme they attiued at Vienna, where the Emperour being aduertised of their comming by the Diwarffe, came with his courtly traing to meeke them, and taking his Sonne Tryneus in his armes, said: I see it is the will of God my Sonne, that hereafter

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

I shall haue as great joy by the, as in thy long absence I haue had griefe and sorrow, all which I patiently put vp, for the loue of thy Brother, the Noble Prince Palmerin, and faire Agriola of England, that well deserves it. But in god sooth my Children, had you not come in so happy tyme, I shold haue bene diuer to maruellous feare. For the King of France perceiving, that I would not give my onely Daughter in mariage to his eldest Sonne, demanded the King Recinde of Spayne his Daughter, who graunted his request: so that they thwayne, with the ayde of the King of England, haue leavyed such an Armie on the sea, as never was the like scene to passe the Rheine. But seeing you returned in god disposition, the lesse account I make of their angry menaces: yet are they the thre princiall Kings of Christendome.

My Lorde (answered Palmerin) be not you dismayed at their Enterprize, for ere many dayes be expyred: I haue to see all matters quietely pacified, and that without any effusion of Blood. The lesse is my doubt (quoth the Emperour) in that with such god Fortune you haue finished your intentions, for nothing you begin, but comes to luckie ende. Wirthes hereof appeareth in the search of my Sonne Tryneus, whom the best Knights of Christendome haue laboured to find: but all their trauel I see hath bene spent in vaine. By this tyme they were come to the Pallace, where they were graciouly receypted by the Ladies. Alas my Friends, saide the Emperour, which of you shall I first embrake?

Ah my Son Tryneus, how sorrowful hast thou made me since thy departure from England? Just cause hast thou to thank the Heauens, who protected thee still in so many daungeris, and forgot not thy Brother Palmerin, who hath endured such trouble for thy sake. Faire Daughter, (quoth she to the Princesse Agriola) welcome are you indeed. God send you better Fortune hereafter, then you haue hadde already, which yet hath bene a Touch-Stone of your loyaltie. But while these speaches continued, hewe the other two

## THE HISTORIE

Louers with piercing Regard behelde each other, and how many gracious signes passed as secrete Embassadours betweene them. Polynarda was clad in such costly Accouerments, for the pleasure she conceyued the Dwarffs arriuall at the Court: as shee seemed another Juno, when shee stood to abide the Arbitrement of Paris, or like Volupras, following her Mother.

But fearing least this Amiable encounter, should decypher some parte of her former courtesies to her friende, which as yet was unknowne to any by Bryonella: shee lokked vp all secret s with so sweete a kisse, as would haue contented the rudest of the Gods, had it bene Vulcane or Neptune themselves. And comming to salute the Princesse Agriola, saide. No manuell (saire Hyster,) if your Loue wrought wonders in my Brothers minde, for vnsafely I speake it, your exquisite Graces deserue the greatest seruice in the world. Alas Madame, answered Agriola, if Nature, or they that had the charge of mee in my youth, could haue painted me with such Beauty, as I see in you, or enriched me with wisedoma, able to deuise with my Lord when he came to see me: then could I haue said somewhat of the paines he hath taken for me, but I know my selfe so full of imperfections, as the Loue he beares me procedeth of his owne god Nature, not by any merite he can beholde in me. Then Palmerin kneeling before the Emperour, said. I beseech you my Lord graunt me one request, which shall be no way preiudicall to your Maiestie. Arise Sir Palmerin (quoth the Emperour) aske what thou wilt, and thou shalt haue it.

My Lorde Tryneus and the Princesse Agriola, saide Palmerin, are religiouse marriyd betwone themselmes, let me intreate your Highnes to confirme it, with open solemnization, befor the Duke of Mecena here present: whom I mean to to send into England, that he may resolute the King how himselfe was an eye witnes of theyr Marryage. The Emperour liked so well of Palmerins motion, as soone after

the

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

the Wedding was sollemnized: and he comming to Bryonella, courteously taking her by the hand, sayde. My god Friend Bryonella, I am now to be discharged of the promise I made at my last being heere: in witnes whereof I haue brought your Knight Syr Ptolome, and him I commend to your further fauour. So highly am I beholding vnto you my Lord (quoth he) as neuer shall I be able to returne sufficient recompence: but were wee equall in joy with the Prince Tryneus and faire Agriola, then wold I thinke no storne can wrong vs.

Palmerin at these wordes presently left her, and perswaded the Emperour so well: as Ptolome and Bryonella were likewise Espoused together: when Palmerin conserfing with the Princesse Agriola, thus spake to her.

Now may you judge Madame, whether I deceipted ye or no: and if the Estate of my Lord Trinens be any lesse then I tolde ye. Had I not given faithfull credite to your speeches (answering Agriola) I would not haue forsaken my Parents and Friends so rashly: but I hope they will pardon me, in that I haue done nothing but to their hono.

On the Morrow with exceeding ioy and rare triumphs, were Palmerin and Polynarda Marriyd together: And thus was long and faithfull Loue worthily requited. Ptolome was noble Created Duke of Saxonie, and Dyardo

tooke his leaue to goe see his wife Cordonya, whom

he had not hearde any tydings of, since he was first taken by the Payrates.

CHP

# THE HISTORIE

## CHAP. LXI.

¶ Howe Palmerin sent Ptolome Duke of Saxon (as his Embassadour) to the King of Fraunce, and the Duke Eustace of Mecæna, to the King of England, to treat of the peace betweene them.



Certaine dayes before the departure of Dyarde, towards Bohemia, Palmerin in the Presence of the Emperour and all the Princes, gaue the charge of his Embassade to the Duke Ptolome: which he shold deliver, not onely vnto the most Christian King of Fraunce himselfe, but also to his yongest Sonne, who now had espoused the Duchesse of Burgundie.

So departed Ptolome from Viena, accompanied with many worthy Lordes and knyghtes, and at length arrived at Digeois, where the Prince Lewes (being made acquainted with the cause of his comming, thus answered the Embassadour.

My Lorde, sometimes I had acquaintance in Fraunce with the most renowned Palmerin, and because hee is the onely man of the Worlde, to whome I owe all friendly affection: I will perswade my Father to ioyne in Peace with him. Now was Ptolome in good hope that his trauell would sorte to successiue ende, wherefore they presently iourneyed to the King, who as then was with his Estates at Paris: and hauing hearde Palmerins request, who nowe was wedded to the Princesse Polynarda, and therfore his intended warre to the Emperour, would extende to the hurt of the man he loued, thus answered Duke of Saxon, I

AM

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

am sufficiently acquainted with the bountie of thy Maister, and very well I doe remember, that at his being in France he combated for his Lady Polynarda: yet was I ignorant till nowe of that hath happened. But least hee shold conceiue, that I seek to make a commotion in Christendome: let him enjoy his Lady and vallise in peace, although she was sometime promised to mine eldest Sonne, reseruing these conditions of our amitie, that our first Neophytes and Peaces may match together in mariage, thoro by to continue the honour of their predecessors. As for the Kings of Spaine and England, who moued me to give them assistance: on their behalfe I can make you no certaine answere, vntill my Messengers bee returned home againe. Gracious Lord, quoth Ptolome, I dare assure you in the name of my Maister, that he hath euermore esteemed your fauour among the best Christian Princes, and will not refuse the mariage betweene your Children hereafter. And this coniunction of your amitie, will cause, that neither the Kings of Spaine or England will seeke to molest him: but with your highnesse ioyne in loue and friendship. With this answer Ptolome returned to Vienna, where the Emperour and Palmerin welcommned him with exceeding honour: and by this time had the Duke Eustace taken lading in England, where delivering the summe of his charge to the King, his highnesse returned him this answer. Although my Lord Ambassadour, both your Maister and the Prince Tryneus did me manisest dishonor, yet not to withstand peace, which still ought to be presented before warre, I grant his request, and will presently call home my Garrisons, shaking hands with him in honorable concord. As for the wrong done to my Daughter, I am content to excuse it, believing that shee was not conuicted hence, but with her will: thanking the Prince for the honor hee hath done her, seeing shee would leaue her Parents and Friends so lightly. I thinke my gracious Lord, answered the Duke, that when you consider what your Daughter hath done, you

## THE HISTORIE

you will not touch her with want of wit or judgement: for in respect of the long enmitie betwene the Emperour and you, we desire that her mariage might sorte to this happy ende. Nor would she haue departed hence with the Prince Tryneus, without a faithfull and resolued promise of mariage: which is performed, with as great honoz as ever was done to the Daughter of a King. Thinke you, quoth the King, that has not the great friendship of Tryneus, (when against his Fathers will he came with Palmerin to assist me) qualified the weight of mine anger against him: I referre his service, to the iudgements of my Lords of England, who perswaded me to reuenge, which you well perceue as yet I haue not done.

Prince Palmerin, quoth the Duke, is so vertuous, as rather would hee haue runne on a thousand deathes, then your Daughters honour shold any way haue beene impeached: but being assured of this fortunate issue, both hee and Tryneus aduentured as they did. And sorte am not I, saing the King, that all things are come so well to passe, but saing we are entred thus farre in speech: tell mee (I pray you) how Palmerin came to the knowledge of his Parents and how he finished the aduentures at the Castell of the ferme Rocks, and the dangerous Isle of Malsada, which neuuer any knight could compasse before. Then the Duke rehearsed euery accident, how amorous the great Turke was on the Princesse Agricla, and each severall occasion as thy selfe out: at which report the Queene with her Ladys were present, who hearing the discourse of so strange and variable fortunes, said:

I thought my Daughter had learned more modestie, then leauing her Fathers Court, to follow a knight unknowne to her in strange Countries: but seeing the ende hath fallen out so well, henceforth I shall remaine in better contentinent, seeing a Prince of so great renowne hath noly espoused her.

While

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

While this conference endured, the Duke earnestly beheld the Princes Sabinda, Daughter to the Prince of Sansuega, and neece to the Queene: and of such excellent grace and beautie he esteemed her, as forgetting the death of his Father, who deceased since his departure from Allemaine, hee became so amorous of her, that he demanded of the Queene if she were her Daughter. She is not my daughter, quoth the Queene, but the daughter of my Brother, the Prince of Sansuega.

Right glad was the Duke thereof, and resolved to request her of the King in mariage: who knowing the honourable place he held among the Princes of Greece, and what account Palmerin made of him: consented thereto, so that within few daies after they were espoused together. Hereupon, to accompany the Princesse, and to confirme the peace, the King sent the Duke of Gaule, and another great Lord with them into Allemaine, the Queene likewise sent twelve English Ladies to attend on her Daughter.

Thus returned the Duke of Mecena to Vienna, where he was worthily welcommed by the Emperour Palmerin and Tryneus, especially the young Duchesse, and the Ambassadours of England, by whom the peace was faithfully ratified and confirmed.

CHAP.

# THE HISTORIE

## CHAP. LXII.

How Palmerin and Polinarde departed from Vienna toward Constantinople, where after the decease of the aged Emperour Remicius: Palmerin was crowned Emperour of Greece, and what ioy was made at the birth of Polynarda her first sonne.

After the Ambassadours of England were returned home, Palmerin perceiving the Empere of Allemaine was in quiet: tooke his leaue of the Emperour, minding to conduit his Polynarda to Constantinople, not without many sorrowfull lamentations of the Mother to forgo her daughter, and faire Agriola her new acquainted Sister, yet the Emperour pacified them well enough, by shewing what benefit this contract would be to Christendome, and so proceeded to his Daughter in this manner.

Thou goest Polynarda to the seale of a great Empire: but moze pleasest me the perelesse name of Palmerin d' Oliu thy Husband, then the regiment of such a mighty Monarch. Farewell faire Daughter, continue in faithfull loue and obedience, remembiring the reuerend honour a wife oneth to her Husband. Polynarda hearing with what earnest affection her Father spake, was so ouercome with modest dutie of a Childe to her Father, as she was not able to answere one word: which Palmerin holding, kissed the Emperours hande, embraced Trineus, and tooke a courteous farewell of all the Ladies, commanding

## OF PALMERIN DOLIVA.

ding the Pages presently to bring away the Princesse Letter, saying to her: Madame, the longer you stay heere, the greater will be your conceite of sorrow, by absence the grieve will be forgotten: Let vs then merrily tourney to the Cittie of Constantinople, where they that never saw you, will reioyce more at your comming, then all the Alleaignes can sorrow for your departure. With like comfortable speeches Palmerin frequented his Ladie by the way, vntill at length they entred the Kingdome of Hungaria, where Fry soll with his chieffest Lordes attended theyz comming, to whom Palmerin in ieasting, saide:

Brother, I haue aduentured to bring your Sister Polynarda into your Kingdome, take heede if you lay clayme to her now as sometimes yee did: because that I am ready to defend her against whomsoeuer dare. I perceue my god Lord (quoth Fry soll) that you will haue my Follie generally knowne, I pray you let no such youtful prancks be now remembred: for as you are the chieffest in Chualtrie, so haue the destynies giuen you a Lady, whom no one in the whole world may Paragon. Well may it be saide that God and Nature forso-poynted this match: nothing inferiour unto louely Paris and faire Helena, or puissant Hector and wise Andromacha.

Fry soll accompanied them so farre as Alba, where most courteously parting from each other, Fry soll returned to his Kingdome, and Palmerin sone after came to Constantinople, where no little ioy was made for his saftey arriuall, especially for the Princesse Polynarda, who was a right welcomme Ladie into Greece, the olde Emperour prouiding such rare Deuices and Triumphs as the Chronicles to this day record the memory thereof. About tenne or twelve Moneths after, Polynarda was deliuered of a godly Sonne, who was named Prymaleon, whereat the god olde Emperour so inwardly reioyced, as his spirite onely comforted in the god Fortune of his Sonnes, and fearing afterwards to see any sinistre chaunce befall them, departed this straile

## THE HISTORIE

and transitory life, whose Death was signified thre dayes before by the Enchanted Byrd. His Funerall was performed as becommeth so great an Emperour: and faine would Palmerin haue had his Father the King Florendos Crowned Emperour, earnestly labouring the Princes in that cause: But hee desiring them to holde him excused, returned them this answere.

Great offence were it to God (my Friendes) that the Honour due to him, who gaue me libertie, defended my renowme, and saved my Life, shold be taken from him, and gien to me: For if Vertue, Authoritie, and god Fortune, are the properties whereby to make choise of an Emperour, Palmerin is very many degrees before me. As for his Generosity, it is so well known to you, as that it were but lost labour to make report thereof. For his Authority, the barbous nations, among whome he hath liued, and conqueringly controlled, deliver sufficient testimonie. And for his high god Fortune in all his Enterprizes, where is the man that may be equalled with him? Of what hath hee at any time attempted, but hee hath finished the same with wonderfull Honour? I could name Kings and Princes, that raigne onely by his meanes. To speake of the victories he hath obtained, either in Battel or single Combat, your eyes haue beheld, and the whole World apparantly witnesseth. This dare I boldly say, and some of you doo know it better then I, that his onely Name wil be more feared in Greece, then all your fore-passe Emperours haue beeene by theyr greatest puissance.

So well did the people like what the King Florendos had saide, as immedately was the Prince Palmerin proclaimed Emperour of Constantinople, and the next day he was Crowned according to the accustomed Rites and Ceremonies. Not long afterward did the King Florendos stay with his Sonne, but returned with his Queene unto Macedon, where he gouerned in loue and justice amonst his Subjects, daily sending Messengers to Constantinople, as

## OF PALMERIN DOLIVA.

well to understande the health of the Emperour and Empresse, as also of young Princelion, who daylie increased in strength and Beaultie.

### CHAP. LXII.

How the Prince Olorico and Alchydiana pretending to trauell to Constantinople, to visit the Emperour Palmerin, and the Empresse Polynarda, strayed on the Seas: and what sorrowfull moane shee made, and how she was found by Palmerin.



One of the Chapteres before you haue heard mentioned, how Olorico promised the Princesse Alchydiana, that hee would bring her to the Emperour Palmerins Court, which shee kept imprinted so deepe in her fancie, as but for the comonon Galladie, incident to young

Ladies, which is, to become great swone after they are espoused, shee would haue betaken her selfe to Trauell, within thre moneths after her Marriage. Notwithstanding, within shorte time after that trouble was past, shee came to begge a Wcone of the Soldane, which hee not denied her, thinking shee would demand no matter of weight. Father (quoth she) you must needes give leave to the Prince Olorico, that he may guide me, and accompany mee to Constantinople, for that I am desirous to see the Emperour Palmerin.

Daughter said the Soldane, the trauell on the Seas is very perillous, and oftentimes great Estates perish by Shipwrecke: but seeing you are so desirous, and I binadvisedly haue past my promise, you shall not in ought bee hindered,

## WITH THE HISTORIE

decreasynge mee. Herreppair was prettily prepared tenne Shippes and Galleys, the greatest part whereof was laden with great Horses, rich Tapistry, and other things of much value, which shold be ginen to Palmerin and his Polynarda. In the rest were Embarqued chosen knyghtes for her defensye, with Ladys and Gentlewoman to attend on her, and needfull necessaries: thinking to shewe her sumptuous Magnificencie in the Emperours Court, which in conclusion fell out otherwise. For Fortune who is euermore variable and neuer permanent, at the instant, when Olorico and Alchidiana abydong mid on her fayre, and were come within tenne dayes sailing of Constantinople: shew altered their opinions in most doulfull manner, as they expected nothing but the ende of their lives. The wylde now ayseth contrary to them, a sudden strokynge and terrible Tempest ouerthrusteth them, and with fith rough Willowes their Shippes were beaten, as in their sight syre of their Galleys were drowned, the residue were very farre scattered from them, and the great Carriche wherin themselues were agaist a Rocke, was split in the middest. Now are they left to the uercke of the wateres, and Alchidiana wastynge on a Plancke for lasogarde of her lye: and had not one of the Pyrates by swimming recovered a little Squiffe, wherewith he presently made to her, and gotte her in, otherwile there had the Princesse vnhappily perisched. This Pilote was shi expert and curting, as cutting through the unmeritful wawes, he gained landing at a port distant from Constantinople about thicke miles: the Inhabitants wher they came on shoyre, wondred to see her so gorgiously Attired, and had not the Pilote scyndly persuaded them, that she was a Princesse trauelleng to the Emperours Court, and by mishap had lost all her company on the Seas, they wold haue dealte with her very hardly. But when they understande the cause of her comynge, they entertained her with fauour and cuittie, causing her to be lodged at a very welthy Merchantes house, wher she wanted nothing she could desire.

Alchi-

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

Alchidiana seeing she had escaped the danger of the sea, and was now in better assurance then before, comforted her selfe with this good fortune: but when she remembred her losse, into what want & pouerty she was now brought, and that through her soothly desire, her Husband was drownyd, (as she thought). She was overcome with griesse, that neither her owne noble mind, nor the daily presence of the Greeks that came to see her, could dissuade her from ceasselesse lamentations.

Oh wretch that I am, quoth she, how well haue I deserued this wreakefull aduenture: Ah ill advised Alchidiana, what moued thee to cross the Seas: if not in ordinate desire to see him, of whom thou maist expect no remedie for thy sorow: or else to see her that is Distresse of his heart, and so make shynge owrie conceits more languishing? Oh Lord and Husband Olorico, I am the vnhappy cause of thy death, thy loue hath euer beene to mee sound and perfect: why could it not then make thee forget the man, who alwaies disdained my passions, and never loued mee but with disimulation? If thou escape death as I haue done, just cause haft thou to hate mee continually. Could not I remembred, how thy people spent their blood for me, onely to witnesse thy neuer daunted affection: and I haue requited thy loue with monstrous ingratitude. Why then did not our Gods make me alone to suffer the desert of my folly, but take reuenge on them that never offended? Ah noble Ladies, how hard is your recompence in my service, that you tender and delicate bodyes shold be soode for the Fishes: And you worthy knyghtes and Gentlemen, in stead of purchasing honour and renowme with your Master, you are lost for euer, to my no little griesse and vexation. The Merchant in whose house shew was lodged, hearing her heauie and lamentable complaints, thus comforted her. Be of good cheere Madame, your Husband (by the grace of God) will well enough escape this danger. As for your treasure, it is a matter soone gotten and soone lost: and to

## THE HISTORIE

mourne for your Ladies and Gentlemen, it is to no purpose, because it can no way benefit them. When we poor men loue our good Wives and Children, we must with patience please our selues: you then having knowledge of vertue, and that we are all subiect to the transitory chaunes of the world, to despaire is farrre unleemely your estate.

My Lord the Emperour is bountifull and liberall, and the most vertuous Prince that ever reigned in Greece: he will so well recompence your losse, as you shall not complaine of your comming. With the pswashions, she was somewhat pacifed, and having staid there nine or tenne daies, to see if any other of the Galleis would arriuue there, seeing none came: she sold divers of her pretious Jewels that was about her, for halfe the value they were worth, and prouided her selfe of sixe Horses for her selfe, her Hostesse and her two Daughters, the Pilot that had sauied her from drowning, and one of the Merchants servants, with whiche compaニー she rode toward Constantinople, having changed her rich attire into mourning weedes. As they were in a great Forrest sixe miles from the Cittie, the Princesse calling to remembrance, how poore and simple shee should come before the Emperour, hanning bene one of the wealthiest Ladies in the world: was so ouercomis with this conceite, as hardly coulde her Hostesse keepe her from swooning, wherefore seeing they were neare a goodly Fountaine, there they alighted to rest her a little. And after shee had walked in the cole shaddow of the Trees, shee sette her selfe in better disposition, preparing to mount on her backe againe: but it came so to passe, that the Emperour Palmerin having bene Hunting in that Forrest, and by earnest pursuit of the Game, lost all his compaニー, so that at length he came to the Fountaine where Alchidiana walked. His arrivall greatly amazed the Cittomen, and before he would demarke what they were, hee alighted and dranke of the Fountaine water. Alchidiana earnestly beholding him,

and

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

and feeling inwardlie a strange alteration, presentlie swooned againe in her Hostesse armes. Alas, said the Emperour, haue I so offendid the Ladie, that the sight of me should endanger her life? tell mee my friend, quoth he to the Pilot, dost thou know of whence she is? Do my Lord, answered the Pilot, but I understand she is a noble Princesse, who comming to see the Emperour, hath lost her people and goods in the sea. He thinks I haue seen her heretofore, said Palmerin, but I cannot remember the place where. Then beholding her more aduisedly, he said: Is not this the Princesse Alchidiana? that cannot be: my Ambassadours told mee, that shee was married to the Prince Olorico.

By this tyme she was a little recovered, and seeing how he held her in his armes, thus spake. Ah Sir Palmerin, why do you hinder the depealure of miserable Alchidiana? thinke you shee can ende her life in better tyme and place, then in this Countrey, and betweene his armes whom she loued as her life, yet never received courtesie by him till this instant. Ah my Lord, here maist thou behold the foolish and indiscreete Alchidiana, who for thee hath lost her Husband Olorico that loued her dearelie: Knights, Ladies, and inestimable treaſure hath shee likewise lost, all which she maketh no account of, but of her beloved, whom she shall never recover. But may it be Madame, quoth the Emperour, that you are indeed the Princesse Alchidiana, Daughter to the Souldane of Babilon, the flower of all the Ladies in Turkie? The same am I, said shee, who loued thee so unmeasurably, and thy loyaltie of marriage, feare of dangers of the sea, nor thy too rigorous refusall, both in my presence, and by thy messengers, could not dissuade me from this shame, onely to see thy Court, and the beauty of Polynarda. And that at length I might purchase my desire, I brought my Husband with mee, who I feare the truell waters haue swalwed, and as brauel ladies as ever were scene, with riches that well might decole an Empire.

## THE HISTORIE

pite. By heauen. Madame, quoth Palmerin, if the Prince haue lost his life in this aduenture, never will my heart bee merrie againe. Now see I the unspeakable loue you bare me, which I haue in some part required toward you: Olorico: yet disray not sweete Lady, nor feare his death before further tryall, for by mine honour I swere, no sooner shall I come to Constantynople, but I will cause his search presently to be followed, not doubting but he may be found againe.

And now faire Princesse, tell what vertue or desert you saw in me, that might value the least paine you haue endur'd: & committing your gracious person to so many doubtfull hazards, of feares, affrights, perturbations, heate and colde, which your choise nature could hardly brooke in fearell: unworthie were I the name of a man, if now I should not pitie you. And I swere to you by the living God, that if your mishap sort to an euill ende, never will I weare my Diademe longer. Alas Madame, if heretofo're I haue deluded you, consider it was a Louers decit: that had bequeathed his hart to such a Lady, as loues you as if you were her Sister. But haue you, quoth she, among your amorous delights, acquainted her with my unlemy boldnesse: what may she then conceue of me, but as of a Girls given to loue and lauish appetite? The loue of wedlocke faire Princesse, said Palmerin, cannot make me disclose her priuicide, that honoured me so much: let it suffice you, that so: the fauour I obtained when you found me in like place, sheweth to recompence you with al possible kindestnes. Let vs then depart hence toward Constantynople, that you may be used as beconeth your high calling. Poore despitid that I am, quoth the Princesse, had I entred into conseil of your former illussons, never had I fallen into so great danger: but as for matters past, either of your rigour or disdaine, your present affabilitie compelles me to forget, set on then when you please, and I will beare you company.

The

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

The Pilote, the Marchaunz Wife, and her Daunger, on theyr knes desid the Emperour to excuse them, that they hadde not reverenced his Maestie as they ought. Worldly Honour I expect not said the Emperour, come on and goe with mee, that I may recompence your paines taken for this worthy, Princesse. So rode they forward, and as they issued forth of the Forrest, there stayed the Knights and Huaters attending the Emperours comming, they all maruellung at the great courtesie he vse to the Lady: then his Maestie calling the Duke Eustace to him, saide. Thou must presently with thy compaions, goe Arme ye, and trauell to finde the Prince Olorico, whome the tempestuous Seas hath separated from his Lady. Who brought these haury tidings to your Highnes (said the Duke.) This Ladie, who is his wife (quoth he) hauing miraculously escaped Shipwacke by the meanes of this Martiner. When they were come to the Pallace, the Duke of Saxon came to hold the Emperours Horse while hee alighted. Ptolome saide Palmerin, know you no better your Pilote Alchidiana? you must now remember her passed fauours, when shee resembled you from base servitude. And that shall not I forget my Lord (quoth the Duke) while I haue a day to live: I cannot thinke that this Lady is she. It is even she without further question (saide the Emperour) doe you and the Duke of Mecana helpe her from her Horse, and conduce her vp into the Pallace, while I in meane time goe to aduertise the Empresse.

Madame (quoth Ptolome) yet can I not be thoroughly resolued. In sooth Ptolome, (said she) I am Alchidiana, who to accomplish what thou and thy Compaysons could not, am come hither in this pouerty: discouering my want of knowledge by an irrecoverable losse, except you my god Lords take the greater pitty on me. Think you Madam, (quoth Ptolome) that my Lord Olorico is lost? never feare it I beliech ye, but think you shall finde as great fauour in this Courte, as it were with the Holdane your Father.

Pal.

## THE HISTORIE

(Palmerin comming to the Empresse, saide) Madame, as I was hunting this day, I found in our forest the Princess Alchidiana, of whom I have so often told ye, she being wife to the Prince Olorico, that named himself my Dwarke's Brother, when I was last with you at Gaunt, I desire ye to intreate her, as her Calling deserveth, because I am not a little beholding to her. So taking her by the hand, they came and met the Princesse, and Palmerin taking her courteouslie in his armes, delivered her to the Empresse, saying,

Fayre Princesse, you shall remaine with my Ladie, till our Knights haue found your Lord and Husband. God will requite your kindenesse to a distressed Lady, said Alchidiana, although I feare for my offences his Fortune will be much the worse. Madame (quoth the Empresse) so Noble and debonaire is your Lord and Husband, as no danger can any way prejudice his life, but thinke him as safe as if he were heare present with you, which doubtlesse will be right soone and in god time: therefore let me intreat you to be of god cheere, as if you were now in Assiria. And though we cannot compare with the Court of Babylon, yet here shall you be attended as becommes so great a Princesse.

I doubt not thereof god Madame, saide Alchidiana, the morcam I indebted to the Emperour and you: yet can I not forget the absence of my Loze, being separated from him in a place so vncouth. Pee that is the defender of the just (quoth the Empresse) will send ye mete againe in place more comfortable, and in that hope I pray thee to perswade your selfe: laying aside these mourning garments, the very sight whereof cannot but offend ye. These gracious speches somewhat contented her, and expelled all private conceite of sorrow: yet would she not change her habit, till she heard ryther good or bad newes of the Prince Olorico.

CHAP.

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

### CHAP. LXIII.

¶ Howe the Prince Olorico was reskewed from the Moores, by the young Knights that the Emperour Palmerin sent in his search: and what ioy was made at Constantinople at his arruall.



¶ On the Emperours resolution for the searche of Olorico, the Dukes of Mecina, and Saxon, with each of them fiftynights, were prepared to sea with two greate Galleyes well appoynted: and Colmocio, Bellechino, Sergillo, Sonne by Cardino, and the Merchant Estebons two Sonnes, whome the Emperour had but lately knighted, with thicke hardy and valiant soldiours departed in another. Eight other Vessells were sent on the Coaste of Propontida and the Bosphore, to seeke the Prince.

It so came to passe, that the same day Alchidiana was prestured to drowning, Albaranco a Pirate was sailing towards Natolia, and passed very neare where the Princesse Caerrick was split, and him did he espie floting on a Chest, which was filled within with Martin-skinnes, being then with pittie moved to beholde him in such danger, he caused his men to take him into the shipp, who ready to yeld up his gholde he was benymmed with colde. When Albaranco saw him so richly Apparellod, and the Chest well stufed with things of such value: hee imagined him prettily to be some great Loze, for whome hee shold haue some large Raunsome, wherefore he used him very courtesilly. Olorico seeing he was so happily escaped, lifting his

eyes

## THE HISTORIE

eye to Heauen, saide. Great is thy mercie O God, that so fauourably vouchsai'd to regarde thy poore creature, nor were losse worthie reckoning, so my Ladie Alchydiana were save in Assiria. What angry Planet raigned when we betooke our selues to See? what answ're shall I make to the boldane year Father, that gaue mee such charge of your Person at my departure: hardly may I dare to come before him any more.

Alibarbanco hearing these complaints, reioyced therew-  
at. By Mahomet (quoth he to himselfe) nor shalt thou see  
him any more, if I can hinder it, for I will present thee to  
the great Turke, his moftall enemie: and for thy Ransome  
I shall receyue a boantiall recompence. So thinking to  
strike towards Nacolia, he hapned among the Emperours  
young Knights ere he was aware: wherefore he thought to  
take theyz Shippes likewise, yet therin he found himselfe  
very much deceipted. For Bellechino knowing them to  
be Turks by theyz Banners, said to his compaions, We  
are now I feare in the danger of Turkish Pyrates: Let vs  
therefore with courage winne our deliuerance. Hereupon  
they fiercely assailed Alibarbanco, and buckled so closely,  
that in the ende they boorded him, making such slaughter a-  
mong his men, and thowring him likewise slaine into the  
Sea, that none were left to resist theyz further Entrance,  
where they found the Prince Olorico, and being not a lit-  
tle gladd of this their good successe, they eache one embrac-  
ed him with gracious courtesie. Alas my friends (quoth  
the Prince, how knew you my being heere? who gaue you  
in charge to sake me forth? who hath bene the Messenger  
of my misfortune? My Lorde the Emperour Palmerin,  
( answered Colmelio,) vnderstood thereof by your Ladie  
Alchydiana, whome he found by god happe as he rode on  
Hunting.

But may I give credite to your wordes (saide the  
Prince) is my Ladie with his Maestie at the Court? She  
is in trueth my Lorde (saide Bellechino) and the Marriner  
like

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

likewise that saued her life, whom the Emperour hath  
highly recompenced for his faithfull service. I beseech you,  
quoth Olorico, let vs hole taile presently toward Con-  
stantinople, for my heart cannot be perswaded till I haue  
seen her, so great is my doubt, considering our unfortu-  
nate separation.

Never may I beate Armes in Knighthood, said Bel-  
lechino, or lift my Sword in honourable Chivalrie, if Al-  
chidiana be not at Constantinople, where I both saw her  
and spake to her before our departure. So taking the vessele  
that belonged to the Pirate Alibarbanco with them; in  
short time after they arrived at Constantinople, where  
their chearefull sounding of Drums, Trompets, and Cla-  
rions at their landing, delinere testimonie of their good  
successe. If the Emperour was glad for the recovery of his  
friend, the Princesse Alchidiana of her Husband, and e-  
uerie one generally for the man lost by such mishap, I  
leau'e to your iudgements, that can censure the rare toyes  
of loue and friendshyp. What Triumphes, Tournaments,  
bonfires, Maskes, Mimeries, and other delightful exerci-  
ses were performed, soz ioy of the Prince Oloricos safetie,  
whom the Emperour made account of, as you haue heard  
before: it would demand a larger volume to set downe,  
you must therefore here imagine, that you behald his Ma-  
iestie highly contented; Alchidiana thorowly satisfied,  
and the whole Courte well pleased by this happie euent,  
giving themselues to expresse the same in open and mani-  
fest signes, beseming so great estates to prosecute, & there-  
fore of as great honour as may be devised.

The young Knights are especially welcommed for their  
worshie service, the Dukes of Saxon and Mecana like-  
wise, though they failed of bringing the Prince, yet they  
brought two Foyles belonging to the Prince Alibarban-  
co, richly laden with many welthy spoles, which were  
giuen among the young Knights in recompence of their  
paines. During the time of these surpassing pleasures  
and

## THE HISTORIE

and delights, there entred the Haven of Constantynopl  
thre shypes, laden with maruellous sumptuous gifts and  
presents, from the Queene Zephira, and her Brother the  
King Maulerino, being sent to the Emperour Palmerin  
and his Empresse Polynarda, by two great Lords Ambas-  
sadors from Persia, to request familiar loue and alliance  
with the Emperour, the Seldane confessing his iniurie to  
Tryneus while he was in his Courte. When the Persians  
came before the Emperour, who was honorably accompa-  
nied with Kings, Dukes, Princes, Countes, and many  
braue Ladies; they were greatly abashed, yet thinking on  
the argument of their Embassage, one of them began in  
this manner.

It is no maruell, redoubted Emperour and Monarch  
of Greece, if thy Subjects both loue thee and visit thee, whē  
thy behavour hath conquered the mindes of so many Pe-  
tentates: who to enter amitie and peace with thee, some  
hauē leſt their Countries to ſend their Ambassadors hi-  
ther, other dare not ſtirre, or assemble their men in war-  
like manner, ſo is the name of Palmerin ſearcd thoroſo all  
Asia. Hereof beare witnes the great Turke, the Califfe  
of Siconia, and the heþres to the Prince Amarano of Ni-  
grea: not much inferieur in this condition, is the Seldane  
of Babilon, whose Daughter with her Husband I here be-  
hold. The victorious Abimar, King of Romara and Grisca  
the worthy Maulerino, and the puissant Seldane of Per-  
ſia my Master, Husband to the vertuous Queene Zephira  
: who with their Brother have ſent your highnes thre  
Shypes, laden with the moſt welthy riches their Coun-  
tryes can yeeld. My Lord and they humbly kisse your Ma-  
iſtys hand, deſiring you to forgoe his diſcourſe to the  
gentle Knight Tryneus, when hee became enamoured on  
the Emprefſe Aurecinda. But if their loue then ſorted to  
a philoſophicall trepe or figure, it hath ſithence poured ef-  
fectually in procreation, to the no little joy of my Lord and  
Master.

The

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

The Princesſe is deliuſered of a goodly Son, grow-  
ing in ſuch exquifeit forme and feature: as it is expeſt he  
he will one day reſemblē his Father in chualtrie, as he  
doth already his Mother in amiable perſection.

Ambassador, quoth the Emperour, for the great ver-  
tue and nobilitie I haue founde, as well in the Princesſe  
Zephira, as alſo her noble Brother: I grant the ſriendly  
alliance thou demaundest. Yet hereof am I ſorrie, that  
the Sonne to the Prince Tryneus, ſhould bee noucifed  
and ſpens his youth among Rahmetisks, without know-  
ledge of his God and Redemer: for in ſuch ſort ſhould hee  
bee inſtituted, after hee is come to the yeres of underſtan-  
ding, that all the Alchoran is tales and fables, and doubt-  
leſſe God will ſo deale with him in time, as hee shall ini-  
tiate the Xeppe of his Noble Father. As ſo, the preſents  
ſent vs by the King Maulerino, the Seldane, and his  
Queene Zephira, we accept them as from our Friends,  
and will returne them ſome remembrance of our thank-  
fulneſſe. His Maieſtie commanded the Persians to be led-  
ged in his Palace, and continued ſtill their former ioyes  
and triumphes: but to aile those Courtey paftimes and  
delights, this miſfortune happened whiche haſteſter fol-  
loweth.

---

CHAP.

# THE HISTORIE

## CHAP. LXV.

How the great Turke refused to assist Lycado, Nephew to the Admirall Olimael, against the Emperor Palmerin: and what trouble happened in Constantinople, by the Traytour Nardides, Nephew to the King Tarrius, Lycado, Meuodeno and their Father.

**S**uch was the humanitie and pitty of Palmerin, when hee finished the enchantments at the Isle of Malfada, as he gave libertie to all the Turkes and Christians, which were before transformed, as you haue heard: among whom was Lycado, Nephew to the Admirall Olimael, he that at the taking of Agriola, had the Prince Trineus for his prisoner. This Lycado, seeing himselfe in his owne Countrey and out of danger, where hee heard how the great Turk was slaine and his Uncle likewise: hee came before the Sultane that then raigned, saying: Wlozthie Lord, as men are naturally inclined to bemonie their losses, so are Subjects bound to aduerse their Soueraignes, of any shame or iniurie done to their Maiesties. This speake I my Lord, because you haue not as yet reuenged the death of your deceased Brother, now sleeping in the armes of Mahomet, albeit traiterously slaine by Palmerin and his compani ons: at which time my noble Uncle was likewise murdere, with many Knights of chiese and especiall accourt. And least you should be ignorant in the truth of the deede, and who also caried hence the Princesse Agriola, I haue credibly

## OF PALMERIN DOLIVA.

credibly understand, that Palmerin is nephew to the Empyour of Greece: one of his Compayons is the Empyour Sonne of Allemaigne, and all the rest were Princes and Lords of Greece, onely sent as Spyes into Turkie. Wherefore, seeing you now hold the State in such peace and quietnes, it were necessarie you shuld leauy a mighty Army: and please you to commit the charge thereof to mee, I will lose my life, or make an absolute destruction of all Greece. I remember (said the great Turke) that your Uncle made like entraunce into my deceased Brothers Courte, as you by your speeches tolde labour to do: but I will so warily looke to such intrusions, as no Traytor shall tell here if I can hinder them. Your Uncle vexed the Christians, what followed thereon: the death of his Maister, and daungorous confusion. By you likewise may ensue as bad Fortune, depart you therefore from our Court: and but that we are loath to be noted with Ty ranie, thou shouldest presently be drawne in pieces with horses. False Traytour, thou that commest to counsell vs in a matter, wherin we cannot meddle but with great dishonour: it behoues thee first to regard the end of thy intent, and what hee is that gouernes in Greece. Goe Villaine goe, and on perill of thy life never presume before our againe.

Palmerin was greatly astyned at this sharpe answere, and seeing he could haue no better successe, hee went to his Father the Brother to Olimael, being one of the chiefe Magitians in all Turkie: to him he made his complaints, saying, hee would die in that resolution, but he would cause the Turke to knowa that hee was no Traytour, and this (quoth hee) shall be the meane whereby I will compasse it. I meane to disguise my selfe, and Trauell to the Cittie of Constantinople, where priuily I will murder the Empyur Palmerin: So shall my Lord the great Turke fech nere with no furthur suspition, but will reward me with greater venefites then euer my Uncle had. My Sonne answered his Father, thinkest thou that thy deuise will sorte to effect?

## THE HISTORIE

th<sup>e</sup> Brother Menadeno w<sup>ch</sup> helpeth<sup>e</sup> hereto; but he is  
too young: yet when time seracheth<sup>e</sup> for th<sup>e</sup> departure, I will  
not onely tell th<sup>e</sup>, but conduct th<sup>e</sup> my selfe. I beseech you  
god Father (sayd Lycado) further me in what you may, so  
neuer will my heart beat rest, till I haue payde Palmerin  
with th<sup>e</sup> selfe same covne the gre<sup>t</sup> Duke was. I haue alredy  
whil<sup>e</sup> do you studie, and search all your Books of Alchymie,  
Divination, Magique, and Pigromancie, as Zabulon,  
Orpheus, Hercules, Zoroastres, Circes, Medea, Alphonsus,  
Bacon, Apponius, and all the rest that w<sup>ch</sup> iuste of the Bla<sup>t</sup>te  
Speculatiue: reape them ouer againe and againe, devise  
such Spells, Crozisms, and Coniurations, as the very spi-  
rits may speake of the feast I will make at the Cittie of  
Constantinople,

Hereupon the Olde man made his Sonne Menadeno  
Knight, and with Lycado betw<sup>e</sup> themselves to Sea, say-  
ing my Sonnes, I will bringe ye to Constantinople, where  
(by vertue of mine Arte) me will arraine before th<sup>e</sup> dayes  
he expiere: remember your Uncle<sup>s</sup> death, and behau<sup>e</sup> your  
selues in such sort, as you may be Registered for ever. The  
time doth no<sup>t</sup> fauour you with sufficient Reuenge, and  
therein shall you be assissted by a Christian Knight, whoms  
we shall si<sup>t</sup> a<sup>t</sup> ready Landed there for the same cause.

They<sup>r</sup> Aker<sup>s</sup> beeing weyed, they lauch into the dape,  
and cut through th<sup>e</sup> wau<sup>s</sup> with such violence, as if the Di-  
uell himselfe were in they<sup>r</sup> Hayles: so that they tooke Lan-  
dring at th<sup>e</sup> selfe same houre, as Nardide arrived at Con-  
stantinople. As concern what this Nardide was, you re-  
member the two Draytors Promptaleon and Oudin, ne-  
phewes to the King Tarisius of Hungaria, whome Palme-  
rin and Frysol slew at Constantinople: he was their Bro-  
ther, and Sonne to the Duchesse of Ormeda. She under-  
standing the death of her two Sonnes, could not conceale  
it from the Duke her Husbande, who presently dyed with  
very conceyte of grie<sup>e</sup>: Whereupon, she to Reuenge this  
misshappe caused by her report, as also the death of her two  
sonnes,

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

Sonne, made promise to Nardide, (then being eightene  
yeares olde) that so soone as he was knighted, he should goe  
to Constantinople, and there (if it were possible) to murder  
the Emperour and Frysol. All this he belied to performe,  
and about some two or thre yeares after, ha<sup>t</sup>ing maried the  
Kings Daughter of Polonia, he Emba<sup>t</sup>ched himselfe with  
forty Knights, determining by a Combat for Treason, to  
so compasse his intent.

These w<sup>ch</sup> aymers at Reuenge, landed all at one  
instant at Constantinople, when the old Magitian calling  
to Nardide: saide he w<sup>ch</sup> gladly speake with him in se-  
crete, as concerning matter greatly for his awyke. Here-  
upon they went all closely together, into the Maisters Ca-  
bin, and the Olde man entred into these spachcs.

Say<sup>r</sup> Nardide, needlesse it is for you to hide your af-  
faires from me, for I know that you departed from Po-  
lona with fortie Knights disguised like Marchants, onely  
with this determination, to desily the Emperour, in re-  
nenge of certaine iniuryes done to your Brethren. But if  
you will give credite to me, and go to worke in such sort as  
I shall advise ye, y<sup>e</sup> shall happily obtaine the ende of your  
desire. By God (saide Nardide) you tell me wonders,  
there is not one in the shipp<sup>e</sup> that knowes mine intent:  
yet haue you saide the truth, wherat I cannot marnell suffi-  
ciently. Seeing then you kn<sup>w</sup> so much, it were but follie  
to dissemble, say then your mind, and I will heareye. This  
night (saide the olde man) the Emperour will suppe in the  
great Hall, with the Prince Olorico, and the Princesse Al-  
chidianaes Friends, the King of Sparta, and his Queene,  
with many other great Princes and Lordes: so that such  
numbre of people are in the Pallace, as little regard wilbe had  
of straungers or Household-servants.

You then with my Sonne Menadeno, beeing Armed  
as beliementh a cause so weightie, shall suddenly enter, and  
kill the Emperour: my Sonne Lycado and I, will stay  
your retурne here, and I that can commaunde the wind<sup>e</sup>

## THE HISTORIE

and weather will carrie yes hence without daunger of folowing. And true it is, that there is a Bird peatched in the Hall, which the waise Muzabelino hath so Enchaunted, as neyther god or yltingings can come to the Emperour, but shee bewayes the same by her Song or fearefull crye: yet doubt not you thereof, I stike boldly, there will be none Arm'd, and so shall you depart againe at your owne pleasure. My Friend (said Nardides, happy be the god houre I mette with the, assure thy selfe, that if I can kill the Emperour, and thou afterward deliuer me safely: such recompence will I bestowe on the, as both thou and thine shall for euer remember me.

Other recompence I demand not (said the Old man) then the death of the Emperour: Prepare thy selfe therefore to follow thine intent. The night being come, these Traytors armed themselves, and casting their Mantles, about them, entred the Pallace, where among the Pages and Servants, without suspition they came into the Hall, leaving Lycado and his Father at the Porte, where hee therwabode sach Enchauntment, that all such as came forth of theyr Houses, presently fell downe a sleepe in the Streets. No sooner were the Traytors entred the Hall, but the Bird gaue a horrible and fearefull crye, beating her Beake against her Breast with such furie, as though she would haue rent forth her heart. My God (said the Emperour) in mercie beholde me: For the crye of this Bird doth foretell great misfortune. Looke about my Friends (quoth hee to his Guaide) and see if any Strangier or unknowen bodie is entred our Presence. Nardides by these speeches, well knew he was the Emperour, wherfore drawing his Sword, he thought to haue cleaved his head: yet he sayled of his intent, for the Emperour seeing the bliswe comming, with a great Golden Cuppe abhorded it indifferently, notwithstanding, the Sword in slippynge from the Cup, gaue him a sore wound upon the head. Oloricis setting on the other side of the Table, ranne at the Traytor, but the Emperour,

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

perour had received two strokes more ere he could come at him, so that his Maestie fell from his Chaice as hee had beene dead.

As the Prince Olorico held the Traytor Nardides by the armes, Menadeno strooke at him so rigoreusly, as if Ptolome had not borne of the blowes with a great Siluer plate, Olorico there had lost his life. Duke Eustace seeing this shamefull outrage, wroght the Sword out of Nardides hand, and gaue him such a sound stroke therewith on the head, as made him to rub his heeles upward: and by the helpe of Bellechino, who found the meanes to get off his Helmet, he smote his head from his shoulders. Bellechino who had beene newly baptised, loued the Emperour as hee had beene his Father, and comming to Menadeno whom Duke Ptolome stronglie held in his armes, gaue him so many stabs on his throte, that hee likewise felldowne at his feete. The Empresse seeing her Lord so wouider, rent her garments, foze her comely locks of haire, smote her faire face with merualious violence. Ah my Lord, quoth she, thou art not wounded alone: for if thou die, as God forbid, right lone will my ghost follow thee. Cease Madame your complaints, said the Emperour, and comfort your selfe so well as you may, for this is the houre wherein I must leaue you: I haue lost such abundance of my blood, as longer may I not liue with you: O my God forgiue my sinnes, and receive my soule. In uttering these words he swouned againe, and the Empresse with him for company, to the no little amazement of all the Lords and Ladies, who were well neare at their wits end to behold this unexpeted alteration. Alchidiana likewise was in wonderfull perplexitie, fearing also that her Lord was wounded to the death: but to comfort this sorrowfull and deselats Court, god Fortune sent this helpe ensuing.

# THE HISTORIE

## CHAP. LXVI.

How the wise Muzabelino knowing by his art, the cruel treason done to the Emperour: came to succour him, and of that which followed.



Vzabelino the Magromancer, of whom we haue already spoken, by chance this day was turning ouer his Books, and found the dangerous stratageme devised by these Traitors, and calling his familiaris together, demanded the danger that would ensue by this treason: whereto one of them replied, that if he went not speedily to Constantinople, the Emperour, the Prince Olorico and their Ladies wuld hardly escape that day with life. Then Armed he himselfe, in selfesame manner as hee was when he succored the Prince Tryneus, and calling theo spirits of the ayre resembling Giants, their faces so vgly and fearefull as no human creature durst behold them: them he commanded to carrie him to Constantinople, and with a great flaming firebrand in his hand, he cut through the ayre with such horrible thunder, as eah one thought the world had bin ended. When he beheld the old man that defended the port, he said to him: False and disloyal Traitor, darest thou meddle with the man whom thou knowest to bee in my guard: take him to ye (quoth he to his two spirits) and conuey him to your Courte, and there keepe him aliue for mee, for I will give him a paine a thousand times worse then death: you know how to use my gentle guest, let him

b2

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

be dealt withall as his behaviour hath deserved. The intserable old man astonied hereat, and thinking to helpe himselfe by his Magique, was presently transformed into a Serpent. Now thou shal perceiue, said Muzabelino, that I am greater in power then thou art. So taking two great Golden chaines, he tied the Serpent about the necke therewith and his Sonne together: setting such a conuincation on them, as he shold never bee changed to his former shape.

Then came hee to the Palace, where taking off his Helmet, he entred the Hall, saying to the Knights. Ah my deere Friends, the Traitor that thus hath molested you is taken, reioyce therefore and be of good cheare, your Lord is not dead, he liueth, he must liue, and in despight of enemie shall florish more then euer he did. The Princes & Knights hearing him speake so friendly, and yet knew not what he was, notwithstanding his promises they were greatly amazed: but when the saw Bellechino and Colmelio so reverently embrased him, they began to conceiue better opinion of him. Alas my Lord and Father, said Bellechino, in a happie houre came you hither, and your presence puts vs out of al further feare: vouchsafe to succor the Empresse Polynarda, for pittie it is to see her thus changed. Hereupon Muzabelino embrased the Empresse, whose face was colde, pale and wan. Why Madame: quoth he, where is your former wisedome and discretion: leane these desolate countenances to common people: your Lord is in no daunger, but within thre daies hee shall bee well againe. Conuey her hence, said he to the Ladies, I am ashamed to see your folly, suffering her to lie in this sort, and no one helpe her. Then was she conducted to her Chamber, and Muzabelino with the ayde of his Sonne and Duke Eustace, caried the Emperour to his bed, where stanching his woundes with a precious Ointment: Muzabelino gaue him some of the water to drinke, which before had healed the Princess Zephira, and which he had brought with

b4

him

## THE HISTORIE

him in a little viall of Christall, when the Emperour being somewhat better recovered, lifting his eies to heauen, said. How great art thou in mercy my soueraign Redemer, sending Muzabelino from the furthest regions, to help me in so great a necessitie? Ah my noble friend, what haue I done at any time for thee, that might induce thee to sauour me so much? By Lord, answered Muzabelino, so precious are your deserts in mine eies, as I can doe no lesse, except I shoulde be accounted the most ingrateful among men. So bathing his wounds with the wyce of certaine vertuous herbes, he willed all that were present to depart the chamber, and on the morrow they shoulde see their Lord in better estate. So left they the Emperour to his rest, & al the Princes, Knights and Ladies, came to welcome Muzabelino, who comforted the Princesse Alchidiana, assuring her that the Prince Olorico shoulde doe wel enough, for he had likewise bathed his wounds, and left him in his Chamber quietly sleeping. On the morrow he commanded the bodies of Nardides and Menadeno to be burned, afterward he loosed Lycado from his fether, causing him to be put in prison till the Emperour were amended: and taking the Serpent by the chaine, he brought him by the help of his two spirits into the great Court, where by his cumming he erected a godly Marble pillar, and on the top thereof a strong Cage of yron, saying to the old man transformed. Accursed creature, to the ende thy paine may bee the greater during the Emperour's life, thou shalt remain in this monstrous shape, and die thou shalt not, till the God of heauen call him hence whose death thou diddest contynue. Incontinent the spirits thrust the Serpent into the Cage: and afterward banished away, leauing the monster casting fearefull flames of fire out at his mouth, and howling with strange and pittifull cries. Then went Muzabelino to the Empresse, who still remained sad and pensiue, and bringing her to the Emperour, said. So Madam, ay, I not so god as my word, your Lord is well and perfectlie recovered, bee you then pleasant  
and

## OF PALMER N'DOLIVA

and mourne no longer. Not a little joyfull was she at this sight, embracing his highnes with such affection, as though she had bin absent from him a long time: but when the Emperour saw her face so martered with lamenting, and her sweet countenance so much altered, Alas Madam, quoth he, why doe you offend that seat of heavenly beautie, which God ordained to excell all Ladies living? albeit I had died, yet shouldest not you haue vsed such tyranie on your selfe. If such a wreakefull chance had happened, answered the Empresse, some had my ghost followed my Lord. For my heart hath no comfort but onely in you, and that once lost, farewel life and all. Then must you both, said Muzabelino, consider the mighty work of God, especially you my Lord, who as you are loued of many, so are you hated likewise of a number: you must therefore hereafter stand vpon your guard, having before your eies, that the more renowne encraesth, the more doth spightfull enuie seeks to detace it. Alexander the great, and Iulius Caesar are examples therof. You Madam must wash your face with the water in this viall, which will restore your former beauty, as sometime it did to the Princesse Zephira. Within few daies after, the Emperour shewed himselfe to his Subjects, who were meruaillous joyfull to see him so well recovered, the Prince Olorico likewise was perfectly cured, and al things so well as if this had not happened. Then was Lycado delivered to the people, who in recompence of his treason, haled him into the Market place, and there binding him in an yron chayne, made a small fire vnder him, and so by little and little boyled him to death.

CHAP.

# THE HISTORIE

## CHAP. LXVII.

How the Soldane of Aabilon sent for the Prince Olorico, and his Daughter Alchidiana, and of the sorrow the Emperour and Empresse made for their departure.

**H**ere report of this mishap at Constantinople was so spread abroad, as the King Florendos of Macedon, and the Queen Griana hearing thereof, presently posted to Constantinople, where by the god meanes of Muzabelino, they found their Sonne in very sound estate of health, for which they highly thanked the wise Magitian, giving him many rich and honourable rewards. And Muzabelino seeing all matters quieted, that the Persian Ambassadours were likewise readie to retorne to the Soldane, not a little contented with the league of peace, he tooke his leave of the Emperoz and sailed home with them to the King Abimar of Grisca, wh<sup>o</sup> he certifiéd of al things that happened, and how fortunately the danger was prevented. Frysoll the King of Hungaria, came with his Queen Armida to Constantinople, a messenger likewise came from the Emperoz of Allemaine and Tryneus, to understand the health of the Emperoz, such was the brute of this suddaine mischance. While all these Princes remained there at the Court, the Princesse Alchidiana was deliuered of a faire Daughter, who at the Emperoz Palmerins request was baptised, and named Philocrista, and not many daies after the Empresse had a Daughter likewise, named Belliza, and the Queen of Hungaria had another, called Melicia: no little joy being made at the birth of these children. But now the Soldane of Babilon seeing his son

and

## OF PALMERIN DOLIVA.

and daughter returned not all this while, sent the young King of Babilon to enquire of them, and no sooner was he entred the Pañen of Constantinople, but newes of his arruall was brought to Alchidiana and Olorico, who to honour the King, went and met him at the porche. The King being landed, seeing himselfe unarmed, and remembraunce the death of his Father before that Cittie, with the teares in his eyes, said: Wretched that I am, must I venture thus nakedly on the shore, where my father, brother, and dearest friends were slaine? Ah Constantinople, the enemy to our Law and Religion, dost thou flourish by the blood of the greatest Lords in Turkie? a day will come to abate thy pride and insolency. I hope King of Babilon, said Olorico if thy father and brother were slaine, it was like worthie Princes in their Masters service, whose death if thou remember, and (withall) the valour of them that slew them: thou must think how Fortune faours the Grecian successors in the Empire. Beside, thou commest now in peace, but ill beseemes it thee then to remember passed troubles: say thy message to the Emperoz that thou commest for, and think not on such sciuolous matters. By this time they were come into his Majesties presence, when the King began in this maner. Mighty and renowned Emperoz, the Soldan of Babilon my Master, perceiving that age hasteneth on his death, sendeth to intreat your highnes, that his son and daughter may retorne home to him, that while he liues he may inuest them in the Kingdome, to behold some part of their worthy government. I think their absence, said the Emperoz, is as irksome to him, as it is pleasing and contented to me, nor wil I with-hold them contrary to his liking: desiring you good Princes to hold me excused; if I haue not vied you as your vertues worthily merit. Alchidiana having heard her fathers request, brake soorth into teares, and though nature made her desire to see the place of her birth, and to behold her parents and kindred: yet piercing affection which conquereth all things, drew backe her

mind

## THE HISTORIE

mind in such sort, as shee could more willingly haue staid in the Emperors Court. But beholding the mutuall loue betwix Palmerin and Polynarda, she resolved to use the like to her Husband, and forget the tally that too much conuerced her appetite. When the day was come of their departure, maruellous was the sorrow at this friendy parting; yet seeing there was no remedie, she kissed her daughter Philocrista, and courteously bidding the Emperoz and Empresse farewell, with her Lord Olorico, who was as loth to leaue his noble friend, went abord, and hoising sails attained safe arruall at the Holdanes Court. Great joy was made for their returne, the Pilot that saued the Princesse life, the Holdane made chiefe Captaine of his Guard: and he dying, Olorico was created Holdane, wherof sone after he aduertised the Emperoz, sending to him and the Empresse many precious iewels, not forgetting somwhat to his daughter Philocrista. Wher Olorico and Alchidiana sailed from Constantinople, the King of Sparta and his Queene Arismena, the Duke Eustace and the Duchesse Sabinda, with divers other Princes returned to their countries. The like would the King Florendos, Criana, Ptolome and Bryonella haue done: but that the Emperour intreated their longer stay. Criana gaue her Dwarfe Amenda sister to Vrbanillo, to the young Princesse Belliza, & the Emperoz gaue his Dwarfe such welthy possessions, as he married with a rich Gentlewoman of the city, by whom he had a sonne of the stature of the Pygmees, named Risceno, who afterward was gien to wait on the yong Prince Primalcon. Now the Emperoz calling to mind, his former paine and trauell in search of adventurres, so loued and honored Knights errant: as from each place in the world they came to his Court, as wel to behold his magnificence, as the thre yong Princesses, Philocrista, Beliza, & Melicia whose beauties were renowned farre and neare. Great Jousts & Triumphes were daily made in hono: of them, wherein Belcar, sonne to King Fry soll, and Tirendos son

## OF PALMERIN D'OLIVA.

to Duke Eustace of Mecena, hauing received the order of Knighthood, weued themselves both forward and valiant. Darke came such store of Knights to Constantinople from Allemairre, Italie, France and Spaine, as they exceeded the number of them in King Arthurs time, when he made the great Tourney before the Castell of Ladles. And one evening as the Emperour was deuising with the Princes, to censure of them that had best deserved: suddenly entred the Hall a Lady richly attired, whos without valting or speaking a word to any body, a good while stood viewing the Emperoz & his Knights. At length, making as though she would returne againe, she thus spake. Noble Emperoz Palmerin, I haue more delighted to behold thy Chualtie, then any of the Princes on the earth: but a tyme shal come, that the renoume of them and thare, shall be utterly abolished by Strangers, chisely by one, whose vertue & bountie shall be such, as thy selfe shal account him the best that euer bare Armes. So departing, she mounted on her Palstry, and rode away in exceeding great haste. The Emperour maruelling at these words, said. Ill aduised was I, in not demanding of the Lady the Knights name, which shal surpass all other in powerte, gladly would I know his name, of whom he madeth such a glorious report. These speeches so enflamed the minds of the Knights present, as many of them secretly Armed themselves, and rode after the Lady, among whom was Cardyno and Colmeho, whom we will leaue in their tourney till they find her: and heere conclude our history till time bring on the follo: booke of Primalcon and Palmendos', desiring your le acceptations for these two parts, the better affection I. ih. I haue to proceede in the other.

FINIS.

MY promise performed, and Palmerins famous  
Historie finished: for my long labour, Gentle-  
men, I request but your friendly speeches, an easie  
matter to be giuen by you, yet nothing can bee more  
welcome to me. If I may speed in so farr all a request,  
Palmendos will leaue his Mother the Queene of Thar-  
sus, and Primaleon hasten his order of Knight-hood,  
that you may bee acquainted with their rare aduen-  
tures. In meane while, the famous Palladine of Eng-  
land is arrived, and to feede you with varietie of de-  
lights, his History by Easter tearme next will be with  
ye: till when, yse such fauour to Palmerin, as Prince  
Palladine be nothindered.

*Antonic Monday.*

*Honos alit Artes.*

*FINIS.*